

THE BIG BOOK OF SERIAL KILLERS

**AN ENCYCLOPEDIA
OF SERIAL KILLERS**

150 SERIAL KILLER FILES
OF THE WORLD'S
WORST MURDERERS

JACK ROSEWOOD

AND CO-AUTHOR REBECCA LO

THE BIG BOOK OF SERIAL KILLERS

150 Serial Killer Files of the World's Worst
Murderers

An Encyclopedia of Serial Killers

JACK ROSEWOOD

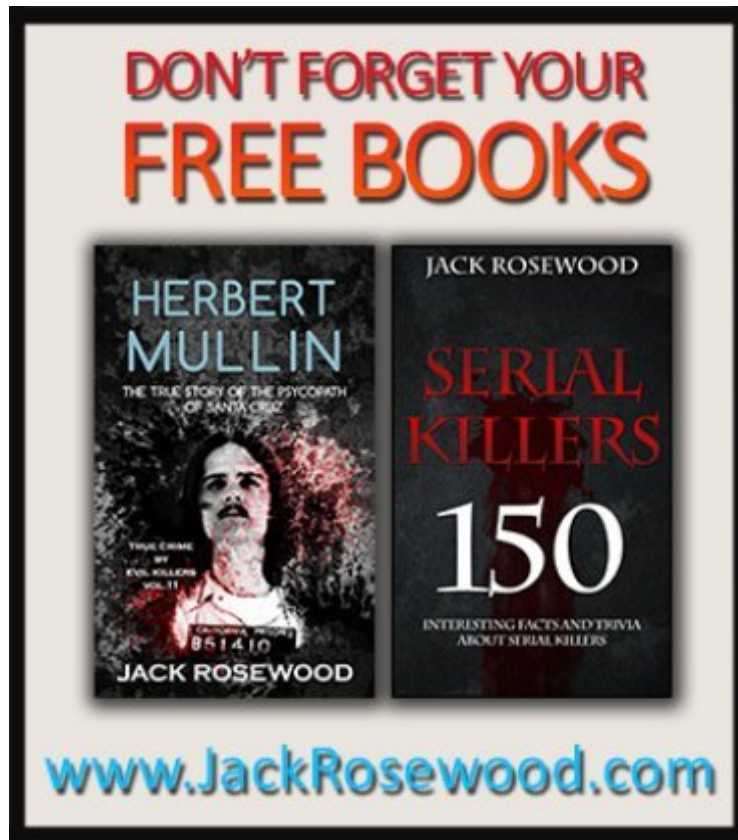
REBECCA LO

Copyright © 2017 by LAK Publishing

ALL RIGHTS RESERVED

No part of this book may be reproduced, stored in a retrieval system, or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic, mechanical, photocopying, recording, scanning, or otherwise, without the prior written permission of the publisher.

Free Bonus!



Get two free books when you sign up to my VIP newsletter at
<http://www.jackrosewood.com/free>

150 interesting trivia about serial killers and the story of serial killer
Herbert Mullin.

MORE FREE BOOKS AS THE END

On top of this massive Serial Killer Encyclopedia, there are currently some bonus books added at the end because you got your hands on this copy during the release promo! Go to the end and find out which Jack Rosewood bestsellers that have been added!

Contents

[Introduction](#)

[Elias Abuelazam](#)

[Stephen Akinmurele](#)

[Charles Albright](#)

[Rodney Alcala](#)

[Daniel Camargo Barbosa](#)

[Robert Berdella](#)

[David Berkowitz](#)

[Paul Kenneth Bernardo](#)

[Marie Besnard](#)

[Kenneth Alessio Bianchi and Angelo Buono](#)

[Bible John](#)

[Richard Biegenwald](#)

[Arthur Gary Bishop](#)

[Lawrence Sigmund Bittaker and Roy Lewis Norris](#)

[Robert Black](#)

[Terry Blair](#)

[William Bonin](#)

[Boston Strangler](#)

[Jerry Brudos](#)

[Ted Bundy](#)

John Justin Bunting

Ricardo Caputo

David Carpenter

Richard Trenton Chase

Andrei Chikatilo

Thor Nis Christiansen

Doug Clark

The Cleveland Torso Murderer

Carroll Edward Cole

Adolfo Constanzo

Dean Corll

Antone (Tony) Charles Costa

Richard Cottingham

Jeffrey Dahmer

Karl Denke

Paul Denyer

Nannie Doss

Joseph E. Duncan III

Walter E. Ellis

Kenneth Erskine

Donald Leroy Evans

Gary C. Evans

Larry Eyler

Pedro Rodrigues Filho

Albert Fish

Bobby Jack Fowler

Lonnie David Franklin, Jr.

Freeway Phantom

William Patrick Fyfe

John Wayne Gacy

Luis Garavito

Donald Henry Gaskins

Ed Gein

Lorenzo Gilyard

Harvey Glatman

Billy Glaze

Billy Gohl

Stephen Griffiths

Robert Hansen

Keith Hunter Jespersen

Delfina and María de Jesús González

Jack the Ripper

Milton Johnson

John Joubert

Theodore Kaczynski

Patrick Kearney

Edmund Kemper

Roger Kibbe

Scott Lee Kimball

Anthony Kirkland

[Paul John Knowles](#)

[Vasili Komaroff](#)

[Randy Steven Kraft](#)

[Joachim Kroll](#)

[Richard Kuklinski](#)

[Leonard Lake and Charles Ng](#)

[Derrick Todd Lee](#)

[Cody Legebokoff](#)

[Bobbie Joe Long](#)

[Long Island Serial Killer](#)

[Pedro López](#)

[Peter Lundin](#)

[Kenneth McDuff](#)

[Michael Wayne McGray](#)

[Peter Manuel](#)

[Richard Laurence Marquette](#)

[David Maust](#)

[Ivan Milat](#)

[John Allen Muhammad and Lee Boyd Malvo](#)

[Joseph Naso](#)

[Donald Neilson](#)

[Dennis Nilsen](#)

[Gordon Stewart Northcott](#)

[Anatoly Onoprienko](#)

[Clifford Olson](#)

Carl Panzram

Gerald Parker

Thierry Paulin

Louise Peete

Christopher Peterson

Alexander Pichushkin

Robert Pickton

Norbert Poehlke

Harry Powers

Craig Price

Cleophus Prince Jr.

Dennis Rader

Richard Ramirez

David Parker Ray.

Melvin Rees

Martha Rendell

Robert Ben Rhoades

Gary Ridgway.

Joel Rifkin

John Edward Robinson

Tiago Gomes da Rocha

Dayton Leroy Rogers

Glen Rogers

Danny Rolling

Robert Rozier

Marc Sappington

Arthur Shawcross

Harold Shipman

Daniel Lee Siebert

Robert Joseph Silveria, Jr.

George Joseph Smith

Lemuel Smith

Morris Solomon Jr.

Anthony Sowell

Timothy Wilson Spencer

Cary Stayner

Peter Sutcliffe

James Swann

Vasile Tcaciuc

John Floyd Thomas

Peter Tobin

Maury Travis

Henry Louis Wallace

Faryion Wardrip

Carl "Coral" Watts

Fred West and Rosemary West

Nathaniel White

Wayne Williams

Randall Woodfield

Steven Wright

[Aileen Carol Wuornos](#)

[Yang Xinhai](#)

[Robert Lee Yates](#)

[Yoo Young-chul](#)

[Zodiac Killer](#)

[The making of a serial killer](#)

[More books by Jack Rosewood](#)

[GET THESE BOOKS FOR FREE](#)

[A Note From The Author](#)

[True Crime By Evil Killers Book 5 to 10](#)

[Robert Berdella: The True Story of The Kansas City Butcher](#)

[GET THE BOOK ABOUT HERBERT MULLIN FOR FREE](#)

[Prologue](#)

[Chapter One](#)

[The Early Years](#)

[Chapter Two](#)

[The Turning Point - Victim Number One - Jerry Howell](#)

[Chapter Three](#)

[The Monster Returns - Victim Number Two – Robert Sheldon](#)

[Chapter Four](#)

[The Darkening Sky – Victim Number Three – Mark Wallace](#)

[Chapter Five](#)

[To Close for Comfort. Victim Number Four – Walter Ferris](#)

[Chapter Six](#)

[Depravity Unleashed - The Brutal Death of Todd Stoops](#)

[Chapter Seven](#)

[The Pain Laboratory and Victim Number 6 – Larry Pearson](#)

[Chapter Eight](#)

[The One that Got Away.](#)

[Chapter Nine](#)

[Pulling Back the Curtain on Evil](#)

[Chapter Ten](#)

[The Investigation](#)

[Chapter Eleven](#)

[The Caged Killer](#)

[Chapter Twelve](#)

[Berdella on Trial](#)

[Epilogue](#)

[Dean Corll: The True Story of The Houston Mass Murders](#)

[GET THE BOOK ABOUT HERBERT MULLIN FOR FREE](#)

[Introduction](#)

[Chapter 1: Corll's simple, sweet childhood](#)

[Chapter 2: Corll and his accomplices](#)

[Chapter 3: Yorktown Street apartment becomes Corll's first lair](#)

[Chapter 4: Mangum Road place serves as second death house](#)

[Chapter 5: 6363 San Felipe Street](#)

[Chapter 6: 925 Schuler Street](#)

[Chapter 7: Westcott Towers](#)

[Chapter 8: The Princessa Apartments, 1855 Wirt Road](#)

[Chapter 9: 2020 Lamar Drive, Pasadena](#)

[Chapter 10: Paint fumes, pot and pandemonium](#)

[Chapter 11: Police on the scene](#)

[Chapter 12: The confessions](#)

[Chapter 13: Hearing and murder trials](#)

[Chapter 14: The aftermath](#)

[Chapter 15: Conclusion](#)

[Donald Gaskins:](#)

[The Meanest Man in America](#)

[Introduction](#)

[Table of Contents](#)

[Chapter 1: A Killer Is Born or Bred?](#)

[Chapter 2: Peewee Finds His Power](#)

[Chapter 3: A Monster Unleashed](#)

[Chapter 4: Losing Control](#)

[Chapter 5: The End of a Nightmare?](#)

[Chapter 6: The Meanest Man in America](#)

[Chapter 7: The End of the Road](#)

[Chapter 8: A Serial Killer Outlier](#)

[Chapter 9: The Legacy of Donald Henry “Peewee” Gaskins](#)

[The Briley Brothers: The True Story of the Slaying Brothers](#)

[GET THE BOOK ABOUT HERBERT MULLIN FOR FREE](#)

[CHAPTER ONE: Mayhem Discovered](#)

[CHAPTER TWO: Early Crimes](#)

[CHAPTER THREE: Two Survive](#)

[CHAPTER FOUR: More March Madness](#)

[CHAPTER FIVE: Heightened Brutality](#)

[CHAPTER SIX: Casual Killing](#)

[CHAPTER SEVEN: Ring of Truth](#)

[CHAPTER EIGHT: Prime Evil](#)

[CHAPTER NINE: Double Doom](#)

[CHAPTER TEN: Escape from “Space E”](#)

[CHAPTER ELEVEN: Aftermath—Sins of the Fathers](#)

[EPILOGUE: For Sale—Haunted House with No Ghosts](#)

[Martin Bryant: The Port Arthur Massacre](#)

[GET THE BOOK ABOUT HERBERT MULLIN FOR FREE](#)

[Prologue](#)

[Chapter One: The Odd Nature of Martin Bryant](#)

[Chapter Two: The Odd Couple](#)

[Chapter Three: The Café Massacre](#)

[Chapter Four: The Parking Lot](#)

[Chapter Five: Fleeing the Scene](#)

[Chapter Six: Road Rage](#)

[Chapter Seven: A Scene of Total Devastation](#)

[Chapter Eight: The Cornered Madman](#)

[Chapter Nine: The Aftermath](#)

[Chapter Ten: Understanding the Mind of a Killer](#)

[Epilogue](#)

[William Bonin: The True Story of The Freeway Killer](#)

[GET THE BOOK ABOUT HERBERT MULLIN FOR FREE](#)

[Introduction](#)

[Chapter 1: Setting murderous future in stone](#)

[Chapter 2: William Bonin was hungry](#)

[Chapter 3: Orange County Register unearths Bonin's secrets](#)

[Chapter 4: Bonin's trail of death, torture continues](#)

[Chapter 5: A consummate serial killer](#)

[Chapter 6: The trials of William Bonin](#)

[Chapter 7: The execution of William Bonin](#)

[Chapter 8: Bonin's terror lives on](#)

[More books by Jack Rosewood](#)

[GET THESE BOOKS FOR FREE](#)

[Serial Killers: The Colombian Monsters](#)

[Free Bonus!](#)

[Introduction](#)

[Luis Garavito](#)

[Introduction](#)

[Chapter 1: A childhood of betrayal](#)

[Chapter 2: Sexual sadist on the loose](#)

[Chapter 4: The first crime scene](#)

[Chapter 5: Clues tell a big story](#)

[Chapter 6: Investigators – and a victim – get lucky](#)

[Chapter 7: Families look back in sorrow](#)

[Chapter 8: Garavito behind bars](#)

[Daniel Camargo Barbosa](#)

[Chapter 1 – A relationship made in hell](#)

[Chapter 2: A new modus operandi](#)

[Chapter 3: Four years of terror](#)

[Chapter 4: Camargo's final arrest](#)

[Chapter 5: A madman on trial](#)

[Pedro López](#)

[Introduction](#)

[Chapter 1: A childhood of tragedy](#)

[Chapter 2: His first stint in prison](#)

[Chapter 3: Murder in Peru](#)

[Chapter 4: Lopez hosted post-mortem parties](#)

[Chapter 5: A mistake leads to an arrest](#)

[Chapter 6: Laws leave families enraged](#)

[Conclusion](#)

[Free Bonus!](#)

[A Message from Jack Rosewood](#)

[Introduction](#)

[Chapter 1: Murder in the French Alps – Iqbal Al-Hilli and her Family](#)

[Chapter 2: The Villisca Axe Murders](#)

[Chapter 3: The Disappearance of Stacy Peterson and Christie Marie Cales](#)

[Chapter 4: Lucia de Berk – Angel of Death?](#)

[Chapter 5: The Richardson Murders in Canada](#)

[Chapter 6: The Good Hart Murders](#)

[Chapter 7: Beslanowitch – The Murder of a Teen Prostitute](#)

[Chapter 8: Murder or Accident?](#)

[Chapter 9: When Suicide is Murder](#)

[Chapter 10: Snatched From the Snow](#)

[Chapter 11: Captive for 24 Years – the Joseph Fritzl Case](#)

[Chapter 12: A Controversial Case of Police Misconduct – Or Was it Murder
By Cop?](#)

[More books by Jack Rosewood](#)

[GET THESE BOOKS FOR FREE](#)

[A Note From The Author](#)

[Excerpt from True Crime Stories Vol.3](#)

Introduction

For hundreds of years, serial killers have walked the streets and driven the highways in all four corners of the world. The Big Book of Serial Killers has brought 150 of the most depraved, sadistic, and terrifying murderers from Russia, America, Germany, Australia, Korea, China, Denmark and the UK together in one giant encyclopedia.

From Elias Abuelazam to the Zodiac killer, this A-Z reference book contains information on the classification of each killer, the background, victims, method of killing, arrest, trial and punishment of some of the worst killers that have terrorized the world. Dates are included, such as when they started killing, their arrest, and execution dates where relevant.

This encyclopedia is concise and factual, an educational tool for those who wish to learn more about the men and women who kill.

Please use the table of contents on the page before to navigate to the serial killer you wish to read about or just take them as they come. At the end of the book, after the Zodiac Killer chapter, you will find more information about mugshots and references used for this book.

Elias Abuelazam

Date of birth: August 29, 1976

Aliases/Nicknames: Elias Abullazam

Characteristics: Racial Attacks

Number of victims: 5

Date of murders: March 2009 - August 2010

Date of arrest: August 11, 2010

Murder method: Stabbing

Known Victims: David Motley, 31; Emmanuel Abdul Muhammad, 59;
Darwin Marshall, 43; Frank Kellybrew, 60; Arnold Minor, 49

Crime location: Michigan, Virginia and Ohio

Status: Sentenced to life imprisonment without parole.

Background

Abuelazam was born into a well-off Christian Arab family in Ramla, Israel, and as a young child, the family relocated to America. His mother had married again and managed to obtain a Green Card, but was never granted citizenship.

He spent some time working as a mental health technician at the Piedmont Behavioral Health Center, now known as North Spring Behavioral Healthcare. He worked there until 2008, and it is this working background that may have given him the idea to plead insanity when he was later arrested and charged with murder.

On July 30, 2004, Abuelazam married Jessica Hirth, but the marriage did not last long. They divorced in 2007, and Jessica's parents were later shocked by his criminal activities. Her mother thought he was a 'nice man', but Jessica's father claimed Abuelazam was abusive towards his wife and that was why she divorced him.

Murders

The crimes Abuelazam committed and is suspected of committing, took place between the months of May and August, 2010. It is alleged he would drive his Chevrolet TrailBlazer around at night and would target small-statured men who happened to be alone.

Abuelazam would come up with a ruse such as needing directions or help with his vehicle, and then he would stab them, aiming mainly for the stomach and chest. The majority of his victims were black, and so the suspicion was that the attacks were motivated by racial hatred.

By August 4, 2010, it was clear that the large number of stabbings that had occurred since May were likely the actions of one perpetrator, and a task force was created to investigate the crimes. Within a few days, the Leesburg Police were able to connect three attacks on black men in their area as the work of one man. Descriptions of the suspect had been given by the victims, and video surveillance footage of each attack was located and analyzed.

As the police were narrowing down their suspects, Abuelazam happened to be arrested on August 5, in Arlington, Virginia. He had been stopped during a routine traffic stop and found to have an outstanding warrant for a previous assault. He was arrested but released on bond, but now his information was in the system and police were able to piece the puzzle together and identify him as their main suspect.

Arrest and Trial

On August 11, 2010, Abuelazam was arrested at Hartsfield-Jackson Atlanta International Airport, as he waited to board a flight to Tel Aviv. He was given the option to fight against being extradited to Michigan, which he declined. He was therefore transported to Flint, Michigan on August 26. Because of the nature of his alleged crimes, he was held without bond and placed in solitary confinement while he awaited his trial.

Abuelazam was eventually charged with a number of crimes, including the following:

- June 26, 2010 - Bill Fisher, 42. Charged with assault with intent to murder.
- July 12, 2010 - Antoine Jackson, 29. Charged with assault with intent to murder.
- July 19, 2010 - Richard Booker. Charged with assault with intent to murder.
- July 26, 2010 - Darwin Marshall, 43. Charged with murder.
- July 27, 2010 - Antwoine Marshall, 26. Charged with assault with intent to murder.
- July 29, 2010- Davon Rawls, 20. Charged with assault with intent to murder.
- July 30, 2010 - Frank Kellybrew, 60. Charged with murder.
- August 1, 2010 - Etwan Wilson, 18. Charged with assault with intent to murder.
- August 2, 2010 - Arnold Minor, 49. Charged with murder.
- August 7, 2010 - unnamed 59-year-old man. Indictment for this case.

He is also suspected of committing the following crimes but to date has not been charged:

- May 24, 2010 - David Motley, 31. Found murdered.
- June 21, 2010 - Emmanuel Abdul Muhammad, 59. Found murdered.
- July 23, 2010 - Stabbing of an unnamed 21 year old man.
- July 29, 2010 - Stabbing of an unnamed 59 year old man.
- July 30, 2010 - Stabbing of an unnamed 28 year old man.
- August 3, 2010 - Attack of an unnamed teenager.
- August 5, 2010 - Stabbing of an unnamed 67 year old man.
- August 6, 2010 - Attack of an unnamed man with a hammer.

The first trial began on May 8, 2012, for the Arnold Minor murder case, and unusually, the judge allowed evidence from the other cases Abuelazam was suspected of to be submitted during the trial. One important piece of evidence was a blood drop found on Abuelazam's pants, which was found to belong to Arnold Minor.

Fifty witnesses were called by the prosecution, including an uncle of Abuelazam who had given his assistance in arresting his nephew. Faced with an overwhelming amount of evidence, the defense team put forward a plea of insanity. Only one expert witness was put forward by the defense to testify regarding Abuelazam's mental state, but the credibility of this psychiatrist was called in to question by the prosecution, specifically because this doctor's expertise was in drug and alcohol addiction, not mental illness.

Two psychologists were brought forward by the prosecution who claimed that although Abuelazam likely suffered from some sort of personality disorder, there was no evidence that he was insane at the time of the murders. Abuelazam did not fit the legal criteria of insanity.

The jury began their deliberations on May 22, 2012, and just one hour later, they had made their decision. They found Abuelazam guilty of the murder

of Arnold Minor.

Outcome

Abuelazam was sentenced on June 25, 2012, to serve life imprisonment without the possibility of parole.

Stephen Akinmurele

Date of birth: 1977

Aliases/Nicknames: Cul-de-sac killer

Characteristics: Ageist Murder/Robbery

Number of victims: 5

Date of murders: 1995 - 1998

Date of arrest: November 1, 1998

Murder method: Strangulation, bludgeoning

Known victims: Eric Boardman, 77; Joan Boardman, 74; Jemmimah Cargill, 75; Dorothy Harris, 68; Marjorie Ashton, 72

Crime location: Blackpool and Lancashire, England

Status: Committed suicide by hanging, while incarcerated awaiting trial.

Background

Not a great deal is known about Akinmurele's early life, although his mother was from the Isle of Man and his father was Nigerian. At the age of six, he moved to the Isle of Man with his mother, and he was raised by both his mother and his grandmother.

He was considered a friendly boy at school but often got into trouble. He suffered from some unspecified mental health issues as a child, but there was no mention of any major incidents or concerns. By the time he was eighteen, he was living on the mainland and working as a civil servant in the Department of Benefits. He supplemented his income by working at a local bar called Rumours, as a barman.

Murders

In October 1998, the bodies of an elderly couple were found murdered in their home in Blackpool. Eric Boardman, 77 and his wife Joan, 74, were found by their daughter after they had been bashed to death. At the scene, a home-made 'cosh' had been located, and investigators were able to lift a fingerprint from it, which matched Akinmurele.

Earlier, Jemmimah Cargill, 75, was suspected to have died in a flat fire in the same resort the Boardmans resided in. However, once detectives discovered Akinmurele had not only lived in the resort, but had also shared the flat with Jemmimah Cargill, they determined the case to be another murder rather than an accidental death.

But it wasn't over yet. Akinmurele was also linked to the murder of Dorothy Harris in February 1996, back on the Isle of Man. She too had died in a fire at her home, and although initially considered a terrible accident, it was now being deemed a homicide.

The more the investigators looked, the number of potential victims increased. Marjorie Ashton had been strangled to death in her home in 1995, and Akinmurele could also be linked to this death.

Arrest and Trial

Akinmurele was arrested and subsequently charged with the murders of the Boardmans, Jemmimah Cargill and Dorothy Harris. During his questioning, it was found that Akinmurele's demeanor would change quite rapidly, and where he was polite and quiet one minute, he could easily fly into a rage so terrifying that one of the detectives labeled him 'one of the most dangerous men I have ever met'.

While awaiting trial, Akinmurele was remanded in prison. During this time, he attacked one of the doctors causing him injury and made many threats to cause harm to others. He made claims that he had committed another murder, and although his story seemed plausible, it was later determined his confession was not true.

Akinmurele seemed to show a hatred of elderly people, and this combined with his mental state, lead investigators to take another look at similar crimes that had happened both in the immediate area and back on the Isle of Man. They researched cases going back to 1994, and found many that could have potentially been linked to Akinmurele.

Outcome

On August 28, 1999, Akinmurele was found hanging in his cell. He had crafted a ligature from his clothing and utilized a window to hang himself. His trial was only weeks away, and he left a suicide note for his mother which said, "I couldn't take any more of feeling like how I do now, always wanting to kill."

As per protocol, an inquest was held into his death, and during this time, a number of issues were brought to the surface of the judiciary system. Not only had Akinmurele tried to kill himself twice before, his girlfriend also warned the authorities that he was a danger to himself and had stated he did not want to go to trial.

During his prison stay, Akinmurele had been interviewed by a number of specialists, including doctors and a forensic psychiatrist. According to the psychiatrist, Akinmurele claimed to be 'haunted by the images of his victims', and that it was always on his mind.

Following an attempted suicide while in the segregated unit, Akinmurele was moved to the health care ward of the prison. However, he had managed to make a weapon out of a toothbrush and claimed to fantasize about taking one of the female staff members' hostage, so he was moved back to the segregated section. He was placed on suicide watch, but managed to kill himself just two days later.

Trivia

Quote:

"I can't help the way I feel, what I did was wrong - I know that and I feel for them - but it doesn't mean I won't do it again."

Charles Albright

Date of birth: August 10, 1933

Aliases/Nicknames: The Dallas Ripper, The Dallas Slasher, The Eyeball Killer

Characteristics: Removal of victim's eyes

Number of victims: 3

Date of murders: December 1990 - March 1991

Date of arrest: March 22, 1991

Murder method: Shooting

Known victims: Shirley Williams; Mary Lou Pratt; Susan Peterson

Crime location: Texas

Status: Sentenced to life imprisonment without parole.

Background

Albright was adopted by Fred and Delle Albright after they discovered him in an orphanage. Fortunately for Albright, Delle was a schoolteacher and he was able to jump two grades at school due to her diligence and help with his education. She was a strict parent, yet was overprotective of Albright at the same time.

As a teenager he began shooting small animals with a gun, and showed some interest in taxidermy. His mother, wanting to encourage him in his hobby, would help him stuff the dead animals. By the time he was 13, Albright had already been arrested for aggravated assault, and was known to be a petty thief. Yet his accelerated education enabled him to finish school at 15 and enrol in a university. He had planned to become a doctor, but was unable to complete his pre-med training.

Again he was arrested by the police at the age of 16, for theft, and this time he was sent to prison for a year. On his release, he enrolled in teachers college, majoring in pre-med studies, but was thrown out of the college when stolen property was found in his possession.

It was at this time that Albright embarked on a career in forgery. He created documents showing he had attained both bachelors and masters degrees, which were false, and he began forging signatures. He married his girlfriend from college, and they welcomed a daughter. Albright continued to forge checks, and while he was working as a teacher at a high school, his forgery was discovered, and he was put on probation.

The couple later divorced, in 1974. Albright was caught while stealing merchandise from a hardware store worth hundreds of dollars, and was sent

to prison again, this time for two years. However, he was released after only serving six months.

On his release, he made friends with his neighbors, and he became a trusted babysitter for children in the neighborhood. During a visit to a friend's home in 1981, Albright was caught molesting their 9 year old daughter. At court, he pled guilty and was only placed on probation. According to Albright later, he wasn't guilty but had said he was to avoid hassles.

In 1985, Albright was living in Arkansas where he met a lady named Dixie, who quickly moved in with Albright. Before long, she was supporting him and paying the bills. But early in the mornings, Albright would deliver newspapers, but that wasn't all he was doing - he was also visiting prostitutes without Dixie knowing about it.

Murders

Albright's first murder took place December 13, 1990. The body of prostitute Mary Lou Pratt was discovered in the Oak Cliff neighborhood of Dallas. She had been killed by a gunshot to the back of the head, from a .44-caliber firearm. On examination, she was wearing only a t-shirt and bra, and both had been pushed up to expose her breasts. Mary Lou's eyes were shut, and her face and chest were covered in bruises. When the medical examiner lifted her eyelids, he discovered that both of her eyes had been removed and taken away from the scene.

On February 10, 1991, the body of another prostitute was found, and she also was almost completely nude. Susan Peterson had been shot once through the top of her head, once in the back of her head and once in her left breast. Her body was found just outside of the city limits of South Dallas. She too, was missing her eyes.

Shirley Williams was the third prostitute found dead in the area. She had been shot twice - once through the top of her head and once in the face. She had also suffered a beating, with multiple bruises on her face and a broken nose. Like the other two victims, her eyes had been taken away.

Timeline of murders:

December 13, 1990 - Mary Lou Pratt, 33

February 10, 1991 - Susan Peterson

March 10, 1991 - Shirley Williams

Arrest and Trial

Albright was arrested and charged with three counts of murder on March 22, 1991. The trial started on December 13, 1991, and it seemed at first the prosecution's case was going to collapse, as most of the evidence was only circumstantial. However, there was strong forensic evidence, as hairs from the murder scene of Shirley Williams were matched to Albright.

By December 18, 1991, the jury had already adjourned to deliberate, and they quickly returned the verdict of guilty only for the murder of Shirley Williams.

Outcome

As a result of the conviction, Albright was sentenced to life imprisonment without parole, so will spend the rest of his natural life in prison.

Trivia

- He removed the eyes from all three of his victims, all of whom were prostitutes.
- He was, they said, a kind of Renaissance man – fluent in French and Spanish, a masterful painter, able to woo women by playing Chopin preludes on the piano or reciting poetry by Keats

Rodney Alcala

Date of birth: August 23, 1943

Aliases/Nicknames: Dating Game Killer, John Berger, John Burger

Characteristics: Rape and murder

Number of victims: 5 - 100+

Date of murders: 1977 - 1979

Date of arrest: July 27, 1979

Murder method: Strangulation, beating

Known victims: Robin Samsoe, 12; Jill Barcomb, 18; Georgia Wixted, 27; Charlotte Lamb, 32; Jill Parenteau, 21

Crime location: California

Status: Sentenced to death, awaiting execution.

Background

Rodrigo Jacques Alcalá Buquor was born in San Antonio, Texas, and in 1951, his parents Raoul and Anna Maria Gutierrez moved the family to Mexico. His father later abandoned the family, just three years later. When Alcalá was about 11 years old, he moved to Los Angeles with his mother and his siblings.

At the age of 17, in 1960, Alcalá enlisted in the U.S. Army, and became a clerk. Things started to go very wrong in 1964, when Alcalá went AWOL from the Army and hitchhiked to his mother's house. A military psychiatrist was tasked with assessing Alcalá, and he determined he was suffering with antisocial personality disorder. Subsequently he was medically discharged from the Army.

Alcalá went on to study at the UCLA School of Fine Arts, from which he graduated. He first came under police scrutiny in 1968, following the rape of an eight-year-old girl. He had been seen luring the girl into his apartment, but was able to flee before the police got there, leaving the girl beaten and raped. Alcalá then enrolled in the NYU Film School, studying under Roman Polanski, by using the name John Berger to put the police off his trail.

Over the next several years, Alcalá continued to be arrested for a number of crimes, including assault on a young girl and drug possession, and he later admitted to knocking a 15-year-old girl unconscious and raping her, while posing as a professional photographer.

Although he had been convicted of rape and was therefore a registered sex offender, he was to become a contestant in 1978 on *The Dating Game*, a televised dating show. It is believed he had already murdered two women

by this time. He was described by the host of the show as a photographer who liked motorcycling and skydiving. Remarkably, Alcala won the date with the bachelorette, Cheryl Bradshaw, but she thought he was creepy and refused to go out with him.

Murders

Jill Barcomb was a runaway from New York when she disappeared in 1977. Her body was discovered in a Los Angeles ravine, and she had been 'rolled up like a ball'. At first investigators thought she may have been a victim of the Hillside Strangler, but DNA evidence would later show Alcala to be responsible for her death.

Also murdered in 1977 was Georgia Wixted, who had been bludgeoned to death inside her apartment in Malibu. Charlotte Lamb was murdered in the laundry room of her apartment complex after being raped and strangled. Jill Parenteau was also killed in her apartment in Burbank. These four murders were all linked to Alcala through DNA.

Another murder that took place in 1977 was that of Pamela Jean Lambson. Pamela had gone missing after traveling to Fisherman's Wharf where she had arranged to meet a photographer. Her body was found near a hiking trail in Marin County, naked and battered.

Christine Ruth Thornton also disappeared in 1977 in Wyoming. Her body wasn't found until 1982, but her remains were unidentified until DNA testing was done with samples from her relatives. An autopsy showed she had been around six months' pregnant when she was murdered. Alcala later claimed that he did take the photographs of Christine but denied murdering her.

Twelve-year-old Robin Samsoe had disappeared on June 20, 1979, somewhere between her ballet class and the beach. Her body was discovered several days later, dumped in the Los Angeles foothills.

Timeline of known murders:

1971 Cornelia Crilley
1977 Ellen Hover
1977 Antoinette Wittaker
1977 Jill Barcomb
1977 Georgia Wixted
1977 Pamela Jean Lambson
1977 Christine Ruth Thornton
1978 Joyce Gaunt
1978 Charlotte Lamb
1979 Jill Parenteau
1979 Robin Samsoe

Suspected of the following murders:

July 1977 - Antoinette Wittaker, 13

February 1978 - Joyce Gaunt, 17

Arrest and Trial

Detectives had been circulating a composite sketch of the man suspected of killing Robin Samsoe, and as a result, Alcala was identified by his own parole officer. Officers searched his mother's home, during which they located a receipt for a storage locker belonging to Alcala in Seattle. When they went through the locker, they discovered hundreds of photographs of young girls, many of which were nude, and a pair of earrings identified as belonging to Robin Samsoe, as well as another pair that later would be traced back to Charlotte Lamb through DNA testing.

Alcala was arrested on July 27, 1979 and charged with Robin Samsoe's murder. He went to trial and was found guilty, receiving a death sentence in 1980. In 1984 the sentence was overturned because the jury had been informed of his previous crimes, which wasn't appropriate. It was overturned a second time in 1986 as a result of claims that a witness had been hypnotized!

In 2003, Alcala was linked to two further murders through DNA. By 2010, he had stood trial for five murders - Robin Samsoe, Georgia Wixted, Jill Barcomb, Charlotte Lamb and Jill Parenteau. Alcala was found guilty of all five murders and remained on death row. In 2011 he was indicted for the murders in New York of Ellen Hover and Cornelia Crilley, and he plead guilty to both in December 2012.

There are numerous other cases Alcala is a suspect in, but many won't be prosecuted because he has already received the maximum sentence possible - death.

Outcome

With Alcala posing as a photographer as the main component of his MO, investigators found over 100 photographs in his possession following his arrest. They released 120 of these to the media in the hopes that the public may be able to help identify the women and young girls in the photographs. Police wanted to know if any of them were also murder victims.

In the first weeks of the photographs being made public, around 21 women came forward to identify themselves. In 2013, a family member recognized the woman in one of the photographs and identified her as Christine Thornton, 28, who had been found murdered in 1982 in Wyoming. Alcala was eventually charged with the murder but was unable to travel to Wyoming to stand trial due to ill health.

Along with the photographs released, there were an additional 900 photographs that were too sexually explicit to be shown to the public.

Trivia

- Serial killer Rodney Alcala represented himself at trial, and during questioning morphed into two people. He interrogated himself for five hours on the stand, using a deep voice and calling himself “Mr. Alcala,” then answering in his normal voice. After being sentenced to death in California, he received another 25-year sentence in New York for killing two women.
- Filed a lawsuit against California for a slip and fall incident while incarcerated.
- Filed a lawsuit against California for failing to provide him with a low fat diet while incarcerated.
- Allegedly has an IQ of 160.

Daniel Camargo Barbosa

Date of birth: January 22, 1930

Aliases/Nicknames: Manuel Bulgarin Solis, The Sadist of Chanquito

Characteristics: Murder and Rape

Number of victims: 72 - 150

Date of murders: 1974 - 1986

Date of arrest: February 26, 1986

Murder method: Stabbing and strangulation

Known victims: Unnamed young girls

Location: Columbia, Ecuador

Status: Murdered in prison, November 13, 1994.

Background

When Barbosa was a young boy, his mother died, and his father was described as being emotionally distant yet overbearing. His father remarried, and Barbosa's stepmother was apparently abusive, punishing him regularly, and would dress him up in girls' clothes to humiliate him in front of other children.

As an adult, Barbosa had a live-in relationship with a woman named Alcira, and they went on to have two children together. However, he fell in love with Esperanza, and they had planned to get married until he discovered she wasn't a virgin. Barbosa somehow managed to convince Esperanza that he would stay in a relationship with her, provided she helped him find girls who were virgins that he could have sex with, and she agreed.

Esperanza would lure the young girls to the apartment, and then drug them with sleeping pills so Barbosa could rape them. Five young girls were raped in this manner, but they were all released without any further harm.

However, the fifth girl reported the rape to the authorities, and both were arrested. Barbosa was charged with sexual assault and convicted, sentenced to three years in prison. But another judge was brought in and he was instead sentenced to eight years in prison. After serving the full term, he was released back in to society.

Barbosa was arrested in Brazil in 1973, for not having the correct documentation. He was traveling and living under a false name, which lead to his criminal records being delayed from Columbia, and he was subsequently deported. On his return to Columbia, he began selling televisions on the street in Barranquilla, and not long after this, he embarked on his reign of murderous terror.

Murders

Shortly after returning to Columbia in 1973, Barbosa was walking past a school one day and kidnapped a young nine-year-old girl. He raped her and murdered her so she would not be able to tell the police. This was his first known murder, but it most certainly wouldn't be his last. He was caught and convicted of this murder after returning to the scene of the crime to retrieve a television, and was sentenced to 25 years in prison. In December 1977, he was sent to the prison located on Gorgona, an island off Colombia.

Barbosa escaped in November 1984 using a crudely built boat. He had spent quite a bit of time studying the current of the ocean, and after his escape, the authorities assumed he had either been eaten by sharks or had died at sea. However, he managed to make his way to Quito in Ecuador. From there he traveled to Guayaquil around December 5. On December 18, he kidnapped another nine-year-old girl. The following day he kidnapped a ten-year-old girl.

Between the years of 1984 and 1986, it is estimated Barbosa committed a minimum of 54 murders and rapes in Guayaquil. Because of the high number of victims, the authorities initially thought they were being committed by a group or a gang, never considering it could be the work of just one person.

Barbosa often pretended to be a foreigner who was looking for a church to lure his young victims outside the main part of town. He would flash large amounts of money in front of them and offer to pay them if they showed him how to get to the church. His victims were always young, helpless and poor, many of who would be out on the streets trying to find some work. Once he had convinced them, he would tell them he knew of a shortcut through the woods. If they seemed hesitant or wary, he would let them go,

as there were always plenty of other possible victims out there for him to try again with. When they were out of sight of potential witnesses, he would rape them and then kill them, usually by either strangling or stabbing them. Often the bodies were dismembered using a machete.

When Barbosa was asked later why he preferred children he explained he liked to hear them cry.

Arrest and Trial

On February 26, 1986, Barbosa was arrested just minutes after he murdered a little girl. He had been approached by two policemen who thought he was acting suspiciously, and when they got close to him, they discovered he was carrying a bag that contained the bloodstained clothes of his victim, and a part of her genitals.

He initially told the police his name was 'Manuel Bulgarin Solis', but a surviving rape victim later identified him as Barbosa. While interviewed, he claimed to be responsible for the murders of 72 girls in Ecuador. He then showed the authorities where he had dumped many of the bodies, most of whom had been dismembered. He was convicted in 1989, but received only 25 years imprisonment as his sentence, which is the maximum in Ecuador. He was sent to the Garcia Moreno de Quito jail, which also housed Pedro Alonso Lopez.

Outcome

Barbosa was murdered in prison in November, 1994. His murderer, Luis Masache Narvaez, was the cousin of one of his many victims.

Trivia

- For interviews with journalists, Barbosa tried to demand an expensive fee for the privilege of talking to him.
- He claimed he chose young girls as victims because they ‘cried’ which made the act of killing them more satisfying.
- Barbosa killed because he ‘hated’ women for ‘not being what he believed women were supposed to be’.

Robert Berdella

Date of birth: January 31, 1939

Aliases/Nicknames: Kansas City Butcher, The Bondage Killer

Characteristics: Torture, rape, murder, bodies not found

Number of victims: 6

Date of murders: 1984 - 1987

Date of arrest: April 2, 1988

Murder method: Drug overdose and asphyxiation

Known victims: Robert Sheldon, 18; Jerry Howell, 20; Mark Wallace, 20; James Ferris, 20; Todd Stoops, 21; Larry Pearson, 20

Crime location: Kansas City

Status: Life imprisonment without parole; died in prison of natural causes in 1992.

Background

In 1949, Berdella was born into a Catholic family, and his father was a die setter at the Ford Motor Company while his mother stayed at home.

Berdella suffered from severe nearsightedness, and so at the age of 5, was given thick glasses to wear. Berdella did well at school, although his teachers had difficulty teaching him. He was often bullied by other children at school, most likely because of his glasses.

His father died suddenly at the age of 39, when Berdella was 16 years old. Not long afterwards, his mother remarried, which made Berdella angry and resentful. Around this time Berdella had been working at a local restaurant, and he claimed later that he had been sexually assaulted by one of his male coworkers.

In 1967 Berdella began studying at the Kansas City Art Institute. He had hoped to become a professor, and during his time at the institute he began torturing animals, including a dog, chicken and duck. It was also at this time that he began selling drugs and drinking alcohol, and when he was 19 he was arrested for possession of marijuana and LSD. Luckily for Berdella, he was released five days later as there wasn't enough evidence.

Berdella was eventually expelled from the college following his killing of a dog, supposedly for the sake of his art. He then went on to train as a chef, and became rather successful at it. He even helped set up a training program for other aspiring chefs, and was a member of the local chefs' association. Ironically Berdella was a member of his local neighborhood watch and crime-prevention associations.

By the time Berdella was 32 years old, he was openly gay, and after quitting his work as a chef, he opened an antique type store called Bob's Bizarre

Bazaar. For a while he was in a relationship with a Vietnam veteran, but when this ended he started spending his time with male prostitutes. He would befriend them, and try to help them get out of the prostitution world. But there was much more to Berdella's interest in male prostitutes than simply trying to help them have a better life.

Murders

In July 1984, Berdella drugged his friend Jerry Howell who was a sex worker and kept him captive in the basement of his home overnight. During this time, he raped him repeatedly until he finally ended the torture by asphyxiating him. Less than a year later, Berdella drugged another friend, Robert Sheldon, and kept him in the basement. He had a moment of guilt at one point, and took Sheldon to the doctor for treatment. But then he took him back to the basement and kept him there until he killed him on April 15.

Berdella found Mark Wallace hiding in his shed during a storm in June, and invited him to shelter inside his house. Once inside, he was drugged like the others, and then raped and tortured before being killed. In September he went to a gay bar and met James Ferris. He took him back to his place, and James was held captive for weeks, repeatedly being raped and tortured until he too was murdered.

In June 1986, male prostitute Todd Stoops was lured back to Berdella's house, which wasn't difficult because they had known each other for a while. He was kept captive for six weeks until he died from blood loss and an infection. The following year, Larry Pearson was bailed out of jail by Berdella and ended up locked in the basement. When Berdella tired of Pearson, he bludgeoned him until he was unconscious then put a bag over his head and suffocated him using a ligature around his neck.

The last known victim of Berdella was Chris Bryson, a prostitute, who was abducted in March 1988. Although he too had been locked in the basement, he managed to escape and ran to the house next door and raised the alarm.

Timeline of murders:

July 5, 1984 - Jerry Howell, 20 - held captive for 28 hours

April 12, 1985 - Robert Sheldon, 18

June 22, 1985 - Mark Wallace, 20

September 26, 1985 - Walter James Ferris, 25

June 17, 1986 - Todd Stoops, 21 - torture included electric shocks to his eyelid

June 23, 1987 - Larry Wayne Pearson, 20 - held captive for six weeks

Arrest and Trial

On April 2, 1988, Berdella was arrested. When his home was searched, officers discovered written logs of the torture Berdella had inflicted on his victims and vast numbers of Polaroid photographs of them. Some of the torture included punching his fist into their anal cavity, administering electrical shocks, injecting drain cleaner into the vocal cords, and using cotton swabs to put bleach in their eyes. He also tried to gouge out the eyes of a victim just to 'see what would happen'.

Berdella had kept two skulls buried in his backyard for a while, then dug them up and placed them in a closet with the teeth in envelopes nearby. All of his victims had been dismembered, put into trash bags, and left on the curb for the trash collectors to take to the local landfill. Because of this, the bodies of his victims were never located.

Without the bodies as evidence it was going to be very difficult for the prosecution to get a guilty verdict in court. Therefore, they made a deal with Berdella that if he confessed to his crimes and gave the details of each murder, they wouldn't seek the death penalty - he would only receive a life sentence. Berdella, unaware that there was an issue of lack of evidence, agreed to the deal and plead guilty after confessing. He was sentenced to life imprisonment without the possibility of parole.

Outcome

In 1992, Berdella had written letters to a minister where he claimed the prison officials were preventing him from receiving his heart medication. Not long afterwards, the same year, Berdella died from a heart attack.

Trivia

- He had a collection of Polaroids of his victims and their torture.
- A month before he was arrested, Robert Berdella was offered a ride home by fellow patrons of a bar where he was drinking when they realized he was too drunk to drive. On the way home, he “confessed” to torturing and killing six men, but no one took him seriously, given his level of intoxication.
- Larry Wayne Pearson’s head was buried in Berdella’s garden.

David Berkowitz

Date of birth: June 1, 1953

Aliases/Nicknames: Son of Sam, Richard David Falco (birthname), The .44 Caliber Killer

Characteristics: Neighbor's dog ordered him to kill

Number of victims: 6

Date of murders: 1976 - 1977

Date of arrest: August 10, 1977

Murder method: Shooting

Known victims: Donna Lauria, 18; Christine Freund, 26; Virginia Voskerichian, 21; Valentina Suriani, 18; Alexander Esau, 20; Stacy Moskowitz, 20

Crime location: New York City

Status: Sentenced to three life sentences without parole.

Background

David Berkowitz was actually born Richard David Falco in New York in 1953, to Elizabeth Broder and her married lover Joseph Klineman.

Bizarrely, she chose to give her son the surname Falco, which was the name of her ex-husband. Nobody really knows why she decided to do this, but theories have included that Klineman may have threatened her if she was to use his surname, given he was married already.

The baby was given up for adoption, and a couple named Nathan and Pearl Berkowitz adopted the infant. They owned a hardware store in the Bronx and had been unable to have their own children. They decided to keep the boy's names but reverse them, so he became David Richard Berkowitz. As he grew up, it was noted that his intelligence was above average, but he didn't want to learn. Instead, he became fascinated with pyromania and petty theft.

Because of his bullying and difficult behavior, his parents sought the advice of a psychotherapist, but there was never any legal intervention undertaken and no particular diagnosis was recorded. When Berkowitz was just 14, his adoptive mother passed away from breast cancer, and when his adoptive father remarried, he developed a dislike towards his stepmother.

When he was 18, Berkowitz enrolled in the U.S. Army, and ended up serving in South Korea in 1971. He was honorably discharged in 1974, and at this time he tracked down his birth mother, Elizabeth. They started visiting together, and before long she informed him of the illegitimacy of his birth, which disturbed him greatly. Eventually Berkowitz stopped communicating with Elizabeth but he continued talking to his half-sister Roslyn for a while longer.

It is believed that learning of the circumstances of his birth, including a birth father that wasn't interested, and the scandalous relationship, that this was the crisis point in his already troubled life. It is as though it destroyed his own sense of identity.

Murders

Berkowitz's first attempt at murder took place on Christmas Eve, 1975, when he attacked two women with a knife. One of these women was Michelle Forman who was just a teenager at the time. Although her injuries weren't life-threatening, she was hospitalized. Shortly after this failed attempt, Berkowitz moved to Yonkers in New York.

On July 29, 1976, Jody Valenti and Donna Lauria were sitting in Valenti's car talking about their evening. It was just after 1:00 am, and when Lauria opened the door to leave, she saw a man coming towards the car. The man was Berkowitz, and he pulled a pistol out of the paper bag he had in his hand. He crouched down, aimed the gun with both of his hands and fired at the two young women. Lauria was killed instantly, and Valenti was shot in the thigh. Berkowitz quickly left, without saying anything.

Carl Denaro and Rosemary Keenan were sitting in Keenan's car on October 23, 1976, when all of a sudden the windows of the vehicle shattered. Acting instinctively Keenan started the car immediately and drove off at high speed. At first, they didn't realize they'd been shot at until they noticed Denaro had received a gunshot wound to the head that would eventually need to be repaired with a metal plate.

The next shooting occurred just after midnight, November 27. Joanne Lomino and Donna DeMasi were walking home after seeing a movie, and when they reached Lomino's home, they stood on the front porch talking for a while. A man dressed in military fatigues walked up to them and started to speak as though asking for directions, but instead pulled out a gun and shot the two girls. Lomino was shot in the back and was left a paraplegic and DeMasi received an injury to her neck.

Christine Freund and her fiancé John Diel had just been to see a movie and were sitting in Diel's car getting ready to drive to the local dance hall. At around 12:40 am, shots were fired into the car, and Diel drove off in a panic, trying to get help. Freund had been shot twice and she later succumbed to her injuries several hours later. Diel was largely uninjured.

Virginia Voskerichian was walking home from Columbia University at 7:30 on the night of March 8, 1977, when a man carrying a gun confronted her. She tried to protect herself using her textbooks, but her efforts failed. She was shot in the head and killed.

The next victims of Berkowitz were Alexander Esau and Valentina Suriani. They were sitting in Suriani's car not far from her home at around 3:00 am on April 17, when a man came out of nowhere and shot them both twice. Suriani died from her wounds at the scene, and Esau died hours later at the hospital.

On June 26, 1977, Sal Lupo and Judy Placido were sitting in Lupo's car at around 3:00 am when shots were fired into the vehicle. Lupo received a wound to his forearm, but Placido was the more severely injured, with gunshots to her temple, shoulder and neck. Remarkably, they both survived the attack and later said they had just been talking about the 'Son of Sam' attacks minutes before they were shot.

The last shootings took place in the early hours of July 31, 1977. Once again a young couple, Stacy Moskowitz and Robert Violante, were sitting in their parked car near a park. While they were kissing, a man came up to the passenger side of the car and fired four shots. Both were shot in the head. Moskowitz died later on that day in hospital and Violante lost one eye and suffered serious damage to the vision in his other eye.

This attack was witnessed by a number of people, including a young man named Tommy Zaino who had been sitting in a car parked three cars ahead of Violante's. Zaino had seen the man approaching Violante's car and was able to get a good look at him thanks to the streetlight and the brightness of the moon that night. Now the police had a clear description of the man who had been terrorizing the neighborhood.

Timeline of murders:

July 29, 1976 - Donna Lauria, 18

January 30, 1977 - Christine Freund, 26

March 8, 1977 - Virginia Voskerichian, 19

April 17, 1977 - Alexander Esau, 20

April 17, 1977 - Valentina Suriani, 18

July 31, 1977 - Stacy Moskowitz, 20

Arrest and Trial

Four days after the shooting of Moskowitz and Violante, another witness contacted the police to inform them of what she had seen and heard that night. Cecilia Davis had seen a car being ticketed as it was parked near a fire hydrant on the street, and she recognized the officer as Michael Cataneo. A man walked past her, and looked at her as though he was studying her, and unsettled, she ran home. As she ran, she heard gunshots behind her.

Her statement enabled the police to check every vehicle that had been ticketed on that street that night. One of those cars belonged to Berkowitz - a yellow four-door Ford Galaxy. Investigators asked the local police to arrange an interview with Berkowitz. The Yonkers police had been suspicious about Berkowitz, and informed the investigators of their concerns Berkowitz was in fact 'Son of Sam'.

On August 10, police were outside the home of Berkowitz and on looking through his car windows, they noticed a rifle in plain view. They searched the car, despite not having a warrant, and found more items of interest related to the case. They urgently requested a formal search warrant, but Berkowitz emerged before it arrived. The police felt they had no choice but to arrest Berkowitz, and they did so at gunpoint.

The detective asked Berkowitz "Who have I got?" to which Berkowitz replied, "You know." The detective said he didn't know and asked him to explain who he was. Berkowitz turned to look at him and stated "'I'm Sam."

It only took around half an hour for Berkowitz to confess to the shootings, and he was keen to plead guilty. However, he had claimed during the

interview that he had been told by the neighbor's dog to kill, because it wanted 'the blood of pretty girls'. The name 'Sam' belonged to his former neighbor, Sam Carr, and it was his dog Berkowitz claimed to be possessed by a demon.

Despite his strange and disturbing delusions, Berkowitz was deemed fit to stand trial by three separate mental health examiners. The defense team wanted to plead not guilty by reason of insanity, but Berkowitz wouldn't agree to it. On May 8, 1978, Berkowitz stood up in court and pled guilty to all of the murders.

After further bizarre behavior at his first sentencing appearance, Berkowitz was given another psychiatric examination but once again he was found to be sane. Therefore, on June 12, 1978, he was sentenced to 25 years to life for each murder, and the sentences were to be served consecutively.

Incredibly, he was eligible to apply for parole after 25 years, because of the terms of him pleading guilty.

Outcome

Following his sentencing, Berkowitz spent two months at a psychiatric facility before being sent to Attica prison, one of the toughest correctional facilities in the US. He stayed there until around 1990, when he transferred to Sullivan Correctional Facility, and eventually to the Shawangunk Correctional Facility.

In 1979, Berkowitz was attacked by an inmate which resulted in a slashing wound to the side of his neck. The wound was so severe it needed more than fifty sutures just to close the gaping laceration. Berkowitz would not identify the person who had attacked him, and instead said he was grateful, that it was a 'punishment he deserved'.

Berkowitz first applied for parole in 2002, which was denied. He tried again in 2016, and despite reports that he was a 'model prisoner', his parole was denied again. He remains in prison.

Trivia

Quotes:

"There are other Sons out there, God help the world."

"A 'possessed' dog in the neighborhood won't let me stop killing until he gets his fill of blood."

"I am a monster. I am the Son of Sam. I love to hunt."

"I always had a fetish for murder and death."

"I have several children who I'm turning into killers. Wait till they grow up."

"I didn't want to hurt them, I only wanted to kill them."

"I was literally singing to myself on my way home, after the killing. The tension, the desire to kill a woman had built up in such explosive proportions that when I finally pulled the trigger, all the pressures, all the tensions, all the hatred, had just vanished, dissipated, but only for a short time."

"The demons wanted my penis."

Paul Kenneth Bernardo

Date of birth: August 27, 1964

Aliases/Nicknames: Paul Jason Teale; The Scarborough Rapist; The Schoolgirl Killer

Characteristics: Rape and murder

Number of victims: 3

Date of murders: December 1990 - April 1992

Date of arrest: February 17, 1993

Murder method: Strangulation and drug poisoning

Known victims: Tammy Homolka, 15; Leslie Mahaffy, 14; Kristen French, 15

Crime location: Ontario, Canada

Status: Sentenced to 25 years, classified as dangerous so unlikely to be released.

Background

As a young boy, Bernardo was often described as a happy boy who was always smiling, despite the chaos surrounding him in his family life. His father Kenneth had been arrested and charged with the molestation of a young girl, and it was found he had also been sexually abusing his daughter as well. On learning of her husband's deeds, Bernardo's mother fell into a deep depression, withdrawing herself from the family life around her and living in the basement of their house.

When Bernardo was 16 years old, his mother told him following an argument she had with his father that he was the result of an extramarital affair. Bernardo was disgusted by this, and began calling his mother terrible names, such as 'whore' out in the open, never worrying about who would hear.

After graduating from the Sir Wilfred Laurier Collegiate Institute, Bernardo started working for the company Amway. He became quite fascinated with the motivational tapes and sales culture, and would often practice his selling techniques on women he met in bars. Bernardo started attending the University of Toronto Scarborough, and by then was immersed in dark sexual fantasies, often beating the women he went out with and he would also enjoy humiliating women out in public.

His path crossed with a young woman named Karla Homolka in October 1987, and they had an instant sexual attraction. Even better for Bernardo, Karla encouraged his dark fantasies and sadistic sexual behavior. Now he could do what he wanted and indulge in those fantasies that resided in his twisted mind.

Murders

An already established serial rapist, Bernardo's crimes became even more vicious in 1990, with the murder of his sister-in-law. Tammy Homolka was the younger sister of Karla, Bernardo's fiancé, and he flirted with her all the time. He became rather obsessed with the younger girl, and went from looking through her window to going into her bedroom while she was sleeping and masturbating. Karla, eager to please, actually broke the catches on the windows in Tammy's room to make it easier for Bernardo to enter.

On the night of July 24, 1990, Karla cooked dinner and served Tammy's laced with crushed Valium tablets. She quickly became unconscious, and Karla watched while Bernardo raped her. But this wasn't to be the end of the attacks on Tammy.

The night of December 23, 1990, Tammy was given a rum - eggnog cocktail which was laced with sleeping pills. Tammy, 15, fell into unconsciousness quickly again, but this time, after they had undressed her Karla placed a cloth soaked with Halothane, an anesthetic, over her nose and mouth. The couple then set up a video camera and filmed themselves as they raped unconscious Tammy. At one point Tammy started vomiting, and when attempts to revive her failed, Karla and Bernardo finally called emergency services. But they made sure she was dressed and placed in another room first to hide any evidence of what they had done. Tammy never woke up, and a few hours later, she was pronounced dead.

Six months later, on June 15, 1991, Bernardo was driving through Burlington when he came across Leslie Mahaffy, 14. It was the early hours of the morning and because she had missed her curfew, she had been locked out of the house. Bernardo approached her, and she asked if he had a

cigarette. She followed him back to his car, and was quickly blindfolded and forced in.

When they reached Bernardo and Karla's house, the couple began to play out the same ritual they had done with Tammy. They tortured and raped Mahaffy, videotaping the whole event. Her hands were tied, and the blindfold was still in place, but at one point she stated the blindfold was slipping, which meant she could see Bernardo and Karla. They continued to rape and torture her through the night.

The next day, Mahaffy was given a lethal dose of the drug Halcion, which was administered by Karla according to Bernardo. But Karla had a different story - she claimed the young girl was actually strangled to death by Bernardo. Either way, they now had to dispose of the body, and decided to dismember her body and seal the pieces in cement. The next day, Bernardo purchased bags of cement and stupidly kept the receipts.

Using his grandfather's circular saw, Mahaffy was cut up and put into the cement which was made in to blocks. They then transported the blocks to Lake Gibson to dump them, making several trips. Some of the blocks were heavy, and despite their best efforts, one remained close to the shore and it was found on June 29, 1991 by a man who was fishing with his son.

The next murder took place on April 16, 1992. The couple was now scouring the streets looking for potential victims, and on this afternoon they saw Kristen French, 15, walking along the street. Karla approached the girl carrying a map, under the ruse of being lost and needing directions. As French attempted to help Karla, Bernardo attacked her from behind at knifepoint and forced her into the car.

French's ordeal lasted longer than the others, as she was raped, sodomized and tortured throughout the three days of Easter weekend. To help subdue

her, she was forced to drink vast amounts of alcohol. All of this was videotaped by the couple once again. This time they hadn't bothered to blindfold her, so it seemed their intention was to kill her right from the start.

She was killed the next day, with Bernardo later claiming Karla had beaten her with a rubber mallet and French had been accidentally strangled by a noose around her neck that was tied to a chest. However, Karla claimed Bernardo spent seven minutes strangling the girl while she watched.

When her nude body was found on April 30, 1992, it was clear that she had been washed, and someone had cut off her hair. Her body was in a ditch on the side of the road in Burlington. Investigating officers originally thought the hair was cut so the killer could keep a trophy, but Karla later explained it was to try and slow down the identification of the body.

Timeline of murders:

December 23, 1990 - Tammy Homolka, 15

June 15, 1991 - Leslie Mahaffy, 14

April 16, 1992 - Kristen French, 15

Arrest and Trial

Bernardo and Karla had both been interviewed by the police on numerous occasions previously for a variety of reasons, including the death of Tammy, the Scarborough rapes and Bernardo's habit of stalking women. A report was filed on May 12, 1992, that Bernardo should be interviewed again for the death of French, and he was briefly interviewed, with the officers thinking he wasn't likely to be their suspect.

The Green Ribbon Task Force was created three days later to investigate the murders of Mahaffy and French. Bernardo and Karla applied to have their names legally changed to the surname 'Teale' which was the name of a fictional serial killer from a movie. In December, Karla was beaten by Bernardo and ended up requiring treatment at the local hospital, and she laid battery charges against Bernardo. He was arrested but released and Karla went to stay with relatives. By now DNA testing was being done on the evidence from the crime scenes and samples Bernardo had provided two years prior.

The DNA testing came back as a match, and investigators started surveillance of Bernardo. They interviewed Karla on February 9, 1993, telling her of their suspicions of his involvement in the rapes and murders, but she said nothing. Until later that night, when Karla finally confessed everything to her uncle and aunt she had been staying with. Two days later, Karla met with a lawyer and sought full immunity in exchange for her cooperation. But, on February 13, it was decided that full immunity was not a possibility given the level of her involvement.

Bernardo was finally arrested on February 17, 1993. Because of the limitations and specifications of the search warrants, it took investigators 71 days to fully search Bernardo's house. They desperately tried to find the

videotapes Karla had mentioned but only managed to find a short tape of Karla involved in oral sex with an unidentified woman. Eventually Karla was offered a plea bargain on May 5, 1993, which meant she would only receive a sentence of 12 years if she gave evidence against her husband. She agreed.

Bernardo went to trial in 1995 for the murders of Mahaffy and French. Despite trying to convince the jury that Karla was the actual murderer, or that the deaths had been accidental, he was found guilty on September 1, 1995 of two counts of first degree murder and two counts of aggravated sexual assault. He was sentenced to life in prison, with the possibility of parole after 25 years. However, he was declared a 'Dangerous Offender' which means it is unlikely he will ever be paroled.

Outcome

While in prison, Bernardo has been subjected to a number of attacks, and was subsequently moved into a segregation unit for his own safety. He is eligible to apply for parole in February 2018, but is unlikely to be released.

Trivia

- Bernard was once an Amway salesman
- Bernardo scored 35/40 on the Psychopathy Checklist
- Has a degree in accounting
- While incarcerated, Bernardo wrote and published a book on Amazon in November 2015 called 'A MAD World Order'. It was a graphically violent thriller, and due to public complaints, it was removed from Amazon after becoming a bestseller.

Marie Besnard

Date of birth: August 15, 1896

Aliases/Nicknames: The Good Lady of Loudun

Characteristics: Poisoning for financial gain

Number of victims: 0 - 12

Date of murders: 1927 - 1949

Date of arrest: July 21, 1949

Murder method: Arsenic poisoning

Known victims: Suspected: Auguste Antigny, 33 (her first husband); Marie Lecomte, 86; Toussaint Rivet, 64; Blanche Rivet, 49; Pierre Davaillaud, 78 (her father); Louise Gouin, 92 (her maternal grandmother); Marcellin Besnard, 78 (her stepfather); Marie-Louise Besnard, 68 (her stepmother); Lucie Bodin, 45; Pauline Bodineau, 88; Virginie Lalleron, 83; Marie-Louise Davaillaud, 71 (her mother)

Crime location: Loudun, France

Status: Subsequently acquitted following three trials.

Background

In 1896, Marie Jos é phine Philippine Davaillaud was born in Loudun, France. Her parents were considered frugal, and she attended a convent school for her education. Those who went to school with Marie described her as immoral, vicious, a thief and a girl who ran wild with the boys.

In 1920, Marie married Auguste Antigny, her cousin, and they remained married until his death in 1927. Marie went on to marry L é on Besnard in 1928, rather quickly following the death of her first husband Auguste. The couple soon realized that any chance of gaining a fortune was out of their hands until their relatives died. How surprising it was, that not long afterwards, various relatives died leaving their financial fortunes to Marie and L é on.

Murders

Not long after Leon's parents inherited a lot of money, they were invited to come and live with Leon and Marie. Soon after, Leon's father died of poisoning, supposedly from eating the wrong kind of mushrooms. Just three months later his mother also died, and the cause was given as pneumonia.

The couple ended up subletting some rooms to a couple who were wealthy and without children. The Rivets, Toussaint and Blanche, were friends of Leon's. On July 14, 1939, Toussaint died from pneumonia, and in December of 1941, Blanche died due to aortitis. In their will, Marie was listed as their only heir.

Marie was also the named beneficiary of the wills of her cousin's Pauline Bodineau and Virginie Lalleron. On July 1, 1945, Pauline, who was 88, apparently mistook a bowl of lethal lye for a bowl of dessert and died. A week later, Virginie allegedly did exactly the same thing and died. Six months later, Marie's mother, Marie-Louise Davaillaud also died, January 16, 1946.

At one point Marie discovered Leon had been having an affair with another woman. Leon claimed to a friend that he thought Marie was poisoning him, saying she had served some soup to him one night but there was already a liquid in the bowl before she poured the soup. Shortly afterwards, on October 25, 1947, Leon was dead. The cause given was uremia.

Because of the claims of poisoning Leon had made, the gendarmerie ordered an investigation, and an autopsy was conducted. The forensic surgeon found that Leon's body contained 19.45mg of arsenic. Marie was promptly arrested and all other suspicious deaths around her were exhumed and re-examined. This led to Marie being charged with 13 counts of murder.

Arrest and Trial

The autopsy reports showed that each victim had been poisoned by arsenic slowly over a period of time. At that time though, it was difficult to prove this as toxicology was a relatively new science, and Beroud, the forensic surgeon, had difficulty explaining his results and defending them when questioned on the stand by the defense lawyers. For this reason, the first two trials resulted in no conviction.

She was placed on trial a third time in 1961. However, the defense was once again successful in undermining the relevance of the arsenic evidence, and Marie was acquitted of all of the murders.

Outcome

So, although in today's legal system Marie would most likely have been convicted based on the autopsy findings, it wasn't to be the case in 1961. It may seem that she shouldn't be considered a serial killer without a conviction, but the evidence suggests otherwise, and therefore she has earned her place in this book.

Marie Besnard died in 1980, presumably from natural causes. She remained a free woman until her death.

Kenneth Alessio Bianchi and Angelo Buono

Date of birth: May 22, 1951; October 5, 1934

Aliases/Nicknames: The Hillside Strangler

Characteristics: Kidnapping, torture, rape, murder

Number of victims: 12

Date of murders: 1977 - 1979

Date of arrest: January 13, 1979; October 22, 1979

Murder method: Strangulation

Known victims: Yolanda Washington, 19; Judith Ann Miller, 15; Lissa Kastin, 21; Jane King, 28; Delores Cepeda, 12; Sonja Johnson, 14; Kristin Weckler, 20; Lauren Wagner, 18; Kimberley Martin, 17; Cindy Lee Hudspeth, 20; Karen Mandic, 22; Diane Wilder, 27

Crime location: Los Angeles County, California

Status: Life in prison for Bianchi, and life without parole for Buono. Buono died in prison, September 21, 2002, due to natural causes.

Background

As one half of what would later become a well-known killing duo, Kenneth Alessio Bianchi was born in Rochester New York, in 1951. His mother was a prostitute and an alcoholic, and he was placed up for adoption within two weeks of his birth. Within a few months he was adopted by Nicholas Bianchi and Frances Scioliono-Bianchi, who was the sister of Angelo Buono's mother.

From a very young age, Bianchi was described as being a compulsive liar, and his mother would say 'he had risen from the cradle dissembling'. According to witnesses, Bianchi would go into a trance-like state, where he would be unresponsive and his eyes would roll back. He was subsequently diagnosed with petit mal epilepsy. He also had a problem with urination, and was subjected to a number of doctors' visits and physical examinations, where his genitals were scrutinized, poked and prodded, which Bianchi found humiliating.

Bianchi suffered from terrible 'fits of anger', and his behavior led to multiple appointments with a psychiatrist, where he was eventually diagnosed with a form of passive-aggressive personality disorder when he was ten years old. A year later, his IQ was measured and found to be 116, which was above-average, yet he underachieved at school and did not get along with his teachers, which led to him changing schools twice.

When his father died in 1964, Bianchi showed no emotion, not even crying. The loss of her husband suddenly meant that Bianchi's mother had to go to work, and often she would keep him home for extended periods. However, he still managed to graduate high school in 1971.

Bianchi was briefly married not long after he graduated, but it only lasted several months before his wife left him. He enrolled in college but only managed one semester before dropping out. From there he drifted from job to job, until he landed work at a jewelry store as a security guard. This job enabled him to steal, and his girlfriends and the prostitutes he frequented were often the recipients of the valuables.

In 1977, Bianchi moved to Los Angeles, and began spending a lot of his time with his cousin, Angelo Buono. Buono was a lot older than Bianchi, and the younger man was impressed by the clothes and jewelry his cousin wore, and his ability to date many women. They decided to work as pimps together, but this was only the beginning of what was yet to come.

Angelo Buono

Like Bianchi, Buono was also born in Rochester, New York. His parents were first generation emigrants from Italy. They would eventually divorce, and Buono moved to Glendale, California with his mother. From a young age, Buono developed a loathing towards women, though it is unknown why, and despite this, he later married several women, and sired numerous children. Buono displayed shocking brutality towards the women in his life.

In 1975, Buono had a successful auto-upholstery business, and he used this to help him lure young girls so he could rape them. When his cousin Bianchi turned up on his doorstep, they quickly discovered that they had similar fantasies about raping and murdering women.

Murders

On their own, both men were dangerous individuals, but together they made a terrifying, sadistic and lethal combination. They would drive around the Los Angeles streets at night, pretending to be undercover police officers, and showing their fake badges to women they came across. Then, they would demand the women get into Buono's car, which they claimed was an unmarked police car, and take them back to Buono's home under false pretenses.

Their victims came from all walks of life, and the youngest was just 12 years old when they murdered her. They both took great joy in sexually abusing and torturing their victims before ending their lives, usually by strangulation. Their victims were subjected to vile and sadistic torture, including electric shocks, injections with chemicals and poisoning with carbon monoxide gas.

While Bianchi and Buono were picking women up and murdering them, Bianchi actually applied to be a police officer, and had even been on several 'ride-alongs' with officers to gain experience and insight into the job. Some of these trips even involved the search for the Hillside Strangler. If only they had known, he was sitting in the back seat of their police car the whole time.

One evening, after they had already successfully murdered ten women, Bianchi told Buono about the ride-alongs he had been on with the police, and how he was actually being questioned about the murdered women. Buono was furious and told Bianchi that if he didn't move to Bellingham, he would kill him. So, Bianchi moved to Bellingham in 1978.

In Bellingham Bianchi was working as a security guard, and on January 11, 1979, he lured two young students, both of who were female, to a house he was meant to be guarding. He made the first woman go down the stairs, where he promptly strangled her, and then he repeated the process with the second victim.

But Bianchi wasn't as clever as Buono, and he left a lot of clues at the scene which lead to him being arrested the following day. Once under arrest, Bianchi opened his mouth and confessed that he and Buono had once tried to abduct a woman, but had let her go. Now he had alerted the police to Buono's involvement.

Timeline of murders:

October 17, 1977 - Yolanda Washington, 19

October 31, 1977 - Judith Lynn Miller, 15

November 6, 1977 - Lissa Kastin, 21

November 10, 1977 - Jane King, 28

November 13, 1977 - Dolores Cepeda, 12

November 13, 1977 - Sonja Johnson, 14

November 20, 1977 - Kristina Weckler, 20

November 29, 1977 - Lauren Wagner, 18

December 9, 1977 - Kimberley Martin, 17

February 16, 1978 - Cindy Lee Hudspeth, 20

January 11, 1979 - Karen Mandic, 22

January 11, 1979 - Diane Wilder, 27

Arrest and Trial

Buono was arrested based on Bianchi's confessions, and their trials for the murders were set. Bianchi pleaded not guilty by reason of insanity, trying to convince the authorities that he had another personality. He claimed this personality, 'Steve Walker', was the one who had committed the murders. Initially, psychiatric assessments lead to the conclusion that he was indeed suffering from a multiple personality disorder.

However, the investigators brought in another psychiatrist to assess Bianchi and he came up with a different opinion. While talking to Bianchi, he told him that people with multiple personality disorder usually have three or more personalities. Immediately Bianchi created another personality and his ruse was blown. When confronted, he admitted he had faked it all. He was however diagnosed later with antisocial personality disorder.

During his trial, the defense team brought forward Veronica Compton, who Bianchi had started a relationship with while he was in prison. She lied, telling a false story about the crimes in an effort to show Bianchi was innocent. At one point she admitted she wanted to buy a mortuary along with another convicted murderer so they could indulge in necrophilia. Compton even went so far as to try and strangle a woman in a motel room, to try and make authorities think the Hillside Strangler was still out on the loose. She had been given some semen by Bianchi to plant on the victim. But, all her attempts failed, the woman survived, and she herself ended up being convicted and imprisoned for attempted murder.

To try and make his sentence more lenient, Bianchi agreed to testify against his cousin Buono. But, when it came time to testify, he made the whole process as difficult as possible, contradicting himself and being downright

uncooperative. He was convicted of the murders and received a life sentence.

Buono's trial became one of the longest in legal history in the US, and ran from November 1981 - November 1983. Despite Bianchi's efforts to try and use his incoherent testimony to help Buono get off the charges or at least get a lighter sentence, Buono was convicted of committing nine murders. He was sentenced to life imprisonment without the possibility of parole.

Outcome

Bianchi tried to sue a woman in 1992 for using his face on a trading card. He claimed that his face was his trademark, and therefore he wanted \$8.5million in compensation. The case was dismissed, and the judge stated that 'if Bianchi had been using his face as a trademark when he was killing women, he would not have tried to hide it.'

Bianchi was eligible for parole in 2010, but it was denied on August 18. He can apply for parole again in 2025.

On September 21, 2002, Buono was found deceased in his cell, having suffered a fatal heart attack.

Trivia

Bianchi:

- Bianchi wed a Louisiana pen pal in September 1989 in a prison chapel ceremony.
- Actors who have portrayed him include: Billy Zane, C. Thomas Howell, Clifton Collins Jr., and Jeff Marchelletta.
- Has a measured IQ of 116 signifying above average intelligence.

Buono:

- In 2007, Christopher Buono, his grandson, shot and killed his grandmother then committed suicide. Christopher hadn't known who his grandfather actually was until 2005.
- Actors who have portrayed Buono include: Dennis Farina, Nicholas Turturro and Tomas Arana.
- Buono married Christine Kizuka in 1986 while he was incarcerated.
- His hero and role model was the famed criminal, Caryl Chessman.

Bible John

Date of birth: Unknown

Aliases/Nicknames: Bible John

Characteristics: Rape, beating, murder

Number of victims: 3

Date of murders: February 22, 1968 –October 31, 1969

Date of arrest: Unknown suspect

Murder method: Strangulation

Known victims: Patricia Docker, 25; Jemima McDonald, 32; Helen Puttock, 29

Crime location: Glasgow, Scotland

Status: Unsolved

Background

Between the years of 1968 and 1969, three young women were murdered in Glasgow Scotland, after attending the Barrowland Ballroom. Although it was quickly established that these murders were the work of just one man, there were no clues left behind at the scenes to indicate who the murderer could be. There have been a number of suspects over the years, and one man in particular was top of the suspect list. However, Bible John's true identity has never been uncovered, and the case remains a mystery.

Murders

The nude body of Patricia Docker, 25, was found in a lane by a man on his way to work, on February 23, 1968. She was only meters away from her home, and the night before she had told her parents she was going to a dance at the Majestic Ballroom, a club in Hope Street, Glasgow, Scotland. But, instead of just going there, she also went to the Barrowland Ballroom which was holding an over-25's night. Her autopsy showed she had been raped and strangled, and it was believed she may have met her killer at the Barrowland. Despite extensive searching, her clothes and bag were never found.

How the next victim's body was found is truly tragic. Jemima McDonald was a 32-year-old mother of three children, who had gone to the Barrowland Ballroom on Friday, August 15, 1969. The next day, her sister Margaret had heard children talking about a body they had seen in an old building, but at first she didn't pay too much attention. By Monday, and with no sign of her sister, Margaret decided to investigate the rumors she had heard from the children. Inside the building she found the fully clothed body of her sister Jemima. Her autopsy showed she had been raped, beaten and strangled.

Witnesses came forward saying they had seen Jemima leaving the Barrowland around midnight that Friday with a young man who was slim, tall, and had red hair. Further investigations uncovered a witness who claimed she had heard screaming coming from the old building the night Jemima was killed, but she was unable to say what time she had heard it, so the police didn't consider it important.

The third known victim was Helen Puttock, 29, who was found in her own back garden on October 31, 1969. Like the others, she had also attended the

Barrowland Ballroom on the night she was killed, along with her sister Jean. They had met two men there, one of who was called John who said he was from Castlemilk. The other man didn't disclose who he was or where he was from. When they left the ballroom, John went off to catch a bus, and the other man joined Helen and Jean in getting a taxi. According to Jean, the man was very well-spoken and liked to quote from the Bible, which is why the killer ended up being called 'Bible John'. Jean was dropped off at her home in Knightswood and the taxi headed for the direction of Helen's home in Scotstoun.

Helen had been raped and strangled, just like the others. This time her handbag had been upended nearby, the contents scattered, but the bag itself was missing. She had grass stains on her feet, which showed she most likely tried to get away from her killer. There was also a human bite mark on one of her legs.

Of note, each of the women killed was menstruating at the time of their murder. The killer had placed sanitary napkins or tampons either on the bodies or near them.

Suspects

Jean's description of the man in the taxi:

- Well dressed and well-spoken
- slim
- Red/fair hair
- Said his name was 'John Templeton' or 'Sempleson'
- Quoted from the Bible
- Aged between 25-30
- Height around 5 feet 10 inches

But, the bouncers who had been working at the Barrowland Ballroom that night gave a completely different description of the man who had left in the taxi with Helen and Jean. Their description was:

- Short
- Well-spoken
- Jet black hair

The police were inclined to believe the description given by the bouncers because Jean had been intoxicated at the time. She denied being drunk during the taxi ride, and stood by her description of the man she believed attacked and killed her sister. There was a sighting of a man matching Jean's description as he got off a bus at Gray Street around 1:30 am that morning. He was described as looking disheveled and it seemed he had scratch marks on his face.

One suspect the police considered later was John Irvine McInnes. He had served with the Scots Guards and committed suicide in 1980. In 1996, his body was exhumed so DNA testing could be carried out, but this came back as inconclusive. It's not clear why he was considered a suspect, and

although the test didn't prove anything, it was deemed there was not enough other evidence to pin the murders on McInnes.

In 2004, a DNA sample taken from a minor crime scene came back as an 80% match to the sample obtained from Bible John's murders. This lead police to consider the person responsible for the murders was most likely related to the man charged with the minor crime. However, nothing further has come from this angle.

The most well-known suspect is Peter Tobin who is mentioned in this book. He came to light as a potential suspect after being arrested and charged with murder in 2007. The reasons why are as follows:

- Early photos of Tobin are very similar to the identikit picture of Bible John
- Tobin's ex-wives all claimed to have been throttled, raped and beaten by him
- Tobin had been living in Glasgow at the time and moved away in 1969
- He used to frequent the Barrowland Ballroom
- Tobin met his first wife at the ballroom at the same time as the murders stopped
- Tobin had strong religious views and was a Roman Catholic
- Tobin became enraged by a woman's menstrual cycle

During the police investigation Operation Anagram, a woman came forward and claimed she had met Tobin at the Barrowland in 1968 and he had raped her. In 2010 another woman came forward and said she had met Tobin at the Barrowland and it was a 'threatening experience'. He persistently tried to get her to accompany him to a party in Castlemilk but

she refused. When she saw pictures of Tobin in 2010, she was certain that he was Bible John.

Unfortunately, it is unlikely there will ever be a DNA match done with Tobin. According to police, the original samples from the crime scenes hadn't been stored correctly and had deteriorated. Helen's sister Jean, who provided the most widely accepted description of Bible John passed away in 2010, never knowing who really killed her sister.

Trivia

- There are 50,000 witness statements in the files, over 1000 suspects have been interviewed, and 100 plus detectives have been on the case.

Richard Biegenwald

Date of birth: August 24, 1940

Aliases/Nicknames: The Thrill Killer

Characteristics: Robbery and murder

Number of victims: 6-9+

Date of murders: 1958; 1981-1982

Date of arrest: January 22, 1983

Murder method: Shooting, stabbing

Known victims: Stephen Sladowski, 47 (store owner); Maria Ciallella, 17; Deborah Osborne, 17; Betsy Bacon, 17; Anna Olesiewicz, 18; William J. Ward, 34 (drug dealer); John P. Petrone

Crime location: New York, New Jersey

Status: Death sentence commuted to life. Died in prison on March 10, 2008, due to natural causes.

Background

Richard Biegenwald had a terrible start in life at the hands of his alcoholic father. Born in Rockland County, New York, Biegenwald was regularly beaten by his father, and by the time he was five years old, serious problems were starting to emerge. It was at this age that Biegenwald set fire to the family home, and was sent to the Rockland County Psychiatric Center for observation.

Biegenwald was not only gambling by the age of eight, but also drinking alcohol. He continued to receive psychiatric treatment, and when he was nine years old, he was subjected to electroshock therapy at Bellevue Hospital in New York. Following this treatment, he was sent to the State Training School for Boys, also in New York. He was no model student, and was accused of inciting escape attempts amongst the other inmates, and was frequently accused of theft.

Biegenwald would steal money from his mother when he visited her, and during a visit when he was 11, he set himself on fire. At the age of 16, he was released from the State Training School so he could attend regular high school. This only lasted a few weeks before he dropped out, and not long afterwards, he moved to Nashville, Tennessee.

During the two years he lived in Nashville, Biegenwald stole a car, and was arrested by federal agents in Kentucky for driving a stolen vehicle across the state lines. When he was released by Kentucky, he went to Staten Island, where he proceeded to steal another car. This time he drove it to a grocery store in Bayonne, New Jersey, and attempted to rob the store. It was during this robbery that Biegenwald committed his first murder.

Murders

The first murder took place in Bayonne, New Jersey on December 18, 1958, during a robbery. Biegenwald and an accomplice held up a grocery store, and Biegenwald shot and killed Stephen Sladowski, the proprietor. Despite fleeing the state immediately after the murder, Biegenwald was tracked down two days later and arrested. He was taken back to New Jersey and subsequently convicted of murder, for which he was given a life sentence. But, after 17 years of good behavior, Biegenwald was released in 1975.

Between the years 1978 and April 1982, there were at least three more murders, but Biegenwald wasn't linked to these until much later on. In June 1978, John P. Petrone, a former police informant and ex-convict, was shot to death at an old abandoned airport in Flemington, New Jersey. On November 1, 1981, Maria Ciallella was murdered by Biegenwald and buried at his mother's property. Then on April 8, 1982, Biegenwald stabbed Deborah Osbourne to death. Her body was buried on top of Ciallella's at Biegenwald's mother's home.

On August 28, 1982, Anna Olesiewicz was walking along the boardwalk in Asbury Park when she came across Biegenwald. He lured the young woman into his car, and she was subsequently shot four times in the head. Her body was dumped in a wooded area behind the local Burger King on Route 35 in January 1983, and found by a group of children.

Biegenwald was also suspected of killing Virginia Clayton, a 17-year-old girl who was abducted and murdered on September 8, 1982. Three days later her body was found, just four miles away from where Petrone had been buried. Although suspected, Biegenwald has never been charged with this murder.

William Ward also went missing in September 1982. A friend of Biegenwald's, Ward was a prison escapee and a drug dealer. His body was found in a shallow grave at a cemetery, having been shot four times in the head.

Known victims:

1958 - Stephen Sladowski—shot to death after a robbery attempt in Bayonne, New Jersey

June 1978 - John P. Petrone - shot to death at an abandoned airport in Flemington, New Jersey

November 1, 1981 - Maria Ciallella—shot and dismembered. She was buried at Biegenwald's mother's house.

April 8, 1982 - Deborah Osbourne—stabbed to death. She was buried on top of Ciallella's body at Biegenwald's mother's house.

August 28, 1982 - Anna Olesiewicz— shot four times in the head after being lured away from the Asbury Park boardwalk. Her body was left behind a Burger King in Ocean Township, NJ.

September 1982 -William Ward—drug dealer shot and killed by Biegenwald at his home in Asbury Park.

Arrest and Trial

Biegenwald came under investigation after a friend of his wife's reported to the police that he had shown her a dead woman's body in his garage in Asbury Park. On January 22, 1983, police surrounded the home Biegenwald shared with his friend Dherran Fitzgerald. They created a ruse to get Biegenwald out of the house, and once he stepped out, officers grabbed him. Fitzgerald tried to hide in one of the rooms, but police found him and arrested him as well.

While Fitzgerald was being interviewed, he told officers that Biegenwald had shown him the dead body of a young woman in his garage. The body was then taken to the area behind the Burger King and dumped. He also admitted helping Biegenwald take another body to his mother's house and they had buried it in the basement and during this dig, they unearthed another body that had been there a while. All in all, Fitzgerald showed police where to find three other victims as well as the two buried at Biegenwald's mother's house.

Despite there being nine known victims, there was only enough evidence to charge Biegenwald with five counts of murder in the first degree. At his trial he was convicted on all counts, and sentenced to death. However, his sentence was later overturned, and instead he was sentenced to four life sentences without the possibility of parole.

Outcome

On March 10, 2008, Biegenwald was transferred from the penitentiary to a local medical center, where he died of natural causes. An autopsy determined he had suffered from kidney and respiratory failure.

Arthur Gary Bishop

Date of birth: September 29, 1952

Aliases/Nicknames: Roger Downs, Lynn Jones

Characteristics: Pedophilia

Number of victims: 5

Date of murders: 1979 - 1983

Date of arrest: July 24, 1983

Murder method: Drowning, beating with hammer

Known victims: Alonzo Daniels, age 4; Kim Peterson, age 11; Danny Davis, age 4; Troy Ward, age 6; Graeme Cunningham, age 13

Crime location: Salt Lake City, Utah

Status: Executed by lethal injection June 9, 1988

Background

Bishop was born in Hinckley, Utah, and would become the eldest of six brothers. The children were raised in a devout Latter-day Saint (also known as Mormon) household, and when Bishop was 19, he served as a religious missionary in the Philippines.

This former honor student and Eagle Scout was first arrested in 1978 for embezzlement. He received a five-year suspended sentence, but he skipped his parole and took off to Salt Lake City. While there, he assumed the alias Roger Downs. Following his conviction for the embezzlement, Bishop was excommunicated by the Latter-day Saints church.

As Roger Downs, Bishop joined the 'Big Brother' program, where adult men take on the role of big brother to underprivileged children, or those who need a good male role model. There were never any suspicions that Bishop may have been abusing the children he cared for in the program, but when he was later arrested for murder, dozens of these children came forward and accused him of abuse.

Murders

Bishop's first victim, Alonzo Daniels, was killed on October 14, 1979 after Bishop had lured the young boy away from his apartment. By promising him candy, Alonzo willingly went into Bishop's apartment. Bishop tried to assault the boy sexually, then drowned him in the bathtub. His body was buried in the desert.

Bishop used a similar method to lure Kim Peterson to his apartment. Kim, 11, had been at a skating rink trying to sell a pair of roller-skates, and Bishop feigned interest in buying them. Once at his apartment, Bishop killed Kim by bludgeoning him to death. His body was buried in the same area as Alonzo Daniels. Bishop was questioned about this disappearance as a matter of routine, but wasn't considered a suspect.

On October 20, 1981, Bishop managed to lure another very young boy away from a supermarket. Danny Davis was just four years old, and he went with Bishop back to his apartment. His disappearance resulted in a massive search and manhunt, but witnesses could only give vague descriptions of the man they had seen with Danny.

Troy Ward, 6, was abducted by Bishop on June 22, 1983. He was taken from a park to Bishop's apartment. Again witnesses saw the man with Troy but couldn't identify him. Like the other boys, Troy was sexually assaulted, bludgeoned, then drowned in the bathtub.

All of a sudden Bishop's killing escalated, as the next victim was killed just a month after Troy's murder. On July 14, Graeme Cunningham, 13, disappeared from his neighborhood. This time Bishop had made a critical error. It was known that Graeme was about to go on a camping trip with a friend, and they had a male chaperone coming with them - Arthur Bishop.

This lead police to take a closer look at Bishop, and they discovered that he had lived in the vicinity of four of the missing children and was friends with Graeme's parents.

Timeline of murders:

October 14, 1979 - Alonzo Daniels, 4

November 8, 1980 - Kim Peterson, 11

October 20, 1981 - Danny Davis, 4

June 22, 1983 - Troy Ward, 6

July 14, 1983 - Graeme Cunningham, 13

Arrest and Trial

Bishop was brought in to the police station for questioning, but he was led to believe that he was simply helping the police with their enquiries into the disappearance of Graeme Cunningham. At the time, Bishop had been using the name 'Roger Downs', and once they were able to convince him to give them his real name, it didn't take long for him to make his confession.

Bishop confessed to killing all five children, and the day after his arrest, he took them to the desert area of Cedar Fort where three of the bodies were buried, and to Big Cottonwood Creek where he had buried the two recent bodies. Bishop told the police that he enjoyed killing because it gave him a thrill, and he would do it again.

His trial began on February 27, 1984, and Bishop tried to claim that his addiction to child pornography had led him to act out his violent fantasies. The trial lasted until March 19, 1984, and Bishop was found guilty of five counts of aggravated murder, five counts of aggravated kidnapping, and one count of sexually abusing a minor. Bishop was sentenced to death, and requested that his execution be done by lethal injection.

Outcome

On June 10, 1988, Bishop was executed by lethal injection at the Utah State Prison. Just before he was put to death, he professed his remorse for the crimes he had committed. He had spent his last day reading Mormon scriptures, resting, and meeting with his lawyer, a biographer, a psychologist and a bishop. He had refused his last meal, deciding to fast on his last day on earth.

He was taken into the execution chamber about 30 minutes before midnight, and by 12:15 am he was pronounced dead. Unlike most other death row inmates, Bishop was tired of all the tediousness involved in trying to get his sentence commuted, so he stopped all final appeals and was ready to die.

Trivia

- Final statement before his execution - "Jesus, thou Son of God, have mercy on my soul."
- He said to a prison psychologist - "I don't want to die, but I think it's necessary".

Portion of letter written by Bishop to explain why he committed the murders:

"I am a homosexual pedophile convicted of murder, and pornography was a determining factor in my downfall. Somehow I became sexually attracted to young boys and I would fantasize about them naked. Certain bookstores offered sex education, photographic, or art books which occasionally contained pictures of nude boys. I purchased such books and used them to enhance my masturbatory fantasies... Finding and procuring sexually arousing materials became an obsession. For me, seeing pornography was lighting a fuse on a stick of dynamite. I became stimulated and had to gratify my urges or explode. All boys became mere sexual objects. My conscience was desensitized and my sexual appetite entirely controlled my actions."

Lawrence Sigmund Bittaker and Roy Lewis Norris

Date of birth: September 27, 1940; February 2, 1948

Aliases/Nicknames: The Tool Box Killer, Pliers

Characteristics: Kidnap, torture, rape, murder

Number of victims: 5

Date of murders: June - October 1979

Date of arrest: November 20, 1979; November 23, 1979

Murder method: Strangulation by ligature

Known victims: Cindy Schaeffer, 16; Andrea Hall, 18; Jacqueline Lamp, 13; Jackie Gilliam, 15; Shirley Ledford, 16

Crime location: California

Status: Bittaker was sentenced to death, awaiting execution. Norris received a sentence of 45 years - life.

Background

Following his birth in 1940, Bittaker was placed in an orphanage, as his parents had never wanted to have children. He was adopted by George Bittaker and his wife as an infant, and because of his adoptive father's work in aircraft factories, the family would move around regularly throughout Bittaker's childhood.

The first time Bittaker came to the attention of the police was when he was caught and arrested for shoplifting, at just 12 years of age. During the next four years, he would be arrested multiple times for doing the very same thing. Bittaker would later claim that all the thefts he committed as a child were a way to make up for the lack of love and affection from his parents.

Bittaker was very intelligent, but found school to be a bore, so in 1957 he dropped out. The family was now living in California, and within a year of dropping out of High School, he had been arrested for hit and run, auto theft and evading arrest. He was subsequently sent to the California Youth Authority and would remain there until he turned 18.

When Bittaker was released, he discovered that not only had his adoptive parents moved to another state, they had also disowned him. He never saw them again.

Roy Norris

Norris was born in Colorado in 1948, and although his parents later married, he was born out of wedlock. At that time in society there was a lot of negative stigma surrounding illegitimate births, so the marriage was a way of saving face for the parents and ultimately the child.

The entire family lived very close together thanks to Norris's grandfather who was involved in real estate. His mother was a drug addicted housewife,

and his father worked in a scrapyard. Norris was frequently placed in the care of foster families throughout his childhood, but did spend some time living with his parents from time to time.

When Norris was 16, during one of the periods he was living with his parents, he was visiting a female family member and started to talk to her in a sexually suggestive manner. Upset, she made him leave the house and promptly informed Norris' father what had happened. His father threatened to beat him, and in response, Norris took his father's car, made his way into the Rocky Mountains, and tried to commit suicide using a syringe to inject air into his artery. Of course his attempt failed, and he was later found by police as a runaway and returned to his parents.

After he dropped out of school, Norris enlisted with the Navy, and was stationed in San Diego for four years, between 1965 and 1969. When he was 21 he was deployed to Vietnam, but did not see any active combat during his four months there. He did however experiment with marijuana and heroin in Vietnam, and he became a regular marijuana user from then onwards.

Murders

Bittaker and Norris had made several trips picking up female hitchhikers, then letting them go, so they could perfect their techniques for when the time came to carry out their murderous fantasies. They outfitted their van by building a bed in the back which had tools, clothes and a cooler with drinks and beer in it underneath. On the day of June 24, 1979, they had been hanging out at the beach, smoking marijuana and drinking beer and trying to flirt with the girls on the beach.

That evening, they saw Lucinda Schaefer walking down a side street after leaving a church meeting. They tried to convince her to get in the van by offering her a lift home or some marijuana but she refused. They drove a little way ahead of her, and then Norris got out and waited for her to walk past. He then grabbed her and forced her into the van by dragging her. While Norris tied up her arms and legs and gagged her, Bittaker turned the radio up to full to drown out any sounds coming from the back.

Disturbingly, Bittaker later kept a written record of what transpired that night and said the following about Lucinda's demeanor in the van: "displayed a magnificent state of self-control and composed acceptance of the conditions of which she had no control. She shed no tears, offered no resistance and expressed no great concern for her safety ... I guess she knew what was coming."

Norris was the first to rape Lucinda while Bittaker went for a walk. When he returned from the walk, he raped her while Norris went for a walk. When it came time to decide what to do with her, they apparently argued, with each one giving a different story later as to who wanted to kill her and who wanted to let her go. Either way, Norris tried to strangle her but he couldn't handle the look in her eyes, and he ended up running off and vomiting.

Bittaker strangled her until she collapsed, but she was convulsing and still not dead. He then took a wire coat hanger and twisted it around her neck with a pair of vise-grip pliers until she stopped convulsing. Bittaker and Norris wrapped Lucinda's body in a plastic shower curtain, and then threw her over a canyon. According to Norris, Bittaker told him the wild animals would eat her so there would be no evidence.

While driving along the Pacific Coast Highway on July 8, 1979, Bittaker and Norris came across Andrea Joy Hall hitchhiking. They slowed down, planning on offering her a ride, but were beaten to it by someone else offering her a ride, and she accepted. This didn't stop Bittaker and Norris though, as they continued to follow the vehicle until they got to Redondo Beach and she got out of the car.

While Norris was hiding in the back, Bittaker offered her a soft drink and told her it was in the cooler in the back of the van. As she got out the drink, Norris pounced on her, and although she put up a good fight, he was able to subdue her by twisting her arm behind her back. She was then gagged and tied at the ankles and wrists, and they drove to a secluded area in the San Gabriel Mountains.

Andrea was raped twice by Bittaker and once by Norris, and at one point Norris thought he saw car headlights coming towards them. Bittaker quickly dragged her into the bushes and Norris drove off to see if he could find the car. Having no luck, he returned and they decided to travel to another location in the mountains. Andrea was forced to walk up a hill, completely naked, and perform oral sex on Bittaker. He then forced her to pose for some photographs.

They moved on to a third location, and she was made to walk up another hill with Bittaker. Norris in the meantime went to a store nearby and bought

some alcohol. When he came back, Bittaker was by himself and showed him two more photographs he had taken of Andrea, that were taken after he told her he was going to kill her. He rammed an ice pick into her ear, piercing her brain, then turned her over and did the same in the other ear. He actually stomped on the ice pick until the handle broke, but remarkably, she was still alive. So he then had to strangle her to death before he threw her body over a cliff.

Jacqueline Leah Lamp and Jackie Doris Gilliam had been sitting at a bus stop when Bittaker and Norris noticed them. It was September 3, and the two girls had been hitchhiking before deciding to take a rest at the bus stop. Bittaker and Norris pulled up to the girls and offered them a ride and they got in the van. Almost immediately Norris offered them some marijuana, and they didn't say no. However, they noticed Bittaker was heading in a different direction than what they had talked about and the girls started to protest.

Jacqueline tried to open the sliding door of the van, but was hit on the head by Norris with a bag of lead weights. She was knocked unconscious but only briefly. He gained control of Jackie, and as he was gagging and tying her up, Jacqueline woke up and again tried to get out of the van. He dragged her back in, and Bittaker became aware the struggle could potentially be seen by witnesses, so he stopped the van and jumped in the back to help Norris finish gagging and tying the two girls.

For two days these girls were held captive, repeatedly raped and physically abused. At one point Jackie's breasts were stabbed with an ice pick, and a pair of vise-grip pliers was used to tear off part of her nipple. Once again Bittaker walked one of the girls, Jacqueline, up a hill and made her pose for

nude photographs. He also allegedly made a tape recording of himself as he raped Jackie, and he forced her to say she was his cousin.

When it came time to murder the girls, Jackie was killed by having an ice pick rammed into each ear and then strangled. With Jacqueline, she was struck on the head by a sledgehammer wielded by Norris, as Bittaker strangled her. At one point Bittaker thought she was dead, but she opened her eyes again, so he strangled her again while Norris struck her multiple times with the sledgehammer. Like the other girls before them, the bodies of Jackie and Jacqueline were thrown over an embankment.

Timeline of murders:

June 24, 1979 - Lucinda 'Cindy' Schaefer, 16

July 8, 1979 - Andrea Joy Hall, 18

September 3, 1979 - Jackie Doris Gilliam, 15

September 3, 1979 - Jacqueline Leah Lamp, 13

October 31, 1979 - Shirley Lynette Ledford, 16

Arrest and Trial

Norris met up with a former prison inmate, Jimmy Dalton, in November 1979, and confided in him about the murders he had committed with Bittaker. Dalton talked to his attorney about now being privy to the information and he was advised to notify the police. The information was then passed on to the Redondo Beach police, and detectives set about investigating the claims Norris had made.

An investigator visited a rape survivor who quickly identified the mugshots of Bittaker and Norris. They place the men under surveillance, and Norris was arrested on November 20, for parole violation. At the same time, Bittaker was arrested for the rape of a woman called Robeck.

On November 30, Norris ended up confessing at a preliminary hearing for the rape. He told the court how they lured the girls to the van and then how they killed them, but he insinuated that the main culprit was Bittaker, and that he was just the accomplice.

Norris pleaded guilty to four counts of first-degree murder on March 1980, as well as two counts of rape, and one of robbery. Norris was sentenced to 45 years to life on May 7, 1980, with the possibility of parole in 2010.

Bittaker was arraigned on April 24, 1980 for 29 charges of kidnapping, sodomy, murder and rape, as well as charges regarding possession of a firearm and criminal conspiracy. On February 17, 1981, the jury found him guilty of five counts of murder, five charges of kidnapping, nine charges of rape, two charges of forcible oral copulation, one charge of sodomy, one charge of conspiracy to commit murder, and three charges of unlawful possession of a firearm.

Bittaker was subsequently sentenced to death for his crimes.

Outcome

Bittaker was originally meant to be executed on December 29, 1989, but this was suspended after he appealed the decision. The Supreme Court upheld the death penalty and a new date was scheduled, July 23, 1991.

Once again Bittaker appealed and he was granted a stay on July 9, 1991. He is currently still awaiting his execution while he remains incarcerated in San Quentin State Prison.

Trivia

Bittaker

- Described by FBI Special Agent John Douglas as the most disturbing individual upon whom he has ever performed a criminal profile
- Before being convicted of murder, he served time for robbery, assault, motor vehicle theft and a hit and run.
- While on death row in San Quentin Prison, he made friends with the likes of Sunset Strip murderer Doug Clark and serial killer William Bonin.
- Signs his fan mail "Pliers".
- Has a measured IQ of 138.
- FBI agent John Douglas made Scott Glenn (the actor who plays Jack Crawford in Silence of the Lambs) cry, when Glenn was at the Behavioral Sciences Unit in Quantico, Virginia. He played an audio tape of Bittaker and Norris torturing, raping and killing young girls in the back of their van. Before the encounter, Glenn was firmly against capital punishment.

Robert Black

Date of birth: April 21, 1947

Aliases/Nicknames: Smelly Bob

Characteristics: Pedophilia, Rape, Murder

Number of victims: 4

Date of murders: 1969 - 1990

Date of arrest: July 14, 1990

Murder method: Strangulation

Known victims: Susan Maxwell, 11; Caroline Hogg, 5; Sarah Harper, 10; Jennifer Cardy, 9

Crime location: Scotland, Ireland, Britain

Status: Sentenced to life imprisonment. Died in prison on January 12, 2016, due to a heart attack.

Background

Black was born an illegitimate child in Grangemouth, Scotland, to mother Jessie Hunter Black and an unnamed father. His mother planned to put him up for adoption before moving to Australia, but never completed the formal proceedings. Instead, Black was placed with foster parents Jack and Isabel Tulip when he was six months old. At the time, he was given their surname.

From a very early age Black showed aggressive and anti-social tendencies. He had only a few friends, and he was prone to throwing tantrums. Black was bullied by his peers, which lead to him becoming a bully himself towards younger children. Despite his mother's insistence for being clean, Black had no interest in hygiene which lead to the nickname 'Smelly Bob Tulip'.

As many children do at a young age, Black and a little girl the same age showed each other their genitalia when they were 5 years old. For some reason, this made Black believe he should have been born a girl, and he became deeply interested in his genitals, those of female children, and various body orifices. From the age of eight upwards, he would insert objects into his anus, and he continued this into his adulthood.

People in the community would often see Black with bruises on his face and body, leading to speculation that he was being physically abused by his foster parents, but Black later claimed he couldn't remember how he got the bruises.

By 1958, both of his foster parents had died, and Black was sent to another foster family. Soon after, he committed his first sexual assault on a young girl in a public toilet. Black's foster mother found out about the incident and

reported it to social workers, demanding he be sent elsewhere. He was then placed in a children's home where both male and female children lived.

Black would frequently expose his genitals to girls in the home, and once removed a girl's underwear forcibly from her body. It was then decided he needed to be sent to the Red House Care Home in Musselburgh, a male-only home. Not long after arriving there, Black was subjected to repeated sexual abuse from a male member of staff. The abuse went on for three years, until the staff member happened to die from natural causes.

Black left the home in 1963, and moved to Greenock. He became a delivery boy for the local butcher, and would later tell how he would sexually fondle young girls he found in the homes he delivered to that were alone. One evening that same year, Black came across a 7 year old girl playing in the local park alone. He managed to lure her to an old air-raid shelter with the promise of seeing kittens. Once inside, he grabbed her by the throat and she eventually passed out. He then masturbated over her unconscious body.

He was arrested and charged the following day, and was made to undergo a psychiatric assessment before he attended court. The report stated the incident was an isolated one and he did not require any treatment. He was reprimanded and released, and he moved to Grangemouth, lodging with an elderly couple. He later started dating Pamela Hodgson, and she would become his only known girlfriend. Black claimed he proposed but she not only declined, she also ended the relationship, supposedly because of his odd sexual demands. Black was devastated.

A pattern was definitely forming, when Black's landlords discovered he had been molesting their 9 year old granddaughter. Not wanting to subject the young girl to police interrogation, they did not report it, but ordered him to leave the home. He moved back to Kinlochleven and found lodging with a

couple who happened to have a 6 year old girl. They too found he had been molesting their daughter, but they did report him, and he was charged and found guilty of three counts of indecent assault.

Black was sent to Borstal, where he would receive specialized training and rehabilitation. Interestingly, Black would later be very upfront about every aspect of his childhood and his life, except for the time he spent at Borstal. This has led many to speculate that perhaps he suffered some kind of brutality while he was there. It was his experiences at Borstal that made him determined he would never be imprisoned ever again.

Murders

On August 12, 1981, 9 year-old Jennifer Cardy was riding her bicycle from her home to a friend's house in Country Antrim, when she was abducted. It wasn't until later in the day when she hadn't returned home, that her parent's became worried. Her bicycle was found hours after she had been reported missing, and someone had covered it with leaves and branches to try and hide it. The authorities were now convinced she had been kidnapped.

Her body was found six days later, by two hunters. She was in a reservoir close to a lay-by, 16 miles from her home. The autopsy revealed she had been sexually abused, drowned and most likely strangled by a ligature. Her watch had stopped working at 5:40 pm, which indicated she had been killed just four hours after she was abducted.

Susan Claire Maxwell, 11, was abducted by Black on July 30, 1982. She had been walking home after playing tennis, and was last seen at 4:30 pm as she crossed the bridge over River Tweed. She was reported missing, and a major search was underway the next day. Nearly 300 police officers were involved in investigating her disappearance.

On August 12, a lorry driver discovered her dead body hidden beneath undergrowth. She was still clothed but her underwear and shoes were missing from her body. She had been bound and gagged, and her underwear was folded and placed underneath her head. It was clear she too had been sexually assaulted before she was killed.

Black's third victim was also his youngest. Caroline Hogg was just 5 years old when she was taken outside her home early in the evening of July 8, 1983. Her family searched the neighborhood when she hadn't come inside

at 7:15 pm. One young boy told the family he had seen Caroline with a man on the promenade nearby, so they searched that area thoroughly before reporting her missing to the police.

The search was enormous, with over 2,000 volunteers helping around 50 members of the Royal Scots Fusiliers search for young Caroline. Despite there being nine known pedophiles living in the area at the time of her disappearance, all were eliminated from the enquiry. A description of a man seen following Caroline that evening was given, and one teenaged girl overheard her saying 'yes please' to the man, who she had assumed was the girl's father.

Many people came forward saying they had seen Caroline with the balding bespectacled man at the nearby funfair, and when they left the fair it seemed the little girl was frightened, but nobody had suspected anything sinister. Caroline's body was found on July 18, in a ditch near the M1 motorway in Twycross, 310 miles away from her home. Her body was naked, and in the advanced stages of decomposition, so it was difficult to determine how she was killed. It was thought that she had been in the ditch since at least July 12.

Sarah Harper, 10, had been on her way to the store 100 yards away to buy some bread on March 26, 1986. The store's owner later stated she had been in the store and made her purchases around 7:55 pm, and a balding man had entered the store just after her, who then left as Sarah paid for the bread. She was last seen by two girls as she walked down an alley that led towards her home. By 8:20 pm, her mother was searching the streets looking for Sarah, then reported her missing to the police.

Sarah's body was found on April 19 in the River Trent, 71 miles away from her home, near Nottingham. She was bound, gagged and partially dressed.

The autopsy later showed she had most likely been killed within 5-8 hours from her kidnapping. She had received numerous injuries to her face head, neck and forehead, and she had been killed by drowning. Sarah had been sexually assaulted for an extended period of time before her death which resulted in terrible internal injuries as well.

Also suspected of the following murders:

United Kingdom:

April 8, 1969 - April Fabb, 13 - Fabb was last seen cycling from Metton towards her sister's home in Roughton, Norfolk. Her remains have never been found.

May 21, 1973 - Christine Markham, 9 - Disappeared while walking to school. Her body has never been found. Black was questioned about the case, but it remains unsolved.

August 19, 1978 - Genette Tate, 13 - Disappeared while delivering newspapers. Her body has never been found. Black was known to be in the area at the time of the disappearance, and he died before formal charges could be laid in this case.

July 22, 1979 - Suzanne Lawrence, 14 - Disappeared after leaving her sister's home in Harold Hill, near London. Her body has never been found.

June 16, 1980 - Patricia Morris, 14 - Disappeared from the school grounds. Her body was found still fully clothed in Hounslow Heath two days after she had disappeared. She had been strangled with a ligature.

November 4, 1981 - Pamela Hastie, 16 - She was bludgeoned and strangled, and her body was found in Johnstone, Renfrewshire, in November 1981. An eyewitness identified Black as the man seen running from the scene, but police were unable to find evidence he had been in the area.

Ireland:

March 18, 1977 - Mary Boyle, 6 - Disappeared in Ballyshannon during a visit with her grandparents. Her body has never been found. It was discovered Black was in County Donegal at the time of her disappearance.

Germany:

June 20, 1985 - Silke Garben, 10 - Was on her way to a dental appointment when she disappeared. Her body was discovered in a stream the following day. She had been sexually assaulted and strangled. Black was known to be nearby delivering posters when Garben was murdered.

Netherlands:

August 5, 1986 - Cheryl Morriën, 7. Disappeared while walking to her friend's home in the Dutch city of IJmuiden. Her body has never been found. Black traveled to nearby Amsterdam regularly to purchase child pornography.

France:

May 5, 1987 - Virginie Delmas, 10 - Abducted from Neuilly-sur-Marne. Her body was found in an orchard in Paris on October, 9. She had been strangled but it couldn't be determined if she had been sexually assaulted due to the state of decomposition. Black made several deliveries in and around Paris on the date of Delmas's disappearance.

May 30, 1987- Hemma Greedharry, 10 - Her body was discovered in the Paris suburb of Malakoff two hours after she was last seen alive. She had been raped and strangled. Black regularly traveled along the same road where the body was found while he was making deliveries in northern France.

June 3, 1987 - Perrine Vigneron, 7 - Disappeared on her way to buy a Mother's Day card in Bouleurs. She had been strangled, and her body was discovered on June 27 in a rapeseed field in Chelles. A van similar to the description of Black's was seen in the area at the time of the murder.

June 27, 1987 - Sabine Dumont, 9 - She had been strangled and sexually assaulted, and her body was discovered the next day in the commune of Vauhallan. Black was named as a prime suspect in Dumont's murder in 2011, but the case is still unsolved.

Arrest and Trial

On July 14, 1990, retired postmaster David Herkes was outside his house in Stow, tending to his garden when he noticed what appeared to be an abduction taking place. A blue Transit van had stopped across the road, and he saw the driver get out of the vehicle at the same time he noticed his neighbor's 6 year old girl walking past his line of sight. All of a sudden, the little girl's feet lifted off the ground, and Herkes stood up straight in time to see the driver push the girl into the van.

Herkes noted the van's registration number as it sped off, then ran to the girl's home to tell her mother. The police were called immediately. After the officers arrived, they were talking to Herkes when he suddenly shouted the man was actually driving towards them. One of the officers jumped straight out in front of the van forcing it to stop. The driver, Black, was pulled out and handcuffed and held down on the pavement.

The father of the abducted girl was one of the officers who had raced to the scene, and on arriving, he got into the back of the van and called out for his daughter, who was in a sleeping bag placed near the separating partition. Her wrists and legs were tied and a sticking plaster was gagging her mouth. There was also a hood over her head that had been tied. When a doctor examined her, it was discovered she had been seriously sexually assaulted.

During his interview at the police station, the investigating officer noticed the similarities between this child's abduction and the murders that had taken place previously. He contacted the officer in charge of the murder investigations who came and interviewed Black. Although Black's answers weren't terribly helpful, the officer was convinced he was responsible.

The trial for the abduction and sexual assault on the young girl from Stow began on August 10, 1990. He plead guilty of all charges and so the trial only lasted a day. When it came to sentencing, the Judge took into consideration the opinions of the two psychiatrists who had assessed Black and claimed he would forever be a danger to children. Judge Ross therefore sentenced Black to life imprisonment.

After his sentencing, Black was interviewed at length regarding the murders of the three young girls, Susan Maxwell, Caroline Hogg and Sarah Harper, but refused to confess to the crimes. It was decided they needed more evidence, and the inquiry team continued to search for any proof or evidence they could find. They had a reasonable amount of circumstantial evidence, including receipts that placed Black near the abductions. Everything they had found was submitted to the Crown for consideration of prosecuting Black for the murder in May 1991.

In March the following year, it was decided by the Crown that there was enough evidence to try Black for the murders, as well as an attempted abduction. The trial began on April 13, 1994, and Black pleaded not guilty to the counts of murder, kidnap, attempted kidnap, and preventing the lawful burial of a body.

Black was found guilty of all charges on May 19, and received a life sentence for each, with the minimum to be served 35 years on each of the murder counts. As Black was lead out of the courtroom he turned to the detectives who had been involved in the murder investigations and said, "Tremendous. Well done, boys."

Black went to trial again on September 22, 2011, for the sexual assault and murder of Jennifer Cardy. Although he agreed he may have been in the area at the time, he pleaded not guilty. This trial went on for six weeks, and at

the end of it, the jury only needed four hours to deliberate. Once again he was found guilty of all charges, and received another life sentence, with a minimum of 25 years to be served.

Outcome

While imprisoned in Wakefield prison in July 1995, Black was subjected to a serious physical attack by two fellow inmates. He was bludgeoned with the leg of a table, stabbed in the neck, stabbed in the back, and had a mixture of boiling water and sugar thrown over him. Despite the brutality of the attack, Black was not seriously injured.

On January 12, 2016, Black died as a result of a heart attack. His body was cremated, but no family members or friends attended. A short service was held by the prison chaplain, and in February, his ashes were scattered at sea. He had never admitted to killing the girls.

Trivia

Quotes by Black:

- "I'm not exactly proud of the way I feel towards young girls."
- "There's a part of me that knows I'm wrong, that knows it's wrong, that I shouldn't be doing things like that, I shouldn't even be thinking things like that."
- "But there's the other part that says 'you like it, go on'."

Terry Blair

Date of birth: September 16, 1961

Aliases/Nicknames: Nil

Characteristics: Rape and murder

Number of victims: 7+

Date of murders: 1982 - 2004

Date of arrest: September 10, 2004

Murder method: Strangulation

Known victims: His pregnant ex-girlfriend, Angela Monroe; Sheliah McKinzie, 38; Anna Ewing, 42; Patricia Wilson Butler, 45; Darci I. Williams, 25; Carmen Hunt, 40; Claudette Juniel, 31

Crime location: Kansas City, Missouri

Status: Sentenced to life imprisonment without parole.

Background

As far as families go, Terry Blair was born in to one which would become well known to the authorities for a number of violent crimes. Blair was the fourth child to be born out of ten, and his mother had little education and had issues with mental illness.

Blair's brother Walter was incarcerated, and met a fellow inmate who was willing to pay him \$6,000 to murder his rape victim, Katherine Jo Allen. Blair agreed, and when he was released, he proceeded to abduct her from her apartment. He then took her to a vacant lot and shot her to death. He was arrested and charged, and subsequently convicted of her murder. In 1993, Walter Blair was executed.

Blair had a half-brother named Clifford Miller, and he abducted a woman from a bar. He shot her in the arm and took her to an empty house where he then repeatedly raped her. Clifford beat the woman into unconsciousness, and she suffered a fractured skull, jaw and cheek bones, as well as the gunshot wound to her arm. Clifford was arrested and convicted, and sentenced to two life sentences plus 240 years.

His mother Janice wasn't innocent either. She shot and killed Elton E. Gray, and little is known about the circumstances surrounding this incident. She was arrested and charged, and after entering an Alford plea, she was only sentenced to probation. This plea acknowledges there was enough evidence to convict, so the defendant pleads guilty, but they are still able to claim they are innocent.

With a family such as this, it's no surprise that Terry Blair also turned to violence in his adult life.

Murders

Angela Monroe was the pregnant girlfriend of Blair and the mother of his two children when Blair killed her. Blair claimed he had been angry with her because she had been performing prostitution acts. He was sent to prison and served 21 years before being released.

Timeline of known murders and how they were committed:

1982 - Angela Monroe

July 14, 2004 - Anna Ewing, 42, strangled and neck broken.

September 2, 2004 - Patricia Wilson Butler, 58, strangled.

September 2, 2004 - Sheliah McKinzie, 38, strangled and neck broken.

September 4, 2004 - Darci I. Williams, 25, strangled and neck broken.

September 4, 2004 - Carmen Hunt, 40, strangled.

September 4, 2004 - Claudette Juniel, 31, strangled and neck broken.

Unknown date - Sandra Reed, 47

2003 - Nellia Harris, 33

Arrest and Trial

Blair was arrested on October 15, 2004, and charged with eight counts of first-degree murder, three counts of forcible rape and one count of first-degree assault. Facing the death penalty, Blair waived his right to a jury trial, to avoid being sentenced to death. At the end of the trial, he was sentenced to six terms of life imprisonment, with no possibility of parole.

Outcome

At the time of writing, Blair is currently incarcerated at the Potosi Correctional Center, located in Mineral Point, Missouri.

Trivia

Statement by Blair:

- “They took me to police headquarters, and they put me in an isolation area of the jail. I asked one of the jailers that came around there why I was put in that area, and she stated, "They don't want you to see the news", and I asked her, I said, "What's on the news?", and she said, "You".

William Bonin

Date of birth: January 8, 1947

Aliases/Nicknames: The Freeway Killer

Characteristics: Homosexual rape and murder

Number of victims: 14 - 44

Date of murders: 1972 - 1980

Date of arrest: June 13, 1980

Murder method: Strangulation, stabbing

Known victims: Dennis Frank Fox,17; Glenn Barker, 14; Russell Rugh, 15; Lawrence Sharp, 17;Marcus Grabs ,17;Donald Hyden, 15; David Murillo, 17; Charles Miranda,15; James McCabe,12; Ronald Gatlin, 19; Harry Todd Turner,14; Steven Wood,16; Darin Lee Kendrick,19;Steven Jay Wells,18;Thomas Lundren, 13' Harold T. (15 - Bonin's last victim; was not killed)

Crime location: California

Status: Executed by lethal injection February 23, 1996.

Background

Bonin was the middle child of three boys born to parents Robert and Alice. Robert was a compulsive gambler who was often abusive physically towards his children and his wife. Both parents were alcoholics, and the children were often neglected. Neighbors would take pity on the boys and feed them and clothe them. At times they were sent to stay with their grandfather, who happened to be a convicted child molester. The grandfather had apparently molested their mother when she was young, and it has been established that he molested his three grandsons.

In 1953, the boys were sent to an orphanage, an attempt by their mother to shield them from their abusive father. The orphanage was known to discipline the children in a severe manner over minor offences. Discipline measures included severe beatings, partial drowning in water-filled sinks and being placed in stress positions. Later on in life, Bonin refused to talk about what happened at the orphanage, apart from admitting that he would consent to the older male's sexual advances provided they tied Bonin's hands behind his back first.

The boys were sent back to their parents when Bonin was nine. When he was ten years old, he was caught stealing vehicle license plates and sent to a juvenile detention center. Here, he was allegedly sexually and physically abused by multiple people, one of whom was his counselor.

The family decided to move to California in 1961, largely due to the inevitable foreclosure on their home. Not long after the move, Bonin's father died due to liver cirrhosis. Bonin went on to molest not only his younger brother, but also many children in the neighborhood. He would make false promises of supplying alcohol and lure them to the house.

In 1965, Bonin graduated from high school, and soon after, became engaged. This engagement was largely due to his mother's insistence, as she was concerned about her son's sexual preference for males, and she thought that by marrying a woman, those preferences would go away. Bonin joined the Air Force the same year he graduated, and was eventually sent to serve active duty in the Vietnam War. As an aerial gunner, Bonin logged over 700 hours of patrol and combat time while in Vietnam.

During the war, Bonin once risked his life to save a fellow airman who was wounded, and as a result, received the Good Conduct Medal. However, he later claimed that his experiences in Vietnam made him believe that human life was overrated. Bonin claimed he engaged in sexual relations with both females and males while in Vietnam, and also that he sexually assaulted two soldiers at gunpoint during the Tet Offensive.

After three years' service with the Air Force, Bonin was honorably discharged in 1968. He moved back to his mother's home, and soon after married his fiancée. The marriage wasn't to last though, and they were divorced not long afterwards.

That same year, Bonin embarked on a series of sexual assaults against five youths aged 12 - 18 years. In the early part of 1969 he was arrested and charged with multiple offenses against the five youths. He plead guilty and was sent to the Atascadero State Hospital, as he was considered to be a mentally disordered sexual offender who could respond to treatment.

During his time in the hospital, the numerous assessments and examinations showed that he had a higher than average IQ, and showed traits of manic depression. It was also discovered that he had damage to the prefrontal cortex of his brain, which would mean he was unable to restrain himself from violent impulses. Throughout his stay in the hospital, Bonin

repeatedly engaged in forced sexual activities with fellow male inmates, and so was sent to prison and deemed untreatable.

In 1974, Bonin was released from prison as it was believed he no longer presented a danger to himself or to others. But in 1975, Bonin would prove them wrong. He picked up a 14 year old hitchhiker, David McVicker, and as soon as the boy entered the car, Bonin asked him if he was homosexual.

McVicker was stunned by this and asked him to stop the car, but Bonin instead pulled out a gun, drove to a field and made McVicker undress. Then, he raped and beat him. Bonin then attempted to strangle McVicker with a t-shirt, but when the boy started screaming, Bonin stopped and apologized. After driving McVicker home, as soon as he left the boy told his mother what had happened and the police were notified.

Charged and convicted, Bonin again spent time in prison. Following his release, he found work as a truck driver, and also developed a reputation around town amongst the young boys that he allowed teenagers to party at his house with alcohol. Through a neighbor, Bonin met a 21 year old man named Vernon Butts, and Gregory Miley, an 18 year old. Butts would later state that he was both terrified yet fascinated by Bonin, and that he enjoyed watching Bonin inflict torture and then murder his victims. Miley would also sometimes accompany Bonin on his murderous outings and he too participated willingly.

Murders

Schoolboys, young men hitchhiking and male prostitutes were usually the victims Bonin targeted. He would either force or lure his victims into his Ford Econoline van where they would quickly be overpowered and secured at the hands and feet by wire, handcuffs or some sort of cord. Bonin would then sexually assault the victim and beat them severely around the head, face, and genitals. He would inflict terrible torture, and then strangle them, often using their own shirt as a ligature.

Sometimes though, he would stab or beat the victim to death. Darin Kendrick was killed by being forced to drink hydrochloric acid. Three others were killed from having an ice pick rammed into their ears, and Mark Shelton actually died from shock. Bonin had outfitted his van to prevent his victims from escaping. All of the internal door handles on the passenger side and in the back of the van were removed. He kept a supply of tools and equipment for use against his victims, including knives, ligatures, and a variety of regular household tools. The victim would normally be killed in the back of the van then dumped along the southern California freeways.

Bonin didn't always work alone, and he was usually accompanied and assisted by one of his four accomplices. It was discovered later that each murder he committed displayed an escalated level of brutality and violence, almost as though he needed a bigger thrill from each kill.

His first known victim, Thomas Lundren, was just 13 years old when he was enticed or captured by Bonin on May 28, 1979 in Agoura. He left his home at around 10:50 that morning, the last time he was seen alive. His battered body was discovered the same day, wearing his shirt and shoes and

socks but missing his underwear and pants. They were later found in a field nearby, along with his genitals that had been severed.

The autopsy showed he had multiple fractures of his skull, had been stabbed multiple times, his throat had been slashed and he had finally been strangled to death. His body had evidence of a violent bludgeoning, with numerous injuries to his face and head.

On August 4, 1979, Bonin abducted Mark Shelton, 17, in Westminster. The young man had been on his way to the cinema when he crossed paths with Bonin. Screaming was heard near his home at the time, and this led investigators to believe he was kidnapped by violent force. In the back of the van a variety of objects were forced into his rectum, including a pool cue. This caused Mark Shelton's body to go into shock, and he died. His body was dumped on the side of the freeway in San Bernardino County.

The next day, Markus Grabs, 17, was hitchhiking along the Pacific Coast Highway when he was abducted by Bonin. He was tied up with a combination of ignition wire and cord, and taken back to Bonin's house. Inside the house, Markus was beaten, sodomized and stabbed 77 times until he was dead. His nude body was found the next day in Malibu Creek.

Donald Ray Hyden, 15, was abducted on August 27, at around 1:00 am, after walking along the Santa Monica Boulevard. Construction workers discovered his body in a dumpster later that morning. The autopsy showed he had been tied up, beaten, sodomized, his head had been bludgeoned and his neck stabbed. An attempt had been made to cut off his testicles and he had been slashed across the throat. His death was caused by ligature strangulation.

On September 9, Bonin and his accomplice Vernon Butts abducted David Murillo, 17, as he was riding his bicycle to the theatres in La Mirada. They

had lured Murillo into the van, where he was quickly bound and subdued. David Murillo was raped repeatedly and beaten about the head by a tire iron. He was then strangled with a ligature. His body was dumped alongside Highway 101, and thrown over an embankment. Just eight days later, Bonin abducted and killed Robert Wirostek, 18, as he rode his bicycle to a grocery store. His battered body was found alongside Interstate 10 on September 27.

The next known murder committed by Bonin occurred on November 1, when, along with Butts, they abducted an unidentified young man. Like the other victims, this John Doe had also been violently beaten, raped and strangled to death. His body was left in a ditch alongside State Route 99, near Taft, Kern County. Bonin later admitted he had shoved an ice pick into this victim's nose and ear before he was killed.

Frank Dennis Fox, 17, was abducted by Bonin alone on November 30, from Bellflower. His body was found alongside the Ortega Highway, two days later and showed evidence of a violent and extensive beating to the head and face. His wrists and ankles had marks from ligatures. On December 13, the body of a young boy was discovered in an area of Rialto, and wasn't identified until August 1980. The victim was John Kilpatrick, 15, of Long Beach, who had disappeared while heading off from home to meet some friends.

On New Year's Day, 1980, Michael McDonald, 16, was abducted. He was beaten, brutalized and strangled, and his body was found two days later alongside Highway 71 in San Bernadino County. This time his body was fully clothed when found, and he would remain a John Doe until March 24, when he was finally identified.

The next murder Bonin committed was undertaken with the help of Gregory Matthews Miley, an 18 year old acquaintance of Bonin's. Charles Miranda,

15, had been hitchhiking along Santa Monica Boulevard when he was approached by Bonin and Miley. Miley later claimed that Bonin and Miranda had consensual sex in the van while Miley drove the van around. Bonin then whispered that the 'kid's going to die' in Miley's ear, at which point they quickly bound Miranda. They robbed Miranda of the \$6 he had in his wallet, and Bonin then raped him. Miley attempted to rape Miranda but was unable to maintain an erection, which lead to him assaulting Miranda with sharp objects out of frustration. Miranda was then beaten and strangled by Bonin as Miley jumped on top of his chest. Unlike the others, Miranda's body was found in an alleyway near East Second Street.

Within a few hours, Bonin and Miley were searching for another victim, as Bonin stated he was still 'horny' and wanted to attack and kill again. In Huntington Beach they came across James Macabe, 12, who was waiting at a bus stop. They offered the boy a ride to Disneyland, and drove to a local grocery store, parking in the lot. Bonin got in to the back of the van, and Miley took over driving. He could hear the boy crying as Bonin raped him and beat him. Later Miley got in to the back and helped Bonin beat the boy. They used a tire iron to crush his neck, and then Bonin strangled him to death. Three days later, Macabe's body was found near a dumpster in Walnut.

Bonin spent a month in jail for breaching his parole conditions and was released on March 4. Just ten days later, he claimed his next victim. Ronald Gatlin, 18, was abducted after he left his friend's home in Van Nuys. Like the others, he was sodomized and beaten, and an ice pick had been driven into his ear and neck multiple times. Finally Bonin used a ligature to strangle him, and the body was found in Duarte the next day.

Glenn Barker was 14 when he was lured into Bonin's van on March 21, as he was hitchhiking to school. He was raped and beaten, and burnt on the neck multiple times using a burning cigarette. Numerous foreign objects had been forced into his rectum and he was eventually strangled with a ligature. The very same day, Russell Rugh, 15, was kidnapped from a bus stop in Garden Grove, and was subjected to terrible violence over an eight hour period. The bodies of both young boys were found in the Cleveland National Forest on March 23.

Bonin met William Ray Pugh, 17, one night in March after they left Everett Fraser's house. Bonin offered Pugh a ride, and almost as soon as they drove away, Bonin propositioned Pugh for sex. Pugh was supposedly shocked, and after a few minutes of silence, he tried to get out of the van while they were slowed at a light. Bonin grabbed Pugh by the collar, pulling him back across the seat, then told Pugh how he liked to kidnap young males and would kill them. He told Pugh, as he dropped him off at home, that he hadn't been killed because people had seen them leave Fraser's home together.

Pugh became an accomplice to Bonin, and on March 24 they abducted Harry Todd Turner, 15, from the street after Turner had run away from a boys' home. They offered the boy \$20 for sex and lured him in to the van. Turner was bound then sodomized and bitten. Pugh was ordered by Bonin to beat the boy, then Bonin strangled him. They left his body outside the rear delivery door of a business. His autopsy showed his skull had been fractured eight times, and his genitals had been mutilated.

Steven Wood, 16, was abducted on April 10 as he walked to school after a dentist appointment. He received the same treatment as the other victims of Bonin, and was also strangled to death by ligature. His body was left in an

alleyway in Long Beach. On April 29, Bonin, assisted by Butts, lured an employee of the Stanton supermarket into the van. The victim, Darin Kendrick, 19, was told they could sell him drugs, and he willingly got in and they drove to Butt's apartment.

Once inside the apartment, Kendrick was overpowered and bound, then sodomized. They strangled him but not completely, which was another form of torture, then forced him to drink hydrochloric acid. The acid caused horrific burns to his mouth, chin, chest and stomach. An ice pick was rammed into his ear by Butts, so violently that it caused a fatal injury to his spinal cord. When his body was found behind a warehouse near the Artesia Freeway, the ice pick was still sticking out of his ear canal.

Lawrence Sharp, 17, an acquaintance of Bonin's, was killed on May 17 simply because Bonin was sick of him hanging around. He had also been tied up and sodomized, beaten severely around the head and body, and strangled. His body was found the next day dumped behind a Westminster gas station. Two days later, Bonin wanted Butts to help him with another killing but Butts refused. Alone, Bonin abducted Sean King, 14, from a bus stop in Downey. His body was found in Live Oak Canyon.

Several days later, James Michael Munro, 18, was invited by Bonin to move into the apartment he shared with his mother. Munro was homeless and a drifter, and accepted Bonin's offer without hesitation. They began a sexual relationship even though bisexual Munro preferred to have sex with women. At first Munro thought Bonin was a 'good guy', until Bonin told him on June 1 that he wanted Munro to help him abduct and kill a young hitchhiker.

Bonin and Munro came across Steven Wells, 18, on June 2. Wells was waiting at a bus stop when he was lured into the van. When Bonin found

out Wells was bisexual, he offered him \$200 to come back to his house and be bound before they had sex. Wells agreed, and once in the apartment he was bound, raped, and beaten by both men. Before he was strangled, Bonin informed Wells he was about to be murdered. His body was put into a cardboard box and transported to the home of Butts.

Bonin encouraged Butts to look at the body they had in the van. He was allegedly asked where the best place to dump the body would be, and Butts suggested a gas station or where they had 'dumped the last one'. The body of Wells was eventually left behind an old gas station in Huntington Beach. Even though the station was no longer used, his body was still found quickly - just five hours after it was dumped.

Confirmed victims:

May 28, 1979 - Thomas Lundgren, 13

August 4, 1979 - Mark Shelton, 17

August 5, 1979 - Markus Grabs, 17

August 27, 1979 - Donald Ray Hyden, 15

September 9, 1979 - David Murillo, 17

September 17, 1979 - Robert Wirostek, 18

November 1, 1979 - John Doe, 19-25

November 30, 1979 - Frank Dennis Fox, 17

December 10, 1979 - John Kilpatrick, 15

January 1, 1980 - Michael McDonald, 16

February 3, 1980 - Charles Miranda, 15

February 3, 1980 - James Macabe, 12

March 14, 1980 - Ronald Gatlin, 18

March 21, 1980 - Glenn Barker, 14

March 21, 1980 - Russell Rugh, 15

March 24, 1980 - Harry Todd Turner, 15

April 10, 1980 - Steven Wood, 16

April 29, 1980 - Darin Lee Kendrick, 19

May 17, 1980 - Lawrence Sharp, 17

May 19, 1980 - Sean King, 14

June 2, 1980 - Steven Wells, 18

Arrest and Trial

Pugh had been arrested for stealing a car in May 1980, and while held in jail, he admitted to a counselor that he recognized the modus operandi of the murders on the news as those described to him previously by Bonin. This information was passed on to the police, who then interviewed Pugh, who denied any involvement in the actual murders, but claimed the Freeway Killer was Bonin. When police looked into Bonin's background, they discovered he had an extensive criminal history involving the sexual assaults of young boys. He was therefore put under surveillance.

While under surveillance, police noticed Bonin driving randomly throughout Hollywood on June 11, and seemed to be trying to lure teenage boys into his van. After failing four times, he finally convinced a boy to get in, and the police followed Bonin until he parked in a parking lot near the Hollywood Freeway. Police approached stealthily and when they heard muffled screaming and banging sounds coming from inside, they forced their way in to the van. Bonin was in the process of raping Harold Tate.

Following his arrest, investigators searched his van and his home and found numerous items suggesting he was the Freeway Killer. As well as restraints, binding materials, knives, pliers and a tire iron, they found that parts of his house and the inside of his van were stained heavily with blood. There was even a scrapbook with news clippings about the murders in the van's glovebox.

Although he tried to deny having any part of the many murders, Bonin eventually gave in and confessed. He was interviewed over several days, and he admitted the abduction, rape and murder of 21 young men and boys. He showed no remorse, other than what he felt at being caught. He was quick to acknowledge his accomplices as being Butts, Munro and Miley.

Bonin was eventually charged with 16 counts of murder on July 29, 1980. He was also charged with one count of sodomy, eleven counts of robbery and one count of mayhem. Butts was charged at the same time with six murders and three counts of robbery. On November 14, Butts received three more murder charges and was scheduled to go to trial on July 27, 1981.

Munro was arrested on July 31, 1980, and charged with murdering Steven Wells. He pleaded not guilty to all charges. Miley was arrested on August 22 and charged with the murders of James Macabe and Charles Miranda. A phone conversation he had with a friend had been recorded, and during the call he admitted his guilt. He initially pleaded not guilty but subsequently changed his plea to guilty.

Bonin's first trial came to an end on January 6, 1982, where he was found guilty of committing ten of the murders. Consideration of sentencing continued until January 20, when Bonin was given the death penalty. Later he went to trial in Orange County and was charged with four murders, and the trial would last six weeks. On August 2, 1983, the guilty verdict was given in all four murders and three counts of robbery. Again he was sentenced to death.

Butts committed suicide on January 11, 1981, by hanging himself in his cell before he went to trial. Munro was given 15 years to life for the murder of Steven Wells. The next time he is eligible for parole is 2019. Miley received a sentence of 25 years to life in February 1982, for the murder of Charles Miranda. He also received a 25 year term for the murder of James Macabe. On May 25, 2016, Miley died as the result of injuries he received two days earlier when he was attacked by another inmate.

William Pugh received a sentence of six years after being found guilty of voluntary manslaughter in the murder of Harry Todd Turner. He only spent

four years in prison and was released back in to the community in 1985.

Outcome

Bonin spent 14 years waiting on death row before his execution date was finally scheduled. Initially Bonin was meant to be executed by the gas chamber, but because of issues with a previous execution, it was changed to the lethal injection. His last meal was two large pizzas, three pints of ice cream and 18 cans of Coke. He had chosen 5 people to spend his last hours with, including a biographer and a chaplain as well as his attorney.

He was taken to the gas chamber (where the injections would be given) at 11:45 pm, and he was pronounced deceased at 12:13 am.

Trivia

- Made friends on death row with several other serial killers, including Douglas Clark, Lawrence Bittaker and Randy Kraft.
- Final / Special Meal: Two large pepperoni and sausage pizzas, three pints of coffee ice cream and three six-packs of regular Coca Cola.

Quote by Bonin:

- “I would suggest that when a person has a thought of doing anything serious against the law, that before they did that they should go to a quiet place and think about it seriously.”

Boston Strangler

Date of birth: September 3, 1931

Aliases/Nicknames: Albert Henry DeSalvo, The Green Man, The Measuring Man, The Mad Strangler of Boston

Characteristics: Rape and murder

Number of victims: 13

Date of murders: June 1962 - January 1964

Date of arrest: November 1964

Murder method: Strangulation

Known victims: Anna Slesers, 55; Mary Mullen, 85; Nina Nichols, 68; Helen Blake, 65; Ida Irga, 75; Jane Sullivan, 67; Sophie Clark, 20; Patricia Bissette, 23; Mary Brown, 69; Beverly Samans, 23; Evelyn Corbin, 58; Joann Graff, 23; Mary Sullivan, 19

Crime location: Boston

Status: Never convicted of murder; but was sentenced to life imprisonment for rapes. Was murdered in prison by stabbing, November 25, 1973.

Background

Although it has long been considered that Albert DeSalvo was the Boston Strangler, there has been some controversy in recent years that he may not have been responsible for all 13 murders. All of the victims were female and had resided in the Boston area, and the killings took place during the early 1960s.

These murders were often referred to as the ‘silk stocking murders’ because each of the victims appeared to have been strangled with a silk stocking. Even though there is doubt about Albert DeSalvo’s role in these murders, they are still attributed to him as the killer.

DeSalvo was one of five children born into a household of alcoholism and violence. He began getting into trouble at a young age, largely for petty crimes and minor violence. He spent some time in the Army, but was eventually discharged for not obeying orders. Following his discharge he married German woman Irmgard Beck. Their first child was born handicapped, but despite their modest income and the added expense of the child, they managed to sustain themselves.

According to his wife, DeSalvo was ‘highly sexed’ but she would try and avoid having sex with him out of fear of having another baby that was handicapped. However, she couldn’t avoid him forever, and she subsequently gave birth to a healthy baby boy. DeSalvo had settled into the role of family man, and was well-liked by his employer and his work colleagues, even though he was an outrageous braggart.

During his young years, DeSalvo would knock on women’s doors claiming to be scouting for new models, and he managed to convince many of them to let him in to their homes. Once inside, he would proceed to ‘measure

them up' under the pretense of checking they would be suitable as models. This lead to him being charged with sexually oriented mischievousness, and he was sent to prison for 18 months.

Murders

The first known victim of the strangler was Anna Slesers, 55. She was found dead in her apartment in Back Bay, Boston on June 14, 1962. An object had been used to sexually assault her and she had been strangled to death with the belt from her bathrobe.

According to DeSalvo, his next attempted attack took place on June 28, 1962. He had entered the apartment of Mary Mullen, who was 85, and when he grabbed her she collapsed on the ground. He fled the building, unaware she had suffered a fatal heart attack.

On June 30, 1962, Nina Nichols, 68, was attacked in her home. She was sexually assaulted, and the strangler used Nina's nylon stockings to strangle her to death. The next victim of the strangler was Helen Blake, 65, on the same night. She too had been strangled with her own stockings after being sexually assaulted.

Ida Irga, 75, was killed on August 19, after being sexually assaulted and strangled in her apartment in Beacon Hill, Boston. In Dorchester, August 21, 67 year old Jane Sullivan was sexually assaulted and strangled to death with her stockings. There were no further known murders until the killing of Sophie Clark, 20, on December 5 1962. Once again the strangler had sexually assaulted her then strangled her.

Patricia Bissette, 23, was strangled with her nylon stockings on December 31, 1962. Her body was found in her home in Back Bay, Boston. The murder of Mary Brown occurred on March 6, 1963, and was a lot more violent than the previous murders. Mary had been raped, beaten, strangled and stabbed in her own apartment in Massachusetts.

The next woman murdered was Beverly Samans, 23. She was found at home in Massachusetts, and unlike the others who were strangled, she was stabbed to death on May 6, 1963. On September 8, Evelyn Corbin, 58, was raped and strangled with her nylon stockings and found in her home in Salem, Massachusetts.

On November 23, 1963, the body of Joann Graff, 23, was found in her apartment after being strangled with her stockings. There was a brief break following this murder, with the next occurring on January 4, 1964. Mary Sullivan, 19, was found dead in her apartment in Boston, after being sexually assaulted and strangled. This was the last known murder committed by the Boston Strangler.

Known victims:

June 14, 1962 - Anna E. Slesers, 55 - Her body was found in her apartment at 77 Gainsborough St., Back Bay, Boston.

June 28, 1962 - Mary Mullen, 85 - Her body was found in her apartment at 1435 Commonwealth Ave., Boston.

June 30, 1962 - Nina Nichols, 68 - Her body was found in her home at 1940 Commonwealth Ave., Boston.

June 30, 1962 - Helen Blake, 65 - Her body was found in her home at 73 Newhall St., Lynn, Massachusetts.

August 19, 1962 - Ida Irga, 75 - Her body was found in her apartment at 7 Grove Street, Beacon Hill, Boston.

August 21, 1962 - Jane Sullivan, 67 - Her body was found in her home at 435 Columbia Road, Dorchester, Boston.

December 5, 1962 - Sophie Clark, 20 - Her body was found in her apartment at 315 Huntington Ave., Back Bay, Boston.

December 31, 1962 - Patricia Bisette, 23 - Her body was found in her home at 515 Park Drive, Back Bay, Boston.

March 6, 1963 - Mary Brown, 69 - Her body was found in her apartment at 319 Park Ave., Lawrence, Massachusetts.

May 6, 1963 - Beverly Samans, 23 - Her body was found in her home at 4 University Road in Cambridge, Massachusetts.

September 8, 1963 - Evelyn Corbin, 58 - Her body was found in her home at 224 Lafayette St., Salem, Massachusetts.

November 23, 1963 - Joann Graff, 23 - Was strangled with her nylon stockings. Her body was found in her apartment at 54 Essex St., Lawrence, Massachusetts.

January 4, 1964 - Mary Sullivan, 19 - Her body was found in her apartment at 44-A Charles St., Boston.

Arrest and Trial

A young woman let a stranger into her home on October 27, 1964, because the man had claimed to be a police detective. He attacked her, tied her to the bed then sexually assaulted her. All of a sudden he left, apologizing to the woman. The woman was able to give police a good description of the man who attacked her, which lead them to Albert DeSalvo.

Initially DeSalvo was charged with the rape of the woman in October, but while he was being held in jail, he confessed to the Boston Strangler murders to George Nassar, a fellow inmate. Nassar reported DeSalvo's claims to his attorney, who then informed the police. When DeSalvo was interviewed by the police, he gave a lot of information that wasn't public knowledge. However not all of his claims matched the crime scenes of some of the murders. There was also no physical evidence that he was responsible for the murders.

DeSalvo went on trial for a number of sexual offenses he had committed previously, during the period he was referred to as 'The Green Man' and the 'Measuring Man', where he raped and assaulted women but did not kill them. His attorney tried to show he was insane by mentioning his confessions to the Boston Strangler murders, but that information was declared inadmissible by the judge.

Found guilty of the sexual assaults, DeSalvo was sentenced to life imprisonment in 1967, but was never charged with the murders. The same year he was sentenced, he escaped from Bridgewater State Hospital, where he was being held, with two other inmates. He handed himself in to the authorities the next day, and was sent to the Walpole State Prison, which was a maximum security facility.

Outcome

On November 27, 1973, DeSalvo was found murdered in the prison infirmary, having suffered stab wounds. Inmate Robert Wilson, who was associated with the Winter Hill Gang, was charged with the murder, but because of a hung jury, he was never convicted.

For many years there was some speculation as to whether or not DeSalvo was in fact the Boston Strangler. The murder that triggered most of the controversy was that of Mary Sullivan. During his confession, DeSalvo claimed to have penetrated Sullivan sexually, yet the autopsy showed no evidence that any sexual activity had taken place.

A call for DNA testing from the fluid evidence found at Mary Sullivan's crime scene be examined was made to determine once and for all if DeSalvo was the killer. On July 11, 2013, the Boston Police announced that there was a DNA link between Mary Sullivan and DeSalvo. They had used samples from DeSalvo's nephew, and so to conclusively solve the issue, a court order was made to exhume DeSalvo's body and test again. On July 19, it was announced that there was a definite link through DNA that DeSalvo was in fact the man who killed Mary Sullivan.

Trivia

- There is a Boston hardcore band named The Boston Strangler.[24]
- The Rolling Stones released Midnight Rambler on the album Let It Bleed in 1969. The song is a loose biography of Albert DeSalvo.

Poem written by DeSalvo:

Here is the story of the Strangler, yet untold,
The man who claims he murdered thirteen women,
young and old.
The elusive Strangler, there he goes,
Where his wanderlust sends him, no one knows
He struck within the light of day,
Leaving not one clue astray.
Young and old, their lips are sealed,
Their secret of death never revealed.
Even though he is sick in mind,
He's much too clever for the police to find.
To reveal his secret will bring him fame,
But burden his family with unwanted shame.
Today he sits in a prison cell,
Deep inside only a secret he can tell.
People everywhere are still in doubt,
Is the Strangler in prison or roaming about?

Jerry Brudos

Date of birth: January 31, 1939

Aliases/Nicknames: The Shoe Fetish Slayer, The Lust Killer

Characteristics: Fetishist, necrophiliac

Number of victims: 4

Date of murders: January 26, 1968 - April 27, 1969

Date of arrest: May 25, 1969

Murder method: Strangulation

Known victims: Linda Kay Slawson, 19; Jan Susan Whitney, 23; Karen Elena Sprinker, 19; Linda Dawn Salee, 19

Crime location: Oregon

Status: Sentenced to life imprisonment. Died March 28, 2006, of natural causes.

Background

When Brudos was born, his mother was disappointed because she had wanted a girl not a boy. Because of this, she would ignore him and often belittle him. From the young age of 5, Brudos developed a fetish for women's shoes, which would last throughout his lifetime. As a teenager, he would follow the local women, and attack them by either choking them or knocking them down, and then he would run away with their shoes.

He spent a lot of time in state hospitals and psychotherapy throughout his teens. His disturbing behaviors escalated when he was 17, at which time he dug a hole and held girls as his sex slaves. When this was discovered, he was sent to Oregon State Hospital and remained in the psychiatric ward for nine months. The assessments found that his fetish and sexual fantasies all revolved around thoughts of revenge and hatred towards his mother, and of women generally.

Despite all this going on, Brudos was able to graduate from high school, and he trained to be an electronics technician. After he married in 1961, he and his wife moved to Portland, Oregon and settled down. But, he began to complain about having migraines and 'blackouts'. To relieve his symptoms, he would prowl the streets at night and steal lacy underwear and shoes.

Murders

Brudos' first murder took place on January 26, 1968. Linda Slawson, 19, had been selling encyclopedias in the same Portland neighborhood Brudos lived in when she disappeared. Her body has never been found, though Brudos later admitted he had thrown her into the Willamette River after killing her.

On November 25, 1968, Jan Whitney, 23, went missing from Eugene. Her car was found at a rest stop on Interstate 5, between Salem and Albany. On July 27, 1969, her body was found in the Willamette River tied to a piece of iron from the railroad.

Karen Sprinkler, 19, was last seen alive in a parking lot of a store in Salem. Her body was found weighted down in the Long Tom River, near Monroe, on May 10, 1969. The last known murder occurred on April 23, 1969.

Linda Salee, 22, had last been seen at a business' parking lot in Portland, and her body was also found in the Long Tom River near Monroe. Like Karen Sprinkler, her body had also been weighted down before being tossed in the river.

At the time of the murders, Brudos was married and had two children. Sometimes he posed as a policeman to lure young women into his vehicle, using a fake uniform and badge. Once he had them in his vehicle, he would take them back to his house in Salem and kill them in his garage, all without his wife or children knowing a thing.

As his victims died, Brudos would take photographs of them. He liked to dress them in lingerie and have sex with them after they died. Often he would cut off parts of their bodies, such as a foot he preserved and a breast he set in resin and used as a paperweight. He had a collection of high-

heeled shoes, and he used to put the preserved foot in the shoes to 'model' them.

Timeline of known murders:

January 26, 1968 - Linda Slawson, 19.

November 25, 1968 - Jan Whitney, 23

March 27, 1969 - Karen Sprinker, 19

April 23, 1969 - Linda Salee, 22

Arrest and Trial

In May 1969, Brudos attempted to abduct a 12-year-old girl, who managed to escape. She gave a description of her attacker and when shown a photo lineup, she picked out Brudos. He was quickly arrested, and at first he claimed to be innocent. Then, on June 27, Brudos confessed to the murders. It was just three days before he was meant to stand trial, and so he pleaded guilty to killing Whitney, Sprinkler and Salee.

Because he had pleaded guilty, the trial was unnecessary, and Brudos was sentenced to life imprisonment.

Outcome

While he was in prison, Brudos wrote letters to companies selling shoes asking them for copies of their catalogs. He likened the shoe catalogs to ‘pornography’ in his mind, and he had many of them in his cell.

On March 28, 2006, Brudos died as a result of cancer of the liver. At the time, he was the longest-serving inmate of the Oregon Department of Corrections, having served 37 years.

Trivia

- Known as The Shoe Fetish Slayer, he bludgeoned and strangled four women, taking body parts as trophies.
- His mother had wanted a daughter, so she dressed him in women's clothing.
- He was obsessed with women's shoes, cutting off one victim's foot to model the shoes he'd stolen.

Ted Bundy

Date of birth: November 24, 1946

Aliases/Nicknames: Chris Hagen, Kenneth Misner, Officer Roseland, Richard Burton, Rolf Miller

Characteristics: Abduction, Ambush, Rape and Murder

Number of victims: 30+

Date of murders: 1961 - 1978

Date of arrest: February 15, 1978

Murder method: Beating with heavy object, strangulation

Known Victims: Anne Marie Burr, 8 years-old; Lonnie Trumbell; Lisa Wick; Joni Lenz, 18; Lynda Ann Healy 21; Donna Gail Manson, 19; Susan Elaine Rancourt, 19; Brenda Baker, 15; Roberta Kathleen Parks, 20; Brenda Carol Ball, 22; Georgeann Hawkins, 18; Janice Ott, 23; Denise Naslund, 18; Caryn Campbell, 23; Julie Cunningham, 26; Denise Lynn Oliverson, 25; Melanie Cooley, 18; Shelly Robertson, 24; Nancy Wilcox, 16; Melissa Smith, 17; Laura Aime, 17; Debby Kent, 17; Carol DaRonch, 18 (survived); Nancy Baird, 23; Sue Curtis, 15; Debbie Smith, 17; Rita Lorraine Jolly, 17; Vicki Lynn Hollar 24; Karen Chandler, 21 (survived); Kathy Kleiner, 20 (survived); Lisa Levy, 20; Margaret Bowman, 21; Cheryl Thomas (survived); Kimberly Leach, 12; Lynette Culver, 13; Rita Curran, 24

Crime location: Washington, Colorado, Utah, Oregon, Florida, Idaho, Vermont

Status: Executed by electric chair January 24, 1989.

Background

Theodore 'Ted' Bundy was yet another illegitimate child born under a cloud of shame and secrecy. His mother, Eleanor Cowell, brought up by parents who were very religious, and having a baby at 22 years old without a husband was scandalous. So, Bundy was raised by his grandparents as an adopted baby, and in his early years, he was led to believe his mother was his sister.

While still a toddler, Bundy and his mother moved to Tacoma in Washington, and in 1951, she married Johnnie Bundy. They went on to have several children, and although it was a working-class family, they all seemed very content. But as a young child, Bundy was already displaying odd fascinations with macabre topics. He showed an intense interest in knives at just 3 years old.

As a student, Bundy was intelligent and did well, but socially he had trouble with making friends. When he became a teenager, his behavior started to deteriorate. He enjoyed peeping in people's windows, and often stole things that he wanted without any form of guilt.

Bundy enrolled in the University of Washington, and while there, he met and fell in love with a young lady from California. An attractive girl, Bundy was attracted to the fact she had everything he desired - class, influence and money. When she ended the relationship he was devastated, and later it became apparent that many of his victims resembled her - long, dark hair and attractive.

Those of his later victims who survived his attacks described Bundy as charismatic and handsome. This coupled with his ploy of pretending to be injured and needing help, was how he was able to gain their trust.

Murders

Bundy was definitely one of the most depraved killers in the last century. He would often go back to the bodies after he had disposed of them, and would perform various sexual acts with the corpses. He would continue this until the bodies were so decomposed or damaged by wild animals that it was no longer possible to have physical contact with them.

At least twelve of Bundy's victims were decapitated, and some of the heads were kept in his apartment for a time. Like many serial killers keep trophies, Bundy kept the heads. He undoubtedly got a great deal of enjoyment reliving his crimes simply by looking at or touching the severed heads of his victims.

Bundy's most brutal attack occurred on January 15, 1978, while he was on the run after escaping from prison. In the early hours of the morning, he made his way into the Florida State University Chi Omega sorority house. At around 2:45 am, he attacked Margaret Bowman, 21, with a piece of firewood as she lay sleeping in her bed. He then used a nylon stocking to garrote her. Next, he went into Lisa Levy's bedroom. The 20-year-old was beaten until she was unconscious, then strangled. Bundy tore off her nipple, bit her buttock and assaulted her sexually with a bottle.

In the bedroom next door, Bundy attacked Kathy Kleiner and Karen Chandler. Kleiner had her jaw broken and her shoulder was lacerated, and Chandler received a concussion, broken jaw, broken finger and some of her teeth were knocked out. All four women were attacked in a short frenzied attack, lasting around 15 minutes.

After fleeing from the sorority house, Bundy broke into an apartment and attacked Cheryl Thomas, a student from the university. Although she

survived, she suffered a dislocated shoulder, a broken jaw, her skull was fractured in five places, and she was left permanently deaf.

On the evening before he was due to be executed, Bundy discussed his victims with Bill Hagmaier, and his list was as follows:

Washington, 11 (including Parks, abducted in Oregon but killed in Washington; and including 3 unidentified)

Utah, 8 (3 unidentified)

Colorado, 3

Florida, 3

Oregon, 2 (both unidentified)

Idaho, 2 (1 unidentified)

California, 1 (unidentified)

Timeline of known murders:

February 1, 1974 - Lynda Ann Healy, 21 - Bludgeoned while she was sleeping, and abducted. Her skull and mandible were discovered at Taylor Mountain.

March 12, 1974 - Donna Gail Manson, 19 - Abducted while walking to a concert and murdered. Her body was left (according to Bundy) at Taylor Mountain site, but has never been found.

April 17, 1974 - Susan Elaine Rancourt, 18 - Disappeared after attending an evening advisors' meeting at Central Washington State College. Her skull and mandible were found at Taylor Mountain.

May 6, 1974 - Roberta Kathleen Parks, 22 - Went missing from Oregon State University in Corvallis. Her skull and mandible were found at Taylor Mountain.

June 1, 1974 - Brenda Carol Ball, 22 - Disappeared after leaving the Flame Tavern in Burien. Her skull and mandible were found at Taylor Mountain.

June 11, 1974 - Georgann Hawkins, 18 - Abducted from an alley behind her sorority house, UW. Skeletal remains recovered at Issaquah were identified by Bundy as being Hawkins.

July 14, 1974 - Janice Ann Ott, 23 - Abducted from Lake Sammamish State Park in broad daylight. Her skeletal remains were recovered at Issaquah.

July 14, 1974 - Denise Marie Naslund, 19 - Abducted four hours after Ott from the same park. Her skeletal remains were recovered at Issaquah.

Utah, Colorado, Idaho

October 2, 1974 - Nancy Wilcox, 16 - Ambushed, assaulted, and strangled in Holladay, Utah. According to Bundy, her body was buried near Capitol Reef National Park, 200 miles (320 km) south of Salt Lake City, but has never been found.

October 18, 1974 - Melissa Anne Smith, 17 - Vanished from Midvale, Utah. Her body was found in a mountain area nearby.

October 31, 1974 - Laura Ann Aime, 17 - Disappeared from Lehi, Utah. Her body was discovered in American Fork Canyon by hikers.

November 8, 1974 - Debra Jean Kent, 17 - Vanished after leaving a school play in Bountiful, Utah. According to Bundy, her body was left near Fairview, Utah, 100 miles (160 km) south of Bountiful. Only a patella bone was found, but it was never formally identified as belonging to Kent.

January 12, 1975 - Caryn Eileen Campbell, 23 - Disappeared from a hotel in Snowmass, Colorado. Her body was discovered dumped on a dirt road nearby.

March 15, 1975 - Julie Cunningham, 26 - Disappeared on the way to a tavern in Vail, Colorado. According to Bundy, her body was buried near Rifle, 90 miles (140 km) west of Vail, but it was never found.

April 6, 1975 - Denise Lynn Oliverson, 25 - Abducted while cycling to her parents' house in Grand Junction, Colorado. According to Bundy, her body was thrown into the Colorado River 5 miles (8.0 km) west of Grand Junction but has never been found.

May 6, 1975 - Lynette Dawn Culver, 12- Abducted from Alameda Junior High School in Pocatello, Idaho. According to Bundy, her body was thrown into what authorities believe to be the Snake River, but has never been found.

June 28, 1975 - Susan Curtis, 15 - Disappeared during a youth conference at Brigham Young University. According to Bundy, her body was buried near Price, Utah, 75 miles (121 km) southeast of Provo, but has never been found.

Florida

January 15, 1978 - Margaret Elizabeth Bowman, 21 - Bludgeoned and then strangled as she slept, at the Chi Omega sorority, Florida State University.

January 15, 1978 - Lisa Levy, 20 - Bludgeoned, strangled and sexually assaulted as she slept, at the Chi Omega sorority, Florida State University.

February 9, 1978 - Kimberly Diane Leach, 12 - Abducted from her junior high school in Lake City, Florida. Her skeletal remains were found near Suwannee River State Park, 43 miles (69 km) west of Lake City.

Possible Victims

Bundy remains a suspect in several unsolved homicides, and is likely responsible for others that may never be identified. During a conversation

in 1987 he confided to Keppel that there were "some murders" that he would "never talk about", because they were committed "too close to home", "too close to family", or involved "victims who were very young".

August 31, 1961 - Ann Marie Burr, 8 - Vanished from her home in Tacoma when Bundy was 14. Her house was on Bundy's newspaper delivery route. The victim's father was certain that he saw Bundy in a ditch at a construction site on the nearby UPS campus the morning his daughter disappeared. There was other circumstantial evidence suggesting Bundy was responsible, but he repeatedly denied responsibility and wrote a letter of denial to the Burr family in 1986. According to Keppel, Burr fits all three of Bundy's "no discussion" categories of "too close to home", "too close to family", and "very young. Forensic testing was done on material evidence from the crime scene in 2011, but there were insufficient intact DNA sequences for it to be compared to Bundy's.

June 23, 1966 - Flight attendants Lisa E. Wick and Lonnie Trumbull, both 20, were bludgeoned as they slept in their apartment with a piece of wood, in Seattle's Queen Anne Hill district. This was near the Safeway store where Bundy was working, and the women were known to shop there. Trumbull died in the attack, but Wick survived. To date there has been no proof Bundy was responsible, but the similarities between the crime and the later attack at the sorority were striking.

May 30, 1969 - Susan Davis and Elizabeth Perry, both 19, were stabbed to death while they were on vacation. Their car was found near the Garden State Parkway, Somers Point, New Jersey. Their bodies were found in nearby woods three days later. One victim was fully clothed, and the other was nude. Bundy told forensic psychologist Art Norman that his first murder victims were two women in the Philadelphia area. According to

Julia, Bundy's aunt, he was wearing a leg cast due to a vehicle accident on the weekend Davis and Perry were killed. There was no record of the accident or Bundy having to be in a leg cast, and it was later known that he would fake injuries to lure women to his car. Despite no firm evidence, he remains a suspect in this case.

July 19, 1971 - Rita Curran, 24, was murdered in her apartment in Burlington, Vermont. She was bludgeoned, strangled and raped. The crime had similarities to other murders Bundy committed, and there was a municipal record that stated a person named "Bundy" was bitten by a dog in that area the same week.

July 22, 1971 - Joyce LePage, 21, disappeared from the campus of Washington State University. Her skeletal remains were found nine months later in a deep ravine south of Pullman, Washington. Bundy remains a suspect in this case.

June 29, 1973 - Rita Lorraine Jolly, 17, disappeared from West Linn, Oregon.

August 20, 1973 Vicki Lynn Hollar, 24, disappeared from Eugene, Oregon. Bundy confessed to two homicides in Oregon but never identified the victims. Oregon detectives suspected that they were Jolly and Hollar but didn't get the opportunity to interview Bundy.

May 27, 1974 - Brenda Joy Baker, 14, had been hitchhiking near Puyallup, Washington. Her body was found in Millersylvania State Park the following month. Although Bundy was a suspect in this case, he denied responsibility.

July 1, 1974 - Sandra Jean Weaver, 19, disappeared from Salt Lake City. Her nude body was discovered the next day near Grand Junction, Colorado. It was believed by some that Bundy mentioned her name during his death row interview, but it couldn't be confirmed.

August 2, 1974 - Carol L. Valenzuela, 20, disappeared while hitchhiking near Vancouver, Washington. Her remains were discovered in a shallow grave two months later, south of Olympia, along with the remains of another female victim later identified as Martha Morrison. Both women had long hair parted in the middle, like many other victims of Bundy. In August 1974 Bundy had driven from Seattle to Salt Lake City, so he could have passed through Vancouver and Eugene en route.

September 1, 1974 - Martha Morrison, 17, was last seen in Eugene, Oregon.

April 15, 1975 - Melanie Suzanne "Suzy" Cooley, 18, disappeared after leaving her school in Nederland, Colorado, 50 miles (80 km) northwest of Denver. Her body was discovered by road maintenance workers two weeks later in Coal Creek Canyon, 20 miles (32 km) away. There is evidence that Bundy was in the area at the time of her murder, namely gas receipts, but to date the case remains unsolved.

July 1, 1975 - Shelly Kay Robertson, 24, failed to show up for work in Golden, Colorado. Her remains were found by two mining students in August, 500 feet (150 m) inside a mine on Berthoud Pass near Winter Park Resort. There were gas receipts that put Bundy in the area at the time of the murder, but the case remains unsolved.

July 4, 1975 - Nancy Perry Baird, 23, disappeared from the gas station where she worked in Farmington, Utah, 20 miles (32 km) north of Salt Lake City. Her body was never found, and officially she is still listed as a missing person. During his death row interviews, Bundy denied any knowledge of or responsibility for the murder.

February 1976 - Debbie Smith, 17, disappeared from Salt Lake City. Her body was found near the Salt Lake City International Airport on April 1,

1976. Despite some publications listing Bundy as the perpetrator of this murder, the case remains unsolved.

Arrest and Trial

On August 16, 1975, Bundy failed to stop at a routine traffic stop and was caught and arrested by a Utah Highway Patrol officer in Granger, Salt Lake City. When he saw the passenger seat was missing from Bundy's car, the officer conducted a search and found a 'murder kit'. The items found included a mask made from pantyhose, a ski mask, handcuffs, rope, an ice pick, a crowbar and trash bags, as well as a number of tools. Bundy tried to explain the items as being 'household items' but the officer remembered the description of the car and suspect from a kidnapping in November the previous year.

After he was arrested, his apartment was searched but nothing significant was found. Bundy was released but put on 24-hour surveillance. During this period, detectives interviewed his previous girlfriend Elizabeth Kloefer in Seattle. She said that before Bundy moved to Utah she came across some odd items in her apartment and at Bundy's home. These included a bag of plaster of Paris, crutches, surgical gloves, a sack of women's clothing and a meat cleaver.

Bundy's car, a Volkswagen Beetle, was located and retrieved from the new owner and put under forensic testing. Hairs were found that were matched to those of Caryn Campbell, Melissa Smith and Carol DaRonch. He was put in a lineup and identified by DaRonch as the man who had pretended to be 'Officer Roseland'.

Despite being charged with aggravated kidnapping and attempted criminal assault against DaRonch, he was let out on bail. Police continued to surveil Bundy. He went on trial in February 1976 for the DaRonch case and was found guilty. He was sentenced to up to 15 years in prison on June 30,

1976. In October the same year, he was found hiding among bushes in the prison grounds and was sent to solitary confinement for several weeks.

That same month he was charged with the murder of Caryn Campbell. He was transferred to Aspen for the trial, and chose to represent himself in court, meaning he was excused from being handcuffed or shackled. At one point he asked to visit the law library located in the courthouse so he could conduct research for his case, and was given permission. Bundy jumped out of the second-story window and escaped.

He was recaptured six days later. This wasn't to be the last time he would attempt to escape. He managed to create a hole in the ceiling of his cell, and purposely lost weight so he could fit through it. At night he would practice climbing through it and navigating the crawl space. His break for freedom occurred on December 30, 1977. Bundy piled books on his bed and covered them with a blanket so it would look like he was sleeping, then climbed through the ceiling hole. Bundy dropped down into the chief jailer's apartment, who happened to be out for the night, stole his clothes and walked out the front door.

After being on the run for a period of time, and having committed further murders, Bundy was pulled over once again by police on February 15. Checks on his vehicle showed Bundy's car was stolen, and when Officer David Lee informed him he was under arrest, Bundy kicked him and ran. Officer Lee fired off two warning shots then chased after him, tackling him. He subdued Bundy after a struggle, and placed him in his car for transport to jail.

By the time Bundy went to trial for his crimes, the evidence was insurmountable. It was no surprise that he was found guilty, and less of a surprise for him to receive the death penalty.

Outcome

On January 24, 1989, Bundy was strapped into the electric chair. By 7:16 am, he was pronounced dead. His body was cremated and his ashes scattered over the Cascade Mountains in Washington.

He had declined to order a special last meal and instead opted for the standard prison meal on offer. There were around 42 witnesses to his execution, and many death penalty supporters lined the fences outside the prison, some holding placards that read 'burn Bundy burn'.

Trivia

- Bundy's 1968 Volkswagen Beetle was displayed in the lobby of the National Museum of Crime and Punishment in Washington DC until its closure in 2015. It is presently on exhibit at the Alcatraz East Crime Museum in Pigeon Forge, Tennessee.

Quotes by Bundy:

- "You learn what you need to kill and take care of the details...It's like changing a tire...The 1st time you're careful...By the 30th time, you can't remember where you left the lug wrench"
- "I'm the most cold-blooded sonofabitch you'll ever meet."

John Justin Bunting

Date of birth: September 4, 1966

Aliases/Nicknames: The Snowtown Murders, The Bodies in Barrels Murders

Characteristics: Torture, Cannibalism, Murder

Number of victims: 11

Date of murders: 1992 - 1999

Date of arrest: May 19, 1999

Murder method: Strangulation, shooting

Known victims: Clinton Trezise, 22; Ray Davies, 26; Michael Gardiner, 19; Barry Lane, 42; Thomas Trevilyan, 18; Gavin Porter, 29; Troy Youde, 21 ;Frederick Brooks, 18; Gary O'Dwyer, 29; Elizabeth Haydon, 37; David Johnson, 24

Crime location: Snowtown, South Australia

Status: Sentenced to 11 life sentences without parole.

Background

Bunting was born in Inala, Queensland, in 1966. At the age of eight, a friend's older brother sexually assaulted and beat him. By the time he became a teenager, he had developed a fascination with anatomy, weapons and photography. In young adulthood, his opinion of homosexuals and pedophiles had turned into a strong hatred. When Bunting was 22 years old, he was working at an abattoir, and would brag about how he enjoyed slaughtering the animals.

In 1991, Bunting moved to Salisbury North, located in South Australia, and made friends with his neighbors Robert Wagner and his girlfriend Vanessa Laney, and Mark Haydon. This friendship would lead to Wagner assisting Bunting in committing the murders at a later date.

Also living with Bunting at the time were James Vlasskis, his mother and his half-brother. They also were drawn in to Bunting's murderous acts.

Murders

In August 1992, Clinton Trezise was invited over to Bunting's house for a visit. Once there, Bunting used a shovel to bash him to death, and he was buried in a shallow grave at Lower Light, South Australia. Bunting had claimed Trezise was a pedophile, and after the murder would often refer to him as 'Happy Pants'. It would be two years before Trezise's body was found and the case was unsolved for quite a few years.

In a caravan parked behind Suzanne Allen's house lived Ray Davies, an intellectually disabled man. Davies and Allen had once been in a relationship. Allen later claimed Davies had made sexual advances to her grandsons, and this led to him being murdered. He was killed by Bunting and Wagner and his disappearance was never reported. The caravan was cleaned and sold, and police later found Davies' body buried in Bunting's backyard.

Wagner didn't like Michael Gardiner simply because he was homosexual. He lived nearby in a house he shared with friends, and was openly gay. After Bunting and Wagner had killed him, they got another friend, Frederick Brooks to call Gardiner's friends and pretend to be the dead man so they could try and get access to his bank accounts. His body was found in one of the drums in Snowtown. They had cut off one of his feet so the lid would close properly.

Barry Lane, like Gardiner, was also a homosexual and he was a known crossdresser. Lane and Wagner had been in a relationship for more than ten years and they lived together. In October 1997, Bunting made Lane call his mother and say he was moving away. Bunting had heard that Lane had told others about the murder of Trezise. So, Bunting killed Lane, dismembered his body and placed him in the drum with the body of Michael Gardiner.

Also living with Lane was Thomas Trevilyan, who many considered to have psychiatric problems. He only ever wore army-style clothes and would often go for very long walks in bare feet. Trevilyan had helped during the murder and dismemberment of Lane, and similarly, he was killed by Bunting because he had told others of the murder. Trevilyan was taken to an area of the Adelaide Hills where Bunting and Wagner forced him to stand on top of a box while they placed a noose around his neck. The box was kicked out from under him and he hanged.

In 1998, Gavin Porter was living in the same house as Bunting and Vlasskis. A heroin addict, Bunting was infuriated when he was pricked by one of his used syringes when he sat on the couch. Bunting called Porter a waste and said he didn't deserve to live, so Bunting and Wagner killed him while he slept in his car in the driveway. His body was placed in a barrel and ended up at Snowtown.

Vlasskis told Bunting that his half-brother Troy Youde had molested him when they were younger. In response, Bunting, Wagner, Vlasskis and Haydon paid a visit to Youde in August 1998. They dragged Youde from his bed and killed him, before dismembering his body and placing it in a barrel, later taken to Snowtown.

Despite helping Bunting after the death of Gardiner, Frederick Brooks was the next victim on their list. The intellectually disabled man was killed on September 17, 1998. Another intellectually disabled man, Gary O'Dwyer, was killed some time in 1998. Bunting and Vlasskis made sure they got his personal banking and welfare information before they killed him so they could continue to access his welfare payments. After his body was discovered in Snowtown, police discovered burn marks on his body from him being given electric shocks.

Elizabeth Haydon, Mark Haydon's wife, was to become the only female murdered by Bunting and Wagner. While her husband and nephew were away for the day, on November 20, 1998, she was murdered. Incredibly, her husband would later help in trying to conceal the murder of his wife. It was her murder that later lead police to the old bank vault in Snowtown.

Vlasskis lured David Johnson to the bank in Snowtown on May 9, 1999. Although he was his stepbrother, Vlasskis did what he was told to by Bunting, and when Bunting said Johnson had to die, Vlasskis went along with it. On arriving at the bank building, Johnson was grabbed and handcuffed, then forced to read a script prepared by Bunting. He was also forced to give the PIN number for his bank account, and the whole spiel was recorded on a computer that had a microphone.

Vlasskis and Wagner went to try and access Johnson's bank accounts, but they were unsuccessful. When they got back to Snowtown, Johnson had been killed. His body was dismembered, and then Wagner and Bunting cooked up parts of his flesh and ate it.

Timeline of known murders:

August, 1992 - Clinton Trezise, 22

December 1995 - Ray Davies

August 1997 - Michael Gardiner, 19

October 1997 - Barry Lane, 42

November 1997 - Thomas Trevilyan, 18

1998 - Gavin Porter, 29

August 1998 - Troy Youde, 21

September 17, 1998 - Frederick Brooks, 18

1998 - Gary O'Dwyer, 29

November 20, 1998 - Elizabeth Haydon, 37

May 9, 1999 - David Johnson, 24

Arrest and Trial

While investigating the disappearance of Elizabeth Haydon, police discovered the Snowtown location. Inside the disused bank they found the human remains of eight victims in six plastic barrels. On May 21, 1999, Bunting, Wagner, Vlasskis and Mark Haydon were arrested for the murders.

When Bunting and Wagner went to trial, it was to become the longest trial in South Australian history. It lasted for nearly a whole year, and in December 2003, Bunting was found guilty of committing eleven murders. Wagner was found guilty of committing ten murders, despite only confessing to three of them. Vlasskis plead guilty to four murders.

Hayden was found guilty in 2004 of assisting with five murders. As the ringleader of the group, Bunting was sentenced to eleven terms of life imprisonment without parole. Wagner received ten life sentences without parole, and Vlasskis was sentenced to four life sentences with a minimum of 26 years. Haydon received 25 years without parole for 18 years.

Outcome

Trivia

- Bunting was born with no sense of smell.

Ricardo Caputo

Date of birth: 1949

Aliases/Nicknames: The Lady Killer

Characteristics: Had visions and heard voices

Number of victims: 4

Date of murders: 1971 - 1977

Date of arrest: January 18, 1994

Murder method: Stabbing, strangulation

Known victims: Natalie Brown, 19; Judith Becker, 26; Barbara Ann Taylor, 28; Laura Gomez, 23

Crime location: New York, California, Mexico

Status: Sentenced to 25 years. Died of a heart attack in prison, in October 1997.

Background

Caputo was born in Mendoza, Argentina in 1949, and spent his childhood there. He was described as an athletic boy who loved swimming and running, and at one point he had become quite an accomplished expert in martial arts. He was also very good at sketching, and this was his way of making money as an adult as he traveled, often sketching customers in bars in exchange for money.

Caputo went to New York in 1970, on a six-month visa. At that time, his visa was granted because there was no prior history of criminal activity or mental health problems in his background. He began working as a waiter in various restaurants, and eventually was hired by the Plaza Hotel as a custodian.

At the local bank, he met a teller named Natalie Brown, who was 19 years old and lived on Long Island with her parents. Before long, they started dating. She was an attractive young lady, with long dark hair, and a lovely smile. Her goal was to follow in her mother's footsteps and become a nurse. Brown's family lived the opposite to Caputo - while he lived in cheap rented rooms and worked a menial job, her family were far more affluent.

However, they continued dating, and a year later, they traveled around Europe together. On their return to the United States, they announced their engagement. But a marriage would never take place, and the relationship was far from good.

Murders

The body of Natalie Brown, 19, was found stabbed to death on July 31, 1971. Caputo was immediately suspected and arrested. However, he was deemed incompetent to stand trial and instead was sent to Matteawan State Hospital for psychiatric treatment. He was under the care of Judith Becker, a psychologist at the prison hospital.

Caputo was moved to the Manhattan Psychiatric Center in October 1973, and was given furloughs from the hospital occasionally. Often he would turn up at Judith Becker's home, and she tried to be friendly with him. On October 21, 1974, her body was found beaten and strangled to death.

Caputo was again an immediate suspect and police began looking for him.

Caputo went to San Francisco to evade capture, and there he killed another woman. Barbara Taylor was found in 1975, beaten to death. Her boyfriend was suspected, and when a photo of him was circulated, it was found to resemble Caputo, although a different name had been used.

Once again Caputo went on the run and this time he went to Mexico City. There he killed Laura Gomez in 1977, though little is known about this murder.

Timeline of known murders:

1971 - Natalie Brown, 19, Flower Hill, New York

1974 - Judith Becker, 26, Yonkers, New York

1975 - Barbara Ann Taylor, 28, San Francisco

1977 - Laura Gomez, Mexico City

Other suspected victims:

1981 - Devan Green, Los Angeles

1983 - Jacqueline Bernard, 64, New York City

Arrest and Trial

Caputo managed to stay undetected for almost 20 years, and would have continued to get away with the murders if he hadn't turned himself in. On January 18, 1994, Caputo was remembering the crimes he committed, and claiming he had an alternate personality, he was terrified of this murderous personality coming back.

He was found fit to stand trial, and was found guilty of committing two of the murders. He was sentenced to 25 years to life in prison.

Outcome

Caputo died in prison in 1997, after suffering a fatal heart attack. He was 48 years old.

Trivia

Quotes by Caputo:

- "I turned myself in in order to avoid any more killings,"
- "When I did what I did, I was sick and I hope that I can be cured while I am incarcerated. That's all I have to say."

David Carpenter

Date of birth: May 6, 1930

Aliases/Nicknames: The Trailside Killer

Characteristics: Rape and murder

Number of victims: 7+

Date of murders: 1979 - 1980

Date of arrest: May 14, 1981

Murder method: Shooting, stabbing

Known victims: Heather Scaggs,20;Ellen Hansen,20; Richard Stowers,19; Cynthia Moreland,18; Shauna May,25; Diana O'Connell,22; Anne Alderson,26; Anne Kelly Menjivas (suspected); Mary Frances Bennett,23;Edda Kane (suspected);Barbara Schwartz (suspected)

Crime location: Santa Cruz and Marin Counties, California

Status: Sentenced to death, awaiting execution.

Background

Carpenter had a very difficult start to life, having an alcoholic father and a domineering mother, who both physically abused the young child. He developed a stutter, and by the age of seven it was so bad he was unable to socialize properly with other children. He was also forced to take part in violin lessons and ballet, which lead to even more teasing by his peers.

As a child, Carpenter was a bed-wetter, and later enjoyed torturing animals. When he was 17 years old, he was arrested and convicted for the molestation of two younger children, who happened to be his cousins. He spent a year in prison before being released.

Carpenter continued to molest children until he married in 1955. The couple had three children of their own, and to support the family, Carpenter would take on a variety of work including working as a printer and salesman. He also was involved with the Coast Guard, and was honorably discharged from the service.

Despite being married, Carpenter frequently stalked other women, and in 1960, he lured a woman into the woods. There she was tied up with a clothesline, beaten with a hammer, and stabbed in the hand. A military patrol officer came across the scene, and a gunfire exchange took place. Carpenter was shot and injured, and arrested. He was convicted of assault with intent to commit murder, and two counts of assault with a deadly weapon.

He was sentenced to 14 years imprisonment. While incarcerated, his wife proceeded to divorce him. Carpenter was assessed by the prison psychiatrists, and they determined he was suffering from a sociopathic personality disorder. He only served nine years of his sentence, and on

release, he found another woman and remarried. This marriage would also fail.

From then, the attacks Carpenter made on women escalated, with many being abducted, raped and beaten, until after 1979, when his attacks became even more violent, and he began to kill his victims.

Murders

Carpenter's first victim was Edda Kane, 44, who was killed on August 19, 1979. Her naked body was found on August 20, 1979, on a hiking trail in the Mt. Tamalpais State Park. Her autopsy showed she had been killed 'execution style' with a gunshot to the head while she had been kneeling.

On March 8, 1980, Barbara Swartz, 23, went for a hike in the park and met a terrible fate. Her murdered body was discovered the following day on a trail in the park, and she had been stabbed multiple times in the chest while she was kneeling. Anne Alderson disappeared from the park on October 15, 1980. Her body was found the following day, and she had been shot three times in the head while kneeling.

On November 27, Shauna May, 25, was meant to meet with her lover at Point Reyes Park but never showed up. Her body was found in a shallow grave two days later. Next to her was the corpse of Diana O'Connell, who had disappeared in October. Both women had been shot in the head. Hours before these two victims were found, two more bodies were found. Richard Stowers and Cynthia Moreland had gone missing in September, after telling people they were going for a hike in the park. They too had been killed execution style, with gunshots to the head.

Carpenter attacked again on March 29, 1981, but this time the location was Henry Cowle State Park, near Santa Cruz. Stephen Haertle and Ellen Hansen were ambushed as they hiked, and when Carpenter said he was going to rape Hansen, she tried to warn him off. He opened fire on the couple, killing Hansen and seriously wounding Haertle. He managed to crawl for help and was able to give police a good description of Carpenter.

Carpenter's next murder would be his undoing. On May 1, 1981, Heather Scaggs went missing from San Jose after telling her boyfriend she was going to buy a car from David Carpenter, in San Francisco. She had said she was told by Carpenter to come alone. Her body was found on May 24, in the Big Basin Redwood State Park.

Timeline of known murders/dates bodies found:

August 19, 1979 - Edda Kane, 44

October 21, 1979 - Mary Frances Bennett, 23

March 8, 1980 - Barbara Schwartz, 23

October 11, 1980 - Richard Stowers, 19

October 11, 1980 - Cynthia Moreland, 18

October 15, 1980- Anne Alderson, 26

November 28, 1980 - Diana O'Connell, 22

November 28, 1980 - Shauna May, 25

March 29, 1981 - Ellen Hansen, 20

May 1, 1981 - Heather Scaggs, 20

Arrest and Trial

Police visited Carpenter following the disappearance of Heather Scaggs, and noticed he resembled the description and composite sketches provided by Haertle. When Haertle was shown a lineup of mugshots, he picked out Carpenter as the man who attacked him and Hansen. Carpenter was arrested on May 14.

When police searched Carpenter's home, they were unable to find a weapon. But they did find a witness who claimed to have sold Carpenter a .45-caliber gun, and another witness also said he had bought a .38 revolver in June from Carpenter. The police located this weapon and when it was tested it was found to be the same gun that had been used in the attacks on Haertle, Hansen and Scaggs.

Carpenter went to trial in April 1984, in Los Angeles. The evidence was indisputable, and he was found guilty of the murders of Scaggs and Hansen. He was sentenced to death. On May 10, 1988, Carpenter was found guilty of first degree murder in a San Diego court for the killing of Richard Stowers, Cynthia Moreland, Diana O'Connell, Shauna May and Anne Alderson.

Outcome

Carpenter was sent to San Quentin to await his execution. The appeals process is still ongoing.

Richard Trenton Chase

Date of birth: May 23, 1950

Aliases/Nicknames: The Vampire of Sacramento

Characteristics: Necrophilia, Mutilation, Cannibalism - Mental Illness

Number of victims: 6

Date of murders: December 1977 - January 1978

Date of arrest: January 27, 1978

Murder method: Shooting

Known victims: Ambrose Griffin, 51; Teresa Wallin, 22 (three months pregnant); Evelyn Miroth, 38; her son, Jason, 6; her nephew, David, 22-months-old; and her friend, Dan Meredith, 51

Crime location: Sacramento, California

Status: Sentenced to death. Committed suicide, on December 26th, 1980, by overdosing on prescribed medication.

Background

Chase also suffered abuse at the hands of his mother, and by the time he was ten years old he was already displaying traits of the Macdonald triad - arson, enuresis (bed-wetting) and cruelty to animals. As he grew into adolescence, he was known to be using both drugs and alcohol chronically.

He developed some bizarre beliefs and hypochondria as he got older. He believed his heart would stop beating at times, and even stated at one point that 'someone had stolen his pulmonary artery'. It's reported he would hold oranges on top of his head because he believed his brain would absorb the vitamin C. According to Chase, the bones of his skull moved around and were separated, so he shaved off his hair so he could see the movement take place.

Chase eventually moved out of his mother's home because he was suspicious she was trying to poison him. He moved into an apartment with some friends, but they soon began complaining of his constant intoxicated state. He also had a habit of wandering around the apartment with no clothes on, even when visitors were present. They told Chase to move out but he refused to go, so they left the apartment instead.

Now that he had the apartment to himself, Chase was able to indulge in the macabre desires, fantasies and interests that he had kept hidden. He would catch animals, kill them and disembowel them. At times he would eat the dead animals raw, and other times he placed the organs in a blender with some Coca-Cola and drank the awful concoction. When asked why he ate the animals, he said he believed that ingesting them would stop his 'heart from shrinking'.

In 1975, Chase injected the blood of a rabbit into his veins and was taken to hospital for treatment. Subsequently he was committed involuntarily to a mental institution. While a patient, staff discovered him with blood around his mouth, and found out that he had been catching birds and drinking their blood.

His behavior was incredibly bizarre, and his claims were too fantastic to be believed. He stated he had drained blood from a therapy dog and injected it to help him with his drug and alcohol addictions. He would also smear his own feces on the walls of his room, as well as on himself.

Understandably, Chase was diagnosed with paranoid schizophrenia, and after finding a suitable treatment regime with medication, he was released in 1976, because he was no longer considered a threat to society. He was put under his mother's care, but she weaned Chase off his medication and helped him get another apartment.

At some point in 1977, Chase was found on a reservation in Nevada and arrested. He had blood smeared all over his body, and in his truck was a bucket full of blood. However, the blood was determined to be cow's blood and charges were dropped.

Murders

Chase's first victim was Ambrose Griffin, a father of two who became a random target as Chase drove by, shooting on December 29, 1977. In less than a month, he claimed his next victim, Teresa Wallin. On January 23, 1978, Chase surprised Wallin who was pregnant, in her own home. He shot her three times, killing her, and then raped her as he stabbed her multiple times with a knife. Chase cut off her nipple and drank her blood, and removed some of her internal organs from her body. He then collected up dog feces from outside and shoved it in to her mouth and throat.

A few days later, on January 27, Chase entered Evelyn Miroth's home. He came across her friend Danny Meredith, and shot him before sealing his car keys and wallet. He then shot and killed Evelyn, her son and her nephew. Chase engaged in necrophilia acts with Evelyn's body, and cannibalism. A little girl knocked on the door as she was meant to come and play and Chase took off in Meredith's car. He took the body of 22-month-old David Ferreira with him. A neighbor was alerted and the police called.

Timeline of known murders:

December 29, 1977 - Ambrose Griffin, 51

January 23, 1978 - Teresa Wallin, 22

January 27, 1978 - Danny Meredith, 51

January 27, 1978 - Evelyn Miroth, 38

January 27, 1978 - Jason Miroth, 6

January 27, 1978 - David Ferreira, 22 months

Arrest and Trial

When police investigated the crime scene at the Miroth house, they found perfect palm prints in the blood that lead them directly to Chase. He was arrested and once he had been linked to the other murders, he was charged with six counts of murder. The defense tried to have the charges dropped to second degree murder by referring to Chase's mental health history, but they were unsuccessful. On May 8, 1979, Chase was found guilty of six counts of first degree murder and sentenced to death.

While in prison, even other inmates were frightened of Chase because of the horrific nature of his crimes. Some tried to convince Chase to kill himself. During interviews with Robert Ressler, Chase exhibited bizarre beliefs and behavior. At one point he gave Ressler a pile of macaroni and cheese he had been hoarding in his pockets.

Outcome

On Boxing Day 1980, Chase was found by a guard lying strangely on his bed, and on inspection, was found to have stopped breathing. An autopsy was conducted and the determination made that Chase had committed suicide by taking a stock-pile of his antidepressant medication he had been saving up over a number of weeks.

Trivia

- Serial killer Richard Chase once attempted to enter the home of a woman but, finding that her doors were locked, walked away. Chase later told detectives that he took locked doors as a sign that he was not welcome, but that unlocked doors were an invitation to come inside.

Quote by Chase:

- “Magic is the envelopment and coercion of the objective world by the ego; it is a dynamic subjectivism. Religion is the coercion of the ego by gods and spirits who are objectively conceived beings in control of nature and man.”

Andrei Chikatilo

Date of birth: October 16, 1936

Aliases/Nicknames: The Butcher of Rostov, The Forest Strip Killer, The Red Ripper, The Rostov Ripper

Characteristics: Necrophilia, cannibalism, mutilation, evisceration

Number of victims: 53 - 56

Date of murders: 1978 - 1990

Date of arrest: November 20, 1990

Murder method: Stabbing, strangulation

Known victims: Lena Zakotnova,9; Larisa Tkachenko,17; Lyubov Biryuk,13; Lyubov Volobuyeva,14; Oleg Pozhidayev,9; Olga Kuprina,16; Irina Karabelnikova,19; Sergey Kuzmin,15; Olga Stalmachenok, 10; Laura Sarkisyan,15; Irina Dunenkova,13; Lyudmila Kushuba,24; Igor Gudkov,7; Valentina Chuchulina,22; Unknown woman (18-25); Vera Shevkun,19; Sergey Markov,14; Natalya Shalapinina, 17; Marta Ryabenko,45;Dmitriy Ptashnikov,10; Tatyana Petrosyan,32; Svetlana Petrosyan,11; Yelena Bakulina,22; Dmitriy Illarionov,13; Anna Lemesheva,19; Svetlana Tsana,20; Natalya Golosovskaya, 16; Lyudmila Alekseyeva,17; Unknown woman (20-25); Akmaral Seydaliyeva,12; Alexander Chepel, 11; Irina Luchinskaya,24; Natalya Pokhlistova,18; Irina Gulyayeva,18; Oleg Makarenkov,13; Ivan Bilovetskiy,12; Yuri Tereshonok,16; Unknown woman (18-25) ;Alexey Voronko,9; Yevgeniy Muratov, 15; Tatyana Ryzhova,16; Alexander Dyakonov,8; Alexey Moiseyev,10; Helena Varga,19; Alexey Khobotov,10; Andrei Kravchenko,11; Yaroslav

Makarov,10; Lyubov Zuyeva,31; Viktor Petrov,13; Ivan Fomin,11; Vadim Gromov,16; Viktor Tishchenko,16; Svetlana Korostik,22

Crime location: Rostov Oblast, Russia

Status: Executed by gunshot to the head February 16, 1994.

Background

When Chikatilo was born, in 1936, there was a massive famine in the Ukraine due to the forced collectivization of agriculture created by the ruler Joseph Stalin. Chikatilo's parents were collective farm laborers, which meant that instead of receiving monetary payment for their work, they were given the right to cultivate their own food on some land behind the one-bedroom hut the family lived in.

There was a huge shortage of food, and Chikatilo claimed he didn't eat bread until he was twelve years old. The family would often eat leaves and grass to rid themselves of hunger pains. His mother told him repeatedly that he had once had an older brother, who was kidnapped when he was four years old and eaten by the neighbors. This has never been corroborated though, and it remains a mystery as to whether or not this ever happened.

His father was drafted into the Red Army during World War II, and was at one point wounded and taken prisoner by the Nazi's. When the Nazi's occupied the Ukraine, Chikatilo claimed to have seen numerous horrifying incidents, including fires, bombings, and shootings, and he would hide with his mother to survive. They even had to watch their home burn down. Chikatilo had to sleep in a single bed with his mother, and being a chronic bed-wetter, his mother would beat him each time he messed the bed.

While his father was still away in the army, his mother gave birth to a girl, Tatyana, in 1943. There was much speculation as to who the father of the baby was, given her husband's absence. It was well-known that women were often raped by the German soldiers during the occupation, and perhaps Chikatilo had even witnessed it, given the tiny hut they were living in at the time.

Chikatilo was a good student at school, but was quite weak physically and shy. He was constantly hungry due to the famine, and would often faint at school and at home. He became a target for bullying given his obvious poverty, his small stature and shyness. Then at home, he was being bullied by his mother, who berated him constantly. Tatyana, his sister, later stated that their mother was unforgiving and incredibly harsh towards her children, whereas their father was kind.

Murders

The murders Chikatilo committed were violently brutal and what he did to the bodies of his victims was incomprehensible. He would often gouge out the eyes of his victims, as he believed they contained a 'snapshot' of the last thing the victim saw. When he discovered this wasn't true, he stopped doing it.

The bodies were usually mutilated, some had their noses bitten off by Chikatilo, their stomachs eviscerated, and genitals and tongues were cut off or cut out. During the murder of one of his female victims, he bit off her nipple and swallowed it, which resulted in him ejaculating. Before they were dead, he sometimes shoved leaves and mud into his victim's mouths to keep them quiet.

Timeline of known murders:

December 22, 1978 - Lena Zakotnova, 9 - Chikatilo accosted the young girl while she was walking home from an ice-skating rink.

September 3, 1981 - Larisa Tkachenko, 17 - Approached and killed by Chikatilo while she was waiting for a bus to take her back to boarding school.

June 12, 1982 - Lyubov Biryuk, 13 - Abducted and murdered while after a shopping trip in the village of Donskoi.

July 25, 1982 - Lyubov Volobuyeva, 14 - Killed in an orchard near Krasnodar Airport. Her body was found on August 7.

August 13, 1982 - Oleg Pozhidayev, 9 - This was the first male victim. Pozhidayev was killed in Adygea, and his body has never been found.

August 1982 - Olga Kuprina, 16 - Killed in Kazachi Lagerya. Her body was found October 27.

September 12, 1982 - Irina Karabelnikova, 19 - She was lured away from Shakhty station and murdered. Her body was found September 20.

September 1982 - Sergey Kuzmin, 15 - A boarding school runaway, Kuzmin's body was found near Shakhty station in January, 1983.

December 11, 1982 - Olga Stalmachenok, 10 - Olga was lured off a bus while riding home from her piano lessons in Novoshakhtinsk.

Laura Sarkisyan, 15. Sarkisyan was from Armenia. Her body was never found.

July 1983 - Irina Dunenkova, 13. Dunenkova's body was found in Aviators' Park, Rostov, on August 8, 1983.

1983 - Lyudmila Kushuba, 24 - Killed in woodland near a Shakhty bus station. Her body was found March 12, 1984.

August 9, 1983 - Igor Gudkov, 7 - Gudkov was Chikatilo's youngest victim. He was the first male victim linked to the manhunt.

September 1983 - Valentina Chuchulina, 22 - Her body was found November 27, 1983 in woodland near Kirpichnaya station.

Unknown woman, 18-25 - Chikatilo claimed he encountered this victim while she tried to find a "man (client) with a car."

October 27, 1983 - Vera Shevkun, 19 - Was murdered in a mining village near Shakhty. Her body was found October 30.

December 27, 1983 - Sergey Markov, 14 - Disappeared while returning home from work experience. His body was found January 4, 1984.

January 9, 1984 - Natalya Shalapinina, 17 - Shalapinina had been a close friend of Olga Kuprina, killed by Chikatilo in 1982.

February 22, 1984 - Marta Ryabenko, 45 - Chikatilo's oldest victim, she was killed in Aviators' Park, Rostov.

March 24, 1984 - Dmitriy Ptashnikov, 10 - This boy was lured away from a kiosk selling stamps by Chikatilo, who pretended to be a fellow collector.

May 25, 1984 - Tatyana Petrosyan, 32 - Murdered at the same time as her daughter outside Shakhty. She had known Chikatilo since 1978.

May 25, 1984 - Svetlana Petrosyan, 11 - Svetlana saw Chikatilo murder her mother before he chased her and killed her with a hammer.

June 1984 - Yelena Bakulina, 22 - Bakulina's body was found August 27, in the Bagasenski region of Rostov.

July 10, 1984 - Dmitriy Illarionov, 13 - Vanished in Rostov while on his way to get a health certificate, so he could attend summer camp.

July 19, 1984 - Anna Lemesheva, 19 - Disappeared on her way to a dentist appointment. She was killed in Shakhty.

July 1984 - Svetlana Tsana, 20 - Originally from Riga. Her body was found September 9 in Aviators' Park, Rostov

August 2, 1984 - Natalya Golosovskaya, 16 - Vanished on a visit to Novoshakhtinsk, where she was to visit her sister.

August 7, 1984 - Lyudmila Alekseyeva, 17 - A student lured from a bus stop by Chikatilo, who offered to direct her to Rostov's bus terminal.

Unknown woman, 20-25 - Killed in Tashkent by Chikatilo while on a business trip to the Uzbek SSR city.

August 13, 1984 - Akmaral Seydaliyeva, 11. A runaway from Alma-Ata, Kazakhstan, killed by Chikatilo in Tashkent.

August 28, 1984 - Alexander Chepel, 11 - Chepel was killed on the banks of the Don River, near where Alekseyeva had been killed.

September 6, 1984 - Irina Luchinskaya, 24. - A Rostov librarian, killed by Chikatilo in Aviators' Park, Rostov.

August 1, 1985 - Natalya Pokhlistova, 18 - Lured off a train by Chikatilo near Domodedovo Airport, Moscow Oblast. Her body was found August 3.

August 27, 1985 - Irina Gulyayeva, 18 - Killed in a grove of trees near Shakhty bus station. Her body was found the following day.

May 16, 1987 - Oleg Makarenkov, 13 - Killed in Sverdlovsk, Ukraine, Chikatilo led police to his remains after his arrest.

July 29, 1987 - Ivan Bilovetskiy, 12 - Killed by Chikatilo on a business trip to Zaporizhya, Ukrainian SSR. His body was found July 30.

September 15, 1987 - Yuri Tereshonok, 16 - Was lured off a train in Leningrad Oblast and killed. Chikatilo led police to his remains after he was arrested.

Unknown woman, 18-25. Killed near Krasny Sulin train station - Her body was found April 6.

May 14, 1988 - Alexey Voronko, 9 - Voronko was killed near a train station in Ilovaish, Ukraine: the Rostov–Ukraine rail route.

July 14, 1988 - Yevgeniy Muratov, 15 - The first victim killed near Rostov since 1985. Muratov's body was found on April 10, 1989.

February 1989 - Tatyana Ryzhova, 16 - A runaway from Krasny Sulin, she was killed in Chikatilo's own daughter's apartment.

May 11, 1989 - Alexander Dyakonov, 8 - Killed in Rostov city centre the day after his 8th birthday. His body was found July 14.

June 20, 1989 - Alexey Moiseyev, 10 - Killed in the Vladimir region, east of Moscow. Chikatilo confessed to this murder after his arrest.

August 19, 1989 - Helena Varga, 19 - A student from Hungary who had a child. She was lured off a bus and killed in a village near Rostov.

August 28, 1989 - Alexey Khobotov, 10 - . Vanished from outside a theater in Shakhty. Chikatilo led police to his remains after his arrest.

January 14, 1990 - Andrei Kravchenko, 11 - Lured from a cinema by Chikatilo. He was killed in Shakhty. Kravchenko's body was found February 19.

March 7, 1990 - Yaroslav Makarov, 10 - Lured from a Rostov train station by Chikatilo. He was killed in Rostov botanical gardens.

April 1990 - Lyubov Zuyeva, 31 - Lured off a train near the Donleskhoz station near Shakhty. Her body was found August 24.

July 27, 1990 - Viktor Petrov, 13 - Killed in Rostov botanical gardens; a few yards from where Makarov had been murdered.

August 14, 1990 - Ivan Fomin, 11 - Killed at Novocherkassk municipal beach. His body was found August 17.

October 17, 1990 - Vadim Gromov, 16 - A student from Shakhty. Gromov vanished while riding the train to Taganrog.

October 30, 1990 - Viktor Tishchenko, 16 - Killed in Shakhty. Tishchenko fought hard for his life; he was the victim who bit Chikatilo's finger.

November 6, 1990 - Svetlana Korostik, 22 - Chikatilo's last victim. Her body was found November 13 in woodland near Donleskhoz station.

Arrest and Trial

In November 1990, Chikatilo was stopped by police and questioned when he was found in the same area as one of his victims, Svetlana Korostik. On November 14, he was arrested and formally interviewed. What followed was a confession that lasted two weeks, as Chikatilo gave the details of 56 murders he claimed he had committed.

Chikatilo went on trial on April 14, 1992, during which he had to be kept inside a special iron cage to protect him from his victims' families.

Throughout the trial his behavior was strange; at one point he said he was lactating because he was pregnant; he yelled out that he wasn't a homosexual and twice he pulled his pants down. While the final argument was being presented by the prosecutor, Chikatilo started singing and was removed from the courtroom.

Despite his bizarre actions, Chikatilo was deemed to be sane by a number of psychiatrists, and on October 14, 1992, he was found guilty of 52 murders and sentenced to death.

Outcome

Chikatilo had made a number of appeals to the Russian Supreme Court to save his life, to no avail. His last appeal was sent to the president at the time, Boris Yeltsin, but this too was denied on January 4, 1994.

On February 14, 1994, Chikatilo was transferred from his cell to a soundproofed room within the prison. He was executed by a single gunshot to the head.

Trivia

Quotes by Chikatilo:

- "What I did was not for sexual pleasure. Rather it brought me some peace of mind."
- Before his execution - "When I used my knife, it brought psychological relief. I know I have to be destroyed. I was a mistake of nature."
- "The blood and the agony gave me relaxation and a certain pleasure."

Thor Nis Christiansen

Date of birth: December 28, 1957

Aliases/Nicknames: Nil

Characteristics: Necrophilia, hitchhikers

Number of victims: 4

Date of murders: 1976 - 1979

Date of arrest: July 7, 1979

Murder method: Shooting

Known victims: Jacqueline Anne Rook, 21; Mary Ann Sarris, 19; Patricia Marie Laney, 21; Laura Sue Benjamin, 22

Crime location: Santa Barbara and Los Angeles Counties, California

Status: Sentenced to life imprisonment. Stabbed to death in prison, March 30, 1981.

Background

Christiansen was born in Denmark, 1957, and when he was five years old, the family immigrated to the United States, and eventually settled in Solvang, California. He was regarded as being an ordinary child, who did well at school, but all that changed when he reached the age of 16.

He dropped out of high school and moved out of home, finding work as an attendant at a gas station. During this time, he began gaining a lot of weight, and went from being a slender young man to weighing around 275 pounds.

It was also around this time that his thoughts began to turn dark, and he would fantasize about killing women and violating their bodies sexually. Before long, these thoughts turned into actions, and Christiansen began to kill.

Murders

On December 6, 1976, Christiansen abducted Jacqueline Rook, 21, from a bus stop in Goleta, Santa Barbara. The very same day, Mary Sarris, who was a waitress in Goleta, also went missing. On January 18, 1977, Patricia Laney, 22, went missing from another bus stop in Goleta. Her body was discovered the next day in Refugio Canyon. Two days later, the body of Rook was found in the same area. On May 22, the body of Sarris was found in Drum Canyon.

On April 18, 1979, Linda Preston, 24, was hitchhiking in Hollywood when she was picked up by Christiansen. They drove along for several blocks then he pulled out a gun and fired into her ear. Although she was bleeding badly, she was able to jump from his car and escape.

Laura Benjamin, 23, was abducted and killed by Christiansen on May 26, 1979.

Known victims:

December 6, 1976 - Jacqueline Anne Rook, 21 - Isla Vista

December 6, 1976 - Mary Ann Sarris, 19 - Isla Vista

January 18, 1977 - Patricia Marie Laney, 21 - Isla Vista

May 26, 1979 - Laura Sue Benjamin, 23 - Los Angeles County

Arrest and Trial

Preston who had survived being shot by Christiansen, happened to see him in a tavern on July 11, and immediately called the police. He was arrested and charged with the serious assault, and while in custody, police noticed there were similar aspects of his attack on Preston and the unsolved murders of Rook, Sarris, and Laney. He was subsequently charged with three counts of first-degree murder. He was then charged with the murder of Laura Benjamin.

His first trial in early 1980 was for the murder of Benjamin. Initially he tried to plead insanity, but he changed his mind and withdrew the plea. He went to trial in June 1980 for the murders of Rook, Sarris and Laney, and decided to plead guilty to all charges. He was sentenced to spend his life in prison.

Outcome

Christiansen was murdered in prison on March 30, 1981. He was found in the Folsom Prison exercise yard with a single stab wound to the chest. The murderer was never identified.

Doug Clark

Date of birth: March 10, 1948

Aliases/Nicknames: The Hollywood Slasher, The Sunset Strip Killer, The Sunset Strip Slayer

Characteristics: Necrophilia, pedophilia, decapitation

Number of victims: 7

Date of murders: June 1980 - August 1980

Date of arrest: August 12, 1980

Murder method: Shooting

Known victims: Karen Jones, 24; Exxie Wilson, 21; Marnette Comer, 17; Jack Robert Murray, 45; Gina Narano, 15; Cynthia Chandler, 16; Unknown girl

Crime location: Burbank and Los Angeles, California

Status: Sentenced to death, awaiting execution.

Background

Clark's family moved around a lot when he was a child, due to his father Franklin being a Naval Intelligence officer. It was later claimed that they had resided in thirty-seven countries during Clark's childhood. His father resigned from the Navy in 1958, and took an engineering position with a transport company in Texas. But this didn't keep the family settled, and before long they were on the move again.

At one point Clark was sent to an exclusive school in Geneva, and he then attended the Culver Military Academy. Following his graduation in 1967, he enlisted in the Air Force. It was around this time that everything seemed to start unravelling, and he was eventually discharged from the Force.

Over the next ten years, Clark drifted around and sometimes found work as a mechanic. But his real passion was to become a sexual athlete, and he often referred to himself as 'the king of the one night stand'. He worked as a steam plant operator in Los Angeles, for the Los Angeles Department of Water and Power, based at the Valley Generating Station. But this didn't last, and one night he just decided to quit.

He then worked at the Jergens soap factory, located in Burbank, as a boiler operator but this didn't last long either. He was often absent from work and had made violent threats towards some coworkers, so he was fired.

In 1980 he met Carol Bundy in a local bar, and they became a couple. Soon after meeting, Clark moved in with Bundy and he discovered that she had similar fantasies to his own.

Murders

Clark's first known victim was Marnette Comer, 17, who had been a runaway. Her body was found in the San Fernando Valley woods, and it appeared she had been killed at the beginning of June. On June 11, Clark picked up two teenagers, Gina Narano and Cynthia Chandler on the Sunset Strip. He told them to perform oral sex on him, and shot them both in the head. He then took them to a garage and raped their bodies. Their bodies were found the next day near the Ventura Freeway.

Bundy was uncomfortable with Clark's story of the murders and rang the police. However she claimed she had some knowledge but refused to give any clues as to who the murderer was. Clark had previously told Bundy that if they were ever caught, he would take the full blame so she wouldn't go to prison.

On June 24, Karen Jones and Exxie Wilson were lured into Clark's car. The two women were shot and killed before being dumped out in plain sight. Wilson's head was removed, and kept in the fridge, and Bundy would put makeup on it before Clark used it for necrophilia. Two days after the murders, the head was cleaned and put in a box before being left in an alleyway.

While Clark was taking some time before the next murder, Bundy was spending some time with John Murray, a man she knew before she met Clark. A part-time singer, Bundy was infatuated with Murray, and one night she told him what she and Clark had been doing. Murray was shocked, and gave the impression he was going to tell the police. On August 5, Bundy enticed Murray into his van to engage in sex. Instead she shot him and cut off his head.

Two days after killing Murray, Bundy couldn't handle the stress of the situation and confessed to a co-worker that she had murdered Murray and the police were called.

Timeline of known murders:

June 1, 1980 - Marnette Comer, 17

June 11, 1980 - Gina Narano, 15

June 11, 1980 - Cynthia Chandler, 16

June 24, 1980 - Karen Jones, 24

June, 1980 - Exxie Wilson, 20

July 25, 1980 - Jane Doe

August 5, 1980 - Jack Robert Murray, 45

Arrest and Trial

Bundy gave the police a complete explanation of the crimes she had committed with Clark, which lead to his immediate arrest. Clark was charged with six counts of murder and Bundy charged with two. When Clark went to trial, he tried to put all the blame on Bundy, making himself out to have been an innocent fool. But, his attempts to lessen his own involvement in the crimes failed and he was found guilty and sentenced to death.

In return for her testimony against Clark, Bundy had made a plea bargain. She therefore received a life sentence but avoided the death penalty. However, she later died in prison on December 9, 2003 from heart failure.

Outcome

Clark is still sitting on death row awaiting his date with the executioner.

Trivia

Clark's lawyer was allegedly intoxicated throughout the case, and several times he fell asleep while Clark was being cross-examined by the prosecution. He made the request to defend himself, but was denied any advisory counsel, co-counsel or even the services of a law clerk. The judge told him to 'go it alone' which was actually illegal.

The Cleveland Torso Murderer

Date of birth: Unknown

Aliases/Nicknames: Mad Butcher of Kingsbury Run

Characteristics: Dismemberment, decapitation, castration, use of chemicals

Number of victims: 12- 20

Date of murders: 1935 - 1938

Date of arrest: Not captured

Murder method: Most likely decapitation

Known victims: Edward Andrassy; Florence Genevieve Polillo; others unidentified

Crime location: Cleveland, Ohio

Status: Never identified therefore not apprehended.

Background

The Cleveland Torso Murderer remains unidentified to this day, and has been linked to up to twenty murders between 1935 and 1938. There are at least 12 victims officially attributed to the work of this serial killer, and each had been dismembered. Those that worked on the Cleveland Torso Murderer case believe that there are other murders he may be responsible for including some from the 1920s and 1950s.

This serial killer tended to target drifters, and as such, some of the victims have never been identified. There was no preference for gender, and he murdered both men and women. At that time in Cleveland, it was the Depression era, and his victims all appeared to come from the lower classes of society.

Each victim was beheaded, and in some cases, the torso was cut in half, which lead to the moniker 'The Cleveland Torso Murderer'. The majority of the male victims had their genitals removed, and some victims displayed evidence of some sort of chemical treatment on their body. Most were discovered long after their deaths, and the advanced level of decomposition also made it difficult to identify the bodies. To add to the difficulty, many of the heads were never located.

Eliot Ness was the Public Safety Director of Cleveland during the period of the twelve official murders. Although he wasn't heavily involved in the investigation, he did assist with the interrogation of one suspect, Dr. Francis E. Sweeney. Ness also oversaw the burning of the Kingsbury Run area, which is where the killer abducted most of his victims from.

Whoever the Cleveland Torso Murderer was, he seemed to delight in taunting Ness. At one point, he placed the dead remains of two of his

victims directly in the line of sight of Ness's office.

Murders

The first victim attributed to the Torso Murderer was Edward Andrassy, found in the Jackass Hill area of Kingsbury Run. His body was found on September 23, 1935, and he had been decapitated and his genitals removed. It was estimated he had been dead for two or three days. Around 30 feet away was the body of a John Doe, who also had been decapitated and emasculated. The skin of his body had been exposed to some sort of chemical which made it a red color and leathery. Estimation was that this victim had been dead for three or four weeks.

Florence Genevieve Polillo was killed somewhere between January 26 and February 7, 1936. Her body was found in downtown Cleveland, and had been dismembered. Her head was never found and it was believed she had been dead for two to four days.

The second John Doe was killed around June 5, 1936. It was believed he had still been alive when his head was cut off his body. His head was found, and he had been dead for around two days when he was discovered. The next murder occurred around May, 1936. The body of a third John Doe was found on July 22, in the Big Creek area of Brooklyn. He too had been decapitated while still alive.

On September 10, 1936, half of a male torso was found in Kingsbury Run. This victim was unidentified, and there was nothing attached to the torso below the hips. His head was never located, and he had been dead for about two days. The next body missing its head was found on February 23, 1937. The body was female and was never identified.

The body of a black Jane Doe was found on June 6, 1937 underneath the Lorain-Carnegie Bridge. The head had been removed along with a rib. This

victim had been dead about a year. The body of an unidentified male was found on July 6, 1937, in the Cuyahoga River. The head was never located.

A leg belonging to an unidentified female was found in the Cuyahoga River on April 8, 1938. The following month, a thigh was found in the river, and then a sack containing other body parts was discovered under the bridge. In all, the thighs, a foot, a lower leg and a torso was found. This victim had drugs in her system, unlike the other victims.

The last two victims were discovered on August 16, 1938. An unidentified female and an unidentified male were found at the Lakeshore Dump. Both had been decapitated, though both heads were recovered.

Timeline of known murders:

September 23, 1935 - Edward Andrassy

September 23, 1935 - John Doe I

January 26/February 7, 1936 - Florence Genevieve Polillo

June 5, 1936 - John Doe II "The Tattooed Man"

July 22, 1936 - John Doe III

September 10, 1936 - John Doe IV

February 23, 1937 - Jane Doe V

June 6, 1937 - Jane Doe VI

July 6, 1937 - John Doe VII

April 8, 1938 - Jane Doe VIII

August 16, 1938 - Jane Doe IX

August 16, 1938 - John Doe X

Suspects

A Cleveland resident, Frank Dolezal, was arrested on August 24, 1939, under suspicion of being responsible for the death of Florence Polillo. Six weeks after he was arrested however, Dolezal died in prison. He was found to have six broken ribs, which weren't present before he was arrested. Although he had admitted at one point to killing Florence in self-defense, it is generally believed that he wasn't responsible for her murder or any others.

Another potential suspect was Dr. Francis E. Sweeney, a World War I veteran who had extensive experience with amputations in the field during the war. Sweeney was interviewed by Eliot Ness, the Cleveland Safety Director at the time, and was given two polygraph examinations, both of which he failed. Sweeney committed himself to a mental hospital and there was no further evidence to suggest he was the killer.

Carroll Edward Cole

Date of birth: May 9, 1938

Aliases/Nicknames: Nil

Characteristics: Cannibalism, Dismemberment

Number of victims: 16

Date of murders: 1948, 1971 - 1980

Date of arrest: 1980

Murder method: Strangulation, Drowning

Known victims: Duane, 10; Essie Buck; Bonnie Sue O'Neil; Dorothy King; Wanda Roberts; Sally Thompson; Diana Pashal; Kathlyn Blum; Marie Cushman; Myrlene Hamer; others unidentified

Crime location: Nevada, Iowa, California

Status: Executed by lethal injection on December 6, 1985.

Background

Cole was born in Sioux City, Iowa, and not long after the birth of his sister in 1939, the family relocated to California. His father LaVerne was working in a shipyard, when he was called up to fight in World War II. While he was away on active service, his wife Vesta embarked on a number of extramarital affairs. Cole would often accompany his mother when she committed adultery, and he was threatened with a beating if he told anyone what she was up to.

At school he was teased a lot for having a 'girls' name, and at times his mother would even dress him up in girls' clothing and tease him. One of the bullies at school was a boy called Duane, who subsequently drowned in a local lake. This was considered a tragic accident until many years later when Cole confessed to murdering Duane.

Cole came into contact with the police numerous times throughout his teen years, largely for drunkenness, thefts and petty crimes. Stealing became a habit, and after he joined the Army, he was discharged rather quickly for stealing guns.

In 1960, Cole was living in Richmond, California, and one night he attacked two couples he came across in parked cars on a 'lover's lane'. Shortly afterwards, he called the police and stated he was having violent fantasies about strangling women, and over the next three years, he spent a lot of time in and out of mental hospitals.

Cole was diagnosed with having an antisocial sociopath personality, but was believed to be stable when he was released in April, 1963. He moved to Dallas, and ended up marrying Billie Whitworth, an alcoholic stripper. Two years later, Cole burned down a motel because he was convinced his wife

was having affairs with other men there. He was arrested and convicted of arson and sent to prison, and his marriage ended.

Following his release, Cole then tried to strangle an 11-year-old girl, and ended up with a five-year sentence in prison. He served his time and was released, and subsequently attempted to strangle two more women, and this time, he admitted himself in to a mental hospital. Although it was noted by the doctors that Cole had murderous fantasies, they still decided to release him, and he was sent back to San Diego.

Murders

On May 7, 1971, Cole picked up Essie Buck in a tavern in San Diego. He killed her by strangulation and kept her body in the trunk of his car for a while before disposing of it. Two weeks after this murder, he killed another woman, who has remained unidentified. He buried this victim in the woods, and later claimed that both women were killed because they were unfaithful to their husbands which reminded him of his mother.

Having married Diana Parshal in July 1973, the relationship was troubled by her alcoholism and their constant fighting. On September 19, 1979, he strangled her to death. A neighbor became suspicious that she was missing and notified the police. When they investigated, they found her body in a closet, wrapped in a blanket, but decided she had died because of her alcoholism and Cole wasn't charged.

After his wife's death, Cole moved around for a while, and claimed he killed a woman in Las Vegas before he moved back to Dallas. He allegedly murdered three women in November 1980, and when he was found on the scene of the third killing, he was taken into custody.

Timeline of known murders:

May 7, 1971 - Essie Buck

May 23, 1971 - Woman known only as 'Wilma'

May 30, 1971 - Unknown woman

After March, 1972 - Two unknown women killed

August 1975 - Myrlene Hamer

May 14, 1977 - Kathlyn Blum

October 1977 - Unknown woman

August 27, 1979 - Bonnie Sue O'Neil

September 19, 1979 - Diana Parshal

November 3, 1979 - Marie Cushman

Arrest and Trial

Cole was arrested in November 1980 at the scene of a murder, and held in custody. However, it was decided the victim had most likely died from natural causes and they were about to release Cole, but he started to confess to other crimes as well as this murder. According to Cole, he was responsible for the deaths of at least fourteen women over a nine-year period, but there could have been others he couldn't remember due to his drunkenness.

Cole went to trial for the murders he had committed in Texas, and on April 9, 1981, he was found guilty of three murders. He received a life sentence. Following the death of his mother in 1984, Cole agreed to go to trial for murders he had committed in Nevada. This was surprising, given that Nevada had the death penalty.

Once again he was found guilty, and he was sentenced to death in October 1984. Campaigners against the death penalty tried to get Cole's sentence commuted to life imprisonment, but Cole disagreed and didn't want the campaigners to fight on his behalf. When he was given his death sentence, he actually thanked the presiding judge.

Outcome

Cole was lead to the converted gas chamber on December 6, 1985, at 1:43 am, having been administered sedatives at 12:12 am to keep him relaxed. He was strapped to the table and the needles inserted at 2:05 am. Following the administration of the lethal drug cocktail, Cole was seen to convulse before his body relaxed again at 2:07 am. Minutes later, he was pronounced dead. The execution lasted for five minutes.

Trivia

- Last meal before execution - jumbo shrimp, tossed salad with French dressing, Boston clam chowder, French fries, and ate the last of his supply of 25 lbs. of cookies and candy.
- Played cards with the prison priest during his last hours.

Quote by Cole:

- "I just messed up my life so bad that I just don't care to go on".

Adolfo Constanzo

Date of birth: November 1, 1962

Aliases/Nicknames: The Godfather of Matamoros, The Witch Doctor

Characteristics: Human sacrifices and ritual torture

Number of victims: 16+

Date of murders: 1986 - 1989

Date of arrest: Not apprehended due to death

Murder method: Stabbing, shooting

Known victims: Men - unnamed drug dealers, cult members

Crime location: Matamoros, Mexico

Status: Assisted suicide by gunfire, May 6, 1989.

Background

Constanzo's mother was a 15-year-old Cuban immigrant when she gave birth to him in Miami in 1962. She would go on to have more children, all to different fathers, but was married at one point. After her first husband died, she moved to San Juan, in Puerto Rico. She met her next husband there and remarried.

Although Constanzo was baptized a Catholic, his mother would take him to Haiti on visits with her to learn about voodoo. This conflict of religions must have had some sort of impact on Constanzo. In 1972, the family returned to Miami, and not long afterwards, his stepfather died.

When Constanzo was a teenager, he became a sorcerer's apprentice in the religious practice of Palo Mayombe, and part of this practice involved the sacrifice of animals. His mother had remarried again, and Constanzo's new stepfather was also involved in Palo Mayombe and was apparently involved in the drug trade.

Along with his mother, Constanzo was arrested multiple times for theft, shoplifting and vandalism. His mother believed Constanzo was psychic, and she claimed he had foretold the attempted assassination of then President Ronald Reagan.

When Constanzo matured into an adult, he moved to Mexico City. There he met Martin Quintana, Omar Orea and Jorge Montes, who would become his followers. They all became involved in a business, where they would cast good luck spells, and this involved sacrifice of animals such as lion cubs, zebras, goats, chickens and snakes. The majority of their clientele were wealthy drug dealers and hitmen.

As a result of this business, Constanzo was introduced to other wealthy members of society, including corrupt Mexican policemen, who subsequently introduced him into the powerful drug cartels in the city. To successfully carry out his spell casting, Constanzo needed human bones, so he began raiding the local graveyards. But, he decided that soon he would need live humans to sacrifice, and this lead to him committing the 16 or more terrible murders.

Murders

Constanzo believed his 'magic spells' enabled the cartels to be successful, and so demanded he be a business partner with the Calzadas, one of the most powerful families around at that time. They refused his demands, and soon after, seven members of the family vanished. Later, when their bodies were found, they were incomplete. Some were missing ears, brains, fingers and toes, and one victim had their spine removed.

After moving to a house in the desert, Rancho Santa Elena, in 1988, Constanzo carried out a number of murders as part of his rituals. Some of the victims were drug dealers he considered rivals, while others were strangers who happened to cross paths with Constanzo.

Constanzo murdered a young pre-med student, Mark Kilroy, at the ranch on March 13, 1989. His henchmen had kidnapped Kilroy outside a bar and taken him to Constanzo at his ranch. Kilroy was an American citizen who was on holiday in Mexico at the time, and following his murder, Mexican police were put under a lot of pressure from authorities in Texas to solve the murder. As a result, the police arrested four followers of Constanzo, and the cult was uncovered.

Police learned that Constanzo had killed Kilroy because he needed a 'superior' brain for a ritual spell. When officers raided Constanzo's ranch, they found a cauldron containing a human brain and a dead black cat. As they searched the ranch, they found fifteen corpses, all mutilated, buried there, including the body of Kilroy. According to witnesses, Kilroy had been killed by a strike to the back of the neck with a machete.

Arrest and Trial

Constanzo had a 'death pact' with members of his followers. They had fled to Mexico City, and were discovered when the local police were called to attend an unrelated dispute taking place at the apartment building. As the police officers neared Constanzo's hiding place, he thought they were coming for him and he opened fire on the officers with his machine gun. Now that he had attracted their attention, he was completely surrounded by the police. He was not prepared to go to prison, so he gave the gun to Alvaro de Leon and ordered him to shoot himself and Martin Quintana. They were both dead by the time the police entered the apartment.

Outcome

Police arrested Alvaro de Leon and Sara Aldrete at the apartment. In total, charges were laid against fourteen of the cult members. These charges ranged from drug-running and obstruction to murder. De Leon was convicted and sentenced to thirty years in prison. Sara Aldrete was convicted of committing multiple murders and sent to prison for more than sixty years. Two other members, Serafin Hernandez and Elio Hernandez were also found guilty of multiple murders and sentenced to sixty years in prison.

There were a number of possible accomplices, though their exact involvement was never proven. They included:

- Rubén Estrada "Patitas Cortas"
- Christian Campos "El Panzas"
- Emmanuel Romero "El Trompas"
- Saul Sánchez "El Macaco"
- Ricardo Peña "El Cepillín"

Dean Corll

Date of birth: December 24, 1939

Aliases/Nicknames: The Candy Man, The Pied Piper

Characteristics: Homosexual rape, Mutilation

Number of victims: 27+

Date of murders: 1970 - 1973

Date of arrest: Not arrested due to death

Murder method: Shooting, Strangulation

Known victims: Jeffrey Konen, 18; Danny Yates, 14; James Glass, 14 ; Jerry Waldrop, 13; Donald Waldrop, 15; Randell Harvey, 15 ; David Hilligiest, 13; Gregory Malley Winkle, 16; Ruben Watson, 17 ; Willard 'Rusty' Branch, Jr. 17; Frank Aguirre, 18; Mark Scott, 17; Johnny Delone, 16; Billy Baulch, 17 ;Steven Sickman, 17; Wally Jay Simoneaux, 14; Richard Hembree, 13; Richard Kepner, 19; Joseph Lyles, 17; Billy Ray Lawrence, 15; Ray Blackburn, 20; Homer Garcia, 15 ; John Sellars, 17 ; Michael 'Tony' Baulch, 15; Marty Jones, 18; Charles Cary Cobble, 17 ; James Dreymala, 13

Crime location: Houston, Texas

Status: Shot to death by Elmer Wayne Henley before apprehension, August 8, 1973.

Background

Dean Corll was born in Fort Wayne, Indiana, as the first child of parents Arnold and Mary. His mother was protective of Corll, but his father was a lot stricter with him as a child. The couple had an unhappy marriage, and they divorced in 1946. The family home was sold as a result, and they moved into a trailer home in Memphis, because Arnold had gone in to the Air Force in the area and the parents wanted to keep contact between the children and their father.

As a child, Corll was described as being rather shy but serious, and he didn't interact much with other children. He did however show a lot of concern for others. When he was 7 years old, he developed rheumatic fever, but this wasn't diagnosed until he was 11, after doctors discovered he had a heart murmur. It didn't affect him dramatically, but meant he was unable to participate in sports at school.

His parents tried to reconcile in 1950 but this only lasted a few years, and they divorced again in 1953. The children were placed in the care of their mother, but still had a good relationship with their father with regular contact.

Corll's mother married again, this time to Jake West, a traveling clock salesman. This led to the family moving to Vidor, and his mother and stepfather were encouraged to start a small candy company which they called 'Pecan Prince'. They started out operating from their garage, and Corll worked days and nights, even when he was still at school. Working in the family candy business, led to him becoming known as the 'Candy Man' later on in life.

Murders

The majority of Corll's victims were abducted from Houston Heights in downtown Houston. Back then the area was considered to be a low-income neighborhood. Corll brought in two accomplices to help him abduct young boys and men. Both Elmer Wayne Henley and David Owen Brooks were teenagers at the time, and many of the victims were friends with one or the other. Some victims were known to Corll prior to being kidnapped, and at least two victims had worked for Corll at his candy company.

The general method of abduction was to entice the victim into a vehicle with the promise of a ride somewhere or a party invitation. Once inside the vehicle, usually either a Ford Econoline van or a Plymouth GTX, they were then taken to Corll's house. The victim would be given drugs or alcohol until they passed out. Then they would either be grabbed forcefully or tricked into putting on handcuffs, be stripped naked, and tied to a plywood board used for torture, or sometimes to Corll's bed.

Once the victim was secured, they would be subjected to vicious sexual assaults, beatings, torture, and then be either shot to death or strangled. Sometimes the victims would be kept alive for several days, enduring brutal attacks the whole time. The dead body would then be wrapped in plastic sheeting and buried in one of the four areas Corll used to dispose of his victims. These four locations were a beach on the Bolivar Peninsula, a boat shed, a beach in Jefferson County, or an area of woods near Lake Sam Rayburn.

In many cases, Corll forced his victims to write letters or make phone calls to their parents to make up excuses as to why they hadn't come home so they wouldn't get suspicious and involved the authorities. He also liked to keep 'trophies' from his victims, usually their keys.

Timeline of known murders:

September 25, 1970 - Jeffrey Konen, 18 - was hitchhiking when he was abducted. His body was buried at High Island Beach.

December 13, 1970 - James Glass, 14 - lured away from an evangelical rally by David Brooks along with Danny Yates.

December 13, 1970 - Danny Yates, 14 - lured away from an evangelical rally by David Brooks along with James Glass.

January 30, 1971 - Donald Waldrop, 15 - was abducted on the way to a bowling alley with his brother Jerry Waldrop.

January 30, 1971 - Jerry Waldrop, 13 - was abducted on the way to a bowling alley with his brother Donald Waldrop. Both were strangled and buried in the boat shed.

March 9, 1971 - Randell Harvey, 15 - was abducted on his way home from work. Shot in the head and buried in the boat shed.

May 29, 1971 - David Hilligiest, 13 - a childhood friend of Elmer Wayne Henley. David was abducted along with his friend George Malley Winkle.

May 29, 1971 - Gregory Malley Winkle, 16 - was abducted on his way to a swimming pool. Winkle had been an employee of Corll Candy and was the boyfriend of the sister of Randell Harvey.

August 17, 1971 - Ruben Watson Haney, 17 - disappeared on his way to the cinema. Called his mother later and said he was staying with David Brooks for the weekend. Haney was strangled and buried in the boat shed.

February 9, 1972 - Willard 'Rusty' Branch Jr., 17 - was shot, castrated and buried in the boat shed. His father, a police officer, died of a heart attack

while searching for his son.

March 24, 1972 - Frank Aguirre, 18 - was strangled to death and buried at High Island Beach. Aguirre was engaged to Rhonda Williams.

April 20, 1972 - Mark Scott, 17 - had been a friend of both Brooks and Henley. He was strangled and buried at High Island Beach.

May 21, 1972 - Johnny Delone, 16 - was abducted while walking to a store with a friend. After being shot in the head, Delone was strangled by Henley.

May 21, 1972 - Billy Baulch, 17 - had been an employee at Corll Candy. Was strangled to death by Henley and buried at High Island Beach.

July 20, 1972 - Steven Sickman, 17 - was abducted after leaving a party. Was strangled and several ribs were fractured. His body was buried in the boat shed.

October 3, 1972 - Wally Jay Simoneaux, 14 - was abducted on his way to high school. He tried to call his mother while he was being held at Corll's house but the call disconnected. He was strangled to death and buried in the boat shed.

October 3, 1972 - Richard Hembree, 13 - was abducted from a grocery store. After being shot in the mouth, he was strangled.

November 12, 1972 - Richard Kepner, 19 - was abducted on his way to a pay phone. Kepner was strangled and buried at High Island Beach.

February 1, 1973 - Joseph Lyles, 17 - had been living on the same street as Brooks and knew Corll. Was buried at Jefferson County Beach.

June 4, 1973 - Billy Ray Lawrence, 15 - a friend of Henley, Lawrence called his father from Corll's and asked if he could go fishing. Corll kept

him alive for four days before killing him and burying his body at Lake Sam Rayburn.

June 15, 1973 - Ray Blackburn, 20 - was abducted while hitchhiking to see his wife and new baby. Was strangled and buried at Lake Sam Rayburn.

July 7, 1973 - Homer Garcia, 15 - was an acquaintance of Henley. Was killed by gunshot to the head and buried at Lake Sam Rayburn.

July 12, 1973 - John Sellars, 17 - was shot in the chest and buried at High Island Beach. Sellars was the only one fully clothed when his body was found.

July 19, 1973 - Michael 'Tony' Baulch, 15 - was the younger brother of earlier victim Billy Baulch. Was strangled and buried at Lake Sam Rayburn.

July 25, 1973 - Marty Jones, 18 - was last seen walking with his friend Charles Cobble towards Corll's apartment with Henley.

July 25, 1973 - Charles Cary Cobble, 17 - was last seen walking with his friend Marty Jones towards Corll's apartment with Henley. He was shot in the head twice, and buried in the boat shed. He had been a friend of Henley's at school.

August 3, 1973 - James Dreymala, 13 - was last seen in South Houston riding his bicycle. He phoned his parents and said he was at a party.

Arrest and Trial

In the early hours of August 8, 1973, Henley returned to Corll's home with Timothy Kerley and Rhonda Williams, after they had been to a party. Corll was enraged that a girl had been brought to the apartment, and he told Henley on the side that he had 'ruined everything'. Corll calmed down and gave them marijuana and alcohol, and Henley and Kerley were also sniffing the fumes from paint. Around two hours later, all three had passed out, while Corll watched them.

When Henley woke, his ankles were bound, there was tape holding his mouth shut and Corll was putting handcuffs on his wrists. Lying next to him were Williams and Kerley, also bound and gagged, and Corll had removed Kerley's clothes. Corll took the gag from Henley's mouth and he told him again that he was angry at Henley for bringing a girl to his apartment. He said he was going to kill them all after he had finished assaulting and torturing Kerley. Corll kicked Williams in the chest and dragged Henley to the kitchen, placing a pistol against his stomach. Henley calmed Corll down and offered to participate in the torture of Kerley and murder of him and Williams. Corll agreed and set Henley free from his bindings and handcuffs.

Henley helped Corll take the two young people into the bedroom and tie them both to the torture board. Corll told Henley to cut off William's clothes, which he started to do as Corll began assaulting Kerley. Williams asked Henley if what was happening was real, and when he replied yes she asked him if he was going to do anything about it.

Henley asked if he could take Williams into the other room and Corll ignored him. Henley grabbed the pistol shouting that Corll had 'gone far enough'. Corll got off Kerley and Henley told him he couldn't go on 'any longer' and have him kill all his friends. Corll walked towards Henley

telling him to kill him, and when Henley stepped back, he shouted, “You won’t do it” at Henley. But, Henley fired the gun, shooting Corll in the forehead, but incredibly the bullet didn’t pierce the skull. As Corll lunged towards him, Henley shot him again, in the shoulder. Corll tried to stagger out of the room and Henley shot him three more times in the shoulder and back.

Corll died in the hallway where he had fallen, and Henley untied Williams and Kerley. As they got dressed they talked about what they should do. At first Henley suggested they leave, but Kerley stated they should call the police. At 8:24 am, Henley phoned the Pasadena Police. They then sat on the porch and waited.

While being questioned about Corll’s death, Henley confessed that for nearly three years he along with David Brooks had helped to abduct teenage boys for Corll who then raped, tortured and murdered them. He also admitted he had taken part in the mutilation and torture of several victims before they were killed. Henley also explained how Corll had paid him and Brooks up to \$200 for every victim they were able to get to Corll’s apartment.

At first the police weren’t convinced that the story Henley was telling was real. Until he mentioned the names of some of the victims, and the police recognized them as being listed as missing persons. Henley went on to tell where the bodies of the victims had been buried, and agreed to go with the police to the boat shed, where most of the bodies were buried.

As they began to dig up the ground inside the boat shed, they uncovered the first body. They now knew that Henley’s stories were true, and they continued to unearth more victims buried in the boat shed. Nearly all of the bodies had been wrapped in plastic sheeting, and some still had ligatures

around their necks. By the time they had finished searching the boat shed, the police had found eight victims.

The same day, David Brooks arrived at the police station with his father and made a statement saying he had nothing to do with any of the murders. But he did admit that he had known Corll had raped and killed two boys back in 1970. The following morning, Henley gave his full statement, including his own role of murderer in nine of the killings, and the level of involvement of Brooks in all but three murders.

Brooks finally confessed on the evening of August 9, and he went with police to High Island Beach to help them locate the bodies of the victims buried there. Henley accompanied the police to Lake Sam Rayburn to help find more bodies. On August 13, both Henley and Brooks went to High Island Beach again with police to locate the last of the victims. The final tally was 27.

Henley's trial took place on July 1, 1974, and he was charged with six murders. During the trial the amount of evidence was extraordinary, with 82 pieces being brought forward in court. It only took the jury 92 minutes to deliberate at the end of the trial, and on July 16, Henley was found guilty and sentenced to six terms of 99 years, to be served consecutively.

Henley appealed his conviction and a retrial began on June 18, 1979. This time the trial went on for nine days, until Henley was again found guilty on June 27, 1979. He received the same sentence as his first trial.

Brooks went on trial on February 27, 1975, and although he was indicted for four murders, he was only charged with the murder of William Ray Lawrence in June 1973. It lasted for less than a week, and after just 90 minutes of deliberation, the jury returned a guilty verdict. On March 4, 1975, Brooks was sentenced to life imprisonment.

Outcome

The local police authority came under heavy fire from families of the victims, who believed the police should have realized much sooner that there was a serial killer active in the area. The sheer number of boys and young men that were disappearing should have been a major clue to law enforcement.

Appeals lodged by both Henley and Brooks to reduce their sentences were declined.

Trivia

- As well as providing transportation and shelter, Corll paid up to \$200 to bring their friends, or other boys of a similar age, over to his apartment to rape and kill them.
- Corll drove a Ford Econoline van that he used to abduct and transfer his victims both living and dead. The van had curtains across the windows and a peg board interior where Corll would be able to handcuff his victims and keep weapons and other torture devices. Boys would be lured into the van with drugs or the promise of a party. They would also be transported to their burial site after they were murdered in the same vehicle.

Antone (Tony) Charles Costa

Date of birth: August 2, 1944

Aliases/Nicknames: Nil

Characteristics: Necrophilia, Dismemberment, Mutilation

Number of victims: 4 - 8

Date of murders: 1966 - 1969

Date of arrest: March 6, 1969

Murder method: Shooting, drugging, drowning

Known victims: Patricia H. Walsh; Mary Anne Wysocki; Susan Perry; Sydney Monzon; Bonnie Williams; Diane Federoff; Barbara Spaulding; Christine Gallant

Crime location: California, Massachusetts, New York

Status: Sentenced to life imprisonment. Committed suicide by hanging on May 12, 1974.

Background

Costa was born in 1945, and while he was still just an infant, his father was killed in World War II. His mother later remarried, and when Costa was 7 years old, he informed his mother that a man was coming into his bedroom at night. On questioning, he identified his stepfather as the man responsible.

When he was 16, Costa entered an apartment in Massachusetts and was leaning over a teenage girl asleep in bed, when she suddenly awoke and screamed. Costa took off from the scene, but it wasn't the last time this girl would see him. Just three days later, he went back to the house and tried dragging her down the stairs, but was stopped by the neighbors.

He was convicted of assault and burglary on January 4, 1962, and was given a one-year suspended sentence, along with three years of probation. In 1963, Costa married, and the relationship produced three children. However, his drug taking at the time lead to him displaying irresponsible and bizarre behavior and this put a large strain on the marriage.

Costa brought two girls - Diane Federoff and Bonnie Williams - back to the house in June, 1966, and explained that he was going to drive them to Pennsylvania and then he would carry on alone to California. Later he claimed he had taken the girls to Hayward California, but they were never found. Ten days after the trip, Costa came back home to Massachusetts.

Costa and a female acquaintance were hiking in the Truro Woods in August, 1967, when an incident occurred. Costa shot his friend with an arrow, and later claimed it was an accident and apologized. In the beginning of 1968, Costa's marriage was a mess, and in late January he moved to the Haight-Ashbury district in San Francisco.

Murders

Costa's first victim, Bonnie Williams, went missing in June 1966 along with her friend Diane Federoff. His next victim was Barbara Spaulding who disappeared during 1968. Her body has never been found.

On May 24, 1968, Sydney Monzon went missing from her home. Costa shot her, then removed her heart from her body. The autopsy revealed signs that Monzon had been sexually abused after she was dead. Christine Gallant was killed by Costa on November 23, 1968, but details of her murder are scarce. Similarly, Susan Perry went missing on September 10, 1968. Her body was found on March 2, 1969.

Patricia Walsh and Mary Anne Wysocki went missing on January 24, 1969. Patricia and Mary had both been killed by gunshots, and their hearts had been removed from their bodies. The autopsy of each woman also showed signs of postmortem sexual abuse. Their bodies were found together along with the body of Sydney Monzon.

Timeline of known murders:

June 1966 - Bonnie Williams

June 1966 - Diane Federoff

1968 - Barbara Spaulding

May 24, 1968 - Sydney Monzon

September 10, 1968 - Susan Perry

November 23, 1968 - Christine Gallant

January 24, 1969 - Patricia Walsh

January 24, 1969 - Mary Anne Wysocki

Arrest and Trial

On March 6, 1969, Costa was arrested and charged with multiple murders. His trial began on June 3, 1969, and he was arraigned for the murders of Mary Anne Wysocki, Patricia Walsh, Sydney Monzon, and Susan Perry. Costa was convicted in May 1970, and sentenced to life imprisonment.

Outcome

On May 12, 1974, Costa was found hanging in his cell, and the death was declared a suicide.

Trivia:

- Costa wrote a book called 'Resurrection' while he was in prison, and described the murders of Wysocki and Walsh as being committed by his friend 'Carl'. He also claims the deaths of Susan Perry and Sydney Monzon were due to drug overdoses, and that it was 'Carl' that dismembered the bodies.

Richard Cottingham

Date of birth: November 25, 1946

Aliases/Nicknames: The Torso Killer

Characteristics: Torture, Rape, Mutilation

Number of victims: 6 - claims up to 100

Date of murders: 1967, 1977 - 1980

Date of arrest: May 22, 1980

Murder method: Strangulation

Known victims: Nancy Schiava Vogel, 29; Maryann Carr; Deedeh Goodarzi, 22, and "Jane Doe"; Valerie Street, 19; Jean Reyner

Crime location: New York, New Jersey

Status: Sentenced to life imprisonment.

Background

Cottingham was the eldest of three children, and when he was 12 years old, the family moved to River Vale, in New Jersey. There, his mother stayed home to take care of the children while his father went to work for an insurance company.

Having to move to a new school at a young age proved to be challenging for Cottingham socially. He had difficulty making friends, and spend most of his time with his mother and siblings, at home. But, by the time he enrolled in Pascack Valley High School, things were starting to change, and he was able to make friends.

Following his graduation from high school, Cottingham joined his father at the insurance company Metropolitan Life, and worked as a computer operator. Later in life, he continued working as a computer operator for Blue Cross Blue Shield Association, located in New York, and was a good employee who was well-liked by his employers and co-workers.

In 1970, Cottingham married a woman named Janet, and they went on to have three children. The first child was born in 1973, and then the next in 1975, and finally the last child was born in 1976. Just three years after the birth of their third child, Janet filed for divorce. She cited her husband had been involved in extra-marital affairs, and he had been seen frequently at the local gay bars.

Throughout the period where Cottingham was committing murders, he had been arrested a few times for minor offenses. These included shoplifting and driving while intoxicated, and at no point was a connection made between him and the murders that had been taking place.

Murders

Nancy Schiava Vogel, Cottingham's first victim, had been missing for three days before her strangled body was found in her car in Ridgefield Park, New Jersey. Her body was bound and naked, and she had disappeared when she went to play Bingo at a church.

The bodies of Deedeh Goodarzi and an unidentified woman were found by firemen on December 2, 1979, after they responded to a fire at a hotel close to Times Square in New York. The heads and hands had been removed from both bodies, and they had been set alight with the aid of lighter fluid poured on the bodies.

On May 5, 1980, the body of Valerie Ann Street was discovered at a Quality Inn in Hasbrouck Heights, New Jersey. Her hands were handcuffed, her shins had been beaten and her body was covered in bite marks. Examination of her body showed there had been some sort of adhesive tape across her mouth and she had been killed by asphyxiation. Just ten days later, Jean Reyner was found in the Seville hotel, stabbed to death.

Timeline of known murders:

1967 - Nancy Schiava Vogel, 29

1977 - Maryann Carr

December 2, 1979 - Deedeh Goodarzi, 22

December 2, 1979 - Jane Doe

May 5, 1980 - Valerie Ann Street, 19

May 15, 1980 - Jean Reyner

Arrest and Trial

Cottingham picked up a prostitute named Leslie Ann O'Dell, 18, on May 22, 1980. They agreed on \$100 in exchange for sex, and they went to the same Quality Inn where Street's body had been found. While she was lying on her stomach awaiting a massage from Cottingham, he pulled out a knife and placed it against her throat while he handcuffed her. As he tortured her, one of her nipples was almost bitten off. O'Dell was crying out in pain, and even though her voice was muffled, motel staff heard her and immediately called the police. They then demanded Cottingham open the door to the room.

Cottingham was arrested in the hallway, as police officers arrived. Searching the property he had with him, officers found a pair of handcuffs, two slave collars, a leather gag, replica pistols, a switchblade, and a large amount of prescription pills. When they searched his house, they found a number of items he had taken from his victims.

Cottingham eventually went to trial charged with the murder of Valerie Streets. He was found guilty and sentenced to 173 - 197 years in prison. Two more trials followed, and he was found guilty of four second degree murders.

Outcome

Many people are pleased that Cottingham will never enter society again.
Because of his long sentence, he will eventually die behind bars.

Trivia

- One month before his arrest Cottingham's wife filed for divorce citing 'extreme cruelty'. She also claimed that he had refused sex with her since 1976.
- The only thing Cottingham admitted was, “I have a problem with women.”

Jeffrey Dahmer

Date of birth: May 21, 1960

Aliases/Nicknames: The Milwaukee Cannibal

Characteristics: Rape, Cannibalism, Necrophilia, Dismemberment

Number of victims: 17

Date of murders: 1978 - 1991

Date of arrest: July 22, 1991

Murder method: Throat cutting, strangulation

Known Victims: Stephen Hicks, 19; Steven Tuomi, 26; James "Jamie" Doxtator, 14; Richard Guerrero, 25; Anthony Sears, 26; Eddie Smith, 36; Ricky Beeks, 27; Ernest Miller, 22; David Thomas, 23; Curtis Straughter, 19; Errol Lindsey, 19; Tony Hughes, 31; Konerak Sinthasomphone, 14; Matt Turner, 20; Jeremiah Weinberger, 23; Oliver Lacy, 23; Joseph Bradehoft, 25

Crime location: Ohio, Wisconsin

Status: Sentenced to 16 life sentences. Murdered in prison on November 28, 1994.

Background

Perhaps one of the most famous serial killers this century, Jeffrey Dahmer was the first of two children born to Lionel Herbert and Joyce Annette Dahmer. Lionel was a student of chemistry at Marquette University, and Joyce worked as an instructor of teletype machines.

Both parents absolutely doted on Dahmer as an infant, but his mother was known to be a little difficult and attention hungry. She would often get into arguments with her husband as well as the neighbors, and was quite a tense person. When Dahmer started school, his mother spent more and more time laying in bed, supposedly recovering from 'weakness'. Because his father was away a lot due to his studies, when he did come home, Joyce was constantly demanding his attention away from the children.

Joyce would regularly work herself into an anxious state over small matters and at one point she attempted suicide by taking an overdose of the medication she had become addicted to. Because of his mother's issues, Dahmer and his brother received little attention from either parent. Dahmer later stated that their home life was one of 'extreme tension', especially between his parents who argued constantly.

As a student, Dahmer was described as timid and quiet, and gave the sense that he was neglected at home. It was well known that his mother had illnesses and issues, and it was felt that this feeling of neglect Dahmer had was probably due to that. Dahmer did however have a small group of friends while he was at school.

When Dahmer was around four years old, he watched as his father removed some animal bones from underneath the house, and as he played with the bones, he seemed excited by the noise they made. From then onwards he

developed a fascination for collecting bones, as well as collecting a variety of butterflies, dragonflies and large insects, which he stored in jars.

From there he moved on to collecting animal carcasses that had been killed on the road. He would cut these bodies up, stating he was curious to see how the animal fitted together. He was fascinated by the position of the bones in live animals as well. At one point, Dahmer placed the head of a dog on a stake behind the house.

When the second child was born in 1966, the family had moved to Doylestown, Ohio, and Dahmer was given the chance to choose his baby brother's name, and he chose David. By this time, his father Lionel had completed his degree and found work as an analytical chemist.

Two years later, the family up and moved again, this time to Bath, Ohio. In 1970, while the family was having chicken for dinner, Dahmer asked his father what would happen to the bones if they were put in a solution of bleach. Up until then, Lionel had been concerned about his elder son's quiet and rather solitary attitude, so was pleased to see him show an interest in science. He was happy to show Dahmer how to bleach and preserve animal bones, and these methods were used by Dahmer on the collection of animal remains he still gathered.

Murders

The majority of Dahmer's victims were drugged with sedatives before being strangled to death. Sometimes he bludgeoned them to death, as was the case with his first and second victims. Ernest Miller, who was murdered on September 2, 1990, died from blood loss and shock after Dahmer had cut his carotid artery.

A number of the victims killed in 1991 had holes drilled into their skull. Dahmer would then inject muriatic acid or boiling water through the holes into the brain. He did this to try and render the victim submissive and unable to resist. Although this wasn't intended to be a method of killing, three of Dahmer's victims died during the process.

On June 18, 1978, Steven Hicks had been hitchhiking to Chippewa Lake Park to see a rock concert. He was picked up by Dahmer, who then used a dumbbell to bludgeon Hicks before strangling him. His body was cut up in to pieces, pulverized, and then scattered in the wooded area behind Dahmer's family home.

Steven Tuomi, 25, was killed by Dahmer at the Ambassador Hotel, but Dahmer can't remember actually killing him. He later said he must have been drunk when he beat him to death. His body was dismembered by Dahmer in his grandmother's basement, and the remains were put out in the trash.

Dahmer met James Doxtator, 14, outside a gay bar, and lured him to his home with the promise of earning \$50 for some nude photos. Doxtator was strangled and his body kept in the basement for a week. He was then dismembered and discarded in the trash.

On March 24, 1988, Richard Guerrero was killed in Dahmer's bedroom. He had been drugged before being strangled to death. His body was dismembered in the basement, and the flesh put into acid to dissolve it. The bones went out in the trash, but he kept the skull for several months before getting rid of it.

The last victim to be drugged and killed at Dahmer's grandmother's house was Anthony Sears, 24. He was killed on March 25, 1989, and after he was dismembered, Dahmer kept certain body parts. His genitals and his skull were preserved and later found in a filing cabinet in Dahmer's North 25th Street home.

Raymond Smith was killed on May 20, 1990, and was the first to be killed at Dahmer's new apartment. Dahmer had met Smith, a prostitute, at a tavern, and invited him back to the apartment. He was drugged with sleeping pills then strangled. Dahmer painted his cleaned skull red and kept it.

An acquaintance of Dahmer, Edward Smith, was last seen attending a party with Dahmer on June 14, 1990. After he was murdered, Dahmer used acid to destroy Smith's bones. He put the skull in the oven to try and dry it out but accidentally destroyed it in the process.

Dahmer had met Ernest Miller outside a bookstore. A dancer, Dahmer found Miller's physique attractive. Back at his apartment, Dahmer cut Miller's carotid artery, and after he had bled to death, dismembered his body in the bath. His skeleton was cleaned and stored in the filing cabinet, and his biceps, heart, and parts of his legs were frozen so they could be eaten at a later date.

David Thomas, 22, met Dahmer near the Grand Avenue Mall on September 24, 1990. Dahmer offered to pay him for some nude photos, and Thomas

agreed, accompanying Dahmer back to his apartment. His drink was laced with drugs, and once he was unconscious, Dahmer decided he “wasn’t my type” but killed him anyway. He took numerous photos of the body as he dismembered it.

Dahmer lured Curtis Straughter back to his apartment on February 18, 1991. The young man was drugged, handcuffed, and then strangled. He was dismembered in the bath, and Dahmer kept his skull, genitals and hands.

On April 7, 1991, Errol Lindsey was the first victim Dahmer experimented on with his drilling into the skull technique. After he had injected muriatic acid into Lindsey’s brain, the young man awoke so Dahmer gave him a drink containing sedatives. He then strangled him to death, and removed his skin which he kept for several weeks. He also kept Lindsey’s skull.

Dahmer used his usual offer of paying for nude photos to lure Tony Hughes to his apartment on May 24, 1991. Tony Hughes was a deaf-mute, Dahmer and Hughes communicated by written notes. He was strangled and left on the floor of Dahmer’s bedroom for three days. His body was then dismembered, and once again Dahmer took photos of the process. His skull was kept and used for identification purposes later.

Konerak Sinthasomphone, 14, was drugged and put through the process of the skull drilling and acid being injected into his brain, on May 27, 1991. Thinking the boy was incapacitated, Dahmer went to the store to buy some beer, and when he got back, Sinthasomphone was out in the street, naked, and asking for help. When the police arrived, Dahmer told them the boy was intoxicated and that they were lovers. Incredibly the police left him in Dahmer’s care in his apartment. More acid was then injected into his brain, which accidentally killed him. His body was dismembered, and Dahmer kept his head in the freezer.

Dahmer came across Matt Turner at a bus stop on June 30, 1991, and Dahmer used his photo ruse to lure him back to his apartment. Once inside, Turner was given a laced drink then strangled. Like the others he was dismembered in the bath. His torso was put in a 57-gallon drum and his internal organs and head were kept in the freezer.

At a Chicago gay bar on July 5, 1991, Dahmer met Jeremiah Weinberger, who agreed to spend the weekend with Dahmer. After drugging Weinberger, Dahmer drilled into his skull and injected boiling water into his brain. Apparently his eyes were open when he died. His head was cut off, and his body left in the bath for a week before being cut up. His torso also went into the drum.

The payment for photos ruse was used once again on Oliver Lacy, 24, a bodybuilding enthusiast, on July 15, 1991. Lacy was drugged then strangled with a leather strap. His head was cut off and placed in the refrigerator with his heart. Dahmer kept his skeleton as he was planning on using it to create a 'shrine' of the skulls and bones he had collected.

Dahmer's last victim was Joseph Bradehoft. He was murdered on July 19, 1991, and left on Dahmer's bed for two days. His head was removed on July 21, and put into the refrigerator. His torso ended up in the drum along with that of Weinberger and Turner.

Timeline of murders:

June 18, 1978: Steven Hicks, 18

November 20, 1987: Steven Tuomi, 25

January 16, 1988: James Doxtator, 14

March 24, 1988: Richard Guerrero, 22

March 25, 1989: Anthony Sears, 24
May 20, 1990: Raymond Smith, 32
June 14, 1990: Edward Smith, 27
September 2, 1990: Ernest Miller, 22
September 24, 1990: David Thomas, 22
February 18, 1991: Curtis Straughter, 17
April 7, 1991: Errol Lindsey, 19
May 24, 1991: Tony Hughes, 31
May 27, 1991: Konerak Sinthasomphone, 14
June 30, 1991: Matt Turner, 20
July 5, 1991: Jeremiah Weinberger, 23
July 15, 1991: Oliver Lacy, 24
July 19, 1991: Joseph Bradehoft, 25

Arrest and Trial

On July 22, 1991, Dahmer talked to three men and offered \$100 to come back to his apartment and take some nude photos, hang out and drink beer. Tracy Edwards, one of the men, agreed. When they got inside the apartment, he noticed a terrible stench and multiple boxes of acid sitting on the floor. At one point Dahmer told him to turn and look at his fish, and as he did so, Dahmer put a handcuff on his wrist. He failed to handcuff both wrists, but was still able to convince Edwards to go into his bedroom with him to take the photos.

In the corner of the room was a large drum from which a terrible smell emanated. Dahmer made a number of threats towards Edwards, brandishing a knife, and Edwards continued to try and stop Dahmer from attacking him by appeasing him, all the while looking for a way to escape. At one point he was able to convince Dahmer that they should go back out to the living room and have a beer. Edwards got up from the couch, after stating he needed to use the bathroom, and noticed Dahmer wasn't holding the handcuffs or the knife and was distracted.

Edwards punched Dahmer in the face, which knocked him off balance, and then ran straight out the front door of the apartment. Outside on the street, Edwards flagged down two police officers. He asked them to remove the handcuff on his wrist, and when they were unable to, he took them up to Dahmer's apartment. Dahmer admitted he had put the handcuffs on Edwards but didn't explain why.

The officers were told that the key was in Dahmer's bedroom, a lapse in his judgment, and when the officers went in, they noticed a bunch of photos in a drawer that was open. The photos were of the dismembered bodies, and it

was obvious they had been taken in Dahmer's apartment. Dahmer tried to fight with the officers but was overcome and arrested.

On searching his apartment after his arrest, the following items were found:

- Four severed heads
- Seven skulls
- Blood drippings on a tray in the refrigerator
- Two human hearts
- Part of an arm muscle
- A torso
- A bag of organs and flesh
- Two whole skeletons
- Two hands
- Two penises that had been preserved
- A scalp
- Three torsos in the drum
- 74 photos of dismembered bodies

Dahmer was charged with sixteen counts of first degree murder, and despite his history, was found to be legally sane and able to stand trial. He was subsequently convicted, and sentenced on February 15, 1992, to fifteen terms of life imprisonment. He was charged and convicted of a sixteenth murder later, and received another life sentence.

Outcome

At around 8:10 am on November 28, 1994, Dahmer was found on the floor of the prison's gym bathroom having suffered horrific injuries to his head and face. He had been in the area along with Jesse Anderson and Christopher Scarver as part of their usual work detail. Anderson was also critically injured, and both had been struck repeatedly by a 20-inch metal bar, as well as struck against the wall multiple times.

Both men were still alive when they were discovered, but Dahmer died an hour later after being rushed to hospital. Anderson succumbed to his injuries and died two days later. Scarver, who was already sentenced to life for a previous murder, informed the prison authorities immediately after returning to his cell that he had attacked both men. He claimed 'God told me to do it'. He received two more life sentences for the murders of Dahmer and Anderson.

Later, in 2015, Scarver changed his story and said that both men had poked him in the back and then laughed at him. He alleged Dahmer would taunt fellow inmates by shaping his food to look like body parts, and that Dahmer showed no remorse for his horrific crimes.

In Dahmer's will, he had requested there be no funeral service for him and he was to be cremated. His ashes were subsequently divided between his parents.

Trivia

- His IQ was estimated to be around 145, putting him close to being at genius level.

Quotes by Dahmer:

- "I carried it too far, that's for sure."
-
- "I've got to start eating at home more."
-
- "I made my fantasy life more powerful than my real one."
-
- "I think in some way I wanted it to end, even if it meant my own destruction."
-
- "I would cook it, and look at the pictures and masturbate."
-
- "My consuming lust was to experience their bodies. I viewed them as objects, as strangers. It is hard for me to believe a human being could have done what I've done."
-
- "I couldn't find any meaning for my life when I was out there, I'm sure as hell not going to find it in here. This is the grand finale of a life poorly spent and the end result is just overwhelmingly depressing... it's just a sick, pathetic, wretched, miserable life story, that's all it is. How it can help anyone, I've no idea."

Karl Denke

Date of birth: August 12, 1870

Aliases/Nicknames: The Cannibal of Ziębice

Characteristics: Cannibalism

Number of victims: 42+

Date of murders: 1909 - 1924

Date of arrest: December 21, 1924

Murder method: Killing by axe

Known victims: Unnamed travelers and homeless men and women

Crime location: Munsterberg, Germany

Status: Committed suicide by hanging in his cell, one day after his arrest.

Background

Nothing is known about Denke's childhood, but as an adult, he ran a rooming house from 1918 to 1924. He was well-liked by his tenants, who often called him 'papa'. Denke was popular throughout the community, and at his local church, he was the organ-blower. Little did anyone know, that this seemingly 'good' man had been committing murders and eating his victim's flesh.

Murders

Denke's victims were largely people who wouldn't be missed if they disappeared, and if they were, it would be a long time before they would be reported missing. He generally targeted tramps, beggars and 'journeymen', men passing through on their way to their destinations.

A tenant of Denke's heard cries for help coming from his flat on December 21, 1924. He raced down the stairs, thinking Denke may be injured somehow, and found a young man staggering down the corridor. There was blood streaming from his scalp that had been cut open. As the young man collapsed, he claimed Denke had struck him with an axe. The tenant summoned the police immediately.

When the police searched Denke's flat, they found identification papers belonging to twelve journeymen. They also found a number of items of men's' clothing. There were two large tubs in the kitchen in which meat was pickling in brine. Officers estimated the tubs contained the flesh and bones of around 30 victims. Denke's ledger was found which listed dates and names and the weights of victims going back to 1921 that he had pickled.

Arrest and Trial

Denke was arrested and taken to the local jail on December 22, 1924, to wait for questioning over the attack on the young man and the evidence of numerous murders found in his flat. But there was not going to be an opportunity for him to explain himself to the police and face criminal charges as he was dead by morning.

Outcome

On December 22, 1924, Denke was found dead in his cell, having hanged himself.

After his death, police went to his apartment to secure all of his property, and there they made even more disturbing discoveries. Not only were there the two tubs of meat pickling in the kitchen, there were also several containers filled with pickled human flesh. Bones were found having been prepared for processing, and there was an apparatus for making soap.

Dozens of suspenders, shoelaces and belts hung on the walls, all made from human skin. In the closet there was a lot of clothing stained with blood, including a skirt. Eventually, the pickled flesh was scientifically tested and found to be human. A total of 20 victims were eventually identified, but it is estimated he had killed and pickled more than 40 victims.

Trivia

- In Munsterberg, Karl was known as a generous, caring and devout local citizen, even referred to by some as ‘Vater Denke’ or Father Denke. He carried the cross at Evangelist funerals and played the organ during church services.

Paul Denyer

Date of birth: April 14, 1972

Aliases/Nicknames: The Frankston Serial Killer

Characteristics: Transsexual, hatred of women

Number of victims: 3

Date of murders: June - July 1993

Date of arrest: July 31, 1993

Murder method: Stabbing, strangulation

Known victims: Elizabeth Stevens, 18; Debbie Fream, 22; Natalie Russell, 17

Crime location: Melbourne, Australia

Status: Sentenced to three life sentences, and is eligible for parole after 30 years.

Background

There is not a lot of information available about the early life and childhood of Paul Denyer, but the few things that are public knowledge are truly disturbing. According to his mother, he had an accident when he was a child and suffered some sort of injury to his head after rolling off a table.

Denyer took the family's kitten, cut it, and hung it from a tree. Killing and dissecting cats was well established in Denyer's history, and is a common trait amongst sadistic serial killers. While Denyer was at school, an incident occurred whereby Denyer assaulted a fellow student. The victim of the assault happened to be chewing on a pen at the time, which became lodged in his throat.

Animal cruelty, social inadequacies, and assault on others were all warning signs through Denyer's childhood that perhaps something was wrong with him, and if more attention had been paid to these traits, what was to occur later in life could have been foreseen.

Murders

The body of Elizabeth Stevens, 18, was found on June 12, 1993, in Lloyd Park near Frankston. She had been staying with her aunt and uncle and was reported missing by them the night before. Her throat had been cut, and there were six stab wounds to her chest. Four cuts ran from her breasts to her navel, and there were four more running across her abdomen, creating a crisscross pattern. There were several cuts and grazes on her face and her nose was broken. The clothing on her upper body had been removed, and her bra was pushed up around her neck. Despite initial fears, the autopsy showed she hadn't been sexually assaulted.

Debbie Fream, 22, went missing on July 8, 1993, after she drove to the local store to buy some milk. Her body was found four days later in a paddock near Carrum Downs, and she had been stabbed 24 times in the head, neck, arms and chest. She had been strangled, but hadn't been sexually assaulted.

The next victim was killed on July 30, 1993. Natalie Russell disappeared while riding her bicycle home from John Paul College. Her body was found in bushes near a bicycle track, and her throat had been cut. She also had numerous stab wounds to her neck and face, and there was no indication she had been sexually assaulted.

Timeline of known murders:

June 11, 1993 - Elizabeth Stevens, 18

July 8, 1993 - Debbie Fream, 22

July 30, 1993 - Natalie Russell, 17

Arrest and Trial

A police officer happened to see a yellow Toyota Corolla near the bicycle track where Russell's body was found at around the time of her murder, and had written down the registration number. When they put the number through the computer system, the same car had been seen in the same vicinity where Fream's body was found. There had also been a report by a postman of seeing a man slumped down in the same car as though he was trying to hide himself.

The registration came back to Paul Denyer, and when detectives went to talk to him, he wasn't home. They left a card asking him to call. Instead they received a call from someone else asking why the police wanted Denyer to call. They explained it was a routine inquiry and they were interviewing everyone in the area. Within 10 minutes of the phone call, detectives headed to Denyer's address.

Denyer opened the door when the detectives knocked and invited them in. While he was telling them where he was at the time of each murder, it was noticed that he had numerous cuts on his hands. To explain his injuries, Denyer claimed he had gotten his hands caught in an engine fan while working on a car. Suspecting they had their men, the detectives took Denyer back to the station for further questioning.

They interrogated Denyer into the early hours of the next morning, and he denied responsibility for the killings continuously. Until they asked him for a DNA sample. He asked how long it would take to get DNA results back, and if they had evidence to compare to his DNA. Then he sat quietly for a bit before declaring he was the man who had killed the three women.

When Denyer went to trial for the three murders he pleaded guilty to all charges. A clinical psychologist explained to the court that Denyer was a sadist who found pleasure in killing women. He showed no remorse for what he had done to his victims or their friends and families.

Outcome

For the three murders and an abduction of another woman, Denyer was sentenced to three life sentences and an extra eight years for the abduction. Initially he was denied the possibility of parole, and was expected to spend the rest of his life in prison. However, Denyer appealed on July 20, 1994, to the Supreme Court of Victoria and was granted a 30-year non-parole period. Although he is unlikely to ever get parole, there is the propensity for him to apply after serving 30 years.

Trivia

- Whilst imprisoned, Denyer has requested to be allowed to purchase and wear ladies cosmetics, a request which was denied.
- When asked why he had killed Elizabeth Stevens, Denyer replied: “Just wanted ... just wanted to kill. Just wanted to take a life because I felt my life had been taken many times.”
- Denyer also filed freedom of information requests to learn of the Victorian government's policy on gender reassignment surgery for prisoners and has sought evaluation to determine his suitability for such surgery, which was also rejected by medical specialists.

Nannie Doss

Date of birth: November 4, 1905

Aliases/Nicknames: The Giggling Nanny, The Giggling Granny, The Jolly Black Widow, The Lonely Hearts Killer, Lady Blue Beard

Characteristics: Killed for insurance money

Number of victims: 8 - 11

Date of murders: 1920 - 1954

Date of arrest: October 1954

Murder method: Arsenic poisoning

Known victims: Four of her husbands, her mother, her sister Dovie, her grandson Robert and her mother-in-law, Arlie Lanning's mother

Crime location: Alabama, North Carolina, Kansas, Oklahoma

Status: Sentenced to life imprisonment. Died of leukemia on June 2, 1965, while incarcerated.

Background

Doss was one of five children born to James and Louisa Doss, in Blue Mountain, Alabama. Christened Nancy Hazel, Doss despised her father and so did her mother, who was said to have a nasty streak and was very controlling. Instead of going to school regularly, James would make the children stay home and work on the family farm, so Doss never learned to write or read very well.

The family went on a train trip to visit relatives when Doss was around seven years old. The train came to a sudden stop, making Doss strike her head on the metal bar on the back of the seat in front. The accident led to her suffering from terrible headaches and blackouts for many years, and she struggled with bouts of depression.

Although she didn't read well, Doss did like to immerse herself in her mother's romantic magazines, and later in life, she enjoyed reading the lonely hearts columns. Doss and her sister were heavily restricted by their father from dressing like other girls their age and they certainly weren't allowed to wear makeup. The girls were not allowed to attend dances, and despite all his efforts to protect his girls from the clutches of men, they both were molested on a number of occasions.

When she was 16 years old, Doss married a man she met at work at the Linen Thread factory, named Charley Braggs. They only dated for four months before her father gave his consent for them to marry. Braggs' mother lived with the couple after they married, and she too was controlling. The young couple went on to have four children - all daughters.

Murders

Doss became stressed with the children and her mother-in-law and started drinking and smoking, and both Doss and her husband were guilty of committing adultery. Braggs would sometimes disappear for days, leaving Doss to manage the household. Tragedy struck in 1927, when two of their daughters died, supposedly from food poisoning. Braggs suspected Doss had murdered the girls and fled the home, taking the eldest daughter with him and leaving the baby with Doss.

Not long after Braggs left, his mother, who was still in the house with Doss, died. Eventually, in 1928, Braggs brought their daughter back to Doss, and they divorced soon after. Doss took both of her children back to live in her mother's house. She became fascinated by the lonely hearts columns once again, and sent many letters in response to men advertising. One of these men was Robert Franklin 'Frank' Harrelson.

Frank started sending Doss poetry, and she replied by sending him a cake. In 1929 they married, and they lived in Jacksonville. Soon into the marriage, she discovered that Frank had a criminal record for assault, and was an alcoholic. Despite this, they were married for 16 years, until Frank met an untimely death.

When Doss's eldest daughter Melvina gave birth to her second baby in 1945, the baby died soon after birth. Having been given ether during her labor which could cause hallucinations, Melvina thought she saw Doss stick a hatpin into the baby's head. She asked her husband and sister who said it was Doss that had told them the baby was dead, and she happened to be holding a hairpin at the time.

Melvina's marriage broke down, and after a while she started dating a soldier who Doss did not approve of. On July 7, 1945, she left her son Robert in the care of Doss while she visited with her father, and the child died. Doctors diagnosed his cause of death as asphyxia from unknown causes. Doss had taken out life insurance on Robert to the value of \$500, which she collected two months after his death.

After Japan surrendered at the end of World War II, Doss's husband Frank celebrated quite voraciously, as did many others. One night, while intoxicated, he raped Doss. When she found his whiskey jar buried in the garden the next day, she filled it up with rat poison. Frank died that night.

A widow again, Doss found another suitor in the lonely hearts column, Arlie Lanning. He was another alcoholic and adulterer, but it was Doss that sometimes disappeared for months at a time. When she was at home though, she played the part of a doting wife. When Lanning died from heart failure, the whole town supported her. Not long afterwards, their house burnt down. It was insured, and Doss was the recipient. Soon after, Lanning's mother died, and Doss left North Carolina.

Doss went to stay at her sister Dovie's house. Dovie was bedridden, and died not long after Doss arrived. Doss met and married Richard L. Morton. This husband wasn't an alcoholic like the others, but he was a womanizer. He died in 1953, three months after Doss's mother died, supposedly from poison.

Doss's last husband was Samuel Doss from Tulsa, Oklahoma. They married in June 1953, and being a clean, church attending man, he didn't approve of the romance novels that Doss was so fond of. By September he was in hospital and the diagnosis was he was suffering from an infection of the digestive tract. He was sent home on October 5. That night he was killed,

and because the death was so sudden, an autopsy was undertaken. This showed poor Samuel had a large amount of arsenic in his body, and Doss was arrested.

Arrest and Trial

After her arrest, Doss confessed to multiple murders, including four of her husbands, her mother, Dovie, Robert, and mother Lanning. The state focused on the murder of Samuel Doss, and she was found mentally fit to stand trial. She pleaded guilty on May 17, 1955. She received a sentence of life imprisonment, and managed to avoid the death penalty because she was female, and the state didn't want to pursue the execution of a woman.

Outcome

Suffering from Leukemia, Doss succumbed to her illness and died, on June 2, 1965.

Trivia

- Her first husband--the only one she didn't kill--claimed he left her because she frightened him.
- Interviewed about her life in the McAlester prison in Tulsa, Doss complained that the only job she was allowed there was in the laundry, noting that her offer to work in the kitchen was politely declined.

Joseph E. Duncan III

Date of birth: February 25, 1963

Aliases/Nicknames: Nil

Characteristics: Kidnapping, rape, pedophilia

Number of victims: 5 - 7

Date of murders: July 6, 1996, April 4, 1997, May 16, 2005

Date of arrest: July 2, 2005

Murder method: Striking with hammer

Known victims: Sammiejo White, 11; Carmen Cubias, 9; Anthony Michael Martinez, 10; Brenda Groene, 40; Mark McKenzie, 37; Slade Groene, 13; Dylan Groene, 9

Crime location: Washington, California, Idaho

Status: Received six life sentences without parole, and three federal death sentences.

Background

A violent sexual predator from a young age, Duncan committed his first recorded crime when he was just 15 years old, in 1978. He had held a 9-year-old boy at gunpoint and raped him. A year later, he was arrested while driving a car that had been stolen, and because he was a juvenile, he was sent to the Dyslin's Boy's ranch, where he would receive therapy. While there, he admitted that he had tied up and sexually assaulted six young boys, and claimed he had raped 13 boys already, despite only being 16 years old.

Duncan was released, and in 1980, he abducted a 14-year-old boy at gunpoint, using weapons he had stolen from a neighbor. The boy was sodomized, and Duncan was arrested and sentenced to serve 20 years in prison. However he only served 14 years and he was released on parole in 1994.

He was arrested for marijuana use in 1996, and was held in jail for several weeks, until he was released with further parole restrictions. In 1997, he violated his parole conditions and was returned to prison. He was released early in July 2000, for good behavior, and he moved to North Dakota.

Duncan was arrested again in March 2005, and charged with the molestation of two boys in 2004. His bail was set at \$15,000, which was paid by a businessman Duncan had met previously. As soon as he was free, Duncan disappeared, and a federal warrant was issued. From here onwards, Duncan became even more violent, leading to a number of murders.

Murders

In 1996, Duncan murdered Carmen Cubias and Sammiejo White while on parole after being arrested for marijuana use. He also murdered Anthony Martinez in California in 1997, but none of these murders were linked to Duncan until after he was arrested for the murder of Brenda Groene.

The bodies of Groene, Mark McKenzie and Slade Groene were discovered in their home on May 16, 2005. Groene's other two children Dylan and Shasta were missing. The autopsies showed that all victims had died as a result of blunt trauma to the head after they had been bound. An AMBER alert went out and a major search was conducted to find the two missing children.

Early in the morning of July 2, 2005, witnesses saw Shasta at a Denny's restaurant with a man. Without the man knowing, staff and customers quietly called the police and placed themselves in areas of the restaurant in case the man tried to leave with the young girl. He was quickly arrested, but there was no sign of young Dylan, Shasta's brother.

Through tips called in to the police, they began focusing their attention of the remote areas of the Idaho-Montana border in their search for Dylan. On July 4, his remains were found in the Lolo National Forest near St. Regis, Montana. They were positively identified as being Dylan's remains by the FBI lab through DNA testing.

Timeline of known murders:

July 6, 1996 - Carmen Cubias, 9

July 6, 1996 - Sammiejo White, 11

April 1997 - Anthony Michael Martinez, 10

May 16, 2005 - Brenda Groene, 40

May 16, 2005 - Slade Groene, 13

May 16, 2005 - Mark McKenzie, 37

May 16, 2005 - Dylan Groene, 9

Arrest and Trial

After his arrest, Duncan became a suspect in a number of unsolved cases of missing or murdered children. He was linked to the murder of Anthony Martinez through fingerprints found on the body, and it was formally announced on August 3 that Duncan was responsible for the boy's murder. While in custody, Duncan confessed to killing Carmen Cubias and Sammiejo White.

Duncan was charged with murders in three courts - Idaho, for the murders of Groene, her son, and Mark McKenzie; California for the murder of Anthony Martinez; and the United States District Court for the murder of Dylan, his kidnapping and the kidnapping of his sister Shasta.

The first trial took place on July 13, 2005, but was deferred to a later date so more preparation could be done. The trial was then set for October 16, 2006, but as soon as it began, Duncan pleaded guilty to all charges. He was sentenced to three life sentences for the kidnappings, but the sentencing for the murder charges was continued, pending the results of the federal trial on the kidnapping and murder charges.

Duncan pleaded guilty to all charges against him in the federal trial on December 3, 2007. He reached a plea agreement, the details of which have not been released. For sentencing, the jury deliberated for three hours on August 27, 2008, and came back with three death sentences. He was further sentenced to three life sentences for the kidnapping of Shasta and Dylan.

On January 24, 2009, Duncan was extradited to California to face charges of murdering Anthony Martinez. He agreed to a plea deal and pleaded guilty on March 15, 2011. He was sentenced to two more life sentences, without the possibility of parole.

Outcome

In total, Duncan received three federal death sentences and six life sentences. While incarcerated, he has confessed to killing two girls in Seattle in 1996, but no charges have been laid against him. He is still on death row awaiting his execution.

Trivia

- Before he was arrested, Duncan had published his thoughts and ideas on a website he called 'The Fifth Nail'. He named it as such because of the lore that apart from the four nails used to crucify Jesus, there was a fifth nail that was hidden by the Romans.
- His blog and website talked about Duncan's life as a sex offender, but he denied that he was a pedophile.
- He also claimed he had been sexually abused as a young child.

Walter E. Ellis

Date of birth: June 24, 1960

Aliases/Nicknames: Milwaukee North Side Strangler

Characteristics: Rape and murder

Number of victims: 7

Date of murders: 1986 - 2007

Date of arrest: September 5, 2009

Murder method: Strangulation

Known victims: Deborah L. Harris, 31; Tanya L. Miller, 19; Florence McCormick, 28; Sheila Farrior, 37; Jessica Payne, 16; Joyce Mims, 41; Ouithreaun C. Stokes, 28

Crime location: Milwaukee, Wisconsin

Status: Sentenced to seven life sentences without parole. Died of natural causes, on December 1, 2013, while incarcerated.

Background

Ellis almost seemed to be a person who through different periods in his life could put forth a different personality. As a child, those who lived in his neighborhood described him as an angry boy who would threaten other young children he played with. As he reached his teens, he was known to assault a number of youths in the area.

Yet as an adult, those same neighbors who still shared the same neighborhood as Ellis, described him as more calm and subdued. He would drive around the streets selling shoes out of his car. He would often pull over on the side of the road and chat with various neighbors. Nobody who knew him then ever suspected he was capable of murder.

Ellis was in trouble with the law from a young age, and had been arrested twelve times between the years 1981 and 1998. At one point he served five years in prison for reckless endangerment. But, he was able to get away with his most heinous crimes for many years, until his DNA brought him down.

Murders

The body of Deborah L. Harris was found on October 10, 1986, in a Milwaukee river. Her autopsy showed she had been strangled. Just a day later, Tanya L. Miller was found strangled to death between a garage and a house.

The next murders occurred in 1995. The body of Florence McCormick was found in the basement of an empty house by workmen on April 24.

Although the house was boarded up at the time, one of the windows was broken and it was assumed that was how she came to be in there. An autopsy showed she had been strangled.

On June 27, the body of Sheila Farrior, who had also been strangled, was found in an empty house when the owner visited to check work that had been done on the house. Two months later, on August 30, the body of 16-year-old runaway Jessica Payne was found behind an empty house. Unlike the other victims, she had been killed by having her throat slashed.

Joyce Mims was found dead on June 20, 1997, at a vacant house. Workers turned up to do renovations on the property and found her on the second floor of the house. She had been missing for two days before she was found.

On April 27, 2007, city inspectors found the dead body of Ouitheaun C. Stokes, strangled to death, in a vacant house that had once been used as a rooming house. Like almost all of the other victims, the modus operandi was the same - the victim was strangled and left in an empty house.

Timeline of murders:

October 10, 1986 -- Deborah L. Harris, 31

October 11, 1986 -- Tanya L. Miller, 19

April 24, 1995 -- Florence McCormick, 28

June 27, 1995 -- Sheila Farrior, 37

August 30, 1995 -- Jessica Payne, 16

June 20, 1997 -- Joyce Mims, 41

April 27, 2007-- Ouithreaun C. Stokes, 28

Arrest and Trial

Through DNA testing, it was discovered that the serial killer known as the North Side Strangler, was Ellis. He was arrested on September 7, 2009. When he appeared before court, he initially pleaded not guilty, and was willing to defend himself despite being represented by Attorney Russell Jones. However Jones withdrew from the case, and on February 18, 2011, Ellis pleaded no contest to seven murders.

Pleading no contest is not an admission of guilt; it simply means the defendant knows the prosecution has enough evidence to prove the possibility of guilt. Ellis was convicted and sentenced on February 24, receiving seven life sentences without the possibility of parole.

Outcome

Ellis had been transferred from prison to a hospital in South Dakota, and subsequently died on December 1, 2013, from unspecified natural causes.

Kenneth Erskine

Date of birth: July 1963

Aliases/Nicknames: The Stockwell Strangler

Characteristics: Rape, Sodomy, possible Gerontophilia

Number of victims: 7+

Date of murders: April - July 1987

Date of arrest: July 28, 1987

Murder method: Strangulation

Known victims: Eileen Emms, 78; Janet Cockett, 67; Valentine Gleim, 84; Zbigniew Strabawa, 94; William Carmen, 84; William Downes, 74; Florence Tisdall, 83

Crime location: Stockwell, England

Status: Incarcerated at Broadmoor Mental Hospital.

Background

Erskine was one of four children born to Charles and Margaret Erskine. Charles was Antiguan and Margaret was British, and they raised their boys in Putney. As a young child, Erskine was described as a chubby boy, who could often be found reading the Bible. But, his behavior became difficult to control and he subsequently ended up at a number of different schools for maladjusted children.

Erskine would attack his fellow students and his teachers violently, and seem to be living in some sort of fantasy world. On one school outing, the children were swimming and Erskine attempted to drown several of them. He also stabbed one of his teachers in the hand with a pair of scissors.

Before long, Erskine graduated to burglary, and because he wasn't very good at it, he was arrested and kept in jail on several occasions. Unable to deal with his behavior anymore, his family cut contact with Erskine. He became a loner, drifting around flophouses and at one point living on the streets.

When Erskine was later arrested for committing the murders, it was discovered that although he was 24 years old, he only had the mental age of an 11-year-old. Throughout his subsequent interviews, he wasn't really mentally 'present' which left the investigators with an enormous task to try and determine the level of Erskine's guilt and whether or not he even understood what was going on.

Murders

Erskine killed his first victim, Nancy Emms, on April 9, 1986. At first the doctor ruled her death as natural, until a home help carer noticed her television had been stolen. An autopsy was therefore done and it showed she had been raped and then strangled to death.

Janet Cockett was killed by Erskine on June 9, 1986, in her flat. Her death was also considered to be natural at first, until her autopsy showed she had been strangled to death. It also revealed that she had not been sexually assaulted.

The next victims were killed on June 28, 1986, after Erskine broke into the home of Valentine Gleim and Zbigniew Strabawa. The two Polish men were sexually assaulted then strangled to death. William Carmen was killed on July 8, 1986, in his flat. He had been sexually molested and strangled, and robbed of cash he had in the flat.

William Downes was killed in a similar fashion on July 21, 1986, in a bedsit in Stockwell. The last victim of Erskine was Florence Tisdall. Her body was found by a caretaker on July 23, 1986, after she had been raped and strangled.

Timeline of known murders:

April 9, 1986 - Nancy Emms, 78

June 9, 1986 - Janet Crockett, 67

June 28, 1986 - Valentine Gleim, 84

June 28, 1986 - Zbigniew Strabawa, 94

July 8, 1986 - William Carmen, 84

July 21, 1986 - William Downes, 74

July 23, 1986 - Florence Tisdall, 83

Arrest and Trial

Erskine had left a good palm print at the scene of Crockett's murder, and because he had a long history of criminal activity, his fingerprints and palm prints were on file. He was arrested at a social security office on July 28, 1986. He was put into a lineup and positively identified by Fred Prentice, a survivor of one of Erskine's attacks.

In January 1988, Erskine was found guilty of committing the seven murders.

Outcome

Erskine received a life sentence, with a minimum term of 40 years before he would be eligible for parole. However, it was later discovered that he had a mental health disorder and was transferred to Broadmoor Hospital, a maximum security mental health facility, in 2009. His convictions were reduced to manslaughter due to diminished responsibility. He will be eligible for parole in 2028.

Trivia

- In February 1996, Erskine was again in the news, this time for preventing the possible murder of Peter Sutcliffe, the "Yorkshire Ripper", by raising the alarm as a fellow inmate, Paul Wilson, attempted to strangle Sutcliffe with the flex from a pair of stereo headphones.
- During his trial, Erskine masturbated and at times fell asleep.

Donald Leroy Evans

Date of birth: July 5, 1957

Aliases/Nicknames: Nil

Characteristics: Rape and murder

Number of victims: 3 - claimed over 70

Date of murders: 1975 - 1991

Date of arrest: August 5, 1991

Murder method: Strangulation

Known victims: Ira Jean Smith, 38; Janet Movich, 38; Beatrice Louise Routh, 10

Crime location: Multiple states, USA

Status: Sentenced to death. Murdered in prison January 5, 1999.

Background

Evans was born in Michigan, and by all accounts, was a fairly ordinary child with a normal childhood, until he reached his mid-teens. At 16 years old, he tried to commit suicide using roach killer. It's not known why he tried to end his life, but he did undergo a lot of counselling for a year while he was attending high school.

When he was 18 years old, he joined the Marines, but was discharged less than a year later. The reason cited was psychiatric issues. From then onwards, Evans became a bit of a drifter, and developed an addiction to drugs.

In 1986, Evans was arrested in Texas for the rape of a woman in Galveston. Found guilty, he was sentenced to 15 years in prison, but he only served five years. Paroled in 1991, he found a job at a motel, working as a desk clerk. But he lost this job because parole officials deemed it inappropriate for a sex offender to be working in that setting.

Evans then found work on a fishing boat, but trouble still followed him. A former girlfriend laid a complaint against him claiming he had threatened her with violence. When Evans found out about the warrant to arrest him, he stole a car and fled to Mississippi. He thought he had evaded capture, but it wouldn't be long until he committed a crime that would bring his freedom to an end.

Murders

On August 1, 1991, Evans abducted Beatrice Louise Routh, 10, from a park in Gulfport. He sexually assaulted the young girl, then strangled her. Her body was found in a nearby rural area. The medical examiner later determined that she had been assaulted by Evans throughout the whole day of her abduction.

It wasn't until after he was arrested for this murder that Evans confessed to committing up to 70 others. One case that he was linked to and later charged for, was the strangulation death of Ira Jean Smith in 1985.

Timeline of known murders:

1985 - Ira Jean Smith, 38

1985 - Janet Movich, 38

August 1, 1991 - Beatrice Louise Routh, 10

Arrest and Trial

Evans was arrested on August 5, 1991, for the murder of Beatrice Louise Routh. His elaborate confessions to dozens of other murders seemed unbelievable at first by interviewing officers, but he was later found to be responsible for the deaths of Ira Jean Smith and Janet Movich.

On August 16, 1993, Evans was convicted of the murder and sexual battery of Routh. He was sentenced to death three days later. In 1995, he went to trial for the murder of Smith, and was again found guilty.

Outcome

On January 5, 1999, Evans was stabbed to death while taking a shower, by fellow inmate Jimmy Mack. Evans was still a suspect in multiple unsolved murders at the time of his death.

Trivia

- He attempted suicide at age 16 using roach poison and drugs.
- He confessed to killing victims at parks and rest areas across 20 states.
- He petitioned the court to refer to him as 'Hi Hitler' instead of Donald Leroy Evans. He obviously didn't realize that the famous chant was 'Heil Hitler'.

Gary C. Evans

Date of birth: October 7, 1954

Aliases/Nicknames: Nil

Characteristics: Robbery

Number of victims: 5

Date of murders: 1985 - 1997

Date of arrest: June 18, 1998

Murder method: Shooting

Known victims: Michael Falco; Timothy Rysedorph; Damien Cuomo;
Douglas J. Berry; Gregory Jouben

Crime location: New York

Status: Died jumping from a bridge after escaping from a police van on the way to trial.

Background

Evans had a troubled childhood in Troy, New York, as he was both emotionally and physically abused by his parents. They eventually divorced in 1968, and his mother later tried to commit suicide multiple times. At a young age, Evans began stealing, and it's believed his mother put him up to it. There are reports that at the time, Evans was also abusing and killing pets in the neighborhood.

Not long after his parents divorced, Evans left his mother's home and spent a lot of time homeless. To survive, he would steal from the local drug dealers, and commit burglaries, until he was arrested in 1970 for breaking into a house. For this crime, he was kept in jail for several months.

Evans moved into an apartment in the mid-1970s and shared it with Michael Falco and Timothy Rysedorph, who he had known from his childhood. His stealing had moved up a notch, and he became more interested in the values of jewelry and antiques. He would visit different antique dealers under the pretense of being one himself, and while talking to the dealer he would case the store to work out how to break in and rob it.

Over the next couple of decades, he was arrested and convicted of 15 felonies relating to the thefts of antiques. In 1977 he was sent to the Clinton Correctional Facility for burglary. He was then transferred to the Great Meadow Correctional Facility and was released in March 1980. It wasn't long before he was jailed again, for possessing stolen property.

On June 12, 1980, Evans was thrust into the limelight following a brazen prison escape, where he fled over the Rensselaer County Jail wall. He didn't get far, and was arrested at the local public library, while onlookers cheered. The prison authorities deemed him a high risk, and he was caught trying to

plan escapes on several occasions. Following his release in 1982, he was arrested for two more crimes and returned to jail. Finally, he was released again on March 31, 1984.

Evans and his partners continued with their jewelry and antique scams. Evans and Falco robbed a flea market in East Greenbush, New York, on February 16, 1985. Approximately a week later, Falco disappeared.

Murders

Evans' first known 'partner in crime' to disappear was Michael Falco. The two men committed a burglary of a flea market in New York on February 16, 1985, and Falco went missing a week later. At the time, Evans had convinced everyone including law enforcement and the local criminal element that Falco had moved to California. The real story was that Evans shot Falco to death, put his body in a sleeping bag, and dumped it in a swamp in Lake Worth, Florida. His excuse was that he believed Falco had stolen from him and was possibly going to report him for his burglaries to the police.

On September 8, 1988, Evans and a new partner, Damien Cuomo, broke into a jewelry and coin store in Watertown, New York to rob it. The owner of the store, Douglas J. Berry, was sleeping in the back room, and when he woke, Evans shot him and killed him.

Cuomo was to meet a similar fate to Falco. He was last seen on December 27, 1989, with Evans as he left his apartment. Evans shot Cuomo and buried his body nearby, not long after they left the apartment that day. Evans later said he thought Cuomo was stealing from him and was going to turn him in to the authorities, so Evans killed him.

Evans walked into a jewelry store owned by Gregory Jouben on October 17, 1991. He asked Jouben to give him a price on an item, then shot him. After some trouble with the law, Evans was released and got back into burglarizing with the help of Timothy Rysedorph. On October 4, 1997, Rysedorph phoned his wife, and that was the last time he was heard from. Evans, thinking Rysedorph was stealing from him, waited until the man's back was turned then shot him. He then used a chainsaw to dismember the body.

Timeline of known murders:

February 1985 - Michael Falco

September 8, 1988 - Douglas J. Berry, 63

December 27, 1989 - Damien Cuomo

October 17, 1991 - Gregory Jouben, 36

October 4, 1997 - Timothy Rysedorph

Arrest and Trial

Because Rysedorph had disappeared as soon as Evans jumped his probation, authorities became suspicious that Evans may be responsible for Rysedorph going missing, and they presumed he was dead. They began hunting for Evans, and nearly eight months later, they found him. He was arrested in Vermont on May 27, 1998.

The murder case wasn't clear cut, and while authorities were trying to bring charges of murder against Evans, he surprised them by suddenly confessing to killing Falco, Cuomo and Rysedorph. He helped the police locate the bodies of the three men. He then confessed to killing Berry and Jouben.

Evans was charged with three counts of murder on August 12, 1998, in Rensselaer County New York. The next day, he was charged with the murder of Jouben.

Outcome

Following his arraignment on August 12, 1998, Evans was being transported to the Albany Court when he put his escape plan into motion. Incredibly, he had managed to shove a handcuff key up his nose and into his sinus cavity, which he was able to retrieve and use to unlock his cuffs in the back of the police van. As the van made its way on to the Troy-Menands Bridge, Evans kicked out the side window and started running.

He was quickly cornered by police officers, which lead Evans to jump off the bridge. It was a 60-foot drop to the Hudson River below, and he died on impact. When his body was retrieved from the frigid water, the handcuff key was found back up his nose and taped to his ankle was a razor blade. Clearly he had been determined to escape one way or another.

Trivia

- He was physically abused by his brother-in-law after moving in with his older sister as a teen.
- He became friends with "Son of Sam" David Berkowitz while in jail for burglary.

Larry Eyler

Date of birth: December 21, 1952

Aliases/Nicknames: The Highway Murderer, The Highway Killer, The Interstate Killer

Characteristics: Homosexual Rape, Mutilation, Dismemberment, Evisceration

Number of victims: 19 - 23

Date of murders: 1982 - 1984

Date of arrest: August 21, 1984

Murder method: Stabbing

Known victims: Jay Reynolds, 26; Delvoyd Baker, 14; Steven Crockett, 19; Robert Foley; John Johnson, 25; John Roach, 21; Steven Agan, 23; Ralph Calise, 28; Richard Wayne; David Block, 22; Danny Bridges, 15; Edgar Underkofler, 27; Gustavo Herrera, 28; Ervin Gibson, 16; Jimmy T. Roberts, 18; Daniel McNeive, 21; Eric Hansen, 18; Derrick Hansen, 14; Michael Bauer, 22; John Bartlett, 19; others unidentified

Crime location: Indiana, Illinois, Ohio, Kentucky, Wisconsin

Status: Sentenced to death. Died of complications related to AIDs, March 6, 1994.

Background

Eyler was born in Crawfordsville, Indiana, in 1952. He had three older siblings, and when he was a young child, his parents divorced. Later, he dropped out of high school, and worked a variety of odd jobs. He managed to get his GED while working and enrolled in college for the first time in 1974.

Over the next four years, Eyler would drop in and out of college, and so at the end of the four years, he had not put in enough work to gain a degree. He then decided to move to Chicago.

Eyler was fighting an internal battle, unbeknownst to his closest friends or his family members. He had homosexual tendencies, and these both fascinated him and disgusted him at the same time. The thought of his family and friends finding out would have added to his stress, as there is so much stigma associated with homosexuality at the time.

Like many other serial killers, Eyler decided he would take sex wherever he could find it, using force. He would then have to eliminate any evidence to prevent anyone finding out and those closest to him knowing his shame.

Murders

Jay Reynolds was murdered on March 22, 1982, near Lexington, Kentucky. He was Eyler's first victim and had been stabbed to death. On October 3, the same year, the body of Delvoyd Baker was found on the side of the road north of Indianapolis, and he had been strangled.

The next victim of Eyler was Steven Crockett, who was stabbed to death on October 23. Four of the stab wounds were in the head, and his body had been disposed of near Lowell, Indiana. Eyler moved to Illinois in November, and left the body of Robert Foley on November 6 in a field northwest of Joliet.

John Johnson was killed on Christmas Day, 1982, and his body was left in a field near Belshaw. On December 28, Eyler killed two men on the same day. Steven Agan was found near Newport and John Roach's body was discarded near Belleville.

As Eyler's murders progressed, so did his methods of murder and mutilation. Some of his later victims were disemboweled, and most were bound when they were found. Eyler had by now killed twelve men, including Edgar Underkofler on March 4, 1983, Gustavo Herrera on April 8, Ervin Gibson on April 15, Jimmy T. Roberts on May 9, and Daniel McNeive also on May 9.

On August 31, the body of Ralph Calise was discovered in a field near Lake Forest, Illinois. His body was bound and tied with surgical tape and clothesline. His pants were down around his ankles and he had been stabbed 17 times.

Derrick Hansen was found on October 4, 1983, near Kenosha, Wisconsin. His body had been dismembered. Then on October 18, the bodies of four

young men were found together at an abandoned farm in Newton County. All of the victims had their pants around their ankles and one had been decapitated. An unidentified male was found on December 5, near Effingham in Illinois, and two days later, the bodies of another unidentified male and Richard Wayne were discovered near Indianapolis.

On May 7, 1984, the body of David Block was found near Zion, Illinois, and his body showed similar injuries as those seen on the other victims. Eyler finally came undone on August 21, when a dog had led his owner to Eyler's garbage, outside his home in Chicago. When police arrived on the scene, they found the dismembered body of Danny Bridges, packed in bags ready for collection by the garbage truck.

Timeline of known murders:

March 22, 1982 - Jay Reynolds, 26

October 3, 1982 - Delvoyd Baker, 14

October 23, 1982 - Steven Crockett, 19

November 6, 1982 - Robert Foley

December 25, 1982 - John Johnson, 25

December 28, 1982 - John Roach, 21

December 28, 1982 - Steven Argan, 23

March 4, 1983 - Edgar Underkofler, 27

April 8, 1983 - Gustavo Herrera, 28

April 15, 1983 - Ervin Gibson, 16

May 9, 1983 - Jimmy T. Roberts, 18

May 9, 1983 - Daniel McNeive, 21

August 31, 1983 - Ralph Calise, 28

September 27, 1983 - Eric Hansen, 18

October 4, 1983 - Derrick Hansen, 14

October 15, 1983 - John Doe

October 15, 1983 - Michael Bauer, 22

October 15, 1983 - John Bartlett, 19

October 15, 1983 - two more victims discovered, unidentified

December 5, 1983 - John Doe

December 7, 1983 - Richard Wayne

December 7, 1983 - John Doe

May 7, 1984 - David Block, 22

August 21, 1984 - Danny Bridges, 15

Arrest and Trial

Eyler was arrested and charged with the murder of Danny Bridges on August 21, 1984. Investigators noticed the similarities with the mutilations performed on Bridges with those of Derrick Hansen. Authorities now knew they had caught the serial killer they had been looking for.

When Eyler went to trial for the murder of Bridges, he was found guilty on July 9, 1986. He was sentenced to death, but by then Eyler was already facing another death sentence from AIDS.

Eyler tried to save himself from being executed by offering to help authorities in Indiana solve some of the murders he had committed, in exchange for the removal of the death sentence. In November 1990, he confessed that he had killed Steven Argan. But he also claimed he had been helped by another man, Robert David Little, who happened to be the chairman of the Department of Library Science at the local university.

Eyler claimed Little had taken photos of Argan while he was being disemboweled, and masturbated as he watched. Eyler was convicted of the murder and received a sentence of 60 years. Little was charged, but when he went to trial, the only evidence was Eyler's statement of his involvement, and he was subsequently acquitted.

Eyler then tried to make another deal with authorities that he would help them clear 20 murders provided they had his death sentence commuted to life instead. The authorities declined the offer.

Outcome

On March 6, 1994, Eyler died from complications of AIDs. Before his death, he confessed to committing 21 murders to his attorney. According to Eyler, four of these killings were committed with an accomplice, who has never been apprehended.

Trivia

- Larry Eyler lived with his male lover, his lover's wife and their three kids.

Pedro Rodrigues Filho

Date of birth: June 17, 1954

Aliases/Nicknames: Killer Petey

Characteristics: Vigilante Murder, Cannibalism, Robbery

Number of victims: 71 - 100+

Date of murders: 1968 - 2007

Date of arrest: May 24, 1973

Murder method: Stabbing

Known victims: Unnamed criminals - vengeance killings

Crime location: Brazil

Status: Sentenced to 128 years in prison.

Background

When Filho was born, his skull had been damaged, allegedly due to the physical abuse his father had inflicted on his mother during her pregnancy. The family lived on a farm in Santa Rita do Sapucaí, in Brazil. Filho continued to be physically abused by his father throughout his childhood, and he claimed that the first time he tried to kill was when he attempted to push his cousin into a sugar cane press, but failed.

When Filho was 14 years old, his father, who had been working as a security guard at a high school, was fired for stealing food from the school's kitchen. Angered by what he perceived to be an injustice against his father, Filho picked up a shotgun and committed his first murder.

Murders

Filho's murderous spree lasted many years, and all of his victims were criminals. Whenever he heard of a crime being committed, he would find out who was responsible, track them down, and then execute them. A lot of his targets were gang members or drug dealers.

Filho's fiancée was murdered by gang members, which enraged Filho. He went to a wedding that had been organized by the leader of the gang and went on a murderous and violent spree. Seven people were killed at the wedding and sixteen were injured. Several months later, he discovered his cousin had gotten pregnant and her boyfriend had refused to marry her, so he shot him to death.

When Filho discovered his father had stabbed his mother and butchered her with a machete, Filho paid him a visit while he was in prison. Face to face with his father, he stabbed him 22 times, killing him, then ripped out his father's heart and ate some of it.

Timeline of murders:

Unspecified date in 1967:

An unnamed cousin

Unspecified dates in 1968:

The unnamed vice-mayor of Alfenas

Unnamed school guard

Unspecified dates from 1969 to 1973:

Unnamed man (a drug dealer)

Seven unnamed people (all gang members) - the wedding massacre

His unnamed father

The unnamed man who impregnated his cousin (shot)

At least eleven unnamed criminals

May 24, 1973:

Unnamed man (a rapist)

Unspecified dates from 1973 to 2003:

Francisco de Assis Pereira (a serial killer and rapist)

João Acácio da Costa (a serial killer and robber)

Hosmany Ramos (a murderer and bank robber)

Unnamed inmate (a murderer)

Three unnamed inmates

At least 40 unnamed inmates

Arrest and Trial

Filho was arrested on May 24, 1973, and was taken to the police station in the back of a police car with another criminal who happened to be a rapist. When they arrived at their destination, officers discovered Filho had killed the rapist without them even realizing it was happening.

Filho was incarcerated until April 24, 2007, when he was released. But, on September 15, 2011, he was arrested again, and this time convicted of false imprisonment and rioting.

Outcome

Filho was finally given a sentence of 128 years imprisonment. During his numerous years of previous incarceration, Filho had continued to kill fellow inmates, ending the lives of 47 criminals. Filho was despised by other inmates, and when a group tried to attack him, Filho ended up killing three of them. One of his prison victims was killed because of his snoring, but the majority was killed because of the crimes they were incarcerated for.

Trivia

- At the age of 14, he murdered the vice-Mayor of Alfenas, Minas Gerais, because he fired his father, a school guard, at the time accused of stealing the school kitchen's food. Then he murdered another guard, supposedly the real thief.

Albert Fish

Date of birth: May 19, 1870

Aliases/Nicknames: The Werewolf of Wysteria, The Gray Man, Brooklyn Vampire, Moon Maniac, The Boogey Man

Characteristics: Cannibalism, Pedophilia, Coprophilia, Urophilia, Sadism

Number of victims: 3+

Date of murders: 1924 - 1934

Date of arrest: December 13, 1934

Murder method: Strangulation, stabbing

Known victims: Francis X. McDonnell, 8; Billy Gaffney, 8; Grace Budd, 10

Crime location: New York

Status: Executed by electric chair, January 16, 1936.

Background

Fish was the youngest of four children born to Randall and Ellen Fish, and his full name was Hamilton Howard Fish. His father was 43 years older than his mother, and was 75 years old when Fish was born. When his father died in 1875, Fish was sent to live in Saint John's Orphanage in Washington, where he regularly suffered abuse. After a while, he started to enjoy the pain he felt when he was beaten.

It was while he was at the orphanage that he started preferring to be called 'Albert', the name of a deceased sibling, because the children had nicknamed him 'Ham & Eggs'. Fish later claimed that he not only experienced but witnessed terrible 'whippings' at the orphanage and saw things being done by young boys that they shouldn't have been doing.

His mother Ellen gained employment with the government in 1880, and was able to retrieve Fish from the orphanage. Two years later, at the age of 12, Fish entered into a relationship with a telegraph boy. This boy allegedly introduced Fish to bizarre and perverted practices, such as eating feces and drinking urine. Fish started to visit the public baths so he could watch boys undress, and he would spend most of his spare time and weekends there.

Throughout his adulthood, Fish would write obscene letters to women he found advertising in matrimonial agencies and classified columns in papers and magazines. This fondness for shocking with the written word would take an even darker turn, when his behavior truly entered into the realm of depravity.

Murders

Fish had convinced the parents of Grace Budd to allow the little girl attend a party with him. He took the girl to an empty house, and while she was outside picking flowers, Fish had gone inside and removed his clothing because he didn't want to get blood on them. He called out to Grace and hid in a closet until she came into the room. He strangled her to death then cut her body into small pieces so he could carry it back to his home and eat it.

After he was arrested, his other murders were uncovered. Francis McDonell was reported missing on July 14, 1924. The following day, his body was found hanging from a tree in the woods near his home. McDonell had been sexually assaulted and strangled to death. An autopsy revealed he had received severe lacerations to his abdomen and legs.

On February 11, 1927, Billy Gaffney was abducted and taken to the dump on Riker Avenue. He took him to a house nearby, gagged him, tied him up and removed his clothes. His clothing was burnt and his shoes tossed into the dump. Fish went home, and the next day he came back with tools. Gaffney was still alive, and Fish whipped him with a cat-of-nine tails until blood was running down his legs. He cut his mouth from ear to ear, and cut off his nose and ears. By the time his eyes were gouged out, the boy was dead. Fish stuck a knife in his belly and drank the blood.

Like Grace Budd, Gaffney's body was cut up into small pieces, and those Fish wanted to eat were taken home, and the others placed in sacks and weighted down before going into the river. In his confession, he gave graphic descriptions of how he cooked each part of the body he had kept and ate it.

Timeline of known murders:

July 15, 1924 - Francis X. McDonnell, 8

February 11, 1927 - Billy Gaffney, 4

June 3, 1928 - Grace Budd, 10

Other suspected murders:

October 3, 1926 - Emma Richardson, 5

1927 - Yetta Abramowitz, 12

May 2, 1931 - Robin Jane Liu, 6

February 15, 1932 - Mary Ellen O'Connor, 16

December 15, 1932 - Benjamin Collings, 17

Arrest and Trial

Fish sent a letter to Grace Budd's mother in November 1934, which detailed the little girl's death and how Fish cannibalized her body. On the envelope was an emblem - N.Y.P.C.B.A. - which stood for the New York Private Chauffeur's Benevolent Association. When police investigated, a company janitor said he had taken some of the stationary home to use, but had left it behind when he moved out of a rooming house.

Further enquiries discovered Fish had checked out of that same room just a few days before the letter was sent. According to the landlady, Fish was expecting a check to come from his son and asked her to hold it for him, so the chief investigator waited outside the room until Fish came back. He asked Fish to come to the station with him for questioning, and at first Fish agreed. But then he pulled out a razor blade, which the investigator was able to disarm from him quickly.

When they arrived at the station, Fish didn't deny he had murdered Grace Budd. He told the investigator that he had originally planned to kill her brother Edward. His trial was set to begin on March 11, 1935 in New York. Fish pleaded insanity, saying God had told him to kill children. He was examined by several psychiatrists, who testified that Fish had many sexual fetishes. These included:

- Sadism
- Exhibitionism
- Masochism
- Cunnilingus
- Anilingus
- Flagellation
- Voyeurism,

- Fellatio
- Cannibalism
- Pedophilia
- Piquerism
- Coprophilia
- Infibulation
- Urophilia

When one psychiatrist was asked if Fish was insane and if he knew right from wrong, his response was that Fish was insane, and though he knew what he had done was wrong, his thoughts were overrun by his opinions of religion, sin and atonement. Fish had claimed that by killing a child he was atoning for his sins.

Although the members of the jury believed Fish was insane, they felt he should be executed anyway, so they declared him sane and found him guilty of the murder. He was therefore convicted and sentenced to death.

Outcome

On January 16, 1936, Fish was strapped into the electric chair at Sing Sing prison. The execution began at 11:06 pm, and he was declared dead just three minutes later. Like many other executed prisoners, Fish was buried in the prison cemetery. Reportedly, Fish even assisted the executioner with putting the electrodes in place on his body. The last words he spoke were apparently “I don’t even know why I’m here”.

Immediately after his execution, his lawyer James Dempsey told the awaiting press that he had Fish’s final statement, but he would never show it to anyone because “it was the most filthy string of obscenities that I have ever read.”

Trivia

- At the age of 65, he was the oldest person ever to be put to death at Sing Sing prison.
- His family had a history of serious mental illness and his brother lived in a mental hospital.

Quotes from Fish:

- “What a thrill that will be if I have to die in the electric chair. It will be the supreme thrill. The only one I haven't tried.”
- “I like children they are tasty.”
- “I have no particular desire to live. I have no particular desire to be killed. It is a matter of indifference to me. I do not think I am altogether right.”

Letter from Fish to Grace Budd's mother:

“"My dear Mrs. Budd,

In 1894 a friend of mine shipped as a deck hand on the steamer Tacoma, Capt John Davis. They sailed from San Francisco to Hong Kong China. On arriving there he and two others went ashore and got drunk. When they returned the boat was gone. At that time there was a famine in China. Meat of any kind was from \$1 to 3 Dollars a pound. So great was the suffering among the very poor that all children under 12 were sold to the Butchers to be cut up and sold for food in order to keep others from starving. A boy or girl under 14 was not safe in the street. You could go in any shop and ask for steak – chops – or stew meat. Part of the naked body of a boy or girl would be brought out and just what you wanted cut from it. A boy or girls behind which is the sweetest part of the body and sold as veal cutlet brought the highest price. John staid there so long he acquired a taste for human

flesh. On his return to N.Y. he stole two boys one 7 one 11. Took them to his home stripped them naked tied them in a closet then burned everything they had on. Several times every day and night he spanked them – tortured them – to make their meat good and tender. First he killed the 11 yr old boy, because he had the fattest ass and of course the most meat on it. Every part of his body was cooked and eaten except Head – bones and guts. He was roasted in the oven, (all of his ass) boiled, broiled, fried, stewed. The little boy was next, went the same way. At that time I was living at 409 E 100 St, rear – right side. He told me so often how good human flesh was I made up my mind to taste it. On Sunday June the 3 – 1928 I called on you at 406 W 15 St. Brought you pot cheese – strawberries. We had lunch. Grace sat in my lap and kissed me. I made up my mind to eat her, on the pretense of taking her to a party. You said Yes she could go. I took her to an empty house in Westchester I had already picked out. When we got there, I told her to remain outside. She picked wild flowers. I went upstairs and stripped all my clothes off. I knew if I did not I would get her blood on them. When all was ready I went to the window and called her. Then I hid in a closet until she was in the room. When she saw me all naked she began to cry and tried to run down stairs. I grabbed her and she said she would tell her mama. First I stripped her naked. How she did kick – bite and scratch. I choked her to death then cut her in small pieces so I could take my meat to my rooms, cook and eat it. How sweet and tender her little ass was roasted in the oven. It took me 9 days to eat her entire body. I did not fuck her, though, I could of had I wished. She died a virgin."

Bobby Jack Fowler

Date of birth: June 12, 1939

Aliases/Nicknames: Nil

Characteristics: Rape

Number of victims: 1 - 20+

Date of murders: 1973 - 1995

Date of arrest: June 28, 1995

Murder method: Strangulation

Known victims: Colleen MacMillen, 16; suspect in many others

Crime location: Oregon and British Columbia, Canada

Status: Sentenced to 16 years, but died of lung cancer, May 15, 2006.

Background

Little is known about Fowler's childhood or younger years, but as an adult, he was known to live a transient lifestyle. He would travel throughout North America in particular, getting work in construction or roofing as he went along. He would stay in cheap motels, and travel around in old, beat-up cars, and he was fond of small town bars.

An abuser of methamphetamine, amphetamine and alcohol, Fowler found himself in trouble with the law on multiple occasions. He liked driving and he enjoyed picking up hitchhikers on his travels. Fowler was charged with the murders of a man and woman in Texas in 1969, but he was acquitted, and only convicted of discharging a firearm within the city limits.

Fowler was also charged with attempted murder and sexual assault, after he tied up a woman, beat her, and left her to die, covered in brush to hide her body. She survived, and he was sent to prison in Tennessee. Disturbingly, Fowler believed that women who drank in bars or hitchhiked actually wanted to be sexually assaulted, so he didn't see anything wrong with his actions. Before long, his assaults would take a deadly turn.

Murders

Fowler's DNA was found on the body of murder victim Colleen MacMillen. Authorities also suspected him of killing Pamela Darlington and Gale Weys in 1973. He was also considered a suspect in up to 20 murders that occurred along Highway 16, which was nicknamed the 'Highway of Tears' because of the number of women who went missing along that stretch of highway.

Other murders Fowler was a suspect in included Sheila Swanson, 19, and her friend Melissa Sanders, 17, who had last been seen at a payphone near the park they were camping at, on May 3, 1992. On October 10, 1992, their bodies were discovered in woods near Eddyville, Oregon, by hunters.

Jennifer Esson, 16, and Kara Leas, 16, were last seen on January 28, 1995, as they walked toward Highway 101. Their bodies were found on February 15, 1995, hidden beneath brush in woods. Both girls had been strangled.

Arrest and Trial

Fowler was arrested on June 28, 1995, after a woman had jumped out of a motel window in Newport, Oregon. She had a rope tied to her ankle, and was able to tell police what had happened. Fowler had kidnapped the woman and sexually abused and attempted to rape her.

On January 8, 1996, Fowler was found guilty on the counts of kidnapping, attempted rape, sexual abuse, assault, coercion and menacing. He received a sentence of 16 years and 3 months with the possibility of parole.

Fowler was never charged with any murders, even though his DNA was found on the body of Colleen MacMillen.

Outcome

Suffering with lung cancer, Fowler succumbed to his illness on May 15, 2006 and died, while still incarcerated at the Oregon State Penitentiary.

Trivia

- "He was of the belief that women who hitchhiked and drank and went to bars desired to be violently sexually assaulted..."

Lonnie David Franklin, Jr.

Date of birth: August 30, 1952

Aliases/Nicknames: The Grim Sleeper

Characteristics: Rape

Number of victims: 10+

Date of murders: 1985 - 2007

Date of arrest: July 7, 2010

Murder method: Shooting, strangulation

Known victims: Debra Jackson, 29; Henrietta Wright, 34; Barbara Ware, 23; Bernita Sparks, 26; Mary Lowe, 26; Lachrica Jefferson, 22; Alice 'Monique' Alexander, 18; Princess Berthomieux, 15; Valerie McCorvey, 35; Janecia Peters, 25

Crime location: Los Angeles

Status: Sentenced to death, awaiting execution.

Background

Franklin seemed to be the epitome of a good, hardworking man who took care of his family. Sure, he was a small-time criminal, but as a member of the community, he was well thought-of as a kind and responsible family oriented man. Everyone in the neighborhood knew that if you needed a part for your car, Franklin could probably help you out. He had a good supply of parts behind the house, and would sell them in a 'don't ask don't tell' agreement.

An outgoing neighbor, Franklin would often purchase birthday gifts for the elderly people in the neighborhood. He was even known to attend graduation ceremonies of the children in the neighborhood. His marriage wasn't perfect, and it had a recurrent on-again off-again pattern, but he still took care of his mother-in-law when she got ill.

Franklin doted on his two children, and enjoyed teaching them how to fix their cars when they broke down, and even taught them how to drive. So, as far as anyone knew, Franklin was a good, friendly and helpful man. But Franklin had been hiding a secret for a very long time, and had urges he couldn't ignore.

Murders

Debra Jackson, 29, was found in Vermont-Slauson, having been shot three times in the chest, on August 10, 1985. A year later, the body of Henriette Wright, 34, was found in Hyde Park on August 12, 1986. She had been shot in the chest twice.

On January 10, 1987, Barbara Ware, 27, was found in Central-Alameda after being shot once in the chest. On April 15, Bernita Sparks, 26, was also shot once in the chest and was found in Gramercy Park. Another body found in Garmercy Park on November 1 was that of Mary Lowe, 26, and she too had been shot just once in the chest.

The next victim, Lachrica Jefferson, 22, was found on January 30, 1988, in Westmont. She had been shot in the chest twice, and the killer had placed a napkin over her face. Written on it was the word AIDS.

Alice 'Monique' Alexander, 18, was shot twice in the chest on September 11, and was found in Vermont Square. There was a break in the murder spree with the next killing occurring on March 19, 2002. Fifteen-year old Princess Berthomieux was found strangled to death in Inglewood.

On July 11, 2003, the body of Valeria McCorvey, 35, was found in Westmont. She had been strangled to death. Again there was a significant break, until January 1, 2007, when the body of Janecia Peters, 27, was found in Gramercy Park. She had been shot once in the back.

Timeline of known murders:

August 10, 1985 - Debra Jackson, 29

August 12, 1986 - Henrietta Wright, 34

August 14, 1986 - Thomas Steele, 36

January 10, 1987 - Barbara Ware, 23

April 15, 1987 - Bernita Sparks, 26

November 1, 1987 - Mary Lowe , 26

January 30, 1988 - Lachrica Jefferson, 22

September 11, 1988 - Alice "Monique" Alexander, 18

March 19, 2002 - Princess Berthomieux , 15

July 11, 2003 - Valerie McCorvey, 35

January 1, 2007 - Janecia Peters , 25

Arrest and Trial

Franklin was arrested on July 7, 2010, and charged with ten counts of murder, along with one count of attempted murder. Because of the size of the case, there were several delays to the trial dates, but Franklin finally went on trial on February 16, 2016. By May 4, the jury were in the process of deliberating, and they found him guilty on all counts the following day.

Sentencing began on June 6, 2016, with the jury recommending Franklin be given the death penalty. On August 10, he was sentenced to death.

Outcome

Franklin is also suspected of being responsible for five other murders, but he has yet to be formally charged in those cases. He remains on death row awaiting his execution date.

Trivia

- Franklin had once worked as a garage attendant for the LAPD

Freeway Phantom

Date of birth: Unknown

Aliases/Nicknames: The Freeway Phantom

Characteristics: Rape, Pedophilia, Kidnapping

Number of victims: 6

Date of murders: April 25, 1971 - September 5, 1972

Date of arrest: Never apprehended

Murder method: Strangulation

Known victims: Carol Spinks, 13; Darlenia Johnson, 16; Brenda Crockett, 10; Nenomoshia Yates, 12; Brenda Woodward, 18; Diane Williams, 17

Crime location: Washington

Status: Unidentified, not apprehended.

Background

Since 1971, investigators have been trying to solve the mystery of the Freeway Phantom. To date, nobody has been formally identified as being responsible for the six murders attributed to the Phantom, and there doesn't appear to be a firm suspect.

Despite receiving numerous tips via phone and mail alluding to potential suspects, the task force set up by the Metropolitan Police Department is no closer to solving this case. Some of the leads received were eliminated quickly, while others took substantial investigating. There have been some interesting suspects along the way, but so far, the Freeway Phantom remains just that - a phantom.

Murders

The first murder believed to be the work of the Freeway Phantom was that of Carol Spinks, a 13-year-old girl had been sent to the grocery store. She was abducted while walking back home, and six days later her body was found on an embankment next to the I-295 freeway.

On July 8, 1971, Darlenia Johnson was abducted while traveling to the recreation center where she worked over the summer. Her body was found just 15 feet away from where Spinks had been discovered, eleven days after her disappearance.

Brenda Crockett, 10, was sent to the store by her mother on July 27, 1971. But she never came home. A phone call was placed by Brenda to her home three hours after she had gone to the store, and it was answered by her little sister who was seven at the time. Brenda, who was crying, said, "A white man picked me up, and I'm heading home in a cab." She told her sister she thought she was in Virginia. The call ended abruptly with Brenda saying 'bye' and disconnecting the call.

Another call came through a little while later, this time answered by the boyfriend of Brenda's mother. This time Brenda repeated what she had said earlier, and the boyfriend told her to get the man to come to the phone. He heard heavy footsteps in the background and Brenda quickly said "I'll see you", and hung up the phone. Brenda's body was found a few hours later by a hitchhiker on Route 50. She had been raped before being strangled with a scarf.

On October 1, 1971, Nenomoshia Yates had been walking home from a store in Northeast Washington when she was kidnapped. Within hours, her body was found near Pennsylvania Avenue, raped and strangled.

Brenda Woodward, 18, got on a bus on November 15, 1971, heading for her home. Police found her body around six hours later, near the Route 202 access ramp. She had been stabbed and strangled, and a coat was put across her chest. The pocket of the coat held a note from the killer. Written on the note was:

This is tantamount to my insensitivity [sic] to people especially women.

I will admit the others when you catch me if you can!

Free-way Phantom

It would be another year before the next murder victim was found. On September 5, 1972, Diane Williams was last seen getting on a bus. Her body was found shortly afterwards, strangled and dumped beside the I-295 freeway.

Timeline of known murders:

April 21, 1971 - Carol Spinks, 13

July 8, 1971 - Darlenia Johnson, 16

July 27, 1971 - Brenda Crockett, 10

October 1, 1971 - Nenomoshia Yates, 12

November 15, 1971 - Brenda Woodard, 18

September 5, 1972 - Diane Williams, 17

Suspects

Despite numerous tips being given to the Metropolitan Police, no clear suspect has ever been identified or apprehended. The investigation included team members from a number of law enforcement agencies including the FBI.

A gang known as the 'Green Vega Rapists' were thoroughly investigated as potentially being responsible for the murders. Each member of the gang was interrogated, including those that were currently incarcerated at the time. One such inmate claimed to have information about the killer but would only tell what he knew if his identity could be kept secret. Police agreed, and the inmate went ahead giving them the date and location of a murder and details considered a 'signature' that the general public were unaware of.

Consideration was given as to whether or not the inmate was involved in the murder, but he was cleared due to his alibi. At that time, an election was being held in Maryland, and during a press conference, one of the candidates announced that an inmate had provided information on the Freeway Phantom. Because this threatened his secret identity, the inmate refused to tell the investigators any more information and subsequently denied having ever told them anything.

Outcome

At the time when these murders were being investigated, it was common practice for the case files at the Metropolitan Police Department were kept within files maintained by detectives who were assigned to the case. Many of the case files and notes on the Freeway Phantom have been lost. With many of the original investigators either retired or deceased, it would be difficult to track down the missing investigation.

The Freeway Phantom case is still open.

William Patrick Fyfe

Date of birth: February 27, 1955

Aliases/Nicknames: The Killer Handyman

Characteristics: Rape

Number of victims: 9 - 25

Date of murders: 1979 - 1999

Date of arrest: December 22, 1999

Murder method: Stabbing

Known victims: Hazel Scattolon, 52; Monique Gaudreau, 46; Anna Yarnold, 59; Teresa Shanahan, 55; Mary Glenn, 50; Suzanne-Marie Bernier, 62; Nicole Raymond, 26; Louise Poupart-Leblanc, 37; Pauline Laplante, 45

Crime location: Montreal, Quebec, Canada

Status: Sentenced to life - serving in a psychiatric hospital.

Background

Born in Canada in 1955, Fyfe would later be described by police as being an 'ordinary man'. The communities he lived in certainly thought he was a good man, and one who showed a lot of community spirit. Others described him as being very generous, although he did have an annoying habit of preaching to people about their health and weight.

Fyfe, who was addicted to drugs at one point, moved to Quebec to receive help and treatment for his addiction. He ended up staying there, and spent time counseling others who also had addictions like his own, while working as a handyman.

In the fall of 1999, Fyfe would travel from Barrie to Montreal (a distance of over 400 miles) four times, committing his awful crimes along the way, in a sort of frenzy. He managed to stay under the radar of the authorities for a while, but eventually was brought down by a single fingerprint.

Murders

The first known victim was Suzanne-Marie Bernier, who was murdered on October 17, 1979, in Cartierville, Montreal. She had been sexually assaulted and stabbed to death. A month later, on November 14, Nicole Raymond, 26, was sexually assaulted and stabbed in Pointe-Claire, Montreal.

Hazel Scattolon was found on March 21, 1981. She had been sexually assaulted and stabbed to death. The next murder didn't occur until September 26, 1987, when Louise Poupart-Leblanc was sexually assaulted and stabbed to death in Saint-Adele, Laurentides.

On June 9, 1989, Pauline Laplante was sexually assaulted and stabbed to death in Saint-Adele, Laurentides. The next murder was that of Monique Gaudreau, in October, 1999. She was discovered deceased in Sainte-Agathe-des-Monts, Quebec.

That same month, the body of Anna Yarnold, 59 was found on October 15, in Senneville, Quebec. The next victim was Teresa Shanahan, a 55-year-old woman, found stabbed to death in Laval, Quebec, in November. The body of Mary Glenn was found on December 15, in Baie-d'Urfe, Quebec. She had been beaten, and then stabbed to death.

Timeline of known murders:

October 17, 1979 - Suzanne-Marie Bernier, 62

November 14, 1979 - Nicole Raymond, 26

March 21, 1981 - Hazel Scattolon, 52

September 26, 1987 - Louise Poupart-Leblanc, 37

June 9, 1989 - Pauline Laplante, 45

October, 1999 - Monique Gaudreau, 46

October 15, 1999 - Anna Yarnold, 59

November, 1999 - Teresa Shanahan, 55

December 15, 1999 - Mary Glenn, 50

Arrest and Trial

A fingerprint found at the crime scene of one of the murders, led police straight to Fyfe. After surveilling him for a while, he was finally arrested on December 22, 1999. At the time he was returning to his truck after having a meal at a truck stop.

Through DNA testing it was established Fyfe was responsible for the murders. However, he only confessed to some of the crimes, so just how many women he killed is unknown. His trial started on November 6, 2000, and he was subsequently found guilty.

Outcome

Fyfe was sentenced to life imprisonment, and was sent to a psychiatric hospital in Saskatchewan to serve his sentence.

John Wayne Gacy

Date of birth: March 17, 1942

Aliases/Nicknames: The Killer Clown

Characteristics: Homosexual Rape, Torture

Number of victims: 33

Date of murders: 1972 - 1978

Date of arrest: December 21, 1978

Murder method: Strangulation

Known victims: Timothy McCoy, 18; John Butkovich, 17; Darrell Sampson, 18; Randall Reffett, 15; Sam Stapleton, 14; Michael Bonnin, 17; William Carroll, 16; Rick Johnston, 17; Kenneth Parker, 16; William Bundy, 19; Gregory Godzik, 17; John Szyc, 19; Jon Prestidge, 20; Matthew Bowman, 19; Robert Gilroy, 18; John Mowery, 19; Russell Nelson, 21; Robert Winch, 16; Tommy Boling, 20; David Talsma, 19; William Kindred, 19; Timothy O'Rourke, 20; Frank Landingin, 19; James Mazzara, 21; Robert Piest, 15; eight unidentified

Crime location: Chicago, Illinois

Status: Executed by lethal injection May 10, 1994.

Background

Gacy later claimed his father was an abusive alcoholic who regularly beat him and his mother, and because Gacy was a bit effeminate, he couldn't meet his father's approval no matter what he did. In his senior year at high school he dropped out, and moved out of the family home for a while. He found work in a mortuary in Las Vegas, but eventually went back home to attend business college. For a while he worked as a shoe salesman.

When Gacy was 22, he married into a business family. The father of his wife owned a chain of Kentucky Fried Chicken restaurants, and Gacy became the manager of the family business. He became active in the community, joining the Jaycees, where he received a number of honors and held key offices.

In 1968, a darker side of Gacy began to emerge, when he was arrested and charged with molesting a teenager who had been employed in the restaurant Gacy managed. He pleaded guilty and received a prison sentence, of which he served 18 months. His wife divorced him, and he worked for a while as a cook before starting his own construction business.

Gacy was in trouble again in 1971, after a teenager accused him of trying to force the youth to have sex. This time, the teenager failed to turn up at court, so the charges were dropped. Soon after, Gacy married again, but early in to the marriage, he ceased having any form of sexual relations with his new wife. By now Gacy had started performing at children's parties and hospital wards as Pogo (or sometimes 'Patches') the clown.

To impress the local politicians, dignitaries and his neighbors, Gacy would throw large parties at his home. He was by all accounts a great host at these parties. But there came a time when his wife and visitors to the home would

comment on a strange smell that was present. Gacy explained that the smell was due to dampness in the crawl space beneath the house. But that wasn't entirely the truth.

Murders

Gacy would lure young men and boys to his home, claiming he wanted to hire them to do some work for his building company. He would then offer to show them his 'handcuff trick', resulting in his victims being incapacitated and he was then free to do as he wished to them. Gacy used chloroform to sedate his victims, and then he would sodomize them.

After the sexual assault, he would throw a rope tied in a loop around the victim's neck, put a stick in the loop, then slowly twist it, strangulating his victim until he was dead. Often he would recite Bible passages while he was killing them.

His house had a crawl space beneath it, and this is where the majority of his 33 victims were buried. He would cover the bodies with lime, to hasten the decomposition. So far, he had flown under the radar of the local authorities, until he made a major mistake in December, 1978.

Gacy was providing a building estimate at a local pharmacy, when he decided to lure a teenage boy back to his home. The boy's mother had dropped him off so he could fill out a job application at the pharmacy. When his disappearance was reported, police discovered that Gacy had been in the store at the same time, and on looking further into his background, they learnt Gacy had previously been prosecuted for molestation.

They began to watch Gacy very closely, and paid a visit to his home on December 21, 1978. One of the detectives asked if he could use Gacy's bathroom, and thought he could smell the distinctive odor of decomposition, as soon as the furnace fan started. Suspecting the worst, they got a search warrant and searched the crawl space.

Beneath the house they found multiple decomposing corpses, and Gacy was immediately arrested.

Timeline of known murders:

Jan. 2, 1972 - Timothy McCoy, 18

July 31, 1975 - John Butkovich, 17

April 6, 1976 - Darrell Sampson, 18

May 14, 1976 - Randall Reffett, 15

May 14, 1976 - Samuel Stapleton, 14

June 3, 1976 - Michael Bonnin, 17

June 10, 1976 - William "Billy" Carroll, 16

August 6, 1976 - Rick Johnston, 17

October 24, 1976 - Kenneth Parker, 16

October 26, 1976 - William Bundy, 19

December 12, 1976 - Gregory Godzik, 17

January 20, 1977 - John Szyc, 19

March 15, 1977 - Jon Prestige, 20

July 5, 1977 - Matthew Bowman, 19

September 15, 1977 - Robert Gilroy, 18

September 25, 1977 - John Mowery, 19

October 17, 1977 - Russell Nelson, 21

November 11, 1977 - Robert Winch, 16

November 18, 1977 - Tommy Baling, 20

December 9, 1977 - David Talsma, 19

February 16, 1978 - William Kindred, 19

June 1978 - Timothy O'Rourke, 20

November 3, 1978 - Frank Wayne "Dale" Landingin, 19

November 13, 1978 - James Mazzara, 21

December 11, 1978 - Robert Piest, 15

Arrest and Trial

During the initial interrogation, Gacy began confessing to the terrible murders he had committed. He even drew a map, to show where each victim was buried under his house. However, he refused to sign his statements. When he went to trial, he was naturally found guilty of all the murders and sentenced to death.

Outcome

Gacy was transported from the Menard Correctional Center to the Statesville Correctional Center on the morning on May 9, 1994, for his execution. He was able to have a private picnic with his family on the prison grounds and later that evening, observed prayer with a Catholic priest prior to being taken to the execution chamber.

Before the lethal injection could be administered, the chemicals clogged the IV tube, and the curtains covering the observation windows were drawn while the problem was sorted out. Ten minutes later, the curtains were opened and the execution process began. From start to finish, the execution took 18 minutes to complete. His last words before his death were allegedly “Kiss my ass”.

His death was confirmed at 12:58 am and his brain was removed and given to Dr. Helen Morrison for the purposes of researching serial killers and whether there is a biological reason for their need to kill.

Trivia

- Gacy's final meal was shrimp, Kentucky Fried Chicken and French fries.
- The execution lasted for 18 minutes, after one of the IV lines clogged.
- Had an IQ of 118.
- Gacy dabbled in oil paintings while in prison. He would paint Disney characters like "the Seven Dwarves", Michelangelo's "Pieta" or even self-portraits as "Pogo the Clown". After his execution these paintings have become trendy collectors' items. Film director John Waters and actor Johnny Depp are some celebrities who own his paintings. His art dealer was Rick Station of Grindhouse Graphics.

Luis Garavito

Date of birth: January 25, 1957

Aliases/Nicknames: La Bestia (The Beast), Tribilin, El Cura, El Loco, Bonifacio Morera Lizcano

Characteristics: Rape, Torture, Dismemberment, Mutilation

Number of victims: 138 - 300+

Date of murders: 1992 - 1999

Date of arrest: April 22, 1999

Murder method: Stabbing

Known victims: Unnamed male children aged 6 - 16 years

Crime location: Colombia, Ecuador

Status: Sentenced to 1,853 years, but due to the law, will only serve 22 years.

Background

Garavito was born in Génova, Colombia in 1957. He was the eldest of seven children, all boys, and during his childhood suffered emotional and physical abuse at the hands of his father. He later claimed he was also sexually abused as a child.

He would become a controversial killer after his convictions, not just because of the sheer number of victims he raped and killed, but because of the absurdity of the sentencing laws in Colombia.

Murders

The victims of Garavito were found on the streets, most coming from poor homes or no homes at all. They were generally between the ages of 6 and 16, and to lure them away, he offered them money or small gifts. Once they trusted him, he would take them for a walk until they got too tired, then he would carry out his atrocious crimes.

The children were raped by Garavito, and their throats were cut. The bodies were usually dismembered, and after discovery, many of them displayed signs of torture.

Arrest and Trial

On April 22, 1999, Garavito was caught and arrested. He subsequently confessed to killing 140 children, but remained under suspicion for the murders of at least 172 more. The murders spread across 59 towns in Colombia.

When Garavito went to trial, he was found guilty of killing 138 of the 172 cases he was believed to be responsible for. Charges for the other murders were still pending, depending on the outcome of investigations. The total of his sentences was 1,853 years and 9 days, but there are restrictions in Colombia which meant he could only serve 30 years. To make things worse, because he helped the investigators locate the bodies, his sentence was further reduced to 22 years.

Outcome

There has been public outcry regarding the length of his sentence, with many believing there should be a death penalty, or at least life imprisonment. They called for a change in the Colombian laws so that harsher penalties could be handed down to criminals as voracious as Garavito.

An interview with Garavito took place in 2006, by a TV host, Pirry. During the interview, Garavito tried to play down the seriousness of his crimes, and said he wanted to go into politics so he could help children that were abused.

Trivia

- Would often pose as a monk or a priest.
- Garavito traveled widely during his killing spree, committing murders in at least 11 of Colombia's 32 departments.

Donald Henry Gaskins

Date of birth: March 13, 1933

Aliases/Nicknames: Pee Wee, Junior Parrott, Meanest Man in America, The Redneck Charles Manson

Characteristics: Rape, Sodomy, Torture, Mutilation, Cannibalism

Number of victims: 8 - 100+ (claimed)

Date of murders: 1969 - 1975, 1982

Date of arrest: December 1975

Murder method: Stabbing

Known victims: Unnamed young men and women - some he knew, others were hitchhikers

Crime location: South Carolina

Status: Executed by electric chair, September 6, 1991.

Background

Gaskins was born in South Carolina to Eulea Parrott, who gave birth to a number of illegitimate children. As a child, Gaskins was neglected quite extensively by his mother, who seldom supervised her children. This was more evident, when at the age of 1 year, Gaskins drank a bottle of kerosene. It's believed that this poisoning lead Gaskins to have seizures until he was 3 years old.

His mother would have numerous boyfriends, and these so-called 'step-fathers' would often beat Gaskins and the other children. Because he was so small in stature as a child, he was given the nickname 'Pee Wee', and apparently he didn't even know his name was Donald until the first time he appeared in court following a crime spree he embarked on with other school dropouts.

This group had gang-raped a sister of one of their friends, as well as committed multiple robberies. A hatchet was used to assault one victim, who survived, and was able to give the police the identities of the culprits. Because of his age, Gaskins was sent to reform school.

At reform school, Gaskins claims he was raped regularly by the other inmates. He eventually escaped from the school, and got married, but returned voluntarily to finish his sentence. He was released in 1951, when he was 18. He worked for a while on a tobacco plantation, but was arrested again in 1953, after attacking a teenage girl with a hammer. He was charged and convicted of attempted murder and sent to prison for six years.

While in prison, Gaskins was raped again. This time though, he fought back against his assailant, slicing the man's throat. This earned him an extra three years added to his sentence. This was a major turning point for Gaskins

however, as from then onward, he became the aggressor, not the victim. He managed to escape from prison in 1955, but was captured and finished his sentence, receiving parole in 1961.

Gaskins went back to committing robberies, but he continued to attack females. He was arrested in 1963 for the rape of a 12-year-old girl. But, once again he managed to escape before he could be sentenced. Soon after he was recaptured and sent to prison for eight years, but only served five. In November 1968, he was paroled. This time, when he committed his crimes, he would try not to leave any witnesses behind.

Murders

The majority of Gaskins' victims were hitchhikers he picked up, and his first murder was in September, 1969. He had picked up a female hitchhiker, and he tortured her then killed her and disposed of her body in a swamp. He later said that all he could think about was that he could do anything her wanted to her.

From then onwards, Gaskins drove along the coastal highways in the south, picking up male and female hitchhikers he would then murder. He referred to these murders as 'coastal kills', and didn't care if the victim was male or female, he got the same pleasure out of it either way.

Gaskins generally went looking for a victim every six weeks, when his lust for killing would start to bother him too much to ignore. He would try and keep the victim alive as long as possible, getting great pleasure out of torturing them. He didn't stick to one way of killing, like most serial killers. His methods included suffocation and stabbing, and as well as mutilating them, some were also cannibalized.

His murder victims changed in November 1970, when Gaskins began killing people he knew. These murders were unlike the others also in the sense that they were killed for personal reasons, not just strangers he met on a highway. The first of these kills was his niece, 15-year-old Janice Kirby and her friend Patricia Ann Alsbrook, 17. Once he had control over them, he tried to assault them sexually before beating them to death.

Sometimes the 'personal' victim was someone who had laughed at him, owed him money, had stolen from him or mocked him. In some cases, he claimed he was paid to kill them. These victims were generally shot to death, and not tortured or mutilated like the others. However, the rape and

murder of his neighbor Doreen Dempsey and her infant daughter were particularly gruesome.

Although those that knew Gaskins did not suspect him of being a serial killer, there were some people around that knew he was a killer for hire. Suzanne Kipper Owens hired Gaskins in February 1975 to kill Silas Barnwell Yates, her boyfriend. After this murder, Gaskins claimed he had to kill another four times to cover it up.

In November 1975, one of Gaskins criminal associates reported to police that he had seen Gaskins kill two men - Dennis Bellamy and Johnny Knight. The associate, Walter Neeley, also confessed that Gaskins had told him he had committed several murders over the previous five years.

Arrest and Trial

The confessions of Walter Neeley convinced the police that Gaskins was the man responsible for the murders, and he was arrested on November 14, 1975. Gaskins ended up confessing, and on December 4, he accompanied the police to his property in Prospect and showed them where he had buried eight of the bodies of his victims.

Gaskins went to trial on May 24, 1976, charged with eight counts of murder. The trial only lasted four days, at which time he was found guilty of all charges. Initially he received the death sentence, but it was commuted to life imprisonment due to law changes in South Carolina. However, while in prison, Gaskins killed a fellow inmate on September 2, 1982.

The inmate, Rudolph Tyner, was also on death row. Gaskins was paid to kill Tyner by the son of one of his victims. He tried to poison him to death several times without success, and decided explosives would be more successful. To do this, he rigged up a radio and told Tyner they could communicate with each other through the radio. Little did Tyner know that the radio was rigged with C4 plastic explosive. He held the radio to his ear as he was told to do, and Gaskins detonated the bomb.

For the murder of Tyner, Gaskins was again sentenced to death, and this time he wasn't going to get it commuted.

Outcome

On September 6, 1991, Gaskins was executed by the electric chair. He was pronounced dead at 1:10 am. Just a few hours beforehand, he had tried to kill himself by slashing his wrists with a razor blade. He had swallowed the blade a week earlier, and then coughed it up again. The last words he spoke were “I’ll let my lawyers talk for me. I’m ready to go”.

Trivia

- He tried to commit suicide the night before his scheduled execution - In his last night, Gaskins slashed his wrists and the crooks of his arms with a razor blade he had lodged in his throat and regurgitated. It took 20 stitches to save him for the electric chair at 1:10 a.m. Sept. 6, 1991.
- He plotted to kidnap the daughter of the man who sent him to death row.
- He was a small man, barely 5-foot-5 tall, with a 130-pound frame.
- He drove a hearse as his personal vehicle.

Ed Gein

Date of birth: August 27, 1906

Aliases/Nicknames: The Butcher of Plainfield, The Mad Butcher, The Plainfield Ghoul

Characteristics: Necrophilia

Number of victims: 2+

Date of murders: December 8, 1954, and November 16, 1957

Date of arrest: November 17th, 1957

Murder method: Shooting

Known victims: Mary Hogan, 54; Bernice C. Worden, 58

Crime location: Plainfield, Wisconsin

Status: Found not guilty by reason of insanity and sentenced to life in a mental hospital. Died on July 26, 1984, due to lung cancer.

Background

Ed Gein was the real life 'Psycho', an incredibly disturbed individual who was heavily influenced by his mother. Gein was born in La Crosse County, Wisconsin, to parents George and Augusta. Gein was the second child, the first being his one and only brother Henry. Their father was an alcoholic, who was unable to hold onto a job, yet he worked in multiple areas such as insurance sales, carpentry and tanning. At one point George owned a grocery store, but they sold it and shifted to Plainfield, Wisconsin. The parents wanted their family to live in isolation.

Whenever outsiders approached Gein and his brother, their mother would chase them off. The only times the boys were allowed to leave the property was to go to school. Their mother Augusta was a devout Lutheran who would preach to her children about the immorality of the world, including the evils of alcohol and the belief that women were instruments of the devil, and naturally prostitutes. Every afternoon she would spend time repeating verses from the Bible, mainly focusing on those that mentioned murder, divine retribution and death.

In 1940, Gein's father died from heart failure, likely caused by his alcoholism. To help support the family, Gein and his brother Henry would undertake a variety of odd jobs around town. As they grew older, Henry worried about how close Gein and his mother were. Whenever he spoke badly about their mother, Gein would respond emotionally with hurt and shock.

In May 1944, Gein and Henry were busy burning off the marsh vegetation on the farm, when the fire became uncontrolled. The fire department arrived, and after they had finished extinguishing the fire, Gein claimed Henry was missing. It was almost dark, so armed with lanterns, a search

party was organized to look for Henry. His body was eventually found, lying face down on the ground, and it seemed he had been dead for quite a while.

There were no overt signs of injury on Henry's body, so the cause of death was put down as asphyxiation, although a report later stated there had been bruises on his head. Had he been murdered? And was the murder committed by Gein, his own brother? Most who have questioned Gein later in life believe he did indeed kill his brother Henry.

Shortly after Henry's death, Gein's mother suffered a serious stroke, and Gein became her caregiver. She suffered a second stroke, and died in December 1945. Gein was completely devastated at the loss of his mother, the one person who had been his only friend his whole life. He managed to keep the farm and would do odd jobs to help support himself. As a handyman, he was eligible for a farm subsidy from the government, and he started receiving this in 1951.

Gein sealed off the rooms his mother had used and left them completely pristine and untouched. However, the small areas of the house he lived in were nothing short of squalid. Alone all the time, Gein developed an interest in magazines, particularly those that dealt with death and cannibalism.

Murders

Bernice Worden, the owner of the Plainfield hardware store, went missing on November 16, 1957. Her son told the investigating officers that Gein had been in the store the night before she disappeared, saying that he was going to return the next day for antifreeze. The police were suspicious and when they found a written receipt Worden had written for antifreeze the morning she disappeared, the officers decided to search Gein's property.

When they searched a shed they found Worden's body, hung up like an animal. She had been decapitated, and she was hung using a crossbar at her ankles and ropes at her wrists. Witnesses said she was 'dressed out like a deer'. Her body had been mutilated after her death, which was caused by a gunshot from a .22-caliber rifle. They then searched the house for more evidence.

Items found during the search of his house:

Whole human bones and fragments

Wastebasket made of human skin

Human skin covering several chair seats

Skulls on his bedposts

Female skulls, some with the tops sawn off

Bowls made from human skulls

A corset made from a female torso skinned from shoulders to waist

Leggings made from human leg skin

Masks made from the skin of female heads

Mary Hogan's face mask in a paper bag

Mary Hogan's skull in a box

Bernice Worden's entire head in a burlap sack

Bernice Worden's heart in a plastic bag in front of Gein's potbellied stove

Nine vulvae in a shoe box

A young girl's dress and the vulvas of two females judged to have been about fifteen years old

A belt made from female human nipples

Four noses

A pair of lips on a window shade drawstring

A lampshade made from the skin of a human face

Fingernails from female fingers

Arrest and Trial

Gein was arrested on November 17, 1957, and taken in for questioning. Gein admitted he had made many night-time visits to the local cemetery and had exhumed bodies of those recently buried. Sometimes he left the cemetery without taking anything, but other times he would take the bodies of women who looked like his mother and transport them home. Once there, he would remove their skins and ‘tan’ them so he could make up the various items found in his home.

Not long after his mother’s death, Gein had begun making what he called a ‘woman suit’, so, in his words, “he could become his mother - to literally crawl into her skin”. He denied any allegations that he had slept with the corpses because he said they smelled bad.

While under interrogation, he also confessed to killing Mary Hogan, the owner of a tavern who had disappeared in 1954. Her head was found in Gein’s house, but he couldn’t remember any details of her murder. Gein was also a suspect in several other unsolved murders in Wisconsin, including the disappearance of a babysitter in La Crosse, Evelyn Hartley who went missing in 1953.

Gein’s trial began on November 21, 1957. He was charged with first-degree murder, and he pleaded not guilty by reason of insanity. He was assessed and diagnosed with schizophrenia and mental incompetence, meaning he was unfit for trial. Instead he was sent to a mental hospital for the criminally insane.

He was determined to be mentally fit in 1968, and his trial started again on November 7, 1968. It only lasted a week, and his defense team had requested there be no jury. Seven days later, November 14, he was found

guilty and sentenced to spend the rest of his life in a mental hospital. Although he had confessed to the murder of Mary Hogan, he was only charged with the death of Worden.

Outcome

Gein died from complications of lung cancer on July 26, 1984. He was interred within the Plainfield Cemetery, and over many years, people would chip bits off his headstone as souvenirs, until the entire headstone was stolen in 2000. It was later found in 2001 and stored at the Waushara County Sheriff's Department. No replacement stone has ever been placed on the grave.

Trivia

- Gein has served as the inspiration for many notable literary and cinematic villains, most notably Norman Bates, the character from the novel and movie 'Psycho'.
- Leatherface of 'The Texas Chain Saw Massacre' was also loosely based on Gein's human trophy collecting. Leatherface, the franchise's antagonist, wears a mask made of human flesh.
- Thomas Harris, the creator of the legendary movie character, Hannibal Lecter based Buffalo Bill, the main antagonist of his 1988 novel 'The Silence of the Lambs', on Gein.

Lorenzo Gilyard

Date of birth: May 24, 1950

Aliases/Nicknames: The Kansas City Strangler

Characteristics: Rape

Number of victims: 12+

Date of murders: 1977 - 1993

Date of arrest: April 19, 2004

Murder method: Strangulation

Known victims: Catherine M. Barry, 34; Naomi Kelly, 23; Ann Barnes, 36; Kellie A. Ford, 20; Sheila Ingold, 36; Carmeline Hibbs, 30; Stacie L. Swofford, 17; Gwendolyn Kizine, 15; Margaret J. Miller, 17; Debbie Blevins, 32; Helga Kruger, 26; Connie Luther, 29; Angela M. Mayhew, 19

Crime location: Kansas City, Missouri

Status: Sentenced to life without parole.

Background

Gilyard was in and out of trouble in his youth, convicted of a variety of charges including sexual abuse, molestation, assault and burglary. He married his first wife when he was just 18 years old, and would go on to father eleven children with multiple partners.

His trouble with the law started with charges including disturbing the peace, a weapons violation, and lying to the police, but these usually resulted in brief jail times and small fines. His behavior became more violent when in 1974, he was charged with raping a 25-year-old woman. Despite the victim identifying Gilyard, he was not convicted.

A few months later, he was arrested again, this time for raping and beating a 13-year-old girl. He tried to deny the allegation at first, saying the victim was lying, but eventually he pleaded guilty to molestation. He was sentenced to nine months in jail.

In 1979 Gilyard was accused of kidnapping, and holding the male at gunpoint while he raped the female. The male victim identified Gilyard and hair evidence was found at Gilyard's workplace. Remarkably, he was acquitted in 1980. Also in 1980, Gilyard was arrested, charged and convicted with aggravated assault. He had threatened to shoot his ex-wife, and in January 1981, she divorced him. A month later, he beat her twice, pistol-whipping her the first time, and the second time he broke her teeth and stabbed her with an ice pick in the arm. He received third-degree assault convictions for each incident.

Over the next few years, Gilyard was in and out of jail for a variety of charges, including making bomb threats. But once he was released, he seemed to settle down. He started working for a trash collection company in

1986, and stayed with this job until he was arrested for murder in 2004. The police had become suspicious of Gilyard when a DNA match was made between him and one of the 12 victims they were investigating.

Murders

Although Gilyard began killing in 1977, these murders were either undiscovered or not linked to him until years later. It wasn't until 2004, after the bodies of more than a dozen women had been found, that he came under the scrutiny of the local police. By then DNA testing was well established, and they had fortunately had the forethought to keep a blood sample from one of the crime scenes.

In April 2004, the DNA came back as belonging to Gilyard and the police began to track him. He was now linked to twelve murders. The victims were comprised of eleven prostitutes and a woman who was mentally unwell at the time of her murder. All of the victims had been strangled, and eleven of them were assaulted sexually. The majority of the bodies were nude when they were discovered, and they were posed by Gilyard.

Some of the bodies showed evidence of being bound at the wrists, and six of them still had shoe strings, clothing or electrical cords tied around their necks. It seemed that the murderer used whatever was close at hand to carry out his crimes. Five of the dead women were also strangled, but there was nothing around their necks.

Timeline of known murders:

April 1977 - Stacie L. Swofford, 17

January 23, 1980 - Gwendolyn Kizine, 15

May 9, 1982 - Margaret J. Miller, 17

March 14, 1986 - Catherine M. Barry, 34

August 16, 1986 - Naomi Kelly, 23

November 27, 1986 - Debbie Blevins, 32

April 17, 1987 - Ann Barnes, 36

June 9, 1987 - Kellie A. Ford, 20

September 12, 1987 - Angela M. Mayhew, 19

November 3, 1987 - Sheila Ingold, 36

December 19, 1987 - Carmeline R. Hibbs, 30

February 1989 - Helga Kruger, 26

January 11, 1993 - Connie Luther, 29

Arrest and Trial

Once Gilyard was identified as the killer, police monitored his every move until they could finish tying up any loose ends that may affect his arrest or prosecution. Originally they planned to arrest him on April 19, but because officers were concerned he suspected he was being followed, they brought the arrest date forward. On April 16, while he was at a Denny's restaurant, police walked in and asked Gilyard to accompany them, which he did calmly.

Initially he was charged with 13 counts of murder, but six of those charges were dropped for a variety of reasons. He pleaded not guilty in the other seven charges. In exchange for dropping the death penalty, Gilyard's defense team had agreed to a trial without jury.

On April 13, 2007, Gilyard was found guilty of six counts of first-degree murder, and was acquitted on the seventh charge. He was sentenced to life imprisonment without the possibility of parole.

Outcome

Gilyard will spend the rest of his natural life incarcerated behind bars.

Investigations are still ongoing to determine whether or not he could be involved in several other murders. The six cases that were dropped before trial could be reinstated at a later date, but the result would still be the same - life without parole.

Trivia

- His sister was a prostitute who was also convicted of murder.
- His probation records show that between 1969 and 1974 he was suspected of 4 rapes, but these rapes were never proven.
- Each victim was discovered without their shoes.

Harvey Glatman

Date of birth: October 10, 1927

Aliases/Nicknames: The Lonely Hearts Killer, The Glamour Girl Slayer, Johnny Glenn, George Williams, Frank Johnson, Frank Wilson

Characteristics: Sadomasochistic rape

Number of victims: 3+

Date of murders: August 1, 1957 - July 13, 1958

Date of arrest: October 27, 1958

Murder method: Strangulation by ligature

Known victims: Judith Ann Dull, 19; Shirley Ann Bridgeford, 24; Ruth Mercado, 24

Crime location: Riverside and San Diego Counties, California

Status: Executed by gas chamber September 18, 1959.

Background

From a very young age, Glatman's parents, Albert and Ophelia, knew something wasn't right with their child. His emotional behavior was strange, and when he was three years old, his mother caught him in the midst of a sadomasochistic act and he was taken to see the physician. His parents were told not to be concerned, it was just a phase. Believing the physician that Glatman would grow out of these strange behaviors, his parents from then on ignored or dismissed any further incidences.

When Glatman was 12 years old, he was subjected to a fair amount of bullying, because of the way he looked, and he had a terrible fear of females. By this time he was also committing numerous burglaries of homes owned by women. Before long, he started sexually assaulting women who were at home when he robbed their houses.

His parents finally stopped ignoring his behaviors and sought the help of a psychiatrist, before they even knew he was assaulting women and committing burglaries. In May of 1945, Glatman had broken into the home of a woman named Elma Hamum. He was captured in the act, and was found to be carrying a .25-caliber pistol and a length of rope. Glatman was charged with first-degree robbery, and bail was posted by his parents.

The next month, Glatman abducted a woman named Noreen Laurel, and before he dropped her at home, he touched her. The authorities were notified straight away and he was arrested. His parents couldn't afford the bail this time, and while he was incarcerated, Glatman was examined by psychiatrists. He was diagnosed with 'split personality disorder', which today is known as schizophrenia. Things were only going to get worse when he was released in November 1945.

Murders

Glatman posed as a professional photographer and would convince women to pose for him tied up in bondage-type situations in exchange for cash. In August 1957, he contacted Judith Ann Dull, a young woman in desperate need of money for a child custody battle with her ex-husband, and asked her if she would pose for him. He told her to wear a tight sweater and skirt, and she agreed.

When Dull arrived at Glatman's apartment, he tied her up, explaining that it was part of the photo shoot, and started taking photos of her. He then threatened her with a gun, forcing her to undress so he could take more explicit photos. Glatman then raped Dull, got her into his car and drove her out past Thousand Palms. He strangled her and took further photos of her dead body before leaving it in the desert.

At the Lonely Hearts Club in March 1958, Glatman, using the name George Williams, met Shirley Bridgeford. They agreed to have dinner together, and afterwards, he took her to the Vallecito Mountains. Once there, he pointed a gun at her and ordered her to take her clothes off. After raping her, he took more photos then murdered her. He photographed her dead body before leaving it there and driving off.

His third victim, Ruth Mercado, had been offered money in exchange for some photographs. It was July 1958, and he was using another alias, Frank Wilson. This time he was actually working as a legitimate photographer for a modeling agency. Her murder was carried out in the same way as the others.

Timeline of known murders:

August 1957 - Judith Ann Dull, 19

March 1958 - Shirley Ann Bridgeford, 24

July 1958 - Ruth Mercado, 24

Arrest and Trial

While working for the Diane Studio modeling agency, Glatman was signed up to photograph one of the models, Lorraine Vigil. He abducted her, but she fought back at him and managed to escape, and happened to run right into two policemen that arrested Glatman on the spot.

While he was being interrogated for the attack on Lorraine Vigil, Glatman broke and confessed to killing the three women. He told the police he had a toolbox, which was a container filled with all the photos he had taken of the victims. They found the toolbox at his apartment, and took the photos to use as evidence.

When he went to trial, his own mother got up and apologized for his crimes, saying he was 'sick'. The defense attempted to claim Glatman was insane, but when he was examined, it was determined he wasn't psychotic and he was responsible for his actions.

Glatman was tried for the murder of Bridgeford and Mercado, and found guilty. He received the death penalty.

Outcome

Glatman was sent to the gas chamber, nicknamed 'the green room', on September 18, 1959. The cyanide gas was administered, and he was pronounced dead 12 minutes later.

Trivia

- His family physician told his mother he would grow out of his sadomasochistic sexual tendencies.
- When his mother inquired as to what caused the welts on his neck, he said that he had tied a rope around his neck and was hanging from it—that torturing himself like this gave him pleasure.
- His IQ, measured while he was in San Quentin, was 130.

Quote by Glatman:

- He wanted to die, saying, “It’s better this way. I knew this was the way it would be.”

Billy Glaze

Date of birth: July 13, 1944

Aliases/Nicknames: Jesse Sitting Crow, Jesse Coulter, Butcher Knife Billy

Characteristics: Rape

Number of victims: 3+

Date of murders: 1986 - 1987

Date of arrest: August 31, 1987

Murder method: Stabbing

Known victims: Kathleen Bullman; Angeline Whitebird Sweet; Angela Green

Crime location: Minneapolis, Minnesota

Status: Sentenced to three life sentences. Died in prison on December 22, 2015, from lung cancer.

Background

The story of Billy Glaze is full of controversy. He was initially identified as a suspect in the murder of three Native American women, following a tip from the public. At the time, Glaze was a transient who was known to go by different names and use different dates of birth. He took on Native American names, despite being a Caucasian.

Glaze had a habit of making derogatory comments about Indian women, especially when he was in bars. He was considered a nuisance, and the bouncers at the bars warned him on several occasions to behave or leave.

Although Glaze seemed like a good suspect in the murders, he strongly denied any involvement, and they were unable to find a link between Glaze and the victims. He did admit that he didn't like Indian women, but swore he hadn't killed anyone.

Needing to find a way to arrest Glaze for the murders, their prayers were answered when more people started to come forward with what seemed like tangible proof.

Murders

Glaze was eventually a suspect in the murders of around 50 women, and had once boasted to police he had killed more than 20, and then later recanted his admission. The crimes he was charged with were the murders of three Native American women between 1986 and 1987.

Each of the victims was a mother of young children, and they were all seen by themselves at night on the streets. All were alcoholics who drank at the same type of bars. The cases were so similar that it didn't take police or the medical examiner to work out they were the work of just one man.

All three women had been beaten around the face and head, and the mouths were a focal point of the bludgeoning. All had been violated with a stick inserted in their vagina, and they were left posed in degrading positions, mostly nude.

Timeline of murders convicted of:

July 27, 1986 - Kathleen Bullman

April 12, 1987 - Angeline Whitebird Sweet

April 29, 1987 - Angela Green

Arrest and Trial

A witness came forward and told police that Glaze was the man responsible for the three murders. His girlfriend told them where to look for Glaze in New Mexico, and on August 31, 1987, he was stopped and arrested for driving under the influence of alcohol. He was on parole at the time, and because it was a violation of his parole, officers were able to search his vehicle. Inside they found a crowbar, nightstick and a bloody shirt.

When Glaze went to trial, forensic evidence was the main tool in securing his conviction of the three murders. On the crowbar in his car they found hair samples, and these were matched to the victims. He was sentenced to life imprisonment with parole after 52 years.

Outcome

On December 22, 2015, 72-year-old Glaze died from lung cancer, which he had only recently been diagnosed with. He had been incarcerated for over 25 years for murders he possibly didn't commit.

Trivia

- This case was one of only two that were undetermined after a review of 14,000 murder and sexual assault cases throughout Minnesota undertaken by county attorneys and the Minnesota Innocence Project going back to 1981. The review used new DNA technology, not available when the crimes were committed, to determine if any wrongful convictions might have occurred. None were found.

Billy Gohl

Date of birth: 1860

Aliases/Nicknames: Ghoul of Grays Harbor, Timber Town Killer

Characteristics: Robbery

Number of victims: 2 - 100+

Date of murders: 1902 - 1910

Date of arrest: 1910

Murder method: Shooting

Known victims: Unnamed male sailors

Crime location: Aberdeen, Washington

Status: Sentenced to life imprisonment and transferred to a mental asylum.

Died in 1928 from complications of syphilis.

Background

Little is known about Gohl's early life, though at one point as an adult, he went to the Yukon chasing gold. He was unsuccessful, and on his return to Aberdeen he took on work as a bartender. During this time, it's believed he may have been responsible for numerous murders. The bodies of migrant workers were found after washing up on shore, and all seemed to have been robbed of any valuables or money they were known to be carrying.

Gohl then was employed at the Sailor's Union of the Pacific as a union official. He was a large man, and he used this to his advantage to intimidate potential strikers and to help recruit new members. As sailors arrived at Aberdeen port, they would normally go to the union building straight after leaving their ship. If there was any mail for them they could collect it there, and some also deposited money there as a way of saving.

The man they usually encountered at the union building was Gohl, who was by himself. First he would ask each sailor about their families and friends, trying to find out if anyone in the area knew the sailor. This is because, if the sailor was just passing through, it would be a long time before he was missed by anybody. Somehow he would turn the conversation to valuables and money. Depending on the conversation and how the sailor answered, they would become a target for the greedy Gohl.

Murders

Most of Gohl's victims were shot to death in the union building where he worked. He would then rob them of any cash or valuables they had on them, and then discard the bodies in the Wishkah River, behind the building.

Apparently, there was a chute that ran from a trap door in the union building directly into the river and he would push the bodies into the river using the chute. Many people suspected Gohl of being responsible for the numerous disappearances of sailors who disembarked there, but nobody did anything about it. He would have continued to get away with it, except for his accomplice, John Klingenberg being arrested for trying to jump ship.

Arrest and Trial

According to Klingenberg, he had seen Gohl with Charles Hatberg, a sailor who had recently been found floating in the harbor just before he disappeared. Gohl was arrested and charged with the murder of Hatberg, and was convicted. He also was tried for the murder of John Hoffman, a man who had seen him murder Hatberg. Although Hoffman was killed by Klingenberg the next day, it was found by the court that Gohl was complicit and therefore guilty. He was sentenced to life imprisonment.

Outcome

Gohl died in 1927 from lobar pneumonia and erysipelas complicated by dementia paralytic caused by syphilis. He was considered the prime suspect in at least 41 other murders.

Stephen Griffiths

Date of birth: December 24, 1969

Aliases/Nicknames: The Crossbow Cannibal

Characteristics: Cannibalism, Dismemberment

Number of victims: 3

Date of murders: June 22, 2009 – May 21, 2010

Date of arrest: May 24, 2010

Murder method: Crossbow, stabbing

Known victims: Susan Rushworth, 43; Shelley Armitage, 31; Suzanne Blamires, 36

Crime location: Bradford, England

Status: Sentenced to life imprisonment without parole.

Background

Although quiet and a bit withdrawn as a child, Griffiths appeared to have a normal childhood, and nothing seemed to be amiss until he reached his late teens. Griffiths began shoplifting, and when the manager of a store tries to stop him, Griffiths attacks him with a knife. He was just 17 years old, and received a sentence of three years in youth custody. While incarcerated, he informs his probation officer that he has fantasized about being a serial killer.

By the time he was 18 years old, Griffiths had cut off all contact with his family, including his mother. In 1989 he was caught with an air pistol he had been using to kill birds so he could dissect them. He was charged and convicted of having an offensive weapon. The following year, he is arrested for an attack on a young girl, where he held a knife to her throat. This resulted in Griffiths receiving a two-year sentence in prison. At that time, he wasn't showing any signs of suffering from a mental illness.

Griffiths' behavior deteriorates significantly from then onwards. He becomes terrified of insects crawling into his ear canals and starts stuffing cotton wool in his ears at night. He doesn't work, and lives off grants and benefits while attaining a degree in psychology. He then begins studying for a Ph.D. in criminology, and his thesis is on homicide in Bradford, where he lives.

Griffiths enters a relationship in 1989 that would last for two years. She would later say how Griffiths had every surface in his apartment covered in plastic. She begins to sense something wasn't right with Griffiths and ends the relationship. His next relationship with a woman was abusive, and after they split, he continued to harass her relentlessly. A neighbor noticed he had two pet lizards that he would walk around the neighborhood on dog leads.

He invited her in to see his pets one day and he was enthralled watching one of his lizards devour a live rat. Griffith's mental status seemed to have deteriorated, and before long, he would act on those fantasies he described many years before.

Murders

It was first discovered Griffiths had committed a murder when detectives were reviewing CCTV footage, which showed him outside his apartment building in Bradford, with a woman. The woman, later identified as Suzanne Blamires, was seen walking into the building with Griffiths on May 21, 2010. Just minutes later, she ran out, and Griffiths chased after her carrying a crossbow. He knocked her down and fired a bolt into her head.

Blamires was dead, and Griffiths, who knew the camera was there, faced towards it and held the crossbow above his head, almost as though he was proud of what he had just done and was bragging, then dragged her body out of sight.

A while later Griffiths was seen on camera carrying trash bags and a rucksack in and out of the building. The following day, female body parts were found in the River Aire in Shipley by a member of the public. They were identified as being Blamires. A caretaker of the building where the murder took place discovered the CCTV footage and took it to the police, also identifying the man on tape as being Griffiths.

When police searched Griffiths' flat, they found disturbing video footage that indicated his role in the death of Shelly Armitage on April 26, 2010. The footage showed the dead body of Armitage naked and hog-tied in a bath. On her back, the words 'My Sex Slave' had been spray-painted in black paint. Audio of the tape revealed Griffiths saying, "I am Ven Pariah, I am the Bloodbath Artist. Here's a model who is assisting me."

During the search for more body parts in River Aire after the discovery of Blamires body, part of Armitage's spine was also found.

Timeline of known murders:

June 22, 2009 - Susan Rushworth, 43

April 26, 2010 - Shelley Armitage, 31

May 21, 2010 - Suzanne Blamires, 36

Arrest and Trial

Griffiths was arrested on May 24, 2010, and during the interrogation, he admitted to he was responsible for the deaths of Suzanne Blamires, Shelley Armitage, and Susan Rushworth. He claimed that he had cooked and eaten parts of two victims and eaten part of the third victim raw. But police were never able to find any evidence to confirm this as true. The remains of Susan Rushworth were never found, but despite this, Griffiths was charged with the murders of all three women.

At his first court appearance, when asked to state his name Griffiths stated 'The Crossbow Cannibal'. He was remanded in custody, and his next appearance was on June 7 via video link. His trial date was then set for November 16, 2010.

His trial came to an end on December 21, 2010, and Griffiths pleaded guilty and was convicted of the three murders. He was sentenced to life in prison without the possibility of parole.

Outcome

Griffiths claimed to have killed 'loads' of women, but no further cases have been identified that are linked to him. After studying criminology for so long it is remarkable that Griffiths wasn't clued up enough to get away with his crimes. Thankfully though he wasn't that clever, and now no women will ever die at his hands again.

Trivia

- His idol was Yorkshire Ripper Peter Sutcliffe, who killed 13 women, most of them prostitutes.

Quotes by Griffiths:

- “I am misanthropic. I don’t have much time for the human race.”
- He described himself as a “pseudo-human at best. A demon at worst.”
- “I’ve killed a lot more than Suzanne Blamires - I’ve killed loads.”
- He has attempted suicide four times while incarcerated.

Robert Hansen

Date of birth: February 15, 1939

Aliases/Nicknames: The Butcher Baker

Characteristics: Rape, and would make victims run through the wilderness while he hunted them.

Number of victims: 17+

Date of murders: 1973 - 1983

Date of arrest: October 27, 1983

Murder method: Shooting

Known victims: Lisa Futrell, 41; Malai Larsen, 28; Sue Luna, 23; Tami Pederson, 20; Angela Feddern, 24; Teresa Watson; DeLynn 'Sugar' Frey; Paula Goulding, 17; Andrea 'Fish' Altiery; Sherry Morrow, 23; 'Eklutna Annie', 16-25; Joanna Messina, 24; 'Horseshoe Harriet'; Roxanne Easland, 24; Ceilia 'Beth' Van Zanten, 17; Megan Emerick, 17; Mary Thill, 23

Crime location: Anchorage, Alaska

Status: Sentenced to life plus another 461 years. Died in prison on August 21, 2014, of natural causes.

Background

Hansen was one of the coldest killers to date. Born in Iowa in 1939, he grew into a very shy, thin youth, who developed a terrible stutter and a severe case of acne. The acne and resultant scars lead to him being bullied through school, which didn't help his stuttering. The pretty girls at school ignored him, and he would fantasize about seeking revenge. Quiet and a loner, the relationship with his father was strained and somewhat dysfunctional, due to his father's domineering personality.

One hobby that Hansen could escape to, where nobody could tease or control him, was hunting. He enlisted in the Army Reserve in 1957, but was discharged after a year. He then worked at a police academy in Iowa as a drill instructor. While he was there, he met a younger woman and they later married in 1960.

Hansen was arrested in December 1960 for burning down a school bus garage in Pocahontas County. He was sentenced to three years in prison, but only served 20 months before being released. However, his wife had filed for divorce while he was behind bars. He would end up being arrested numerous times for petty theft over the next few years.

By 1967, Hansen had remarried and the couple and their two children moved to Anchorage, in Alaska. He was well-liked by the community, and Hansen competed in local hunting competitions, setting several hunting records. When this mild-mannered, quiet family man and baker, embarked on a terrifying killing spree, nobody suspected a thing.

Murders

From 1971 to 1984, Hansen was killing prostitutes in Anchorage, Alaska. He would arrange for their services, and then kidnap them before raping them. Sometimes he flew them in his plane to his cabin in Knik River Valley. Once there, he would often make them run naked through the woods while he hunted them, before killing them with his rifle or knife.

The first body found, was that of an unidentified woman, later nicknamed Eklutna Annie because of the location of her shallow grave. She had been buried on Eklutna Lake Road, and her body was discovered by construction workers on July 21, 1980. Decomposition and animal damage was so severe, that identification was impossible. A facial reconstruction was created and publicized widely, to no avail. Also in July 1980, the body of topless dancer Joanne Messina was found in a gravel pit. She too was badly decomposed, so there was very little evidence that could be found or useful.

The body of Sherry Morrow was found on September 12, 1982, in a shallow grave on the Knik River bank. She had been missing since November 17, 1981. She was fully clothed in the grave, but despite being shot three times in the back, there were no bullet holes in her clothes. Clearly she had been redressed after she was shot and killed.

Another body was found on the banks of the Knik River on September 2, 1983. The victim was Paula Goulding, a 17-year-old topless dancer, who was also dressed after she had been shot to death. The next body wasn't found until April 24, 1984. The body belonged to Sue Luna, and it is unknown when she disappeared or when she was killed. But, Hansen had taken her to the river and made her strip before hunting her down and shooting her to death.

Hansen abducted another young woman on June 13, 1983, but this time the victim was able to escape. Cindy Paulson, 17, had been offered \$200 to perform oral sex on Hansen, but when she agreed and got into his car, he pulled a gun on her. He drove her back to his house and kept her captive so he could torture, sexually assault and rape her. She was chained to a post in the basement by a chain around her neck, and at one point Hansen had a nap on the couch.

After he woke up, he put Paulson in his car and drove to the local airfield, and told her they were going to his cabin near Knik River. She was handcuffed and crouching in the back seat, and while Hansen was busy getting the plane ready, she managed to escape through the driver's door and run. When she got to Sixth Avenue, with Hansen in hot pursuit, she flagged down a truck. Robert Yount was driving the truck, and shocked by her appearance he stopped and let her in.

Yount dropped Paulson off at the Mush Inn, a local motel, and she tried to get the clerk to contact her boyfriend. Meanwhile, Yount called the police to report the incident. Officers arrived at the Inn and discovered Paulson had taken a taxi to her boyfriend at Big Timber Motel. They found her there, still wearing the handcuffs. After she gave them her story at the police station, they brought Hansen in and questioned him. He passed it off as a disgruntled prostitute trying to get more money, and because of his meekness and alibi from his friend, they let him go.

With three bodies being found, the authorities contacted the FBI and asked for help with a profile of the killer. The profiler determined the killer would be an experienced hunter, have a history of rejection by women, have low self-esteem, may stutter, and was likely to keep souvenirs from each murder, most likely jewelry. With this information, the head detective had

another look at potential suspects and this time he decided Hansen fitted the profile.

Timeline of known murders or dates they were found:

December 22, 1971 - Ceilia "Beth" Van Zanten, 17

July 7, 1973 - Megan Emerick, 17

July 5, 1975 - Mary Kathleen Thill, 23

June 28, 1980 - Roxanne Eastland, 24

July 1980 - Joanne Messina, 24

July 21, 1980 - "Eklutna Annie", 16-25

September 6, 1980 - Lisa Futrell, 41

November 17, 1981 - Sherry Morrow, 24

December 2, 1981 - Andrea "Fish" Altiery

May 26, 1982 - Sue Luna, 23

April 25, 1983 - Paula Golding, 17

April 25, 1984 - DeLynn "Sugar" Frey

April 26, 1984 - Teresa Watson

April 26, 1984 - Angela Feddern, 24

April 29, 1984 - Tamera "Tami" Pederson, 19

Other victims, killed between 1980 and 1983:

Malai Larsen, 28

Jane Doe

Arrest and Trial

Acting on the profile from the FBI and Paulson's original testimony about her abduction, the police requested a warrant to search Hansen's home, plane and cars. During the search on October 27, 1983, a collection of jewelry was discovered, later identified as belonging to several victims. They also found a supply of firearms. Hidden behind the headboard in Hansen's bedroom, they found an aviation map marked with small 'x' marks.

Hansen tried to deny responsibility for the murders for as long as possible, despite the evidence, but eventually he caved. At first he said it was the fault of the women, that he was justified in killing them. As each piece of evidence was placed in front of him, he finally admitted he had been killing women since 1971.

Ballistics evidence linked Hansen's rifle to the bullets found at the crime scenes, and faced with even more incriminating evidence, Hansen agreed to a plea bargain. In exchange for serving his sentence in a federal prison, he pleaded guilty to four murders, the ones they had clear evidence in, and agreed to provide information on the other victims. He also had to explain the marks on the map, suspected to be burial locations.

As part of the deal, Hansen showed seventeen grave sites to the investigators. However, there were still three marks on the map he refused to divulge, and police suspect these may be the graves of Megan Emrick and Mary Thill, and a third unidentified victim. Hansen denied responsibility for the murders of both Emrick and Thill.

By pleading guilty to four murders, Hansen was convicted and sentenced to 461 years in prison, without the possibility of parole.

Outcome

Hansen died from an ongoing health condition on August 21, 2014. The nature of the illness leading to his death is undisclosed.

Trivia

- He was a local hunting champion in Anchorage, Alaska.
- In the spring of 1990, Robert Hansen was moved from the Lemon Creek Prison in Juneau to the maximum-security facility at Spring Creek in Seward, about 120 miles southwest of Anchorage. It was discovered that Hansen was collecting materials - including aeronautical maps - that indicated he was planning to try to escape from Lemon Creek.
- John Cusack portrayed Hansen, in the film 'The Frozen Ground' (2013), opposite Nicolas Cage as Sergeant Jack Halcombe (a character based on Glenn Flothe) and Vanessa Hudgens as victim Cindy Paulson.

Keith Hunter Jespersen

Date of birth: April 6, 1955

Aliases/Nicknames: The Happy Face Killer

Characteristics: Rape

Number of victims: 8+

Date of murders: 1990 - 1995

Date of arrest: March 30, 1995

Murder method: Strangulation

Known victims: Taunja Bennett, 23; Claudia; Cynthia Lynn Rose, 32; Laurie Ann Pentland, 26; Angela Surbrize, 21; Julie Ann Winningham, 41; others unidentified

Crime location: Nebraska, California, Florida, Washington, Oregon, Wyoming

Status: Sentenced to life imprisonment without parole.

Background

Like many other killers, Jespersen grew up with an alcoholic father who was domineering, as well as a violent grandfather. He was one of five children born to Leslie and Gladys Jespersen in Chilliwack, British Columbia. Jespersen was very big for his age, and was teased a lot by other children, leading to him becoming a rather lonely young boy.

Jespersen was like an outcast within his own family, and he was treated differently than his siblings. After the family moved to Washington, the bullying continued, and his brothers were often the ringleaders, nicknaming him 'Ig' or 'Igor' because he was so tall.

Jespersen was known to torture and kill animals, which should have indicated serious trouble ahead. He would later state that he enjoyed watching animals kill each other, and then got satisfaction from killing then himself. He claimed he would fantasize what it would be like to do the same thing to a person. He often got into trouble as a youth, and twice he was stopped while trying to kill children who he felt had crossed him.

One of these boys was his friend Martin, one of the few boys who associated with Jespersen. Martin would often do things that would be blamed on Jespersen, and he would get punished for things he hadn't done. He attacked Martin, beating him violently until he was stopped by his father. He claimed later that he fully intended to kill Martin. About a year later, Jespersen tried to drown another boy while they were swimming. He tried to do it again later at a public pool until the lifeguard stopped him.

Despite these incidences, Jespersen managed to graduate from high school. He got a job driving trucks, and eventually married and had three children. Fifteen years into his marriage, Jespersen and his wife divorced. He had

also suffered an injury, which prevented him from following his dream of becoming a Royal Canadian Mounted Policeman. By the time Jespersen was 35 years old, he stood 6'7.5" and weighed around 240 pounds. He returned to truck driving and before long, started to act on his fantasies and began killing.

Murders

Jespersion's first known victim was Taunja Bennett. He met her at a bar on January 23, 1990, in Portland, Oregon, and invited her back to his house. After participating in sexual activity, they had an argument, and Jespersen beat her then strangled her. He created an alibi by going back out and having some drinks, and talking to people. Then he went back and disposed of Bennett's body.

There was a substantial gap between the first murder and the next. The body of an unidentified woman was found on August 30, 1992, near Blythe in California. The woman had been raped then strangled to death. Although this victim has never been identified, Jespersen later stated her name was Claudia.

In September 1992, the body of Cynthia Lyn Rose was found in Turlock. Jespersen claimed she was a prostitute who had entered his truck uninvited while he was asleep in it. The body of another prostitute was found in November, 1992. Laurie Ann Pentland, of Salem, had allegedly tried to double charge Jespersen for sexual services, and when she threatened to report it to the police, he strangled her to death.

More than six months later, the body of another unidentified woman was found in June, 1993, in Santa Nella, California. According to Jespersen, her name was either Cindy or Carla. In September 1994, the body of yet another unidentified woman was found in Crestview, Florida, and Jespersen later claimed her name had been Susanne.

Jespersion was asked by Angela Surbrize in January 1995 for a ride to Indiana from Spokane, Washington. He agreed, and about a week into the journey, she started to nag Jespersen, telling him to speed up so she could

see her boyfriend. Instead Jesperson raped her then strangled her, before tying her to the undercarriage of his truck, facing down. He dragged her down the road to remove her face, and destroy any fingerprints.

The only personal murder was that of his girlfriend, Julie Ann Winningham. Jesperson got it into his head that she only wanted him for his money, so on March 10, 1995, he strangled her to death. This was the murder that alerted police to Jesperson, because she had been in a relationship with him before her death.

Timeline of known murders:

January 23, 1990 - Taunja Bennett, 23

August 30, 1992 - Claudia (Jane Doe)

September, 1992 - Cynthia Lyn Rose, 32

November, 1992 - Laurie Ann Pentland, 26

June, 1993 - 'Carla' or 'Cindy' (Jane Doe)

September, 1994 - 'Susanne' (Jane Doe)

January, 1995 - Angela Surbrize, 21

March 10, 1995 - Julie Ann Winningham, 41

Arrest and Trial

Jespersion was brought in for questioning after Winningham's death, but he wouldn't answer any questions and they had no grounds to formally arrest him for the murder. He was released without charge, and over the next several days, Jespersen was certain he was going to be arrested in a matter of time.

Jespersion decided to turn himself in to the police in the hope that it would help when it came to sentencing. He was arrested on March 30, 1995. During his interviews, Jespersen began to talk about the details of not only Winningham's murder, but of several others he claimed to have committed. Later, he changed his story and said he was innocent. However, in a letter he had written his brother he admitted killing eight people.

Despite eventually claimed to have killed around 160 women, investigators were only able to link him to eight. A number of trials commenced, as the murders had been in several states, so each case was filed in the relevant location.

Just before Jespersen was about to go on trial for the murder on Winningham, he pleaded guilty in October 1995. He was subsequently sentenced to life imprisonment. He was then transferred to Oregon and on November 2, 1995, he entered a no contest plea for the murder of Taunja Bennett. Again he was sentenced to life imprisonment, this time with a minimum period of 30 years before he could apply for parole.

While in prison in Oregon, a case was being put together for the murder of Laurie Ann Pentland. Once investigators discovered Jespersen was the 'Happy Face Killer', they were able to link him to the death of Pentland. Letters had been written by Jespersen after the murder of Pentland claiming

responsibility for the killing and they were signed the Happy Face Killer. He was convicted of the murder and sentenced to life again with a 30-year minimum period.

An extradition order was secured by the state of Wyoming to put Jesperson on trial for the murder of Angela Surbrize. Jesperson frustrated the authorities by threatening to change his story about where he had actually killed her, because if she hadn't been murdered in Wyoming, the costly court process would be invalid. Eventually a deal was made and he pleaded guilty to Surbrize's murder with the agreement that prosecutors in Laramie County would not seek the death penalty.

On June 3, 1998, Jesperson received a life sentence for the murder of Surbrize. It is still possible for other charges and trials to take place for the many other murders he is yet to be tried for.

Outcome

One important outcome of Jespersen being convicted of the murder of Taunja Bennett was the release of two people who had previously been convicted of the crime. Laverne Pavlinac was tired of being in the long abusive relationship she had been in with John Sosnovske. Thinking it would be a good way to get rid of him, she went to the detectives and claimed Sosnovske had forced her to help him with the rape and murder of Bennett.

This backfired on Pavlinac, as both her and Sosnovske were charged and convicted in February 1991. Sosnovske remarkably plead guilty, in an effort to avoid being found guilty and receiving the death penalty. He was sentenced to life imprisonment, and Pavlinac received ten years. Although she was quick to admit she had made the whole story up, nobody paid her any attention.

Four years later, on November 27, 1995, both Pavlinac and Sosnovske were released because Jespersen and his attorney provided his confession. To prove they were innocent, Jespersen informed the detectives where they could find Bennett's purse - information only the killer would know.

Trivia

Quotes by Jesperson:

- “It was their fate to die by my hands, like a car accident or illness.”
- "Look over your shoulder. I'm closer than you think."

Delfina and María de Jesús González

Date of birth: Delfina - 1912; Maria - unknown

Aliases/Nicknames: Las Poquianchis

Characteristics: Ran a brothel in Mexico

Number of victims: 91+

Date of murders: 1950s - 1963

Date of arrest: January 14, 1964

Murder method: Unknown

Known victims: Unnamed prostitutes, fetuses, male clients

Crime location: San Francisco del Rincón, Guanajuato, Mexico

Status: Both sentenced to 40 years. Delfina died in prison from an accident, and Maria was later released, date unknown.

Background

Sisters Delfina, Maria de Jesus, Maria Luisa and Carmen, were all born into poverty in El Salto do Juanacatlan, Jalisco. Their father was an authoritative and abusive beast, who was also a member of the Rural Police. His job was to ride through town and make sure it was all okay. He liked to abuse his power, and during an argument he once shot and killed a man. If his daughters did anything he didn't approve of, such as wear makeup, he would lock them in the jail to teach them a lesson.

By shooting the man, their father gained a lot of enemies, so his wife and daughters left and moved to San Francisco del Rincon, otherwise known as San Pancho. The sisters grew up fearful of poverty, so as they became young adults, they opened up a few businesses. They opened a saloon, which provided food for the table if nothing else.

They soon decided they could make more money out of prostitution, and would bribe the local officials to turn a blind eye. Before long they had opened up a string of brothels in San Francisco del Rincon, Leon, Purisima del Rincon, San Juan de los Lagos, El Salto, San Juan del Rio and Jalisco.

Sisters Delfina, Maria de Jesus and Carmen operated the brothels in Jalisco and Guanajuato, while Maria Luisa ran the brothel near the border of Mexico. Between them, they also bought a bar in Lagos, Jalisco, and through the previous owner they inherited the nickname 'Las Poquianchis' which they despised.

Pretty young girls were sought out throughout the countryside and they would be told they could provide them with jobs such as being maids or waitresses. The young girls, dreaming of a better life in the bigger cities, would eagerly accept, not knowing what they were really getting in to.

They would be put to work immediately as whores, except for those who were virgins - they were saved for the wealthiest clients. Aside from the debauchery, there was much more going on behind the walls of these brothels. By the time the truth came out, there would be an estimated 91 or more skeletons in the ground, some of which belonged to the unborn fetuses of girls who got pregnant.

Murders

The sisters inflicted horrific abuse, brutality and murder, on the multitudes of young girls they were forcing to work for them as prostitutes. If a girl became sick, she was often starved or the other girls would be forced to beat her to death with objects like heavy logs and sticks. The bodies would either be buried in a mass grave or burnt until they were ashes.

Many of the prostitution clients, who were wealthy, were also murdered so they could be robbed. Their bodies often ended up in the same mass graves along with the dead prostitutes and their aborted babies.

After the police shot Delfina's son Ramon Torres (El Tepo), to death in 1963, their mother ordered them to be killed. Hermenegildo Zuniga was the hitman and he did what he was told, and killed the officers who had been involved in Ramon's death.

Arrest and Trial

One of the prostitutes at Loma del Angel managed to escape in January 1964, and fled to the police. Fortunately, the officers she talked to were not the corrupt men on the payroll of the sisters. A search warrant was obtained and the sisters were arrested on January 14, 1964, during a raid at the Loma del Angel ranch.

The sisters, all dressed in mourning black for their brother, were paraded through the ranch while people outside called for them to be lynched. A dozen women were found at the ranch in an emaciated and filthy state, and they didn't hesitate to point out areas in the ground to police where bodies were buried.

The decomposed bodies and skeletal remains of at least 91 men, women, and fetuses were found buried in mass graves. Because the public were adamant the sisters needed to be hanged, they were sent to another jail further away. Sister Maria Luisa turned herself in a week later, terrified the people were going to lynch her, and thought she would at least be protected in jail. She was subsequently arrested.

The trial was described as chaotic, with insults being shouted back and forth across the courtroom. Details of the sisters forcing the prostitutes working for them to engage in sexual acts with animals, torture of other girls and clients, and killing when instructed, enraged and disgusted those in the room. They were also charged with corruption, for bribing the authorities. The trial was over quite quickly, and the three sisters were each sentenced to serve 40 years in prison.

Outcome

The youngest sister, Maria de Jesus Gonzalez Valenzuela, was the only sibling to be released from prison. The date of her release is unknown, but rumors were rife that she met a 64-year-old man while in prison and they married following their release from prison. They allegedly died of old age sometime during the 1990s.

Trivia

- Their father, Isidro Torres, was abusive and expected his children to follow a rigid set of rules; ironically, he was also part of the local grass-roots police force that patrolled the remote area of Mexico on horseback.
- He often locked the sisters in jail as punishment for wearing sexy clothing or makeup.

Jack the Ripper

Date of birth: Unknown

Aliases/Nicknames: The Whitechapel Murderer, Leather Apron

Characteristics: Vivisection, Mutilation

Number of victims: 5+

Date of murders: 1888 - 1891

Date of arrest: Never identified, never apprehended

Murder method: Strangulation, slashing

Known victims: Mary Ann Nichols; Annie Chapman; Elizabeth Stride;
Catherine Eddowes; Mary Jane Kelly

Crime location: Whitechapel, London, England

Status: Never identified

Background

Perhaps the most famous murder mystery of all time, Jack the Ripper wrought terror on the Whitechapel district of London in the late 1800's. This area of London was more or less a red light district, where prostitutes were commonly seen walking the streets at night, along with other undesirables, such as gangsters, criminals and drug addicts.

It was a time when poverty was rife, and people would do anything for a crust of bread or a pint of beer. At its lowest point it was estimated there was up to 1,200 prostitutes actively selling their bodies, and in some respects their souls, on the cobbled streets of Whitechapel. They were easy targets for depraved assailants, but none so worse than Jack the Ripper.

Murders

When the body of Mary Ann “Polly” Nichols was found on August 31, 1888, her body showed multiple injuries and mutilations. Her throat had been slashed twice, and her abdomen had received several cuts, and was partially ripped open.

Annie Chapman was killed on September 8, 1888. Her throat had been slashed twice, and she had been disemboweled. Her intestines were thrown over her shoulder. Her uterus, parts of her bladder and vagina, were all removed and taken away from the scene by the killer.

The night of September 30, 1888, saw two women brutally and savagely killed. One of the victims, Elizabeth Stride, hadn't been mutilated very much, and her throat had only been slashed once. However, the other victim, Catherine Eddowes, suffered a more horrific attack postmortem. Her throat had been slashed along with her abdomen, and she was missing a kidney and an earlobe.

Mary Jane Kelly was murdered on November 9, 1888. Her throat had been slashed so severely that it was cut down to her spine. Her body was so horribly mutilated that it was difficult to identify who she was. Her heart had been taken out of her body and removed from the scene by the killer.

There were a number of similar murders that took place between 1888 and 1891, and they are widely believed to be the work of the Ripper but have yet to be categorically proven to be his victims. The first of these murders took place on April 2, 1888, when the body of Emma Elizabeth Smith was found. She had been sexually assaulted with a blunt instrument and robbed of her personal effects. Although she wasn't killed straight away, she did fall into a coma and died two days later.

Martha Tabram was found in the George Yard Buildings on August 6, 1888. She had been stabbed 39 times in the neck and body. Then on December 20, 1888, Rose Mylett was found having been strangled to death.

The year 1889 was quiet until July 17, The body of Alice McKenzie was found with her throat slashed and her abdomen cut. On September 10, a torso was found in Pinchin Street, and because no other body parts were found, the identity remained unknown. Finally, Frances Coles was killed on February 13, 1891, in Swallow Gardens. Her throat had been slashed twice.

Timeline of murders:

August 31, 1888 - Mary Ann "Polly" Nichols, 42 - Buck's Row

September 8, 1888 - Annie Chapman, 47 - 29 Hanbury Street, Spitalfields

September 30, 1888 - Elizabeth Stride, 44 - Dutfield's Yard

September 30, 1888 - Catherine Eddowes, 46 - Mitre Square, London

November 9, 1888 - Mary Jane Kelly, 24 - 13 Miller's Court, Dorset Street

Other suspected murders:

April 2, 1888 - Emma Elizabeth Smith, 45 - Osborn Street

August 6, 1888 - Martha Tabram, 39 - George Yard Buildings, George Yard

December 20, 1888 - Rose Mylett, 29 - Clarke's Yard

July 17, 1889 - Alice McKenzie - Castle Alley

September 10, 1889 - "The Pinchin Street torso" - Pinchin Street

February 13, 1891 - Frances Coles - Swallow Gardens

Suspects

George Chapman:

Real name was Seweryn Klosowski

Barber

Had fatally poisoned three women

David Cohen:

A Jewish cobbler

Aaron Kosminski:

A Polish Jewish butcher

Was put in an insane asylum in 1891, after the killings ended

Was supposedly linked to the Ripper crimes in September 2014 through DNA evidence extracted from a shawl found near Catherine Eddowes

Montague John Druitt:

A schoolmaster and barrister

Committed suicide after the death of Mary Jane Kelly

Prince Edward Albert Victor, Duke of Clarence and Avondale:

The grandson of Queen Victoria

Heir to the throne

Walter Sickert:

A German-born painter

Believed to be the Ripper due to his painting of the "Ripper's Room"

John Pizer:

A Jewish cobbler

James Maybrick:

Alleged he was the author of the "Story of Jack the Ripper"

Unnamed female, a.k.a. "Jill the Ripper":

A widely-speculated theory

The lead inspector on the Ripper case, Frederick Abberline, was the first of the investigating officers to suggest that Jack may in fact be a Jill

Mary Pearcey:

Believed to be "Jill the Ripper" by many

Convicted of the murder of her husband's former lover and baby

Was hanged in 1889

Doctor William Gull:

Physician to Queen Victoria and the British royal family

Carl Feigenbaum:

German merchant sailor

Was convicted of an unrelated murder and executed in New York in 1894

Lewis Carroll:

Author of Alice in Wonderland

Has been proposed as a suspect based on possible anagrams in his work

The theory is not taken seriously

An unidentified American serial killer (dubbed the Servant Girl Annihilator) has been suggested by some as a being connected to the Ripper.

Trivia

From a letter sent by Jack the Ripper:

“I am down on whores and I shant quit ripping them till I do get buckled.”

- Derek Brown, a rapist who had an obsession with serial killers, attempted to copy the MO of the Ripper in the same Whitechapel area of the historic murders. He killed two women and butchered them and became known as the Jack the Ripper Killer.

Milton Johnson

Date of birth: May 15, 1950

Aliases/Nicknames: The Weekend Murderer

Characteristics: Rape, Random Killings

Number of victims: 10+

Date of murders: June - August 1983

Date of arrest: March 9, 1984

Murder method: Stabbing, shooting

Known victims: Anthony Hackett, 19; Marilyn Baers, 45; Barbara Dunbar, 38; Pamela Ryan, 29; Agnes Ryan, 75; George Kiehl, 24; Cathleen Norwood, 25; Richard Paulin, 32; Officer Denis Foley, 50; Officer Steven Mayer, 22

Crime location: Cook and Will Counties, Illinois

Status: Sentenced to death, awaiting execution.

Background

If there was ever a case where early parole is granted and it shouldn't be, it is the case of serial killer Milton Johnson. When Johnson was nineteen, he was charged and convicted of the brutal rape and torture of a woman in Joliet. During the rape, Johnson had burned his victim with a cigarette lighter, and the sentence he received was 25-35 years in prison. He was also convicted of burglary, and another term of 5 to 10 years was added on, to be served consecutively.

However, Johnson was released early, far earlier than he should have been, on March 10, 1983. Even with the consideration of good behavior, he still should have been incarcerated until 1986. Authorities would later regret their decision to release Johnson, as he went on to commit at least ten murders.

Murders

On July 16, 1983, Johnson committed his first known murders. Officers Foley and Mayer had stopped to help what they thought was a driver who needed help. Johnson's pickup truck was blocking part of the road, and the front bumper was against another parked car. As the officers drove close to the driver, Johnson, he called out that they needed a jump start.

As they got out of their vehicle to help, both officers were shot. Mayer died almost straight away, and Foley had a serious wound to his throat. As another car came around the corner and slowed down, Johnson fired at them as well, killing the driver and hitting the passenger six times. The car rolled down the road and stopped, and the passenger got out and went looking for assistance.

Meanwhile, other police officers were desperately trying to find the two missing officers. It wasn't until a farmer called the police reporting a lot of noise behind his buildings including a siren that they were able to locate them. As well as the two police officers who had been shot, in the car in front of the pickup were the bodies of Richard Paulin and Cathleen Norwood.

In the early hours of July 17, Anthony Hackett and his girlfriend Patricia Payne were having a sleep in Hackett's car after traveling a long distance. A tap on the window woke them up, and they were instantly fired upon with multiple gunshots. Hackett was killed, and Johnson ordered Payne to get in his truck. As they were driving down the road, Johnson sexually assaulted Payne, and then raped her after stopping the truck. They started moving again, and ten minutes later, he pulled over, stabbed Payne in the chest and pushed her out of the truck.

On August 20, Johnson entered a store owned by Marilyn Baers and went on a rampage, shooting and stabbing the four people in the store. Along with Marilyn, her customers Agnes Ryan, Pamela Ryan and Barbara Dunbar, were killed. Johnson had stolen their purses and they were dumped nearby, but still had the money inside them. So it's unclear as to why he took them if he wasn't going to keep the money.

Timeline of known murders:

July 16, 1983 - Officer Denis Foley, 50

July 16, 1983 - Officer Steven Mayer, 22

July 16, 1983 - Cathleen Norwood, 25

July 16, 1983 - Richard Paulin, 32

July 16, 1983 - George Kiehl, 24

July 17, 1983 - Anthony Hackett, 19

August 20, 1983 - Marilyn Baers, 45

August 20, 1983 - Barbara Dunbar, 38

August 20, 1983 - Pamela Ryan, 29

August 20, 1983 - Agnes Ryan, 75

Arrest and Trial

A piece of eyewitness evidence that was reported to the Will County sheriff's office in August 1983 was not handed over to the State Police until February 1984. Ann Shoemaker had reported seeing a pickup truck playing a 'cat and mouse' game with her while she was driving, in July 1983, and she was able to get the license plate number. The state police received the number on March 6, 1984, and they traced it to Sam Myers, the stepfather of Johnson.

The police made contact with Myers and he agreed to sign a consent form giving them permission to search the truck. They found hair, a steak knife, bloodstains, fibers and a receipt for a stuffed toy - the same toy Hackett had bought the day he died. A search warrant was then obtained to search Myer's home, where Johnson also lived. Inside they found cartridges from a .357 Magnum.

The same day the police were searching the house, Payne had been brought in to look at mugshots, in the hope she could identify the man who had shot her and Hackett. She looked at five photographs and picked out Johnson, but her identification wasn't strong. So, she was brought in again on March 9 for a lineup. This time, the people in the lineup were instructed to say the commands the killer had given her on that night. She positively identified Johnson this time with no question.

The trial was eventually set for July 26, 1984. Johnson was found guilty of murdering Hackett, and convicted of attempted murder, rape, sexual assault and kidnapping of Payne. He was sentenced to death for the murder and 40 years for the attack on Payne.

Outcome

Johnson and his legal team filed a petition alleging he had received ineffective assistance of counsel. The court held that Johnson's claims of ineffective assistance had been properly dismissed. In other words, his sentence remained as initially imposed. Johnson currently sits on death row awaiting his execution date.

Trivia

- Johnson became penpals with an elderly woman, who used to visit him in prison once a month until her age made it impossible.

John Joubert

Date of birth: July 2, 1963

Aliases/Nicknames: The Nebraska Boy Snatcher, the Woolford Slasher

Characteristics: Kidnapping, Sadism, Biting

Number of victims: 3+

Date of murders: August 22, 1982 - December 2, 1983

Date of arrest: January 12, 1984

Murder method: Stabbing

Known victims: Richard Stetson, 11; Danny Joe Eberle, 13; Christopher Walden, 12

Crime location: Maine, Nebraska

Status: Executed by electric chair, July 17, 1996.

Background

Born in Massachusetts in 1963, Joubert was considered an intelligent child, one who began reading at just three years old, and by five years of age, was already borrowing books from the local library. From the age of six, he lived with his mother after his parents divorced. He grew to resent his mother later in life, considering her controlling, and she would not allow him to have contact with his father.

Joubert was small, and suffered at the hands of bullies because of his size, up until he attended high school. Little did his peers know that Joubert had been experiencing sadistic and violent fantasies since he was six. One of these fantasies involved his babysitter, and he would imagine killing her and indulging in cannibalism. He later told a psychiatrist that he had no bad feelings towards the babysitter, just that she was someone he could murder.

When Joubert was twelve years old, he confessed that he was having homosexual thoughts, and this led to even more bullying. At thirteen, he took a pencil and stabbed a young girl with it, and when she cried out in pain, he found it sexually stimulating. The following day, he slashed at a girl with a razor blade as he rode past her on his bike.

From then onwards, Joubert continued to attack children his own age and those younger, for the thrill of it. When he was sixteen, he attacked an eight-year-old boy, throttling him almost to death. The violence he exhibited was getting stronger and stronger each time he attacked, but so far he had managed to avoid being caught. It was no surprise that Joubert would become a killer, it was just a matter of when.

Murders

Richard Stetson went for a run on August 22, 1982, along the Back Cove Trail in Portland, Maine. His body was discovered the following day alongside the freeway. He had been stabbed and strangled, and there were bite marks on his body. Although a suspect was initially arrested for killing the young boy, his teeth didn't match the bite marks so he was eventually released without being charged.

On September 18, 1983, Danny Joe Eberle went missing while delivering newspapers in Bellevue, Nebraska. His body was found three days later, 4 miles away from where his bicycle had been left. He was dressed only in his underwear, and his hands and feet were bound. Surgical tape had been used to tape his mouth, and he had been stabbed nine times.

Joubert's third victim disappeared in Papillion, Nebraska, on December 2, 1983. Christopher Walden had been walking when Joubert ordered him into his vehicle with the threat of a knife. He instructed Walden to take off his clothes, which he did, leaving his underwear on. Walden refused to lie down, which angered Joubert, and during a struggle he stabbed the boy. He cut Walden's throat, so deeply that his head was almost removed from his body. Two days later, his body was found 5 miles away from town.

Timeline of known murders:

August 22, 1982 - Richard Stetson, 11

September 18, 1983 - Danny Joe Eberle, 13

December 2, 1983 - Christopher Walden, 12

Arrest and Trial

A teacher reported to police on January 11, 1984, that she had seen a man driving around suspiciously, and when the driver saw her write down his license plate, he stopped and threatened her before driving off. Police checked the license plate and found the vehicle was a rental and was in the possession of Joubert. His personal car, which matched witness reports from the abductions, was in the shop for repairs.

The police obtained a search warrant for his home, and during the search, they found the same type of rope that had been used to bind two of the victims. Joubert was brought in for questioning, and confessed to being responsible for killing Eberle and Walden, and was therefore charged for the murders.

Initially Joubert plead not guilty, but then changed his plea to guilty. He was assessed on several occasions by psychiatrists, one of who diagnosed him as having an obsessive-compulsive disorder, sadistic tendencies, and a schizoid personality disorder. But, he had not been psychotic when he committed the crimes.

Joubert was found guilty of the two murders and sentenced to death. Later he was also convicted of killing Stetson in Maine and received a sentence of life imprisonment for that murder.

Outcome

Joubert was executed by the electric chair on July 17, 1996, in Nebraska. His execution led to an appeal to the Nebraska Supreme Court to have the electric chair abolished as a 'cruel and unusual' punishment method, due to the state of Joubert's body after his death. He had received a brain blister 4 inches in size on the top of his head as well as blisters on both sides of his scalp above his ears.

Trivia

- Final statement before execution - "I do not know if my death will change anything or if it will bring anyone any peace."

Quote by Joubert:

- "It was the power and the domination and seeing the fear. That was more exciting than actually causing the harm."

Theodore Kaczynski

Date of birth: May 22, 1942

Aliases/Nicknames: The Unabomber

Characteristics: Domestic Terrorism, Mail Bombs

Number of victims: 3

Date of murders: 1985, 1994, 1995

Date of arrest: April 3, 1996

Murder method: Explosive Devices - Bombs

Known victims: Hugh Scrutton, 38; Thomas J. Mosser, 50; Gilbert P. Murray

Crime location: California, New Jersey

Status: Sentenced to life imprisonment without parole.

Background

Some may disagree that Ted Kaczynski was a true serial killer, because his attacks were driven by political thoughts rather than homicidal.

Nevertheless, he does meet the definition of serial killer because of the number of victims, and the manner in which the killings were carried out over a period of time.

Kaczynski was exceptionally good at mathematics at a very young age, and was considered a child prodigy in the subject. He went from 5th grade to 7th, skipping the 6th grade altogether because of his high level of intelligence, and testing determined he had an IQ of 167. But, because he was put up a grade, he found that the older children bullied him and he didn't really fit in.

Harvard University accepted Kaczynski when he was just 16 years old, and in 1962, he graduated. He then went on to gain a Ph.D. in mathematics at the University of Michigan. He began teaching at the University of California, but he wasn't comfortable in front of the students, and in 1969 he resigned from his position.

He moved back with his parents in 1971, and built a cabin for himself in Montana. With financial help from his family, and by undertaking odd jobs, Kaczynski was able to support himself. He began studying survival skills, including identification of edible plants in the wild and how to track animals. But, over a period of time he came to realize that the modern urbanization would prevent him from continuing in this way of life. It's believed that Kaczynski decided to fight back when one of his favorite wilderness places had been destroyed to make a new road.

Murders

In 1985, Hugh Scrutton was at his computer store in Sacramento when a nail and splinter bomb exploded in the car park outside. He was killed in the blast. A similar bomb was detonated at another computer store on February 20, 1987, but despite horrific injuries, there were no deaths in that blast.

The next attack occurred in 1993. A bomb was mailed to David Gelernter, who was working as a computer science professor at Yale. Gelernter was seriously injured, but he survived. Charles Epstein who worked at the University of California, received a bomb in the mail the same weekend, and lost several fingers when it exploded.

Thomas J. Mosser was killed in 1994, after a bomb arrived in the mail at his home in New Jersey. Then in 1995, Gilbert Brent Murray was killed by a bomb mailed to his office, at the California Forestry Association. The bomb was actually addressed to William Dennison, who Murray had replaced when he retired.

Kaczynski was responsible for the building and distribution of 16 bombs. Fortunately, despite that number of explosive devices, only three were killed and 23 injured.

Arrest and Trial

After a thorough investigation into the bombings, the FBI identified and arrested Kaczynski on April 3, 1996. When they searched his cabin, they discovered a lot of components used in the construction of the bombs, and a journal with thousands of pages describing the bombings, the bombs and experiments in bomb making Kaczynski had undertaken. They also found a live bomb that was all ready to be sent out in the mail.

When Kaczynski went on trial for the three murders, he was found guilty and convicted. He received a life sentence without parole.

Outcome

During the investigation of Kaczynski, he was at one point considered a possible suspect for the Zodiac Killer crimes. He had been living in the San Francisco Bay area during the period that the killings occurred, and like Kaczynski, the Zodiac Killer also had an interest in bombs and codes. Both had also written letters to newspapers making demands and threatening more acts of violence. However, it was decided there was not enough convincing evidence of Kaczynski being the Zodiac Killer and he was not pursued any further.

Trivia

- While incarcerated at the maximum security facility in Florence, Colorado, Kaczynski developed a friendship with two other notorious bombers - Timothy McVeigh, the Oklahoma bomber, and Ramzi Yousef, who bombed the World Trade Center in 1993.

Patrick Kearney

Date of birth: September 24, 1939

Aliases/Nicknames: The Freeway Killer, The Trash Bag Killer

Characteristics: Rape, Mutilation, Homosexual Victims, Children, Necrophilia

Number of victims: 35+

Date of murders: 1965 - 1977

Date of arrest: July 1, 1977

Murder method: Shooting, asphyxiation

Known victims: Mike, 18; George; John Demchik, 13; James Barwick, 17; Ronald Smith Jr., 5; Albert Rivera, 21; Larry Walters, 20; Kenneth Buchanan, 17; Oliver Molitor, 13; Larry Arnedariz, 15; Michael McGhee, 13; John Woods, 23; Larry Epsy, 17; Wilfred Faherty, 20; Randall Moore; Robert Benniefiel, 17; David Allen, 27; Mark Orach, 20; Timothy Ingham, 19; Nicholas Hernandez-Jimenez, 28; Arturo Marquez, 24; John LaMay, 17; Merle Chance, 8; others unidentified

Crime location: California

Status: Sentenced to life imprisonment without parole.

Background

Kearney enjoyed a normal, stable childhood with his family in California, but was subjected to bullying when he was young. By the time he was a teenager, he was already fantasizing about committing murders. As an adult, he lived in Texas for a while before moving back to California. An aircraft engineer, Kearney was also prolific at picking up gay men, often using his fluent Spanish skills to facilitate the pickup.

When he moved to Redondo Beach, he met David Hill, and they began a relationship. They would have fights and arguments, during which time Kearney would go out for a long drive. But he wasn't doing this to calm down the fighting; he was actually picking up other men from bars or the side of the road as they hitchhiked.

Murders

The first murder attributed to Kearney was that of an unidentified man in 1962. Kearney had taken him on the back of his motorcycle to a secluded spot and shot him in the head. He then performed acts of necrophilia with the corpse. Over the next several years, he continued to kill.

Most of the victims Kearney killed were either picked up from gay bars or had been hitchhikers. They were almost always shot in the temple with a .22-caliber pistol, and they were often distracted or asleep when they were killed. After engaging in necrophilia, the bodies would be taken back to Kearney's home where they would be sodomized with a craft knife.

Kearney used a hacksaw to dismember the bodies, sometimes taking out the bullets lodged in their heads, then would put the body parts in trash bags and dump them in landfills, canyons or beside the freeways. Sometimes Kearney drained the blood from his victims to remove the odor of decomposition and death, and even washed the body parts to remove any potential fingerprints.

Timeline of known murders:

Spring, 1962 - Unnamed man, 19

1962 - Unnamed man, 16

1962 - Mike, 18 (surname unrevealed)

1965- Unnamed man

December 1967 - George (surname unrevealed)

June 21, 1971 - John Demchik, 13

September 22, 1973 - James Barwick, 17
August 24, 1974 - Ronald Dean Smith, Jr., 5
April 13, 1975 - Albert Rivera, 21
November 10, 1975 - Larry Gene Walters, 20
March 3, 1976 - Kenneth Eugene Buchanan, 17
March 21, 1976 - Oliver Peter Molitor, 13
April 19, 1976 - Larry Arnedariz, 15
June 16, 1976 - Michael Craig McGhee, 13
June 20, 1976 - John Woods, 23
August 23, 1976 - Larry Epsy, 17
August 28, 1976 - Wilfred Lawrence Faherty, 20
August 1976 - Randall Lawrence Moore
Fall, 1976 - Robert Benniefiel, 17
Fall, 1976 - David Allen, 27
October 1976 - Mark Andrew Orach, 20
November 15-24, 1976 - Timothy B. Ingham, 19
January 23, 1977 - Nicholas "Nicky" Hernandez-Jimenez, 28
February 1977 - Arturo Romos Marquez, 24
March 13, 1977 - John Otis LaMay, 17
April 6, 1977 - Merle Chance, 8

Arrest and Trial

One of the victims had last been seen with Kearney and Hill, and when they became aware of the police being interested in them, they fled to El Paso, Texas. But they ended up turning themselves in after the urging of their families. They were both arrested on July 1, 1977, but Hill was released soon after when investigators worked out he hadn't been involved in the murders.

During his interrogation, Kearney confessed to killing 38 victims, but police were only able to charge him with 21 counts. At trial Kearney pleaded guilty to all charges, which prevented him from receiving the death penalty. Instead he was sentenced to life without parole.

Outcome

Investigators believe that not only is Kearney most likely responsible for the 38 murders he confessed to, he could be responsible for even more. In the meantime, Kearney is incarcerated at California State Prison, where he will live out the rest of his days.

Edmund Kemper

Date of birth: December 18, 1948

Aliases/Nicknames: The Co-ed Killer, The Co-ed Butcher

Characteristics: Necrophilia, Irrumatio, Dismemberment

Number of victims: 10

Date of murders: 1964, 1972 - 1973

Date of arrest: April 24, 1973

Murder method: Shooting, striking with a hammer, strangulation

Known victims: Edmund Kemper Sr., 72 (grandfather); Maude Kemper, 66 (grandmother); Mary Pesce, 18; Anita Luchessa, 18; Aiko Koo, 15; Cindy Schall, 19; Rosalind Thorpe, 24; Allison Liu, 23; Clarnell Strandberg, 52 (mother); Sara Hallett, 59

Crime location: California

Status: Sentenced to life imprisonment with the possibility of parole.

Background

Kemper was the middle child between two sisters, and his parents Edmund Jr. and Clarnell later separated in 1957, which had a deep impact on Kemper as he was so close to his father. His mother took the children and moved to Helena, in Montana, far away from their father. Kemper was very bright and intelligent, and was later determined to have an IQ of 145, when tested as an adult. However, he was showing sociopathic traits at a very young age.

Kemper would play with his sisters' dolls, but not in the way most young boys play with dolls. He would use them to enact murderous acts and sexual rituals that were bizarre, and took great delight in pulling off the heads of the dolls. He was also showing pyromania signs at the same time.

Before long, Kemper shifted his focus from the inanimate dolls to small animals in his neighborhood, especially cats. He would torture them before killing them, and sometimes he would bury them alive. One such incident involved digging the buried cat up again, cutting off its head then placing the head on top of a pole. Another favorite game was to pretend he was being electrocuted by an electric chair.

Kemper's mother, described as emotionally abusive, started locking prepubescent Kemper in the basement, as she seemed convinced he might rape his youngest sister. When he was thirteen, Kemper ran away and made his way to California to see his father. However, his father had remarried and seemed devoted to his new stepson, and Kemper was returned to his mother, heartbroken.

By the time Kemper was 14, he already stood 6 foot 4 inches tall, and because his mother struggled to manage him, he was sent to live with his

grandparents. Edmund Sr. and Maude Kemper lived on a ranch in North Fork, California, and it was thought that this would be a good environment for Kemper. But they were very wrong. Kemper and his grandmother didn't get along very well, and he was continuously bullied at school, despite his huge build. Everything came to a head on August 27, 1964.

On that August afternoon, Kemper took his rifle he had been given the previous Christmas, and shot and killed his grandmother. On his grandfather's arrival home from the store, Kemper also shot and killed him, supposedly to prevent him from having to see his wife's dead body. Then Kemper picked up the telephone and called his mother to tell her what he had done, then called the local police to report his actions. When the police arrived, Kemper was sitting on the porch waiting for them.

Following his arrest, Kemper was assessed by psychiatrists, and diagnosed with paranoid schizophrenia. He was admitted to the Atascadero State Hospital for the Criminally Insane, and behaved so well, he eventually became an assistant to his psychiatrist. Kemper was subsequently released on his 21st birthday in 1969, despite the protests of several of the hospital's psychiatrists. To make matters worse, he was put back into the care of his mother, who by now was living in Santa Cruz.

Murders

Many of the murders occurred after Kemper and his mother had an argument. He would cruise along the Pacific coast looking for suitable victims, and most often they were hitchhikers. The first two women he murdered were Mary Anne Pesce and Anita Luchessa on May 7, 1972.

They were on their way to Stanford University when Kemper offered them a ride. However, Kemper drove down a dirt road, and murdered both girls in the car. He wrapped them up in blankets and took them home. He decapitated both girls and held on to them for a while before disposing of them in a ravine. The body of Pesce was later found, but no remains of Luchessa were ever located.

On September 14, 1972, Kemper picked up 15-year-old Aiko Koo. This time he put tape over her mouth and suffocated her until she passed out. He removed her from the car and raped her before using a scarf to asphyxiate her. He took her body back to his home and dismembered it. Ironically, when he went for a meeting with court psychiatrists, during which they were very pleased with the progress he had made, Koo's head was sitting in his car.

The next murder occurred on January 8, 1973. Cindy Schall was picked up by Kemper and taken into the hills. He forced her to get into the trunk of the car and shot her. Again he took the body back to his residence, where the following morning, he had sexual intercourse with the corpse. When he dismembered the body, he removed the bullets from her head before burying it in his mother's backyard.

Rosalind Thorpe and Alice Liu were both killed by Kemper on February 5, 1973. Then on April 20, Kemper killed his last two victims - his own

mother and her friend Sara Hallett. He waited until his mother had fallen asleep then struck her in the head with a hammer before slitting her throat. He cut off her head, and then raped his mother's corpse. He cut out her tongue and tried to destroy it in the garbage disposal unit.

He then called his mother's friend Hallett and invited her over. When she arrived, he killed her and cut off her head. Then, once the mess was cleaned up, he went to bed.

Timeline of known murders:

August 27, 1964 - Edmund Kemper Sr., 72

August 27, 1964 - Maude Kemper, 66

May 7, 1972 - Mary Anne Pesce, 18

May 7, 1972 - Anita Luchessa, 18

September 14, 1972 - Aiko Koo, 15

January 8, 1973 - Cindy Schall, 19

February 5, 1973 - Rosalind Thorpe, 24

February 5, 1973 - Alice Liu, 21

April 20, 1973 - Clarnell Strandberg, 52

April 20, 1973 - Sara Hallett, 59

Arrest and Trial

After the murders of his mother and Hallett, Kemper decided to flee, and as he was driving he listened for news reports on the radio about the murders. Four days later, there had been nothing on the radio about the deaths, so he decided to call the police. At a phone booth he placed a call to officers at the Santa Cruz police department and claimed he had killed eight women.

They didn't take him seriously at first because they knew Kemper well, but after they made a few calls, they realized he was being honest. Kemper sat in his car and waited for the police to come. He was arrested on April 24, and during the interview at the station, he confessed to all of the murders he had committed.

When Kemper went on trial, he initially tried to plead insanity, but this defense failed. Instead he asked for the death penalty, and wanted to die in the electric chair, just as he had fantasized. But capital punishment had been suspended at the time so instead he received a life sentence without the possibility of parole.

Outcome

At the time Kemper was actively murdering women, the FBI behavioral sciences unit had come up with an idea to interview serial killers to get a better understanding of the type of people they are and what makes them kill. Kemper was one of the first to be interviewed, and was eventually interviewed by Robert Ressler three times. During the last interview Kemper made death threats against Ressler, but when the guards came he said he had just been joking around with him.

One of the other FBI interviewers was John Douglas, a renowned forensic profiler who along with Ressler was one of the first professional profilers for the FBI. He later said that he liked Kemper and found him open, sensitive and friendly. Kemper is still serving his life sentence.

Trivia

- Kemper's IQ was measured at 145.

Quote by Kemper:

- “When I see a pretty girl walking down the street, I think two things. One part of me wants to take her out, talk to her, be real nice and sweet and treat her right ... and the other part of me wonders what her head would look like on a stick.”
- "If I killed them, you know, they couldn't reject me as a man. It was more or less making a doll out of a human being... and carrying out my fantasies with a doll, a living human doll."

Roger Kibbe

Date of birth: 1941

Aliases/Nicknames: The I-5 Strangler

Characteristics: Rape, Kidnapping

Number of victims: 7+

Date of murders: 1977, 1986 - 1987

Date of arrest: 1987

Murder method: Strangulation

Known victims: Lou Ellen Burleigh, 21; Lora Heedrick, 20; Barbara Ann Scott, 29; Stephanie Brown, 19; Charmaine Sabrah, 26; Katherine Kelly Quinones, 25; Darcie Frackenpohl, 17

Crime location: California

Status: Sentenced to six terms of life without parole.

Background

Kibbe grew up with a domineering mother who would beat him frequently, and in his eyes, acted as though she didn't even like him. He was a known bed wetter as a youngster, and he suffered a terrible stutter, leading to constant ridicule and bullying at school. Because of this he became a loner, preferring his own company. He was an established liar who had a habit of stealing, and when he was fifteen, he was arrested for theft.

Kibbe had been seen riding his bike through a local park carrying a cardboard box and a shovel. The witness informed the police, and when they arrived at the scene, they dug up the box Kibbe had buried. Contained inside were women's clothing, including two bathing suits and a dress, which had been reported stolen from a neighborhood clothes line. Also stolen were several pairs of nylon stockings but these weren't in the box.

Suspecting a fetishist, the police interviewed numerous witnesses until they uncovered Kibbe as the culprit. He was subsequently charged with prowling and petty theft. There had been several other similar thefts over the past year, and although he initially denied being responsible, he eventually admitted it was him. Kibbe had disposed of most of the items he had stolen, but kept some, and when he handed them over to the police, they noticed the garments had been cut up with scissors.

But there was much more going on in Kibbe's mind than just theft of women's clothing. He had an active sexual fantasy life, including enjoying tying himself up with women's underwear. His behaviors and actions would today be warning signs of a psychopathy, but back then, children who showed antisocial tendencies were not studied or diagnosed.

However, Kibbe did attend sessions with a psychiatrist for a while, but this accomplished nothing. Kibbe found these sessions a nuisance, and came up with other ways to continue his disturbing behaviors in a way that they wouldn't be detected. He became very secretive.

As an adult, Kibbe somehow managed to marry a woman who was very much like his mother. His wife Harriet was mean and domineering, traits his mother had also displayed when Kibbe was a child. Harriet ruled the roost, and kept Kibbe in line, and it was later speculated that his wife's treatment of him most likely increased his anger towards women.

Murders

Kibbe would troll the south Sacramento freeways late at night looking for broken down cars with young women needing help. He would offer his assistance then kidnap the women, take them to remote areas and strangle them.

His first known murder took place on September 11, 1977. The victim, Lou Ellen Burleigh, had left home and was on her way to a job interview and disappeared. She was kidnapped by Kibbe, tied up, and taken to Lake Berryessa where he raped and killed her.

Lora Heedrick was last seen alive on April 20, 1986, in an area where drug addicts and prostitutes were known to frequent. That night, she had agreed with her boyfriend James Driggers that she would prostitute herself so they could get money for drugs. He claimed they had gotten into a car being driven by a man in his 50s, and after they dropped Driggers off at a motel, they drove off to get some drugs. But Heedrick never returned.

On July 3, 1986, Kibbe abducted Barbara Ann Scott in Pittsburg. She was raped before being killed, and her body was left at a golf course in Contra Costa County. She was Kibbe's oldest victim. Just two weeks later, on July 15, Kibbe came across a young woman, Stephanie Brown, who was broken down on the side of the freeway. He raped and killed her, and cut off her hair, which investigators later surmised was a fetish or a trophy.

Charmaine Sabrah and her mother broke down on Peltier Road and I-5 on August 17, 1986. A man stopped to offer assistance, and when the women said they wanted to get to a phone, he said he only had room in his car for one. Sabrah went with him, but was unable to contact anyone. They returned to the car and the man, later identified as Kibbe, said he would

take them home. Because Sabrah had a baby at home, she went first, but the driver never came back for her mother.

When her mother finally was able to get help from the police to get home, Sabrah wasn't there. Her body was found almost three months later at the base of the Sierra Mountains. On examination it was clear that she had been strangled with a ligature, as it was still present around her neck. Parts of her clothing had been cut out, and clumps of hair had been yanked out and twisted in the waistband of her underwear.

Katherine Kelly Quinones was abducted in Sacramento on November 5, 1986. Like the others she had been raped before being killed, and her body was disposed of at Lake Berryessa. Kibbe's final known murder was that of Darcie Frackenpohl towards the end of 1986. A runaway, she was last seen alive in an area of Sacramento popular with prostitutes. She had been strangled with a garrote, and her pantyhose had been stuffed into her mouth. Her clothing showed the typical cutting as with the other victims.

Timeline of known murders:

September 11, 1977 - Lou Ellen Burleigh, 21

April 21, 1986. - Lora Heedrick, 20

July 3, 1986 - Barbara Ann Scott, 29

July 15, 1986 - Stephanie Brown, 19

August 17, 1986 - Charmaine Sabrah, 26

November 5, 1986 - Katherine Kelly Quinones, 25

1986 - Darcie Frackenpohl, 17

Arrest and Trial

Kibbe was initially arrested after assaulting a prostitute. He had picked her up and driven around for a while before parking. Then he became violent, and she struggled against him as he tried to handcuff her. She screamed as loud as she could, and an officer, who was on patrol nearby, came to her aid and chased after Kibbe until he was caught.

While investigators were processing the assault charge, the body of Kibbe's fifth victim was found. When Kibbe's car was searched, they found rubber hair bands, scissors, wooden dowel, a vibrator and handcuffs. They also found some cord, and the detective realized it was the same as the cord and dowel found in the garrote used on Quinones.

Kibbe was given bail, and investigators continued to work on the items to see if they could be matched with the victims, all the while having him under surveillance. Finally, they found the evidence they needed, and Kibbe was arrested again and charged with first-degree murder. On May 10, 1991, he was found guilty of the murder of Frackenpohl and received 25 years to life.

On November 5, 2009, Kibbe was charged with a further six counts of murder. He agreed to a plea bargain to avoid the death penalty, and received six life sentences instead.

Outcome

Kibbe accompanied detectives and prosecutors in 2003 to the dry creek he believed he had disposed of Burleigh's body in, but her remains were not found. The area was searched again in 2007, with no results. Kibbe went back to the site in 2009 with detectives, and they still couldn't find the remains.

A detective went back to the creek bed in 2011, and this time he discovered a bone. It was sent for DNA testing, and came back as belonging to Burleigh.

Scott Lee Kimball

Date of birth: September 21, 1966

Aliases/Nicknames: Hannibal, Joe Snitch

Characteristics: Fraud, Self-professed Hitman

Number of victims: 4+

Date of murders: January 2003 - August 2004

Date of arrest: March 14, 2006

Murder method: Shooting

Known victims: Kaysi McLeod, 19; Jennifer Marcum, 25; LeAnn Emry, 24; Terry Kimball, 60 (his uncle)

Crime location: Boulder County, Colorado

Status: Sentenced to seventy years imprisonment.

Background

Kimball was one of those criminals that just couldn't keep his mouth shut. He had spent quite a bit of time in prison for fraud, and somehow managed to become an informant for the FBI on his release. Kimball was an experienced and successful conman, who had lived a life of deceit and treachery, and his biggest con of all was convincing the FBI to get him released from prison in 2002 so he could be an informant for them.

While Kimball was incarcerated in Alaska for check fraud, he notified the FBI that he had information regarding a plot to murder a federal judge, and convinced them that if he was released he could provide important information on the alleged hitman. Despite his extensive criminal history, including an escape from a Montana prison and a recommendation from a presiding judge that he could not be supervised successfully in the community, the FBI decided the information he could provide superseded the risk of Kimball committing further crimes.

As a prison inmate, Kimball had bragged to whoever would listen that he was in fact a hitman. He gave himself the nickname 'Hannibal', after the famous character in novels written by Thomas Harris. He claimed he had committed numerous murders for financial gain, as a 'killer for hire'. When news of this reached the FBI, an investigation into their informant was undertaken, and it was discovered that for once Kimball may have been telling the truth.

Murders

Between January 2003 and August 2004, Kimball was responsible for the deaths of at least four people. He was still working as an informant for the FBI at the time, and he later claimed to have committed many other murders but they have not been proven.

One of his victims, Kaysi McLeod, went missing while on her way to work. At the time, Kimball was dating her mother, and he was meant to be giving her a ride to work. But, he said he didn't, and he had gone hunting instead. Her body wasn't found until 2007.

Kimball killed Jennifer Marcum in February 2003, in a canyon in Utah. He claims that apart from facilitating her death, he wasn't the one who pulled the trigger. He did say though that he had given her a 'hot shot' of heroin to overdose her. To date, her remains have not been found.

LeAnn Emry was shot and killed in January 2003. At first Kimball claimed she was shot by someone else in a canyon in Utah, but he had told others that he had shot her twice in the back of her neck when she tried to get away. Emry was the girlfriend of a former cellmate of Kimball's.

Timeline of known murders:

January 29, 2003 - LeAnn Emry, 24

February 17, 2003 - Jennifer Marcum, 25

August 23, 2003 - Kaysi McLeod, 19

September 1, 2004 - Terry Kimball, 60

Arrest and Trial

Kimball was already in jail when he was charged with committing the four murders. He was in prison because of check fraud and a variety of other charges, which made it easier for investigators to question him about the murders. They discovered Kimball had written a letter, consisting of 147 pages, to his family where he admitted he was the man responsible for the deaths, including that of his uncle Terry.

The investigation showed that there was a link between Kimball and each of the victims, and further evidence was gleaned from his computer and previous cellmates who he had boasted to about the murders. When he went on trial in October 2009, he plead guilty to two counts of second-degree murder, as per the plea deal he had agreed to. In exchange, he was to draw maps showing where the undiscovered bodies were buried.

Kimball received a sentence of 70 years for the two murders he was charged with so far.

Outcome

The FBI is still investigating the possibility that Kimball had killed far more people than the four victims they know about. Kimball himself had openly bragged about committing a lot more murders. His cousin, Ed Coet, claims Kimball is expecting to be interviewed about further cases as time goes on.

Anthony Kirkland

Date of birth: September 13, 1968

Aliases/Nicknames: Nil

Characteristics: Set victims on fire to hide evidence

Number of victims: 5

Date of murders: 1987, 2006 - 2009

Date of arrest: March 8, 2009

Murder method: Strangulation

Known victims: Leola Douglas, 27 (his girlfriend); Casonya Crawford, 15; Mary Jo Newton, 45; Kimya Rolison, 14; Esme Kenny, 13

Crime location: Hamilton County, Ohio

Status: Sentenced to death, awaiting execution.

Background

Nothing is really known about Kirkland's early years and childhood, until he came under the police spotlight at the age of 18, in 1987. His first known violent crime took place at this time, with Kirkland murdering his girlfriend Leola Douglas. He beat and strangled her, then set her on fire, and an autopsy later showed she had still been alive when she started to burn. The murder had taken place on his own doorstep, so police were quickly led to Kirkland as the main suspect.

He was convicted of the murder and sentenced to 16 years in prison, which he served in full. Kirkland was released in 2003, and his parole period ended in 2004. Just a few months later, he was arrested on suspicion of raping a woman at knifepoint, but he was subsequently acquitted of this crime in October 2005.

By May 2006, Kirkland's anger and hatred of women reached an all new level, but his deeds would not be uncovered for a few more years. In 2007 he spent more time in prison after threatening to kill his son who was only 18 months old at the time. He served 115 days, but would soon be in trouble with the law again. Later that year, he was arrested and charged with trying to solicit sex from a 13-year-old girl, the daughter of his girlfriend. Kirkland was sentenced to a year in prison, but released just seven months later because of over-crowding.

After being sent to live in a halfway-house, Kirkland embarked on a downward spiral, leading to the deaths of four more victims.

Murders

The first known murder committed by Kirkland was that of Leola Douglas on May 20, 1987. She was his girlfriend at the time, and on the night she died he had taken her to a house, knocked her out, and set her on fire. He was sent to prison for this murder and served sixteen years for manslaughter after pleading guilty to the lesser charge.

On May 11, 2006, the body of Casonya Crawford was found near Blair Avenue in Avondale. She had been killed and her body set on fire. This was becoming a pattern of Kirkland. The next victim, Mary Jo Newton met the same fate sometime in April or May, 2006. Her body had also been set on fire and was found behind a vacant building.

The body of Kimya Rolison, 14, was discovered stabbed to death and burnt, just like the other victims, in December 2006. Kirkland's final victim was Esme Kenny, who he abducted on March 7, 2009. Her body was found by police in woods not far from her home. She had been strangled to death and the lower half of her body had been set on fire. Sleeping nearby, up against a tree, was Kirkland.

Timeline of known murders:

May 20, 1987 - Leola Douglas, 27

March, 2006 - Casonya Crawford, 15

April or May, 2006 - Mary Jo Newton, 45

December 22, 2006 - Kimya Rolison, 14

March 7, 2009 - Esme Kenny, 13

Timeline of other violent crimes during the killing spree:

October 25, 2004 - Released from parole.

January 25, 2005 - Accused of raping a female neighbor in Evanston at knifepoint. A jury acquits him in October 2005.

May 14, 2007 - Kirkland threatens to kill his 18-month-old son during a SWAT standoff at Kirkland's house. He is convicted of two counts of unlawful restraint three months later and sentenced to 115 days in jail.

September 17, 2007 - The Rev. Walter Bledsoe seeks a restraining order against Kirkland on behalf of the Bledsoe family. Court records do not say why he applied for the order, but it was granted by a judge in December 2007, and Kirkland was ordered to stay away from the Bledsoes.

September 26, 2007 - Kirkland solicits sex from the 13-year-old daughter of his girlfriend. In March 2008 he is convicted of importuning and sentenced to one year in prison. Kirkland is designated a sex offender, and he has to register his address with the sheriff's office.

October 20, 2008 - He is released from prison ordered to spend five years on parole. He enters the Pogue Rehabilitation Center, a halfway house in Over-the-Rhine run by Volunteers of America.

February 27, 2009 - Kirkland gets into a fight with another resident at the halfway house. Police are called, but Kirkland is not arrested because the other man refuses to press charges. Kirkland is thrown out of the residence by the managers, for breaking the no fighting rule, but they don't notify his

parole officer until two days later. Kirkland doesn't immediately register a new address with the sheriff as required by law

March 1, 2009 - Kirkland is accused of breaking into a home, hiding in the bathroom and attacking Frederick Hughes with scissors. Hughes suffers at least ten stab wounds but survives. Kirkland flees the scene, and a warrant is issued for his arrest on charges of aggravated burglary and felonious assault.

March 2, 2009 - Kirkland's parole officer is notified of his release from the halfway house and begins looking for him.

March 4, 2009 - A second warrant is issued for Kirkland's arrest because he failed to register his address with the sheriff after his release from the halfway house.

March 5, 2009 - Kirkland is accused of threatening Roberta Baldwin, his child's mother, with a knife. He flees and another warrant is filed against him on charges of domestic violence, aggravated menacing and violation of a protection order.

Arrest and Trial

When police approached Kirkland near the body of his last victim, they searched him and discovered in his possession some items belonging to the young girl. He was immediately arrested and taken to the police station for questioning. He was formally charged with the murder of Kenney.

While investigating, authorities were able to connect Kirkland to the murders of Newton and Rolison as well, and he was charged with those murders as well as abuse-of-a-corpse. When he went to trial, Kirkland entered a guilty plea to all charges. Subsequently, the jury found him guilty of all counts on March 12, 2010.

Kirkland was sentenced to death for the murders of Kenney and Crawford, and 70 years to life for the murders of Rolison and Newton.

Outcome

At this point in time, Kirkland remains on death row awaiting his execution. His legal team has filed a number of appeals, and the Supreme Court has granted a motion for a new sentencing hearing as of May 2016.

Appeals:

May 13, 2014 - the Supreme Court of Ohio upheld Kirkland's conviction and death sentence.

October 16, 2014 - the Supreme Court of Ohio granted a motion by Kirkland for a stay of execution.

April 6, 2015 - the U.S. Supreme Court refused to hear Kirkland's appeal.

May 2016 - the Supreme Court of Ohio granted a motion for a new sentencing hearing for Kirkland.

Paul John Knowles

Date of birth: April 14, 1946

Aliases/Nicknames: The Casanova Killer, Lester Daryl Gates, Daryl Golden

Characteristics: Rape, Robbery

Number of victims: 18 - 35

Date of murders: July - November 1974

Date of arrest: December 17, 1974

Murder method: Shooting, strangulation

Known victims: Alice Curtis, 65; Lillian Anderson, 11; Mylette Anderson, 7; Marjorie Howe; Kathy Pierce; William Bates; Emmett Johnson; Lois Johnson; Ann Dawson; Doris Hovey, 53; Carswell Carr; Carswell's daughter, 15; Edward Hilliard; Debbie Griffin; Trooper Charles Campbell; James Meyer; Ima Sanders, 13; Charlynn Hicks; Karen Wine; Dawn Wine, 16

Crime location: Across many states

Status: Killed by law enforcement while trying to escape, December 18, 1974.

Background

Knowles had a difficult start in life, after spending most of his childhood in foster care or reformatories. His father had been convicted of a fairly minor crime, but gave his son up anyway. It wasn't until Knowles was 19 years old, that he was first arrested and incarcerated for criminal activity. From then onwards, he was in and out of prison for numerous crimes, until things took a change for the better in 1974.

Knowles had been corresponding with a woman in San Francisco, Angela Covic. At one point, she traveled to Florida to visit Knowles in prison, and he immediately proposed marriage to her. She accepted, and worked hard to get him released from prison, using her own finances to pay for his legal counsel.

As soon as Knowles was released, he flew to San Francisco to be with Covic. However, she had received a warning from a psychic that a dangerous man was entering her life, so she ended the engagement and the relationship. Knowles suffered the rejection terribly, and made his return to Jacksonville in Florida. He claimed that the night the relationship ended, he killed three people in San Francisco.

Not long after his return to Florida, Knowles was involved in a bar fight, and was arrested for stabbing a bartender. On July 26, he picked the lock on his cell and made his escape.

Murders

On the night he escaped from prison, Knowles attacked his first victim. Alice Curtis, 65, was gagged and bound by Knowles after he broke into her home on July 26, for the purposes of robbing her of any valuables and money. Although he didn't kill Curtis outright, she did choke on her dentures and die, though it is unknown whether Knowles was still there when it happened.

He had stolen her car, and realizing the police will be looking for it he decided it to ditch it on a street. It was August 1, 1974. As he parked the car, he noticed sisters Lilian and Mylette Anderson, who were acquainted with his family. Worried they may identify him dumping the car, he abducted both girls and strangled them to death before burying their corpses in a swamp.

Ima Jean Sanders disappeared on August 1, 1974, in Georgia, after running away from home in Beaumont, Texas. She had been hitchhiking when Knowles abducted her. For a long time she was unidentified, until 2011 when her identity was finally proven.

The following day, August 2, Knowles killed Marjorie Howie in her apartment in Florida. It is unclear whether she had invited him in or he had forced his way in. He used a nylon stocking to strangle her, and stole her television.

Late in August, Knowles forced his way into Kathie Sue Pierce's home in Musella, Georgia. She was strangled to death with a telephone cord, but her child was left unharmed. Then on September 3, Knowles came across William Bates in a bar in Ohio. They left the bar together, and Bates' wife

reported him missing the next day. His body was found in October, strangled and naked.

Knowles drove to Nevada in the car he had stolen off Bates. He came across Emmett and Lois Johnson on September 18, and after he tied them up he shot them to death. He stole their credit cards and used them for a while, but nobody suspected him as being the suspect until his confession after he was arrested.

Charlynn Hicks was stranded on the side of the road after her motorcycle broke down when she was abducted by Knowles. He raped Hicks then used her pantyhose to strangle her. He dragged her through a barbed wire fence and disposed of it, and the body was discovered four days later, on September 25.

On September 23, he met Ann Dawson in Birmingham, Alabama. They traveled together for almost a week, until Knowles murdered her on September 29. Her body was thrown into the Mississippi River, but has never been found.

The next murders occurred on October 16, in Connecticut. Knowles broke into the home where Karen Wine and her daughter Dawn lived, bound them, then raped them. Both were strangled with a nylon stocking.

Doris Hovey was shot and killed in her home in Woodford, Virginia, on October 18. Knowles had used a rifle belonging to Hovey's husband who wasn't home at the time. He wiped off his prints and left the rifle next to Hovey's body. No robbery took place on this occasion, so there was no known motive for this murder.

On November 2, Knowles killed hitchhikers Edward Hilliard and Debbie Griffin. The body of Griffin has never been found. Knowles was still driving Bates' car when he met Carswell Car in Georgia on November 6.

Carr invited Knowles back to his house for drinks, and was repaid for his kindness by being strangled. His young daughter was home at the time, and Knowles strangled her to death as well. He did attempt to have sexual intercourse with her corpse, but was unable to carry out the deed.

Knowles had stolen another car, and on November 17, it was recognized by Trooper Charles Campbell as being a stolen vehicle. Trooper Campbell attempted to arrest Knowles but Knowles managed to get hold of the officer's pistol. He then drove off in the patrol car with Trooper Campbell as his hostage. Feeling conspicuous in the cop car, he used the lights and siren to pull over James Meyer. He then had two hostages and they continued driving in Meyer's car.

They drove to an area of woods in Pulaski County, Georgia, where Knowles handcuffed both men to a tree. He then shot them in the head at close range. Not long afterwards, a police roadblock had been set up in Henry County, Georgia, and Knowles attempted to drive through it. But, he lost control of the car and crashed into a tree. Firing at the officers chasing him, he took off on foot.

Despite being chased by numerous officers, police dogs, helicopters and other law enforcement agencies, Knowles managed to travel several miles away from the main search area. Until he came across a civilian carrying a shotgun.

Timeline of known murders:

July 26, 1974 - Alice Curtis, 65

August 1, 1974 - Lilian Anderson, 11

August 1, 1974 - Mylette Anderson, 7

August 1, 1974 - Ima Jean Sanders, 13
August 2, 1974 - Marjorie Howie, 49
August 1974 - Kathy Sue Pierce
September 3, 1974 - William Bates, 32
September 18, 1974 - Emmett Johnson
September 18, 1974 - Lois Johnson
September 21, 1974 - Charlynn Hicks
September 29, 1974 - Ann Dawson
October 16, 1974 - Karen Wine
October 16, 1974 - Dawn Wine, 16
October 18, 1974 - Doris Hovey, 53
November 2, 1974 - Edward Hilliard
November 2, 1974 - Debbie Griffin
November 6, 1974 - Carswell Carr
November 6, 1974 - Carswell's daughter, 15
November 17, 1974 - Trooper Charles Campbell
November 17, 1974 - James Meyer

Arrest and Trial

Knowles was escorted to a house by the civilian armed with a shotgun and the police were called. They arrived on the scene and arrested him. When he was being questioned at the police station, he claimed he was responsible for committing 35 murders, but the investigations only linked him to 20.

Outcome

On December 18, 1974, Knowles was being transported to Henry County, Georgia, where he had claimed to have dumped a gun used in the murder of State Trooper Charles Eugene Campbell. He was accompanied by Sheriff Earl Lee and Agent Ronnie Angel of the Georgia Bureau of Investigation. At some point in the journey, Knowles managed to grab Lee's gun, which discharged, and while the two men were struggling to gain control of the gun, Agent Angel shot Knowles three times in the chest, and he died instantly.

Vasili Komaroff

Date of birth: 1871

Aliases/Nicknames: The Wolf of Moscow, The Shabolovka Street Killer, Vasili Terentevich Petrov

Characteristics: Murdered his customers

Number of victims: 33

Date of murders: 1921 - 1923

Date of arrest: March 18, 1923

Murder method: Strangulation, striking with a hammer

Known victims: Unnamed men - Horse traders

Crime location: Moscow, Russia

Status: Executed by firing squad June 18, 1923.

Background

Early family life for Komaroff was one of poverty and alcoholism. Born into a large family in Russia in 1871, many of the immediate family members were alcoholics, and Komaroff himself began drinking when he was fifteen. Army conscription was compulsory, and he spent four years serving in the Russian Army. He married when he was 28 years old, and he traveled to the Far East with the army during the Russian-Japanese war in 1904. While there, he was able to make a substantial amount of money, but it didn't last long.

At one point he was arrested and sentenced to a year in prison for robbing a warehouse belonging to the military. While he was incarcerated, his wife contracted cholera and passed away. Following his release from prison, he moved to Riga and met and married Sophia, a Polish widow. They went on to have two children, but Komaroff was still drinking heavily and would often beat both his children and his wife.

Komaroff took his family and moved to the Volga region of Russia in 1915, as the Germans began to enter the Baltic region during World War I. By 1917 the Russian Empire was facing collapse, so Komaroff joined the Red Army, moving his way up to platoon commander by learning to read and write. At one point he was captured by the White Army but was able to escape. Fearful of the Military Revolutionary Tribunal, he changed his surname from Petrov to Komaroff.

In 1920, Komaroff and his family moved and settled in Moscow, at 26 Shablovka Street. He started working as a horse trader and carriage driver, but continued to steal wherever possible. By 1921, the New Economic Policy was declared in Russian by then-leader Vladimir Lenin, and

Komaroff embarked on a murderous spree that would span two years and leave at least 33 dead.

Murders

All of the murders committed by Komaroff were carried out in the same manner. Each victim had wanted to buy a horse, and Komaroff would invite them back to his home. They would be served some vodka before either having their head smashed in with a hammer or their throat cut. The corpse would then be hidden around the house in a bag, or dumped in the Moscow River. Some bodies were buried in the ground.

In 1922 Komaroff's wife found out he had been committing multiple murders. Unfazed, she started helping Komaroff with the killings. The police began investigating the possibility of a serial killer after 21 bodies were discovered put out in the trash every Thursday or Saturday. People who attended the horse market also started to wonder about Komaroff when they noticed he was always at the market on Wednesday and Fridays, hardly ever had a horse with him, and always left with a horse buyer.

Arrest and Trial

Police had their suspicions about Komaroff, and early in 1921 they executed a search warrant at his home. The warrant was meant to be regarding illegal alcohol, but when they searched the stable, they found a man's body hidden beneath some hay. Komaroff made a run for it, escaping out the window. On March 18, he was found in Moscow Oblast and arrested.

During his interrogation, he confessed to the murders of 33 men, and that each one had wanted to buy a horse. He claimed he killed them so he could rob them, but he never gained a lot of money from it. After his confession, he showed the police where he had buried the bodies, but not all of them were found.

At the end of his trial, Komaroff was found guilty of the murders, as was his wife Sophia. Both were sentenced to death.

Outcome

While in prison awaiting his execution, Komaroff attempted suicide three times.

Komaroff was executed on June 18, 1923 by firing squad, along with his wife, in Moscow.

Randy Steven Kraft

Date of birth: March 19, 1945

Aliases/Nicknames: The Scorecard Killer, The Freeway Killer, Southern California Strangler

Characteristics: Rape, Mutilation, Torture, Dismemberment, Sodomy

Number of victims: 16 - 67

Date of murders: September 20, 1971–May 13, 1983

Date of arrest: May 14, 1983

Murder method: Strangulation, drugs and alcohol

Known victims: Edward Moore, 20; Kevin Bailey, 17; Ronnie Wiebe, 20; Keith Crotwell, 18; Mark Hall, 22; Scott Hughes, 18; Roland Young, 23; Richard Keith, 20; Keith Klingbeil, 23; Michael Inderbieten, 21; Donald Crisel, 20; Robert Loggins, 19; Eric Church, 21; Rodger DeVaul, 20; Geoffrey Nelson, 18; Terry Gambrel, 25

Crime location: California, Oregon, Michigan

Status: Sentenced to death, awaiting execution.

Background

Kraft was born in California in 1945, the only male child in a family of sisters. He was terribly accident-prone as a young child, having broken his collarbone when he was just 12 months old, after falling down stairs. A year later, he had another clumsy accident that knocked him out.

When he was three, the family moved to Westminster, Orange County and had a normal childhood. At high school he got along well with his peers, and was a member of the school band, playing saxophone. In 1963 he graduated from high school and along with his friends, moved to attend Claremont College in Pomona, California.

Kraft had an interest in politics, and was a member of the ROTC while at college. He also took part in demonstrations in favor of America entering the Vietnam War. He campaigned fervently for the right-wing presidential candidate in 1964, but just a year later, his political beliefs shifted to the left. At this time, he started working as a bartender part-time at a gay bar.

In his junior year at college, rumors were drifting around the campus that Kraft was fond of bondage, and his roommate later recalled how Kraft would disappear for periods of time a few times a week, and always return at odd hours of the night. Suffering from migraines and stomach pains, Kraft would take valium regularly, even in-between classes.

In 1966 he moved away from the campus and shared an apartment with a friend. He was spending the majority of his free time in the gay bars, and was arrested for lewd conduct that same year for propositioning an undercover police officer. He was let off with a warning. When the rest of his class graduated in 1967, Kraft was made to repeat a class and gained his bachelor's degree in economics several months later.

Following the assassination of Robert Kennedy, who Kraft had campaigned for, he enlisted with the Air Force and was sent to the Edwards Air Force Base to supervise test planes being painted. In 1969, Kraft finally admitted that he was gay, which came as a huge surprise to his family. After his admission, he was discharged from the Air Force on 'medical grounds' and went back to bartending.

From then onwards, Kraft's life revolved around gay bars, alcohol and drugs, and he was openly gay. His friends from his earlier days were shocked, and even more so fourteen years later, when the truth about the actions of Kraft would finally become known.

Murders

Kraft was actively committing murder for more than ten years, between 1972 and 1983. He killed only males, and most of them were homosexual. Sometimes he mutilated and tortured his victims while they were still alive. When police were investigating the multiple murders, they found evidence of a second person being involved, but Kraft has never admitted this nor said who his accomplice was.

Timeline of known murders:

December 23, 1972 - Edward Daniel Moore, 20

April 9, 1973 - Kevin Clark Bailey, 18

July 28, 1973 - Ronnie Gene Wiebe, 20

January 17, 1975 - Keith Daven Crotwell, 19

January 3, 1976 - Mark Howard Hall, 22

February 12, 1978 - Geoffrey Alan Nelson, 18

February 12, 1978 - Roger James DeVaul, 20

April 16, 1978 - Scott Michael Hughes, 18

June 11, 1978 - Roland Gerald Young, 23

June 19, 1978 - Richard Allen Keith, 20

July 6, 1978 - Keith Arthur Klingbeil, 23

November 18, 1978 - Michael Joseph Inderbieten, 20

June 16, 1979 - Donnie Harold Crisel, 20

September 3, 1980 - Robert Wyatt Loggins, 19

January 27, 1983 - Eric Herbert Church, 21

May 14, 1983 - Terry Lee Gambrel, 25

Suspected victims:

September 24, 1971 - Wayne Joseph Dukette, 30

February 6, 1973 - 'Wilmington' (unidentified male)

April 22, 1973 - 'Hawth off Head' (unidentified male - from Kraft's scorecard)

December 23, 1973 - Vincent Cruz Mestas, 23

June 2, 1974 - Malcolm Eugene Little, 20

June 22, 1974 - Roger E. Dickerson, 18

August 3, 1974 - Thomas Paxton Lee, 25

August 12, 1974 - Gary Wayne Cordova, 23

November 27, 1974 - James Dale Reeves, 19

January 4, 1975 - John William Leras, 17

December 12, 1976 - Paul Joseph Fuchs, 19

September 30, 1978 - Richard A. Crosby, 20

August 29, 1979 - '76' (unidentified male)

September 14, 1979 - Gregory Wallace Jolley, 20

November 24, 1979 - Jeffrey Bryan Sayre, 15

February 18, 1980 - Mark Alan Marsh, 20

April 10, 1980 - Michael Duane Cluck, 18

July 17, 1980 - Michael Shawn O'Fallon, 17

July 18, 1980 - 'Portland Eck' (unidentified male)

August 20, 1981 - Christopher Williams, 17

July 29, 1982 - Robert Avila, 16

July 29, 1982 - Raymond Davis, 13

November 28, 1982 - Brian Witcher, 26

December 9, 1982 - Lance Trenton Taggs, 19

December 9, 1982 - Dennis Alt, 20

December 9, 1982 - Christopher Schoenborn, 20

December 18, 1982 - Anthony Silveira, 29

January 19, 1984 - Mikeal Laine, 24

January 17, 1995 - Craig Jonaites, 24

Arrest and Trial

On the morning of May 14, 1983, Kraft was pulled over for driving in a weaving manner. As soon as he was stopped, he got out of his car and walked over to the patrol car, but they suspected he was hiding something so they walked him back to his car. In the passenger's seat was the dead body of Terry Gambrel, who had been strangled. Kraft was immediately arrested.

When police search Kraft's house, they found photographs of three men, and realized they were unsolved murder cases from Southern California. One was Robert Loggins who was killed in September 1980, and the others were Geoffrey Nelson and Roger De Vaul, both of who were last seen alive in February 1983.

The rug in Kraft's garage had fibers that matched those found on Scott Hughes' body. There were also items that had once belonged to a victim who was found near Grand Rapids, Michigan. Investigators found a notebook with handwritten note inside, that were written in some sort of code. Kraft had kept a record of every murder, and he became known as a 'score-card' killer.

By September 1983, Kraft had received sixteen murder charges, nine counts of sexual mutilation, eleven counts of sodomy and three counts of robbery. January the following year, the prosecution added 21 additional murders to the charges. With the forensic evidence the police had found, Kraft was found guilty of all charges and sentenced to death.

Outcome

There was a lot of suspicion of an accomplice being involved in at least some of the murders, but nothing has ever come of it. Some of this speculation was based on the theory that it would have been too difficult moving the dead bodies around on his own.

Kraft hasn't really said anything about the murders he committed or the possibility of someone helping him, so the mystery may never be solved. Currently he is still on death row awaiting his execution.

Trivia

Despite Kraft getting his multiple photographs of dead victims processed, no photo developer ever reported the disturbing images to the police.

Joachim Kroll

Date of birth: April 17, 1933

Aliases/Nicknames: Ruhr Cannibal, Ruhr Hunter, Duisburg Man-Eater

Characteristics: Cannibalism, Mutilation, Rape, Pedophilia

Number of victims: 14

Date of murders: February 8, 1955 –July 3, 1976

Date of arrest: July 3, 1976

Murder method: Strangulation, stabbing, drowning

Known victims: Irmgard Strehl, 19; Erika Schuletter, 12; Klara Tesmer, 24; Manuela Knodt, 16; Petra Giese, 13; Monika Tafel, 12; Barbara Bruder, 12; Hermann Schmitz; Ursula Rohling; Ilona Harke, 5; Maria Hettgen, 61; Jutta Rahn, 13; Karin Toepfer, 10; Marion Ketter, 4

Crime location: North Rhine-Westphalia, Germany

Status: Sentenced to life imprisonment. Died of a heart attack, July 1, 1991.

Background

Kroll was one of eight sons born into a mining family in Hindenburg (now part of Poland), Germany. He was a weak child who was known to be a bed wetter, which is most likely the reason behind his poor self-esteem. His father was taken prisoner and subsequently killed during World War II, and after the end of the war, the family moved to North Rhine-Westphalia, Germany.

Struggling financially as a single parent and the post-war economic crisis, his mother and her eight children moved into a small two-bedroom home. Kroll was sent to school, but barely completed five years before having to leave and work on the family farm. This prevented Kroll from maturing as a normal adult, incapable of forming regular relationships with people his own age.

Kroll was by today's standards mentally retarded, and later found to have an IQ of just 76. He was a full-grown man, with the mentality of a young boy, and continued living with his mother until her death, when he was 22 years old. Following her death, he moved to Duisburg and gained employment as a lavatory assistant. He was considered by most to be the town idiot, and he preferred to spend his time with children.

Kroll was popular amongst the local children because he always had plenty of toys and dolls to play with, and candy to share. The building he lived in prohibited children, yet he happily invited them up to his home so they could play. The children knew him as 'Uncle Joachim', and to them he seemed to be a harmless, generous man, who could relate to them on the same mental level. But what the children didn't know, or didn't see, was the collection of sex dolls he kept hidden in his apartment. He would later say that he would practice strangling the dolls while masturbating.

As a remarkable show of how low his intelligence was, Kroll was eventually arrested for horrible crimes against children because of a statement he made to a neighbor. He told the neighbor not to use the shared toilet on the top floor of the building because it was 'full of guts'. The neighbor thought it was remains from meat butchering and summoned a plumber.

As the plumber looked down inside the toilet bowl, what he saw was truly incomprehensible. Blocking the toilet were the internal organs of a child.

Murders

After Kroll's mother died, he began committing murders in 1955. Kroll seemed to have some control over his murderous tendencies, as he was very particular about where and when he killed. He liked to kill in the same place, but always years apart and only on a few occasions. At the time, there were a number of murderers in the same area, so police were not close to capturing him.

Kroll would take his victims by surprise, then immediately strangle them. Then he would take off all their clothing and have sexual intercourse with the body. He would then masturbate over the corpse before mutilating it. He cut off certain pieces of the body so he could eat them later. As soon as he got home after a murder, he would have sex with a rubber doll.

Timeline of murders:

8 February 1955 – Irmgard Strehl, 19

1956 – Erika Schuletter, 12

16 June 1959 – Klara Frieda Tesmer, 24

26 July 1959 – Manuela Knodt, 16

23 April 1962 – Petra Giese, 13

4 June 1962 – Monika Tafel, 12

3 September 1962 – Barbara Bruder, 12

22 August 1965 – Hermann Schmitz

13 September 1966 – Ursula Rohling

22 December 1966 – Ilona Harke, 5

12 July 1969 – Maria Hettgen, 61

21 May 1970 – Jutta Rahn, 13

8 May 1976 – Karin Toepfer, 10

3 July 1976 – Marion Ketter, 4

Arrest and Trial

Kroll was arrested on July 3, 1976, after the murder of Marion Ketter.

When police entered his apartment, they found parts of the little girl in the refrigerator, her hand was being cooked in a pot and the entrails were caught in the waste-pipe. Under questioning he admitted killing Ketter as well as thirteen other victims over a 20 year period. He admitted cannibalizing the bodies to keep his grocery bills down. While he was being held in jail, Kroll thought they were going to give him a minor operation to make him stop killing, and then he would be sent back home.

Kroll was charged with eight murders and one attempted murder. His trial, which lasted 151 days, ended in April 1982. He was found guilty on all counts and sentenced to life imprisonment.

Outcome

On July 1, 1991, Kroll suffered a heart attack and died while incarcerated at Rheinbach.

Richard Kuklinski

Date of birth: April 11, 1935

Aliases/Nicknames: The Iceman

Characteristics: Contract Killer

Number of victims: 6 - 100+

Date of murders: 1949 - 1986

Date of arrest: December 17, 1986

Murder method: Shooting, stabbing, poisoning, beating

Known victims: Charley Chase; Daniel E. Deppner; Gary T. Smith; George Malliband; Louis Masgay; Detective Peter Calabro; Paul Hoffman

Crime location: New York, New Jersey

Status: Sentenced to life imprisonment. Died of natural causes, March 6, 2006.

Background

Kuklinski was born in New Jersey to parents Stanley and Anna, the second of their four children. His father was a brakeman at the railroad, but at home he was a violent alcoholic, who would beat Anna and the children on a regular basis. Anna, a devout Catholic, was a very strict parent and she too, would beat the children if she deemed it necessary.

Tragedy struck the family when Kuklinski was five years old, after his older brother Florian was beaten to death by their father. Their mother told the emergency services that the boy had fallen down the stairs, and Stanley was never charged. He left the family home not long afterwards, and Kuklinski was left to take care of himself without his father figure.

The very first murder committed by Kuklinski took place in 1948, when he was only 13 years old. At that time, there was a gang of teenagers called 'The Project Boys' in the neighborhood and they took great delight in bullying and beating Kuklinski. After one such beating, Kuklinski decided to take revenge on one of the gang members, Charley Chase. He attacked him with a piece of wood, beating him until he did not wake up. He then chopped off the boy's fingertips and removed his teeth before dumping him over a bridge.

Following the murder, Kuklinski sought out the other gang members and attacked them all with a metal pole. They were nearly beaten to death. According to Kuklinski later on in life, it was the murder of Charley Chase that taught him it was better to give than receive. From then onwards, whenever someone made him feel 'bad', he hurt them.

As an adult, Kuklinski became associated with the Gambino crime family through an associate, Roy DeMeo. Initially, Kuklinski was tasked with the

job of performing robberies and a variety of other jobs including pirating pornography. By now Kuklinski had grown into a very imposing figure, standing 6 feet 5 inches, and with a weight of around 300 pounds. It was decided Kuklinski would be tested to determine whether he would make a good hitman for the family.

Murders

George Malliband met with Kuklinski on January 31, 1980, to sell some videos. His body was discovered in a 55-gallon drum several days later. On the day he was killed, he was carrying a large sum of money with him, around \$27,000.

On March 14, 1980, Kuklinski fired a shotgun at the head of Detective Calabro as he was carefully driving his car through a snowstorm. In July 1981, Louis Masgay had a meeting with Kuklinski to discuss a videotape deal, and disappeared. He had \$95,000 hidden inside the door panel of his vehicle. His body wasn't found until 15 months later. He had been shot in the head then stored in a freezer, wrapped in multiple plastic bags.

Another victim who was last seen just before a scheduled meeting with Kuklinski was Paul Hoffman. He had \$22,000 with him and was planning on buying prescription drugs from Kuklinski on April 29, 1982. To date his body has not been located.

The last two victims, Gary Smith and Daniel Deppner, were roommates. Smith was killed on December 27, 1982, and his body was found beneath a bed in a motel. Daniel Deppner was killed on May 14, 1983 by Kuklinski.

Kuklinski used a variety of methods to commit the murders, including guns, knives, poison and strangulation. Bodies were often dismembered and buried, though some were placed in the trunk of a car then crushed at a junkyard. Kuklinski also said that on some occasions he simply left the body on a park bench.

Kuklinski used an ice cream truck at times to store the bodies for a period of time before disposing of them. This interfered with the medical examiners ability to determine time and date of death. At one point he was

friends with Robert Pronge, known as Mister Softee, and claimed it was Pronge that gave him the information on how to use poisons to kill. Pronge was found shot to death in his truck in 1984 and many believe it was Kuklinski that pulled the trigger.

Timeline of known murders:

1949 - Charley Chase

January 31, 1980 - George Malliband, 42

March 14, 1980 - Detective Peter Calabro,

July 1981 - Louis Masgay, 50

April 29, 1982 - Paul Hoffman, 51

December 27, 1982 - Gary Smith, 42

May 14, 1983 - Daniel Deppner, 46

Arrest and Trial

Kuklinski was arrested on December 17, 1986, based on an undercover agent's testimony. The investigation had taken six years and it was a joint operation involved the Attorney General's Office, New Jersey State Police and the Bureau of Alcohol, Tobacco and Firearms. To perform the arrest, multiple officers were deployed and the whole street was blocked off.

The trial took place in 1988 in New Jersey, and Kuklinski was convicted of committing five murders. He was sentenced to five life sentences, and wouldn't be eligible for parole until he was over 100 years old.

A second trial took place in 2003, for the murder of Detective Peter Calabro. Kuklinski was again convicted and had another 30 years added on to his sentence. While he was incarcerated, Kuklinski agreed to numerous interviews with criminologists, psychiatrists, writers, prosecutors and television producers.

During these interviews, Kuklinski provided greater insight into the type of man and killer he was. He stated he would never harm or kill children or women. Some of his murder techniques were extremely sadistic, including leaving a victim tied up in a cave so rats could eat them alive. These particular murders were filmed so the client could have proof that the victim suffered terribly before dying.

Outcome

During an interview with Philip Carlo prior to his death, Kuklinski had stated he had been involved with the kidnapping and murder of Jimmy Hoffa, the well-known union boss who had disappeared without a trace. In a previous interview though he claimed he didn't know anything about what had happened to Hoffa apart from rumors, that he had been murdered, placed in a barrel that was then put into a Japanese car that was compacted and shipped overseas. To date there has been no evidence to support this story.

Kuklinski was transferred to the St. Francis Medical Center in Trenton, New Jersey, and died at 1:15 am on March 5, 2006. Although he was 70 years of age, his death was considered by many to be suspicious, as he was due to testify against Sammy Gravano, the Gambino crime family underboss. He was going to testify that Gravano had ordered him to kill Detective Peter Calabro. Within a few days of Kuklinski's death, all charges against Gravano were dropped as they were not confident of getting a conviction without his testimony.

Before his death, Kuklinski had commented to family members that he thought he was being poisoned by the Gambino crime ring while he was in prison to prevent him from testifying. After he died, renowned forensic pathologist was asked to examine the autopsy results to determine if there had in fact been any poisoning. He concluded there was no evidence of poisoning and Kuklinski had died from natural causes.

Trivia

- In April 2006, news reports surfaced that Kuklinski had confessed to author Philip Carlo that he was part of a group who kidnapped and murdered famed union boss Jimmy Hoffa.

However, during the earlier HBO interview he denied any knowledge of Hoffa's fate. Kuklinski claimed that he had only heard rumors, specifically, that Hoffa had been killed, put in a barrel, placed into a Japanese car which was compacted with other cars, and shipped overseas.

Leonard Lake and Charles Ng

Date of birth: October 29, 1945; December 24, 1960

Aliases/Nicknames: Lake - Leonard J. Hill, Alan Drey, Randy Jacobsen, Robin Stapley, Leonard Hill, Charles Gunnar, Paul Cosner

Characteristics: Rape, Torture, Robbery

Number of victims: 11 -25

Date of murders: 1983 - 1985

Date of arrest: June 2, 1985; July 6, 1986

Murder method: Shooting

Known victims: Harvey Dubs, his wife Deborah and infant son, Sean; Lonnie Bond Sr., his wife, Brenda O'Connor, and his infant son, Lonnie Bond Jr; Clifford Peranteau; Jeffrey Gerald; Michael Carroll; Kathleen Allen; Robin Scott Stapley; Randy Jacobson

Crime location: Calaveras County, California

Status: Lake - committed suicide by cyanide shortly after his arrest. Ng - sentenced to death and awaiting execution

Background

Leonard Lake

Lake was born in San Francisco, and following his parents' divorce when he was six years old, was sent along with his siblings to live with their grandparents. He was described as a bright child, but at a young age had an unhealthy fondness for pornography. Apparently, his grandmother would encourage him to take naked photos of his sisters, and later it was alleged Lake would also extort his sisters for sexual favors.

As a young man, Lake joined the Marine Corps when he was 19 and became a radio operator. He served two tours of duty in the Vietnam War, before being diagnosed with schizoid personality disorder in 1971. He was medically discharged from the Marines and was given psychotherapy. He enrolled at college in San Jose, but only attended for one semester before dropping out and moving into a hippie commune.

Lake married in 1975, but the marriage didn't last long once his wife discovered he was making amateur pornographic films. He was a main character in the films, and in each one, sadomasochism and bondage were prevalent. He went on to marry Claralyn Balasz in 1981, after being released from prison for car theft. This marriage also didn't last, as she couldn't tolerate his behavior that was becoming more erratic. He also tried to push her into starring in the pornographic films, which was the final straw for Claralyn.

In 1982, Lake was picked up by police and arrested for a firearms violation, but he skipped bail. He moved to his ex-wife's ranch in a remote area in Wilseyville, and met Charles Ng the same year. The two men became friends, and both lived together at the ranch. Discovering they had the same

tendencies, they had the perfect location for carrying out their abhorrent deeds.

Charles Ng

Born in Hong Kong, Ng's father was a wealthy Chinese executive, and according to Ng, a harsh disciplinarian who dished out abuse. Ng was a loner as a teenager, and got into trouble a lot, resulting in him being expelled from a number of good schools. At 15 years of age, he was caught shoplifting, and his father decided to send him to a boarding school in England. However, Ng continued to steal and was expelled soon after he arrived at the school and sent back to Hong Kong.

In 1978, Ng moved to America on a student visa and attended Notre Dame College in California. However, he dropped out after only completing one semester. He was involved in a hit-and-run motor vehicle accident soon after, and to try and escape being prosecuted, he enlisted in the Marine Corps.

To become a Marine, you have to be a United States citizen, which Ng was not yet, but he was able to bluff his way in using false documentation in 1979. A year after he joined, he was arrested for stealing automatic weapons while stationed in Hawaii. Fearing the result of a court martial, he fled, becoming a deserter, and managed to find his way back to California and moved in with Lake.

The mobile home they shared was raided by federal authorities in 1982, and both men were arrested following the discovery of a huge stash of explosives and weapons. Ng was sent back to the custody of the Marines, and subsequently orchestrated a plea deal, receiving an 18-month sentence in the military stockade. Lake had been set bail, but absconded, drifting

around under numerous aliases until the men caught up with each other again.

Murders

The meeting of Lake and Ng would have a tragic effect on those who crossed paths with them, particularly between the years 1983 - 1985. The two men went on a murderous spree, killing neighbors, associates, and strangers they met, regardless of whether they were men, women or children.

Their strategy was to kill the men and children first, then kidnap the women and keep them in a structure built by Lake next to his cabin which he called the 'dungeon'. There, the women would be repeatedly raped and tortured while being videotaped, and be subjected to psychological abuse. The women were called their 'sex slaves' and would only be killed when they tired of them.

It was later discovered in Lake's journal that he was expecting there to be a nuclear war, which was why he built the 'bunker' or dungeon, and he was planning on rebuilding the human race after the war was over using his female slaves. He referred to this plan as 'Operation Miranda', the name of a character in 'The Collector', a book by John Fowles.

Timeline of known murders:

July 25, 1984 - Harvey Dubs, 30

July 25, 1984 - Deborah Dubs, 33

July 25, 1984 - Sean Dubs, 1

October 1984 - Randy Jacobson, 34

May 1985 - Lonnie Bond, 27

May 1985 - Brenda O'Connor

May 1985 - Lonnie Bond, Jr., 2

May 1985 - Robin Scott Stapley, 26

April 1985 - Kathleen Allen, 18

April 1985 - Michael Carroll, 23

Unspecified dates in 1983:

Charles Gunnar

Donald Lake (Lake's younger brother; disappeared and was presumed to have been killed by Lake and Ng)

Suspected:

November 1984 - Paul Cosner, 39 (possibly though the charges were dropped)

July 1984 - Donald Giuletti, 36

Arrest and Trial

Ng was seen shoplifting from a store in South San Francisco on June 2, 1985. He had fled the scene before the police arrived, but Lake, who was in his own car on the scene, was arrested when a pistol was discovered in his car. He told police his name was Robin Stapley and produced a driver's license in Stapley's name. But, Stapley was only 26 and police could tell Lake was much older than that. He was taken back to the station to be questioned.

While searching Lake's cabin in Wilseyville, they discovered Lake's collection of weapons, and other items suggesting he was a survivalist. They proceeded to search the ranch thoroughly. Investigators found a burial site close to the dungeon, and through a long and difficult process, they found approximately 40 pounds of crushed and burned bone fragments. In all, the number of bone pieces they found added up to at least 11 bodies.

A map was found that led investigators to a spot where two five-gallon buckets were buried. They contained envelopes with names on them and ID's belonging to the victims, which lead to an estimated 25 victims in total. One of the buckets contained Lake's journals he had written in 1983 and 1984, as well as two videotapes. One tape showed the torture of Brenda O'Connor and the other was a film of the severe assault against Deborah Dubs, which was so extreme, there was no way she could have survived.

On the run, Ng fled to Canada, but his shoplifting problem soon got him in to trouble. He was arrested on July 6, 1985, in Alberta, following the shooting of security guard who had tried to restrain Ng after he shoplifted. He was subsequently convicted of assault with a weapon, shoplifting and possession of a concealed weapon. He was sentenced to four and a half

years, and when he had finished the sentence, he was retained in prison due to the extradition request for the murders in California.

Ng attempted to fight against the extradition because California had the death penalty and Canada did not. The Canadian Supreme Court denied his request and he was extradited to California in 1991. There he was charged with 12 counts of first degree murder, and so began one of longest trials in American legal history.

A total of ten attorneys had worked for Ng, some of who were sued for malpractice by Ng before he even went to trial. Eventually he decided to represent himself, which further delayed his trial by a whole year. From the time of his extradition to the start of his trial took over six years, and he finally appeared in court in October 1998.

The trial ended in February 1999, and Ng was found guilty of 11 of the 12 murders. He received the death penalty. A motion was put forward requesting the sentence to be reduced, but the presiding judge refused, and the original sentence remained. By the time it was all over, it was estimated that the prosecution of Ng cost California around \$20million.

Outcome

The day Lake was arrested, he was placed in a jail cell to await questioning by the investigating officers. He asked for a glass of water, which he received. He then proceeded to swallow cyanide pills that he had sewn into his shirt collar. Lake was taken to hospital, and four days later, on June 6, his life support was turned off and he quickly died.

Ng remains on death row, awaiting his date with the executioner.

Trivia

Quotes:

- “Give my baby back to me: I’ll do anything you want.” Victim Brenda O’Connor. “You’re going to do anything we want anyway.” Leonard Lake
- “God meant women for cooking, cleaning house and sex. And when they are not in use they should be locked up.” Leonard Lake
- Donald Lake, the younger brother of Leonard, disappeared in 1983. He is presumed dead, but no remains have been found.
- Charles Gunnar was a friend of Lake’s from when they were in the military together. His remains were discovered at the ranch in September, 1992.
- ‘The Ballad of Leonard and Charles’ is a song written about the two killers by Exodus, a thrash metal band.

Derrick Todd Lee

Date of birth: November 5, 1968

Aliases/Nicknames: The Baton Rouge Serial Killer

Characteristics: Rape

Number of victims: 7+

Date of murders: August 23, 1992 –March 3, 2003

Date of arrest: May 27, 2003

Murder method: Stabbing

Known victims: Randi Mebruer, 28; Gina Wilson Green, 41; Geralyn Barr DeSoto, 21; Charlotte Murray Pace, 21; Pamela Kinamore, 44; Trinesha Dene Colomb, 23; Carrie Lynn Yoder, 26

Crime location: Baton Rouge, Lafayette, Louisiana

Status: Sentenced to death. Died of heart disease, on January 21, 2016.

Background

Lee was born in 1968 in St. Francisville, Louisiana, to parents Samuel Roth and Florence Lee, but his father left soon after Lee was born, which his mother thought was for the best given Samuel's mental illness. Samuel was later confined to a mental institution after attempting to murder his ex-wife. Florence went on to marry Coleman Barrow, who took care of the children as if they were his own flesh and blood.

Lee had begun peeping in the windows at girls in the neighborhood by the time he was 11 years old and also later claimed he liked torturing small animals. When he was 13, he was caught committing a minor burglary, but received no punishment. The police were already well aware of his propensity for peeping in windows, but he hadn't displayed any violent tendencies at that time. That changed when he was 16 however, when he pulled out a knife during a fight with another boy. At 17 he was arrested for peeping, but still managed to avoid being sent to juvenile detention.

His obsession with peeping continued as an adult, even after he married Jaqueline Denise Sims in 1988. They had two children, Derrick Jr, and Dorris, and early on in the marriage, Lee was arrested and charged with entering an inhabited dwelling without authorization. In the years that followed, Lee seemed to be living two different lives. On the one hand he was a good father who worked hard to support his family; on the other, he dressed himself up and frequented bars to pick up women.

The couple inherited a large amount of money following the accidental death of Jacqueline's father, and Lee couldn't be happier. Now he could dress even better, spend money on women, and have flashy cars. He ended up with a regular mistress, Casandra Green, and she would later give birth

to their son in 1999. By now the money had all been spent, and Lee was back to working and living off wages.

In 2000, Lee was stressed with financial difficulties, and he and Casandra were fighting a lot. It eventually escalated to violence, and she sought a protective order against him. However, he found her three days later in the parking lot of a bar, and beat her. He was arrested and charged, and spent the next year in prison. On his parole, he was ordered to wear monitoring equipment and remain under house arrest, but he violated this order. Despite this, he wasn't returned to prison.

Lee came across two teenagers 'making out' in a parked car in 1993, and attacked them, using a harvesting tool that was 6 feet long. He hacked ferociously at the young couple until he was startled by an approaching car and fled. Miraculously, the couple survived, and would later identify Lee six years later. Over the next ten years, Lee's attacks became even more violent, leading to a number of murders that would eventually be solved using DNA.

Murders

The first known victim of Lee was Randi Mebruer who disappeared on April 18, 1998, from her home in Zachary, Louisiana. There was blood throughout the house, and although it was certain she was murdered her body was never found.

Gina Wilson Green was murdered in her home in Baton Rouge on September 23, 2001. Her body was found the following day when she hadn't turned up at work and a colleague came by to check on her. The medical examiner determined she had been raped and strangled to death.

In Addis, Louisiana, Geralyn Barr DeSoto was killed on January 14, 2002. She had been killed at home, on Stanford Avenue, and was stabbed so severely she was almost decapitated. She was discovered when her husband came home from work later that day.

On May 31, 2002, Charlotte Murray Pace was raped before being stabbed to death in her home in Baton Rouge. She had moved to Sharlo Avenue from Stanford Avenue after Gina Wilson Green was killed. A screwdriver had been used to stab Pace 83 times.

Pamela Piglia Kinamore went missing from her home in Baton Rouge on July 12, 2002. Four days later, her body was discovered underneath the Whiskey Bay Bridge. Her throat had been slit so severely that her head was almost removed and she had been raped.

Trinesha Dene Colomb had been visiting her mother's grave on November 21, 2002, in Grand Coteau, Louisiana, when she disappeared. Three days later, her raped and beaten body was found by a hunter in the woods in Scott, Louisiana.

The final known victim was Carrie Lynn Yoder. She disappeared from her home in Baton Rouge on March 3, 2003, and it was ten days before her body was found underneath the Whiskey Bay Bridge. Like the other victims she had been raped, and was badly beaten before being strangled to death.

Timeline of murders:

April 18, 1998 - Randi Mebruer 28

September 24, 2001 - Gina Wilson Green, 41

January 14, 2002 - Geralyn DeSoto, 21

May 31, 2002 - Charlotte Murray Pace, 21

July 9, 2002 - Diane Alexander

July 12, 2002 - Pamela Kinamore, 44

November 21, 2002 - Trinesha Dene Colomb, 23

March 3, 2003 - Carrie Lynn Yoder

Other possible victims:

August 23, 1992 - Connie Warner

June 13, 1997 - Eugenie Boisfontaine

Arrest and Trial

In May 2003, an identikit sketch of the alleged serial killer was released by a Multi-Agency Taskforce of the Baton Rouge police. At the same time, authorities were visiting the local parishes and collecting DNA samples from all the males they came across to try and find a suspect. One of those men was Lee, and the investigators were interested in him straight away because of his likeness to the sketch and his criminal history.

A few weeks later, the DNA testing came back as a positive match to samples found on the bodies of Green, Yoder, Kinamore, Pace and Colomb. The same day Lee had submitted his sample, he took his family and went on the run from Louisiana. However he was caught and arrested in Atlanta on May 27, 2003 and taken back to Louisiana.

His first trial took place in August 2004, for the murder of GERALYN DeSoto. He was found guilty and sentenced to life imprisonment without the possibility of parole. Just a few months later, in October, he went on trial for the rape and murder of Charlotte Murray Pace. Again he was found guilty, and he received the death penalty.

Outcome

Lee had been transported to a hospital for medical treatment, and died on January 21, 2016, from heart disease.

He is still a suspect in multiple murders but these are unlikely to be solved due to his death.

Cody Legebokoff

Date of birth: January 21, 1990

Aliases/Nicknames: Nil

Characteristics: Rape, Sexual Assault

Number of victims: 4

Date of murders: October 2009 - November 2010

Date of arrest: November 28, 2010

Murder method: Blunt force trauma

Known victims: Jill Stacey Stuchenko, 35; Cynthia Frances Maas, 35;
Natasha Lynn Montgomery, 23; Loren Donn Leslie, 15

Crime location: Prince George, Vanderhoof, Canada

Status: Sentenced to life imprisonment with parole after 25 years.

Background

Tall, blond and attractive, those who knew Legebokoff would never in a million years have thought him capable of murder. He came from a good and loving family and had what could only be described as a great childhood. He was popular with his peers right through school, and competed in ice hockey, downhill skiing and other sports. He had gotten into minor trouble from time to time with the local police, but never anything that warranted concern.

When Legebokoff moved from Fort St. James to Prince George, he moved into an apartment with three female friends. He was working as a mechanic, and liked to spend time on social media. He hadn't displayed any violent tendencies, and all that knew him found him to be 'normal', just an everyday guy that got along with most people.

That would all change in 2010 following a routine traffic stop by the Royal Canadian Mounted Police. What followed would leave his family and friends completely shocked and bewildered that the young man they knew had another side that nobody ever expected.

Murders

On October 9, 2009, Jill Stacey Stuchenko disappeared and her body was found in gravel in British Columbia four days later. The next known victim was Natasha Lynn Montgomery who disappeared around August 31, 2010. Although her remains have not been found, her DNA was found in the apartment Legebokoff was living in.

Cynthia Frances Maas went missing on September 10, 2010. Her body was found a month later in a park, and she had suffered numerous injuries. Her jaw and cheekbone had been fractured, her neck showed evidence of being stomped on, there was a penetrating wound in her shoulder blade, and multiple blunt-force trauma injuries to her head.

The last known victim was teenager Loren Leslie, who was killed on November 27, 2010. Legally blind, Leslie was believed to have met Legebokoff online through a website.

Timeline of murders:

October 9, 2009 - Jill Stacey Stuchenko, 35

August 31, 2010 - Natasha Lynn Montgomery, 23

September 10, 2010 - Cynthia Frances Maas, 35

November 27, 2010 - Loren Leslie, 15

Arrest and Trial

Legebokoff was seen to be speeding in his truck on the Highway 27, British Columbia, on November 27, 2010, and was subsequently pulled over by a police officer. At first the officer thought Legebokoff must have been out poaching, because it was unusual to see anyone on the highway at the time of night in the frigid temperatures of November.

Another officer arrived on the scene, and as they approached Legebokoff in his truck they noticed he had blood smeared on his chin, face, legs, and there was more blood on the mat beneath his feet. As they searched the truck they found a wrench and a multi-tool also covered in blood. A wallet in a monkey backpack carried an ID card belonging to Loren Leslie. When questioned about the blood, Legebokoff said it was from a deer he had poached.

Although there was no deer in the truck, they arrested him and called a conservation officer to the scene to look for the deer. But, as he started tracking Legebokoff's footprints in the snow, he came across the body of Leslie instead.

After his arrest, Legebokoff's DNA samples linked him to the murders of Maas, Montgomery and Stuchenko. He was charged with four counts of murder, and his trial eventually took place in June 2014. He pleaded not guilty, saying he had been involved in some way with three of the murders but wasn't the person who had taken the victim's lives.

Despite his attempts to throw the blame on unidentified others, he was found guilty of the four murders and received four life sentences with the possibility of parole after 25 years.

Outcome

Legebokoff filed an appeal in February 2015 due to issues with his legal representation throughout the trial and decisions by the court to change the venue for the trial. The Court of Appeal in British Columbia dismissed his appeal in September 2016, and the original conviction and sentencing was kept.

Bobbie Joe Long

Date of birth: October 14, 1953

Aliases/Nicknames: Robert Joseph Long, The Adman Rapist, The Classified Ad Rapist, Joseph Long

Characteristics: Rape

Number of victims: 10+

Date of murders: March 28 - November 11, 1984

Date of arrest: November 16, 1984

Murder method: Strangulation, shooting, cutting of throat

Known victims: Ngeun Thi Long, 20; Michelle Denise Simms, 22; Elizabeth B. Loudenback, 22; Chanel Devon Williams, 18; Karen Beth Dinsfriend, 28; Kimberly Kyle Hopps, 22; Virginia Lee Johnson, 18; Kim Marie Swann, 21; Vicki Elliott; An unidentified woman; Artis Wick

Crime location: Tampa Bay Area, Florida

Status: Sentenced to death, awaiting execution.

Background

Long was born with a genetic mutation whereby he had an extra X chromosome, and during puberty he developed breasts like a female. This resulted in severe teasing by other children, and after his parents separated, Long slept in his mother's bed until he was a teenager. The relationship between Long and his mother was dysfunctional, largely because she went through a series of boyfriends that only ever lasted a brief period. He also suffered a number of head injuries as a child, but it is not clear what these were or how they occurred.

In 1974, Long and his high school girlfriend were married, and they went on to have two children. The marriage was short-lived, and in 1980 she filed for divorce. A year later, Long would embark on a long and violent period of raping women. He would go through advertisements for appliances and if the advertiser was a woman who was alone, he would rape her. He was arrested for rape in 1981 and convicted, but requested a new trial, and the charges were eventually dropped.

Long moved to the Tampa Bay area in 1983. At that time, the Bay area experienced an average of 30-35 murders per year. From 1984, a year after Long's arrival, this rate escalated dramatically, and murdered women were being found every other week. Was this a coincidence? It wouldn't take too long to find out.

Murders

In 1984, Long began an eight-month long period of murder, with an average of one murder each week between March and November. He would drive around looking for suitable victims, often picking up prostitutes and women who were hanging out in seedy bars. He always made sure they were alone, and he later claimed that the women always approached him.

The women would agree to get in to his car and he would take them back to an apartment. He would then tie them up with ligature collars and rope. After raping his victim, he would then kill them by strangulation, bludgeoning or slitting their throat.

When Long disposed of the bodies, he would pose them in bizarre and degrading positions, usually with their legs spread apart. The bodies were often found in the woods or near a rural roadside. Of the victims, two were exotic dancers, five were prostitutes, one a student and the occupation of the other victim was unknown.

Timeline of known murders:

March 27, 1984 - Artis Wick

May 4, 1984 - Ngeun Thi Long, 20

May 27, 1984 - Michelle Simms, 22

June 8, 1984 - Elizabeth Loudenback, 22

September 7, 1984 - Vicky Elliott, 21

September 30, 1984 - Chanel Devon Williams, 18

October 7, 1984 - Kimberly Hopps, 22

October 13, 1984 - Karen Beth Dinsfriend

November 6, 1984 - Virginia Johnson, 18

November 10, 1984 - Kimberly Swann, 21

November 16, 1984 - Vicky M. Elliot, 21

Arrest and Trial

A large amount of forensic evidence had been collected from the crime scenes including carpet fibers, ligature marks, semen, and rope knots. These lead to three warrants being issued for Long's arrest on suspicion of sexual battery and the kidnapping of Lisa McVey. He was arrested on November 16, 1984, and charged.

Long confessed to the attack on McVey, and when the detectives began asking him about the unsolved murder cases he didn't want to answer their questions. They produced photos of the victims and at this point he said he needed an attorney. An attorney was never fetched, and he went on to confess to committing eight murders.

A plea bargain was agreed to with Long and on September 24, 1985, he pleaded guilty to all charges. One further trial for the murder of Michelle Simms took place in July 1986. After the trial only lasted a week, Long was found guilty and sentenced to death.

Outcome

In total, Long received the following sentences:

- 1x 5-year sentence
- 4x-99 year sentences
- 28x life sentences
- 1x death sentence

Long is still on death row awaiting his turn in the electric chair.

Long Island Serial Killer

Date of birth: Unknown

Aliases/Nicknames: The Gilgo Killer, The Gilgo Beach Killer, The Seashore Serial Killer, The Craigslist Ripper

Characteristics: Prostitutes, Escorts

Number of victims: 10 - 16

Date of murders: possibly 1996 - 2016

Date of arrest: Never identified

Murder method: Strangulation

Known victims: Maureen Brainard-Barnes, 25; Melissa Barthelemy, 24; Megan Waterman, 22; Amber Lynn Costello, 27; Jessica Taylor, 20; others unidentified

Crime location: New York

Status: Not identified or apprehended.

Background

The Long Island Serial Killer was known by many names, but his true identity has never been uncovered. It is believed he was responsible for up to sixteen murders over a twenty year period, and his victims typically were involved in prostitution. After the murders were committed, the bodies would be tossed aside along the Ocean Parkway near Gilgo Beach, Oak Beach, and Jones Beach State Park.

There is little more terrifying than knowing a rampant serial killer had been committing numerous murders without being caught. There isn't even a good suspect at the top of the list. It's believed the Long Island Serial Killer could have still been operating as recently as 2016, leaving the authorities scrambling and calling on all possible resources to try and identify and capture the murderer before he kills again.

Murders

It is believed the Long Island Serial Killer may be responsible for between 10 - 16 people over two decades, most of who were involved in the prostitution trade. Their bodies were usually dumped along the Ocean Parkway, an area near Long Island. In total there have been ten sets of remains, some of which were only partially in place, found, and many of the victims remain unidentified.

Maureen Brainard- Barnes went missing on July 9, 2007, from Long Island. An escort, she found her clients by advertising her services online, which was a common practice by many escorts. Her body was found in December 2010.

On July 10, 2009, Melissa Barthelemy disappeared from the Bronx. She also advertised online as an escort, and on the night she disappeared, she had been with a client who paid \$900 for her services directly into her bank account. She tried to call her ex-boyfriend but couldn't get through.

Another escort who advertised on Craigslist was Megan Waterman of Maine. She disappeared on June 6, 2010, and at the time, she had told her boyfriend she was going out but she never returned. Her remains were discovered in December, 2010.

Prostitute and heroin addict Amber Lynn Costello, was killed on September 2, 2010, in North Babylon, New York. A stranger had apparently offered her \$1,500 for sexual services and she had gone to meet the man when she disappeared.

20-year old Jessica Taylor went missing in July, 2004. Her torso was found on July 26, east of Gilgo Beach, and the hands and her head were missing. She was identified using DNA. Further remains of Taylor were found in

May 2011. Taylor had been working as a prostitute at the time of her murder.

Timeline of murders:

June 28, 1997 - 'Peaches'

November 19, 2000 - Jane Doe No. 6

July, 2003 - Jessica Taylor, 20

July 9, 2007 - Maureen Brainard-Barnes, 25

June 6, 2010 - Megan Waterman, 22

July 10, 2009 - Melissa Barthelemy, 24

September 2, 2010 - Amber Lynn Costello, 27

April 4, 2011- John Doe

April 4, 2011 - Baby Doe

April 11, 2011 - Jane Doe No. 3

on April 11, 2011 - Jane Doe No. 7

Possible victims:

March 3, 2007 - 'Cherries'

May 17, 2011 - Tanya Rush, 39

May 1, 2010 - Shannan Maria Gilbert

March 16, 2013 - Natasha Jugo, 31

Suspects

Profile:

- White male
- Aged in 20s - 40s
- Access to burlap sacks
- May have law enforcement knowledge
- May have ties to law enforcement

Joel Rifkin

An active serial killer in the area at the time, many have speculated that Joel Rifkin may have been the Long Island Killer. However, although he has confessed to his other crimes, he denies being responsible for any of the Long Island murders.

Former Police Chief James Burke

Shannan Gilbert's family raised the possibility that Burke may have been responsible for the murders. He was convicted in November 2016 for trying to conceal that he had beaten a man who had stolen a bag from Burke's vehicle, which happened to be full of pornography and sex toys. There has been no other evidence to suggest Burke may be responsible or capable of committing these atrocious murders.

Pedro López

Date of birth: October 8, 1948

Aliases/Nicknames: The Monster of the Andes

Characteristics: Rape, Pedophilia

Number of victims: 53 - 300+

Date of murders: 1969 - 1980, possibly 2002

Date of arrest: March 9, 1980

Murder method: Strangulation

Known victims: Unnamed young girls aged 9 - 12 years

Crime location: Colombia, Peru, Ecuador

Status: Absconded from authorities in 1998 - unknown status or whereabouts.

Background

By his own statements, L ó pez had a terrible start in life, as one of thirteen children born to a prostitute. At the age of eight, his mother caught him inappropriately fondling his little sister and she threw him out of the house. A man picked the boy up and took him to an empty house where he proceeded to sodomize young L ó pez repeatedly. At such a young age, he had been brutalized sexually, admonished and abandoned by his mother, and ostracized from his family.

When he was twelve, an American family took him in and he was enrolled in a school that primarily was for orphans. According to L ó pez he was molested by one of the male teachers, so he ran away. He ended up spending some time in prison when he was 18, during which time he claimed to have been gang-raped. He claimed he sought revenge on his attackers while still incarcerated, killing three of them, but this has not been proven.

With so much of his childhood and youth consisting of sexual assault and rape, it is no surprise that following his release from prison L ó pez became exactly the person his own assailants had been, but he took it one step further, later confessing to the murders of over 300 girls.

Murders

After his release from prison, Lopez went on an astonishing murder spree in Colombia and Ecuador, averaging three murders each week. With over 300 young girls missing, the authorities initially thought they were being sold into sexual slavery and prostitution, and they didn't suspect a serial killer was at work until Lopez was arrested for a failed abduction.

Arrest and Trial

On March 9, 1980, Lopez had tried to kidnap a young girl but was disturbed by market traders and trapped until police arrived. During an interview at the police station, he confessed to the multitude of murders. Police didn't believe him at first, but when a flash flood unearthed a mass grave, they were convinced he was telling the truth.

Outcome

In 1998, L ó pez was released from the psychiatric wing of a hospital on \$50 bail, to await his murder trial. However, he absconded, and has never been seen or heard from since. To date, it is not known if he is still alive or if he is dead.

Peter Lundin

Date of birth: February 15, 1972

Aliases/Nicknames: Bjarne Skounborg

Characteristics: Parricide, Dismemberment

Number of victims: 4

Date of murders: April 1991 and June 2000

Date of arrest: July 5, 2000

Murder method: Broken neck, strangulation

Known victims: His mother; Marianne Pedersen and her two sons

Crime location: North Carolina and Denmark

Status: Sentenced to life imprisonment.

Background

Lundin was born in Denmark to parents Ole and Anna. When he was seven years old, the family migrated to the United States, settling in Maggie Valley, North Carolina. His childhood is described as unremarkable, with no apparent indications of violence. Although, he did later say that he and his father would abuse his mother regularly.

In 1991, an argument took place between Lundin and his mother allegedly over a haircut, and Lundin proceeded to strangle his mother until she was dead. His father, Ole, then helped him hide the body by burying her on a beach at nearby Cape Hatteras. It would take eight months for her remains to be found, and Lundin and his father were quickly arrested.

Lundin, 19 years old at the time, was sentenced to serve 15 years in prison, while his father received two years for being an accomplice after the fact. While in prison, Lundin was the subject of a Danish television interview, during which he was filmed with half his face painted black. This interview was later shown to Professor Sten Levander, a Swedish psychiatrist, who gave Lundin a score of 39 out of 40 on the psychopathy checklist.

In 1999, prisons were overloaded, so Lundin was released and deported back to Denmark. On his return, he married a woman who later kicked him out of the home for being violent towards her. It was then that he met Marianne Pedersen and her two children; a meeting that would lead to tragedy for the young woman and her boys.

Murders

When Lundin met Pedersen, she was working in a brothel in Rødovre, Copenhagen. When Pedersen and her two children were reported missing on July 3, 2000, Lundin told authorities that they had gone on vacation and he was there to paint her house. When police searched the house, they found traces of blood in the basement and in Pedersen's car.

The bodies of Pedersen and her two boys have never been found, though small amounts of human tissue was found in the house. Forensic evidence also revealed markings on the floor that indicated an axe had been used and an angle grinder. Police then assumed the victims had been dismembered and disposed of.

Timeline of known murders:

April 1991 - Anna Lundin

June 16, 2000 - Marianne Pedersen and her two sons

Arrest and Trial

Lundin was arrested on July 5, 2000, and charged with the murders. He made a statement three weeks later claiming he had discovered Pedersen unconscious from drugs, and he hit her, resulting in her death. He said he had dismembered the bodies. Lundin said he withheld this at first because he didn't think the police would believe that he didn't intend to kill Pedersen because of his history.

Lundin changed his statement again on October 10, 2000. This time he admitted he was responsible for the murders, and he had killed Pedersen because he heard her talking sweetly to another man on the phone. He had broken her neck then the necks of the two young boys.

At the end of his trial in 2001, Lundin was found guilty of the three murders. He was sentenced to life imprisonment.

Outcome

While incarcerated, Lundin has filed a number of lawsuits against journalists and politicians. The first was filed against a journalist who made the statement “We are, basically, not clinical psychopaths in the Peter Lundin category”. This sentence appeared in an editorial that wasn’t even about Lundin. The case went to court where it was settled and the journalist was cleared of any wrongdoing.

Another lawsuit was filed in November 2008 against Pia Kjørgaard, the leader of the Danish People’s Party. During a program on television, Lundin was described as ‘callous’ and this prompted Lundin to file the lawsuit. He was demanding compensation of 100,000 kroner but lost the case.

Lundin decided to change his name while in prison, and is now known as Bjarne Skounborg.

Trivia

Lundin was married three times while he was incarcerated, including his first stint in prison for murdering his mother.

Kenneth McDuff

Date of birth: March 21, 1946

Aliases/Nicknames: The Broomstick Killer, The Broomstick Murderer, Richard Fowler

Characteristics: Kidnapping, Rape, Torture, Robbery

Number of victims: 9 - 14+

Date of murders: August 6, 1966 - March 1, 1992

Date of arrest: May 4, 1992

Murder method: Strangulation

Known victims: Robert Brand, 17; Edna (Louise) Sullivan, 16; Marcus Dunman, 15; Sarafia Parker, 31; Brenda Thompson; Regenia Moore, 17; Cynthia Gonzalez, 23; Colleen Reed; Valencia Joshua; Melissa Northrup, 22

Crime location: Texas

Status: Executed by lethal injection on November 17, 1998.

Background

McDuff was born in Rosebud, Texas, in 1946. His father John had a concreting business that was successful during the construction boom of the area during the 1960s. His mother Addie indulged McDuff as a child, and was once nicknamed ‘pistol packing momma’ after threatening a school bus driver with a gun after McDuff’s older brother was kicked off the bus. McDuff became known as a bully and would often pick on those who were smaller, weaker and younger than himself. At one point he picked a fight with the wrong boy though, and was beaten. He left school and started working for his father.

When he was 18, in 1964, he was charged and convicted of committing 12 counts of burglary and attempted burglary spanning three counties in Texas. He received 12 sentences of 4 years each that were meant to be served concurrently, but he was paroled in 1965. He would later end up back in prison following a fight, but wasn’t in there for very long at all. By 1966 he had made friends with an 18 year old young man named Roy Dale Green, who would end up being McDuff’s partner in the crimes that followed.

Murders

McDuff and his friend Roy Dale Green were driving around on August 6, 1966, when they came across three teenagers standing next to a car on a baseball field in Everman Texas. It was 10:00 pm at night, and McDuff noticed Louise Sullivan, who he thought was pretty, and parked a short distance away before approaching them. Producing a gun, he forced Sullivan along with Marcus Dunman and Robert Brand into the trunk of their car.

McDuff drove off and Green followed behind driving McDuff's car, and they drove into a field off the highway. After they stopped the cars, McDuff made Sullivan get out of the trunk and get into the trunk of his own car. He then fired six times into the trunk, killing Brand and Dunman. Green wiped any fingerprints of the car, and they drove to another location in McDuff's car.

Sullivan was raped by McDuff, and then by Green, who did so somewhat under duress. They raped her repeatedly, and then McDuff got a piece of broomstick out of the car and used it to choke Sullivan to death. Her body was dumped in the bushes nearby.

A couple of days later, Green ended up confessing to the parents of an acquaintance what they had done, and they told his mother. Green was urged to turn himself in, which led to McDuff being arrested also. Green served eleven years in prison, and although McDuff received three death penalties, his sentence was later commuted to life. Remarkably, he was released on parole in 1989.

On October 10, 1991, drug addicted prostitute Brenda Thompson was picked up by McDuff in Waco, Texas. After tying her up, he was driving

along when he saw a police road block and stopped about 50 feet before reaching the patrol cars. As an officer walked towards the truck, Thompson started kicking out the windshield, so McDuff took off, driving straight through the road block. When he reached a wooded area, he tortured Thompson and killed her.

Witnesses saw McDuff and prostitute Regenia Moore engaged in an argument at a motel in Waco on October 15, 1991. McDuff and Moore drove off, and after reaching a remote area, he tied Moore up and killed her. The next victim was Colleen Reed, and this time he had an accomplice, Alva Hank Worley. They kidnapped Reed on December 29, 1991, tortured her and raped her before ending her life.

Prostitute Valencia Johnson was last seen on February 24, 1992, knocking on McDuff's door. She was strangled and dumped at a golf course. Just five days later, McDuff kidnapped pregnant Melissa Northrup from a store she was working in. Her body was found on April 26 by a fisherman.

Timeline of known murders:

August 6, 1966 - Marcus Dunman, 15

August 6, 1966 - Robert Brand, 17

August 6, 1966 - Louise Sullivan, 16

October 10, 1991 - Brenda Thompson

October 15, 1991 - Regenia Moore, 17

December 29, 1991 - Colleen Reed

February 24, 1992 - Valencia Joshua

February 29, 1992 - Melissa Northrup, 22

Arrest and Trial

Authorities found out that McDuff was selling drugs and that he had an illegal gun, so a warrant was issued on March 6, 1992. In April, Worley had been brought in for questioning as he was a known associate of McDuff, and Worley confessed his involvement in the abduction of Reed. This was a major breakthrough for the police, and they held Worley in custody while they looked for McDuff.

On May 1, 1992, a coworker of McDuff's noticed his similarity to a man featured on America's Most Wanted. McDuff was going by the name of Richard Fowler at this stage, and after the coworker notified the police, it was found that Fowler was in the system for soliciting prostitutes. Fingerprint comparisons were done and Fowler was discovered to be McDuff. On May 4, McDuff was arrested.

McDuff was indicted for the murder of Melissa Northrup on June 26, 1992, and found guilty. The jury sentenced him to death. Following the appeal process, the execution date was set for November 17, 1998. Two weeks before his execution, McDuff told authorities where he had buried Colleen Reed's body.

Outcome

McDuff was taken to the death chamber on November 17, 1998 for his execution. He was declared dead at 6:26 pm, after the execution lasted for 8 minutes. He was buried in the Captain Joe Byrd Cemetery, commonly called 'Peckerwood Hill', in Texas. If a family does not want the remains, they are buried in this cemetery. The only thing written on his headstone is the date of his death, his death row number 999055 and an X which symbolizes death by execution.

Trivia

- Final statement before execution - "I'm ready to be released. Release me."
- His execution took 8 minutes.
- McDuff is buried in the Captain Joe Byrd Cemetery, also called 'Peckerwood Hill'.
- He requested a steak for his final meal but instead received hamburger shaped into a steak.

Michael Wayne McGray

Date of birth: July 11, 1965

Aliases/Nicknames: Nil

Characteristics: Requested psychiatric treatment for 'demons'

Number of victims: 7 - 18+

Date of murders: 1984 - 1998

Date of arrest: February 29, 1998

Murder method: Stabbing, strangulation

Known victims: Elizabeth Gale Tucker, 17; Mark Daniel Gibbons (cab driver); Joan Hicks, 48, and her daughter Nina, 11; Robert Assaly, 59; Gaetan Ethier, 45; Jeremy Phillips, 33

Crime location: Canada

Status: Sentenced to life imprisonment with possibility of parole after 25 years.

Background

Like so many other serial killers, McGray claimed to have had a terrible childhood at the hands of his alcoholic father, who beat him often, and sexual predators at the group homes and reform homes he grew up in. According to McGray, he enjoyed torturing and killing animals as a child, and as an adult, had an unquenchable thirst to commit murder.

He claimed he was controlled by 'demons' that made him kill, and after his arrest he requested psychiatric treatment. He was assessed by psychiatrists, with one finding he had a severe form of Tourette's syndrome that prevented him from stopping himself from killing.

McGray committed numerous murders before he was caught, and continued his murderous ways once he was incarcerated. He had said that nothing was going to stop him from killing people, and it seems that so far, he was right.

Murders

McGray picked up hitchhiker Elizabeth Tucker on May 1, 1985, and brutally murdered her. Then in 1987, he murdered Mark Gibbons, who had allegedly been his accomplice in a robbery that took place in Saint John.

On February 29, 1998, McGray was arrested for the murders of Joan Hicks and her daughter Nina in Moncton, New Brunswick. While in custody, he confessed to killing Robert Assaly and Gaetan Ethier after meeting them in a gay bar in Montreal. At the time he had been on a three-day pass from prison.

Timeline of known murders:

May 1, 1985 - Elizabeth Tucker, 17

1987 - Mark Gibbons

1991 - Robert Assaly, 59

1991 - Gaetan Ethier, 45

February 28, 1998 - Joan Hicks, 48

February 28, 1998 - Nina Hicks, 11

November 2010 - Jeremy Phillips, 33

Arrest and Trial

McGray eventually confessed to killing at least eleven people in numerous locations, namely Saint John, Halifax, Toronto, Ottawa, Vancouver, Seattle and Calgary. He offered to give details on these murders if the authorities met his demands.

On March 20, 2000, McGray pleaded guilty to killing Joan Hicks. Then on May 2001, he was charged with the death of Elizabeth Tucker. He was eventually sentenced to life imprisonment with the possibility of parole after serving 25 years for both cases.

Outcome

Following his murder of fellow inmate Jeremy Phillips in 2010, the coroner's inquest recommendation was that serial killers should be kept in single cells rather than shared rooms. McGray was put in to the Ste-Anne-des-Plaines Institution, which has the highest security rating in Canada. He is serving his life sentences concurrently, without the possibility of parole.

Peter Manuel

Date of birth: March 13, 1927

Aliases/Nicknames: The Beast of Birkenhead

Characteristics: Rape, Robbery

Number of victims: 9 - 12

Date of murders: January 2, 1956–January 1, 1958

Date of arrest: January 13, 1958

Murder method: Shooting, strangulation, bludgeoning

Known victims: Anna Knielands, 17; Marion Watt, 45, her daughter Vivienne, 16, and Marion's sister Margaret, 41; Sydney Dunn (taxi driver); Isabelle Cooke, 17; Peter Smart, 45, his wife Doris, and their son Michael, 10

Crime location: Scotland, England

Status: Executed by hanging July 11, 1958.

Background

Manuel was born in New York in 1927, to Scottish parents, and in 1932 the family moved back to the United Kingdom, settling in Birkenhead, North Merseyside. Throughout his childhood he was bullied, and he developed a habit of stealing. By the time he was ten years old, the local police already knew of Manuel as a petty thief.

Manuel's crimes turned more violent in his teens, and at the age of 15, he attacked a young woman in her own home. He broke into the house, woke her up, and used a hammer to batter her after pulling her underwear down. He went on to attack a number of other women until he was caught at the age of 16. This time he was arrested and convicted, and was sentenced to serve 16 years in Peterhead Prison.

He ended up serving further sentences for attacks against women, including rape, and in 1953 he decided to move to Glasgow, Scotland, where the rest of his family had moved to. Manuel had learnt by now that if he left witnesses, he was likely to be caught so from then onwards his attacks moved from sexual assault and rape, to murder.

Murders

Manuel attacked Anne Knielands on January 2, 1956, on a golf course in East Kilbride. He raped her then used a length of iron to bludgeon her to death. Police questioned him about the murder, but his father gave him an alibi and he was let go.

On September 17, 1956, Manuel entered the home of Marion Watt, Vivienne Watt and Margaret Brown, and shot the three women to death. At the time he was out on bail for a burglary. Police considered him a suspect in the murders, but instead they arrested William Watt, the husband of Marion. Watt was eventually released two months later.

Manuel's next victim was Sydney Dunn, a taxi driver, who was killed on December 8, 1957. He was shot to death and dumped on the moorlands in Northumbria. By the time his body was found Manuel had gone to Lanarkshire.

Isabelle Cooke disappeared on her way to a dance at the local Grammar school on December 28, 1957. Manuel abducted the young girl, raped her then strangled her to death. He buried her body in a field nearby.

The family of Peter, Doris and Michael Smart, were shot and killed on January 1, 1958, in their home in Uddingston. Following the murders, Manuel lived in their house for almost a week. He even fed their pet cat. When he left the property, he took the Smart's car, and ironically, picked up a policeman who needed a ride. He told the officer that they were looking in the wrong places.

Timeline of murders:

2 January, 1956 - Anne Knielands, 17

17 September, 1956 - Marion Watt, 45

17 September, 1956 - Vivienne Watt, 16

17 September, 1956 - Margaret Brown, 41

8 December, 1957 - Sydney Dunn, 36

28 December, 1957 - Isabelle Cooke, 17

1 January, 1958 - Peter Smart, 45

1 January, 1958 - Doris Smart., 42

1 January, 1958 - Michael Smart, 10

Arrest and Trial

Manuel was arrested on January 13, 1958, after using the new banknotes he had stolen from the Smart's at a bar. Police were notified by the bartender who thought it was suspicious he had the notes. After interviewing Manuel, he was charged with seven counts of murder.

His trial took place at Glasgow High Court, and in May 1958 he was found guilty. He had represented himself in court and tried to plead insanity, but his plan failed. He was sentenced to death.

Outcome

Manuel was lead from his cell to the execution chamber at 8:00 am, July 11, 1958. He stood on the platform and had a hood placed over his head, arms behind his back and legs strapped together, before the noose was placed around his neck. From the time the trapdoor dropped until being pronounced dead, only 24 seconds had passed. By 8:35 am Manuel's body had been put into a coffin and a short service was conducted by the chaplain.

Manuel was then buried in the prison cemetery, which was customary at that time. By 9:30 am, senior officers of the prison provided evidence at the public enquiry regarding Manuel's execution and death. Manuel left behind just 9 personal belongings - a ballpoint pen, a pair of armbands, a shirt, three handkerchiefs, a broken comb and two ties, along with £10.79 in cash which was collected by his father on July 19.

Trivia

Poem Manuel wrote during his trial:

I'm Peter Anthony Manuel,
In Barlinnie Jail, I lie,
Awaiting on a High Court jury,
To sentence me to die.
I know the Jury's verdict,
Will sentence me to death,
For I'm Peter Anthony Manuel,
The foulest beast on earth.
I know you read your papers,
And shall read about my crime,
I have not caused the death of one,
But have caused the death of nine.
I'm looking for not sympathy,
For don't you realise,
I'm Peter Anthony Manuel,
A reptile in disguise.
I murdered Isabella (sic) Cook,
And young Anne Knielands too,
Shot the Watts and shot the Smarts,

And Sidney (sic) Dunn I slew.

I did these deeds without a doubt,

My guilt was found by law,

I'm Peter Anthony Manuel,

The Rat of Birkenshaw.

I wonder who the hangman is,

Since Pierrepont's gone away,

But I know that I shall meet him,

On that ill fated day.

That day I'll get breakfast,

I know I'll get no lunch,

For the law must have its pound of flesh,

And they can hang me only once.

And when I'm dead they'll bury me

In a pit of burning lime

But my name will live for evermore,

In the story book of crime.

And when they write my epitaph

These words, they shall be seen.

Here lies Peter Anthony Manuel

Scotland's Frankenstein.

Richard Laurence Marquette

Date of birth: December 12, 1934

Aliases/Nicknames: Nil

Characteristics: Rape, Dismemberment

Number of victims: 3

Date of murders: 1961 - 1975

Date of arrest: June 30, 1975

Murder method: Strangulation

Known victims: Joan Rae Caudle, 23; Betty Wilson, 37; unidentified woman

Crime location: Portland and Salem, Oregon

Status: Sentenced to life imprisonment without parole.

Background

Marquette was born in Portland, Oregon in 1934. Little is known of his early life and childhood, and he first came into contact with law enforcement in 1956, at the age of 22. He had been arrested for attempted rape, but his victim dropped the charges so he was released without conviction. Only a few months afterwards, he was picked up by police again for disorderly conduct.

In 1957, armed with a number of wrenches to use as weapons, Marquette attempted to rob a service station in Portland, but was thwarted. This time he was convicted, and sentenced to serve 18 months in prison. However, he was released early after serving 12 months, due to good behavior while incarcerated.

It would be another four years before Marquette would once again be in the line of sight of the local police. This time, he would be brought down by a dog that happened to return home to its owner carrying a human foot.

Murders

Joan Caudle was reported missing by her husband on June 8, 1961. She was last seen leaving a bar with an unidentified man, later identified as Marquette. He claimed they went back to his house for sex, and he got too drunk and strangled her. He had no car to use to dispose of her body, so he dismembered it in the bathroom. Parts of her body were found wrapped up like butchered meat in his refrigerator.

The mutilated body of Betty Wilson was found in a shallow waterway in Marion County by a fisherman in April 1975. Marquette later told the authorities that he had met her at a nightclub and taken her back to his place for sex. When she refused to have sex with him, he strangled her and cut up her body.

An unidentified woman had met the same fate in 1974. She too had been picked up by Marquette in a bar and had agreed to go back to his home. He choked her to death and dismembered her body before burying the remains.

Timeline of murders and discoveries:

June 8, 1961 - Joan Caudle, 23

1974 - Jane Doe

April 1975 - Betty Wilson, 37

Arrest and Trial

Investigations into the murder of Caudle had led detectives to Marquette, but by the time they got to his house, he had already gone on the run. They issued a warrant for his arrest and the FBI was asked for assistance.

The day after Marquette was placed on the FBI's Most Wanted list, he was arrested and charged with Caudle's murder. He was found guilty, and sentenced to life in prison. He served eleven years before being released in 1973.

On June 30, 1975, Marquette was arrested for the murder of Betty Wilson. At trial he pleaded guilty due to the overwhelming evidence and he was sentenced to life imprisonment without parole.

Outcome

Following assessments by criminal psychiatrists, it was found that Marquette was a normal, socially adjusted man, but he would go into a murderous rage when women refused his advances.

After Marquette had confessed to the murder of the unidentified woman, he took investigators to the burial site. They located most of her remains in two shallow graves but her head was never found. Because there was no evidence with the body, and Marquette had no idea of what her name was, she was never identified.

Trivia

- He was the first person ever to be added as an eleventh name on the FBI Ten Most Wanted List.

David Maust

Date of birth: April 5, 1954

Aliases/Nicknames: Crazy Dave

Characteristics: Homosexual rape

Number of victims: 5

Date of murders: 1974 - 2003

Date of arrest: December 9, 2003

Murder method: Stabbing, strangulation, drowning

Known victims: James McClister, 13; Donald Jones, 15; Michael Dennis, 13; James Raganyi, 16; Nicholas James, 19

Crime location: Germany, Illinois, Indiana

Status: Sentenced to life imprisonment. Committed suicide in his cell by hanging, January 20, 2006.

Background

From a very young age, Maust was rejected, abandoned and generally disliked by his own mother. His parents divorced when he was seven years old, and he was left to live with his mentally unwell mother, who was once described as psychotic, disturbed, narcissistic and marginally functioning by a social worker.

Maust's mother would leave him in the care of mental institutions from the time he was nine years old, claiming he was dangerous, and alleging he once set his brother's bed on fire. She also claimed Maust had try to drown his brother, but social workers came to realize that really she was dropping him off at the hospital because she just didn't want him at home with her.

At one point Maust was placed in a children's home following his discharge from the mental hospital when he was 13. Although he had behaved very well while in hospital, he was greatly upset by his mother's lack of care or her unwillingness to visit him regularly. According to Maust and his brother, he was sexually molested by another boy while he was in the home. This would have a lasting impact on Maust.

Maust began working for his uncle in construction as a young adult, and although he was a good worker, he crashed the company truck and was fired. He went back to his mother when he was 18, hoping to live with her, but she refused to have him and instead took him to an Army recruitment office. He enlisted, and after his basic training, he was stationed in Frankfurt, Germany, where he worked as a cook. It was while he was there that he committed his first murder.

Murders

Maust was stationed in Germany with the army in 1974 when he killed James McClister. He was court martialed for the crime and claimed that it had been a moped accident that killed the young boy. He was found guilty of the charges of manslaughter and larceny and sentenced to four years imprisonment in Fort Leavenworth. He was released in 1977, despite his requests to stay in prison.

The death of Donald Jones in 1981 was a case of being in the wrong place at the wrong time. Maust had actually been looking for the boy who had molested him, when he came across Jones. He decided to murder him anyway, and he was drowned at a quarry.

On September 10, 2003, Maust committed three murders, that of James Raganyi, Michael Dennis and Nicholas James. All three had been killed, wrapped in plastic, and encased in concrete. The body of Raganyi was later found in the basement of Maust's home in Indiana.

Timeline of known murders:

1974 - James McClister, 13

1981 - Donald Jones, 15

September 10, 2003 - James Raganyi, 16

September 10, 2003 - Michael Dennis, 13

September 10, 2003 - Nicholas James, 19

Arrest and Trial

Maust was extradited to Illinois for the murder of Donald Jones in 1982, and was found to be unfit to stand trial. He was sent to a mental facility instead. He eventually went on trial in 1994, where he pleaded guilty. He was sentenced to 35 years, but because he had been waiting for his trial for 10 years, they credited him for the time served. He was released in 1999, and then went on to commit the other murders.

Maust was arrested and charged with the murders of the three teenage boys, and he pleaded guilty at his trial in November 2005. For these murders he was sentenced to three terms of life imprisonment.

Outcome

On Thursday January 19, 2006, Maust was told that he was going to be transferred to a state prison. Around 10 minutes later, guards found Maust hanging in his cell, having used a bed sheet he had braided into a rope. He was taken to a local hospital, but died the following morning, Friday January 20. He had left a 7 page note, part of which said: "Maybe with my death the families and the people can go on with their lives and not waste energy wondering why I was still alive."

Ivan Milat

Date of birth: December 27, 1944

Aliases/Nicknames: The Backpacker Murderer, The Backpacker Killer

Characteristics: Rape

Number of victims: 7+

Date of murders: 1989 - 1993

Date of arrest: May 22, 1994

Murder method: Shooting, stabbing

Known victims: James Gibson, 19; Deborah Everist, 19; Simone Schmidl, 21; Gabor Neugebauer, 21; Anja Habschied, 20; Caroline Clarke, 21; Joanne Walters, 22

Crime location: New South Wales, Australia

Status: Sentenced to life imprisonment without parole.

Background

Milat was one of 14 children born to a Croatian immigrant and an Australian mother. They lived in rural Australia, and the family tended to keep to themselves. In his youth he was fond of hunting and fascinated with guns, and one brother later claimed Milat showed psychopathic traits from a young age, though this is disputed by other family members.

The parents were very strict, most likely necessary given the large size of the family, but it was hard for them to keep track of what every child was up to. They were hardworking parents, so the children were often left to their own devices. Milat was described as an athletic, attractive boy who would take care to ensure he always looked good.

Because the children were running a little wild while the parents worked, the family became well-known to the local police. Milat was constantly in trouble from 17 years old, charged with offences like armed robbery, burglary and car theft. But it wasn't until 1971 that he first exhibited violent tendencies.

Two women who had been hitchhiking claimed Milat had raped them at knife-point, and Milat was quickly identified and arrested. However, when the case went to trial he was acquitted due to lack of evidence. Twenty years later, bodies started to turn up in the area, and Milat once again became the focus of attention of the local and federal police.

Murders

The bodies of Caroline Clarke and Joanne Walters were discovered on September 19, 1992, after two people running in Belanglo State Forest reported they had found a decomposed body. The two women had gone missing in April 1992 from Kings Cross in Sydney. Walters had been stabbed a total of 14 times, with one in the neck, nine in the back and four wounds to her chest. The wound to her neck would have paralyzed her instantly. Clarke, however, was shot in the head ten times.

Some bones were found in October 1993 in the same forest and police discovered two more bodies. They belonged to James Gibson and Deborah Everist, who had disappeared in 1989. Gibbons had a similar wound to his neck, and would have been instantly paralyzed. He had also been stabbed in the chest and back. Gibson had numerous wounds, and had clearly been beaten savagely. Her skull was fractured in two places and her jaw was fractured. She had knife wounds to her forehead and had been stabbed in the back.

A skull was found in the forest on November 1, 1993, which was later identified as belonging to missing German hitchhiker Simone Schmidl. When they found her skeleton there were the typical wounds to her spine and at least eight stab wounds altogether. Clothing was found nearby but it wasn't hers - it belonged to Anja Habschied, another missing backpacker, who had disappeared along with her boyfriend Gabor Neugebauer in 1991.

The bodies of Habschied and Neugebauer were found buried in shallow graves on November 3, 1993. Habschied had been decapitated, but her head wasn't with the rest of her remains and has never been found. Neugebauer was shot six times in the head.

Timeline of known murders:

1989 - Deborah Everist, 19

1989 - James Gibson, 19

January 20, 1991 - Simone Schmidl, 21

Late 1991 - Gabor Neugebauer, 21

Late 1991 - Anja Habschied, 20

April 1992 - Joanne Walters, 22

April 1992 - Caroline Clarke, 21

Arrest and Trial

A report placed by Paul Onions, a survivor of an attack by Milat, was found by a detective on April 13, 1994. He had hitched a ride with a man called 'Bill' and was held at gunpoint before escaping. As 'Bill' fired at him, Onions was able to jump in a vehicle driven by Joanne Berry. There had also been a tip from the girlfriend of Milat's coworker that Milat should be questioned about the murders.

Milat had a history of serving time for abducting women, and rape, so he was quickly considered a prime suspect. Onions, who was living in England, came back to Australia and when shown a picture of Milat, he identified him as 'Bill' the man who had attacked him.

Milat was arrested on May 22, 1994 at his home. At his first court appearance he didn't enter a plea, and on May 30, he was charged with the seven murders as well as the crimes against Onions. The trial began in March 1996, and fifteen weeks later, he was found guilty of all charges. He received a total of 18 years in prison for the charges related to the attack on Onions, and for each of the murders he received a life sentence, to be served consecutively with no possibility of parole.

Outcome

Milat is still suspected of committing many more murders but has yet to be charged due to lack of evidence. There are at least 7 cases where Milat is considered to be the perpetrator but these haven't been proven yet. His brother, Boris, stated in 2015 that Milat had admitted killing taxi driver Neville Knight in 1962. Boris and the man convicted of the murder, Allan Dillon, were both given polygraph tests which showed neither man was lying. Nothing has come of the accusations as yet.

Trivia

Milat had a habit of self-mutilating himself while incarcerated. On January 26, 2009, he used a plastic knife to cut off his little finger. His intention was to post it to the High Court, but instead he was taken to hospital where it was determined it was unable to be reattached.

In 2001, he had deliberately swallowed a number of items including staples, razor blades and any other metal objects he could find. He also went on a hunger strike in 2011, because he wanted a PlayStation. He lost 25kg during the strike but never received the gaming system.

Matthew Milat, his great-nephew, was found guilty of murder in 2012 after killing a man with an axe in 2010. He was sentenced to 43 years in prison. During the murder, his friend Cohen Klein recorded the whole thing on his mobile phone, so for his part in the murder he received a sentence of 32 years.

John Marsden, a lawyer who had initially represented Milat but was fired before the trial, made a shocking statement on his deathbed on July 18, 2005. He claimed Milat's sister had helped him in the murders of the British backpackers.

John Allen Muhammad and Lee Boyd Malvo

Date of birth: December 31, 1960; February 18, 1985

Aliases/Nicknames: The Beltway Sniper, The D.C. Sniper

Characteristics: Sniper attacks

Number of victims: 10+

Date of murders: February 2002 - October 2002

Date of arrest: Both arrested October 24, 2002

Murder method: Shooting

Known victims: James Martin, 55; James Buchanan, 39; Premkumar Walekar, 54; Sarah Ramos, 34; Lori A. Lewis-Rivera, 25; Pascal Charlot, 72; Dean Harold Meyers, 53; Kenneth Bridges, 53; Linda Franklin, 47; Conrad Johnson, 35; Keenya Nicole Cook, 23; Jerry Ray Taylor, 60; Billy Gene Dillon, 37; Million Waldemariam, 41; Claudine Parker, 52; Hong Im Ballenger, 45

Crime location: Washington, Maryland, Virginia

Status: Muhammad - Death sentence, executed by lethal injection on November 10, 2009. Malvo was sentenced to life imprisonment without parole.

Background

John Allen Muhammad

Muhammad was born John Allen Williams, and after his mother died when he was 4, an aunt raised him in Baton Rouge, Louisiana. He married after high school, and the couple had a son they called Lindbergh. Muhammad joined the Louisiana Army National Guard, and it seemed as though he had a promising career in the military at first. But, he started getting into trouble in the early 1980s, once for striking an officer and another time for failing to report for duty.

In 1985, Muhammad and his first wife separated, and he enlisted in the US Army. By now he had converted to Islam, and while he was stationed in Washington State, he met Mildred Green, who he would later marry. The marriage produced three children, and Muhammad was doing well in the army. He learned to be a skilled marksman, and served duties in Germany, as well as the Middle East during the Gulf War.

In 1994, Muhammad decided to leave the army and made two attempts to start his own business, but both times they failed. His marriage was failing, and in 1999, Mildred filed for divorce. Muhammad proceeded to make threats towards her, and she was able to obtain a restraining order. Soon after, Muhammad took their children and fled to Antigua. It is here that he met Lee Boyd Malvo.

Lee Boyd Malvo

Malvo was born to Lesley Malvo and Una James, and spent his early years living in Kingston, Jamaica. The relationship between his parents was volatile, and his father left the home when Malvo was 5 or 6, following a violent argument where Lesley had punched Una and she in turn tried to

attack him with a machete. Una was a very domineering, strong woman, and Lesley couldn't tolerate her anymore.

From then onwards, young Malvo was passed from family member to friend to family member, as his mother chased an income. She would regularly drop him off at someone's house while she went away to work, and this devastated the young boy. He would shift from home to home, and sometimes he would end up in shelters or boys' homes. Despite all of this, Malvo was an intelligent child and continued to go to school even though his home life was so unsettled.

Each time Una came back into town, she would uproot Malvo from wherever he was staying and they moved around the area multiple times. Just when he would settle into a place and a school they would move again. As he became a teenager, he started to seek out his father, but their relationship was never really mended, and Lesley stayed out of his life so he could keep Una out of his.

By the time Malvo crossed paths with John Allen Muhammad, he was in desperate need not only of a father figure, but of an adult that wasn't going to make him move all the time. They developed a mutual friendship and rapport, and that would lead them into a future filled with violence. Muhammad was successful in brainwashing Malvo into believing every word he was saying, and it was easy for Muhammad to convince Malvo to follow him to America.

Murders

The first victim of the snipers was Keenya Nicole Cook on February 16, 2002. Cook was shot in the face and killed in Tacoma, Washington.

Sometime in February or March, an unidentified man was shot and killed during a robbery. His identity has never been publicly announced. Jerry Ray Taylor was shot in the back on March 19 in Tucson, Arizona. This murder was linked after Muhammad confessed. The last victim killed in the first half of the year was Billy Gene Dillon who was killed on May 27.

On September 21, Million Waldemariam was shot in the head in Atlanta, Georgia. Although Muhammad never confessed to this shooting, the case was attributed to him because of the nature and similarities of the murder to his other crimes.

Muhammad shot Claudine Lee Parker in the back on September 21, while he was robbing the liquor store where she worked. Then on September 23, Hong Im Ballenger was shot in the head in Baton Rouge, Louisiana. On October 2, James Martin was outside a food warehouse in Silver Spring, Maryland, when he was shot and killed.

On October 3, the shootings escalated. James Buchanan was shot in the chest in Rockville, Maryland, and Premkumar Walekar was shot in the chest and arm in Aspen Hill. In Norbeck Sarah Ramos died after being shot in the head. Lori A Lewis-Rivera was killed in Kensington by a gunshot to the back. In Washington Pascal Charlot was shot in the chest and died.

Dean Harold Meyers was at a gas station in Manassas, Virginia, on October 9, when he was killed by a gunshot to the head. Then Kenneth Bridges was shot and killed on October 11 in Fredericksburg while pumping gas at a station.

The last two known victims were Linda Franklin and Conrad Johnson. On October 14, Franklin was shot in the head as she helped her husband put packages in their car at a Home Depot store in Falls Church. On October 22, Johnson was shot while working on bus. While parked on the street, he was shot in the abdomen. He initially survived, but died in the hospital later.

Timeline of known murders:

February 16, 2002 - Keenya Nicole Cook, 21

February or March - Unidentified male

March 19, 2002 - Jerry Ray Taylor, 60

May 27, 2002 - Billy Gene Dillon, 37

September 21, 2002 - Million Waldemariam, 41

September 21, 2002- Claudine Lee Parker, 52

September 23, 2002 - Hong Im Ballenger, 45

October 2, 2002 - James Martin, 55

October 3, 2002 - James Buchanan, 39

October 3, 2002 - Premkumar Walekar, 54

October 3, 2002 - Sarah Ramos, 34

October 3, 2002 - Lori A. Lewis-Rivera, 25

October 3, 2002 - Pascal Charlot, 72

October 9, 2002 - Dean Harold Meyers, 53

October 11, 2002 - Kenneth Bridges, 53

October 14, 2002 - Linda Franklin, 47

October 22, 2002 - Conrad Johnson, 35

Arrest and Trial

At one of the murder scenes, a note had been left by either Malvo or Muhammad telling police to look at a liquor store robbery where a murder took place in Montgomery, Alabama. Investigators located the scene and found a magazine with fingerprints on it. They were identified as belonging to Malvo. Because it was known Malvo was associated with Muhammad, he was also investigated.

Police discovered Muhammad had owned a blue Chevrolet Caprice, a former police vehicle, in 2002. The information was broadcast to the public, and it was soon located at a rest stop in Myersville, Maryland. He was subsequently arrested.

In Virginia, the trial for the murder of Meyers started in October 2003, and he was found guilty the next month. He was sentenced to death for the capital murder, and was then extradited to Maryland to face murder charges there. There, he was convicted of six counts of first degree murder on May 30, 2006. One of the most crucial pieces of evidence was the testimony of Malvo.

Muhammad never went on trial for the other murders, largely because he had already received the harshest penalty possible. His legal team made appeals regarding the Meyers murder conviction and subsequent sentence, but these were all denied.

Malvo went to trial in December 2003, and on December 18, he was found guilty of capital murder, terrorism and the use of a firearm during the commission of a murder for the death of Linda Franklin. On March 10, 2004, he was sentenced to life imprisonment without the possibility of parole.

Malvo entered a plea deal for the murder of Kenneth Bridges and the wounding of Caroline Seawell, and received another life sentence, on October 26, 2004. In 2006, Malvo confessed to murdering Jerry Taylor in 2002. In November 2006, he received further life sentences for the murders of six victims in Maryland. During an interview with William Shatner in July 2010, Malvo claimed he was responsible or involved with more than 40 murders. These claims have not been proven by the police.

Malvo appealed the Maryland federal courts in June 2013 to have his life sentences vacated, but a year later, the appeal was denied. A further appeal was filed in July 2014, and this time two of the life sentences were overturned, and the case needs to be resentenced. Malvo remains in prison to this day, waiting.

Outcome

On November 10, 2009, Muhammed was lead to the execution chamber at the Greenville Correctional Center. He had been given the choice of the lethal injection or electrocution, but he declined to choose, so the lethal injection was chosen for him. The execution process started at 9:00 pm, with the lethal chemicals being released at 9:06 pm. He was declared deceased at 9:11 pm, and after his body was cremated, the ashes were given to his son.

Trivia

Muhammad:

- His last meal consisted of chicken and red sauce, and ‘some cakes’.
- Muhammed declined to make a final statement.

.

Joseph Naso

Date of birth: January 7, 1934

Aliases/Nicknames: Crazy Joe, The Double Initial Killer

Characteristics: Rape

Number of victims: 6 - 10

Date of murders: 1977 - 1994

Date of arrest: April 11, 2011

Murder method: Strangulation

Known victims: Roxene Roggasch, 18; Carmen Colon, 22; Pamela Parsons, 38; Tracy Tafoya, 31; Sharileea Patton, 56; Sarah Dylan

Crime location: California

Status: Sentenced to death, awaiting execution.

Background

Naso served with the US Air Force in the 1950s, and was married to Judith for 18 years until they divorced. He still carried on visiting her in the Bay Area after they had split. Their son Charles developed schizophrenia, and Naso took care of him later on. Naso enrolled in a variety of classes at different colleges in the 1970s, and was living in San Francisco in the 1980s.

When he was arrested in 2011, Naso was living in Reno, Nevada, where he had been working as a freelance photographer. Although he had a history of committing crimes, they were largely confined to petty crimes, like shoplifting, even when he reached his mid-seventies. It's because of this behavior that his friends had given him the nickname 'Crazy Joe'. They had no idea just how bad Naso's behavior had been in the past, but soon they would find out.

Murders

The body of Roxene Roggasch was found on January 10, 1977, near Fairfax California. Naso had strangled her to death. Then on August 13, 1978, the body of Carmen Colon was found beside a highway just 30 miles from the site of the previous body discovery. Her body was nude when it was found.

Sharileea Patton's body washed up on the beach in 1981 near the Naval Net Depot in Tiburon, California. At the time of her disappearance, Naso was the manager of the residence she lived in. Initially he was considered a suspect in Patton's disappearance but police couldn't charge him at the time and he was let free.

Sarah Dylan was a big fan of musician Bob Dylan, and was originally named Renee Sharpiro. She disappeared in May 1992 while on her way to a Dylan concert in San Francisco. It's believed she was killed near Nevada County in California.

The body of Pamela Parsons was found in 1993 in Yuba County California. She was working as a waitress at the time near Cooper Avenue where Naso lived. The last known victim was Tracy Tafoya. Her body was found in 1994 in Yuba County. She had been drugged, then raped and strangled.

Timeline of murders:

January 10, 1977 - Roxene Roggasch, 18

August 13, 1978 - Carmen Colon, 22

1981 - Sharileea Patton, 56

May 1992 - Sarah Dylan

1993 - Pamela Parsons, 38

1994 - Tracy Tafoya, 31

Arrest and Trial

Naso was arrested on April 11, 2010, by the probation and parole authorities. When they searched his home, they found a diary containing a list of ten women and locations. A number of photographs were also discovered, and the subjects were identified as the murder victims. He was subsequently charged with the murders of Roggasch, Colon, Parsons and Tafoya.

Although the other women listed in the diary were unidentified at first, investigators were able to confirm that two of them were Patton and Dylan. Naso went on trial and on August 20, 2013, he was convicted and sentenced to death.

Outcome

Naso was considered a 'person of interest' in the Alphabet murders that took place in Rochester between 1971 and 1973. The link was made because four of Naso's victims also had double initials, and Naso had lived in Rochester for a long time. However, he was later ruled out through DNA evidence.

Trivia

Naso's DNA was found on the pantyhose Roggasch was wearing when her body was found. The pantyhose around Roggasch's neck also had DNA from Naso's ex-wife on them.

Donald Neilson

Date of birth: August 1, 1936

Aliases/Nicknames: The Black Panther

Characteristics: Kidnapping, Robbery

Number of victims: 5

Date of murders: 1974 - 1975

Date of arrest: December 11, 1975

Murder method: Shooting

Known victims: Donald Skepper; Derek Astin; Sidney Grayland; Lesley Whittle 17; Gerald Smith

Crime location: England

Status: Sentenced to life imprisonment without parole. Died of natural causes, December 18, 2011.

Background

Neilson was actually born Donald Nappey, in 1936. When he was ten years old, his mother succumbed to breast cancer at the young age of 33. He was an unhappy child and started getting into trouble when he was just 12 years old, breaking into shops, but he was always given a stern warning by the police because of his background of losing his mother at such a young age.

When Neilson was 18, he married Irene Tate, who was 20. He had been enlisted in the army at the time, serving in the King's Own Yorkshire Light Infantry, but Irene managed to talk him into leaving. Five years later, their daughter Kathryn was born, and the decision was made to change their surname to Neilson four years later, so the young girl wouldn't suffer the teasing and bullying her father had as a youngster.

When Neilson's taxi business failed, he became a builder in Bradford, West Yorkshire, and it was then that he started down the spiral of committing crimes. It is estimated he burglarized over 400 homes without being caught, in the early days of his criminal behavior. To dupe the police he would change his MO each week, so they couldn't establish a pattern that would lead them to Neilson.

Before long, he started committing armed robberies, and is believed to have done 18 of these between 1971 and 1974. Still he hadn't been caught. However, his crimes started becoming more violent as victims started to fight back. One such incident occurred when Neilson broke into a post office and threatened the postmaster with a rifle. When Neilson stated the gun was loaded, the postmaster challenged him by pulling the trigger himself. This resulted in the gun going off and blowing holes in the ceiling. A struggle ensued and the postmaster received several broken toes and a

knee to the groin. Despite getting a good look at Neilson and giving a description, the police were still none the wiser.

The postmaster wasn't to know just how lucky he was that night to escape with his life, because it was very soon afterwards that Neilson's actions turned to murder.

Murders

While robbing post offices, Neilson shot and killed three people. Donald Skepper was killed on February 15, 1974, in Harrogate, and then Derek Astin was killed on September 6, 1974, in Baxenden. The third victim was Sidney Grayland, killed on November 11, 1974 in Langley, West Midlands.

Lesley Whittle was kidnapped from her home on January 17, 1975, as part of Neilson's plan to ask her family for a ransom. He left a note behind at her home in Highley, Shropshire, asking for £50,000. The family was prepared to pay the ransom but a number of mistakes and other issues meant the money was never delivered on time.

Her body was found hanging by wire in a drainage shaft in Bathpool Park, Staffordshire, on March 7. Initially it was thought she had died from strangulation, but the pathologist determined she had died from vagal inhibition, caused by the shock of the fall, which made her heart stop. There was later some debate over whether Neilson had pushed her down the shaft or she had fallen.

The final known victim was Gerald Smith, who was killed in March 1976. Smith was a security guard, and during the hunt for Neilson for the murder of Whittle, Neilson shot Smith, who survived, but died a year later due to complications of his injuries.

Timeline of known murders:

February 15, 1974 - Donald Skepper

September 6, 1974 - Derek Astin

November 11, 1974 - Sidney Grayland

January 17, 1975 - Lesley Whittle, 17

March 1976 - Gerald Smith

Arrest and Trial

On December 11, 1975, Neilson approached two police officers in their parked car on the main road out of Mansfield, North Nottinghamshire. As he walked past he turned his face away which looked suspicious to Officer Mackenzie. Nielson was called back to the car by the officers, at which time he pulled out a sawn-off shotgun out of the bag he was carrying.

Neilson ordered the officers back into their car and sat himself in the passenger seat with the gun pressing into Mackenzie's armpit. He told him to drive to Rainworth and ordered the officers not to look at him. At one point they came to a junction in the road, and as Mackenzie asked which way to go, he swerved the steering wheel violently one way then the other.

This made Neilson look straight ahead; his concentration shifted from the gun enough for it to lower and Mackenzie saw his opportunity to end the situation. He brought the car to a halt at the same time as pushing the gun forwards, and although the gun went off, it only grazed the hand of White. Mackenzie fell out of the car and ran to a shop for help. Two customers, Roy Morris and Keith Wood, ran to help and assisted them in overpowering Neilson. He was arrested successfully after receiving a bit of a beating from the civilians who came to help the officers.

During interviews at the police station, it was discovered that his fingerprints matched those left at the drain shaft where Whittle's body was found. Neilson confessed to the kidnapping of Whittle, and provided a long statement on the crime to the police.

Following his trial in July, 1976, Neilson was convicted of kidnapping and murdering Whittle and was given a sentence of life imprisonment. A few weeks later, he was convicted of the other murders and received another

five life sentences. He was also given another 21 years for kidnapping Whittle, ten years for blackmailing Whittle's mother, and a total of 30 years for the burglary charges and gun possession. The judge recommended he serve a whole life tariff, meaning he would never get parole.

Outcome

Neilson was transported to the Norfolk and Norwich University Hospital due to having difficulties breathing, in the early hours of December 17, 2011. He died the next day.

Trivia

Ransom note left for the Whittle family:

NO POLICE £50000 RANSOM TO BE READY TO DELIVER WAIT
FOR TELEPHONE CALL AT SWAN SHOPPING CENTRE
TELEPHONE BOX 6 PM TO 1 PM IF NO CALL RETURN
FOLLOWING EVENING WHEN YOU ANSWER GIVE NAME ONLY
AND LISTEN YOU MUST FOLLOW INSTRUCTIONS WITHOUT
ARGUMENT FROM TIME YOU ANSWER YOU ARE ON A TIME
LIMIT IF POLICE OR TRICKS DEATH

SWAN SHOPPING CENTRE KIDDERMINSTER DELIVER £50000 IN
A WHITE VAN

£50000 IN ALL OLD NOTES £25000 IN £1 NOTES AND £25000 IN £5
THERE WILL BE NO EXCHANGE ONLY AFTER £50000 HAS BEEN
CLEARED WILL VICTIM BE RELEASED

- The nickname 'The Black Panther' was given to Neilson after Astin's murder. His wife had described the killer as being quick like a panther, and he had been wearing dark clothing. A journalist therefore called him the Black Panther and the nickname stayed.

Film

The Black Panther (1977) - a film about Neilson's life and the crimes he committed.

Dennis Nilsen

Date of birth: November 23, 1945

Aliases/Nicknames: The Muswell Hill Murderer, The Kindly Killer

Characteristics: Homosexual Rape, Necrophilia, Dismemberment

Number of victims: 12 - 15

Date of murders: December 30, 1978–January 26, 1983

Date of arrest: February 9, 1983

Murder method: Strangulation by ligature, drowning

Known victims: Stephen Holmes, 14; Kenneth Ockenden, 23; Martyn Duffey, 16; William Sutherland, 26; Malcolm Barlow, 23; John Howlett, 23; Archibald Graham Allen, 27; Stephen Sinclair, 20; others unidentified

Crime location: London, England

Status: Sentenced to life imprisonment without parole.

Background

Nilsen's father Olav had been a Norwegian soldier, and when the Nazi's conquered Norway during World War II, he was sent to Scotland for safety. There, he met Elizabeth Whyte, the daughter of a fisherman. They married, and had three children - Olav Jr., Dennis and Sylvia. Olav Sr. was not happy in his paternal role, and the couple divorced in 1948, at which time Elizabeth's father stepped in to fulfill the fatherly role.

Nilsen was close to his grandfather until he died in 1951, just before Nilsen turned six. He had suffered a fatal heart attack while at sea, and when his body was brought back to land, Nilsen's mother encouraged the young boy to look at his dead grandfather, telling him he was 'sleeping'. From then onwards, Nilsen's personality changed, becoming more subdued and pushing away any adults that tried to show him affection.

A few years later, Nilsen had a near-death experience when he almost drowned in the sea. Following the initial panic, he became calm, and was convinced his grandfather was coming to save him. Instead, he was rescued by other young people nearby. His mother remarried not long afterwards, and they moved further inland, away from the sea.

As Nilsen entered puberty, he came to realize that he wasn't heterosexual. But he also wasn't sure if he was bisexual or gay, and he found that the boys he found attractive looked similar to his own sister. To try and figure out how he felt, Nilsen fondled both his brother and sister while they were asleep, but his brother woke up and from then bullied Nilsen about it.

At 14, Nilsen joined the Army Cadet Force, and subsequently enlisted in the British Army when he finished high school. He was deployed to West Germany, and discovered that by drinking large amounts of alcohol he was

able to socialize more comfortably. An incident occurred where he awoke on the floor of a friend's apartment after a heavy night of drinking. Nothing sexual had taken place, but the event became the background for the fantasy Nilsen would come to enjoy, where one would have sex with an immobile or unconscious partner.

Nilsen was deployed to South Yemen in 1967, where violent ambushes and abductions were taking place, and several of his companions were subsequently kidnapped and murdered. Nilsen almost met the same fate when he was abducted, but he was able to fight back and escape. From there he was sent to serve in Cyprus and Britain before being sent back to Germany. In 1972, Nilsen retired from the Army and decided to become a police officer. It was at this time that his brother outed him to his mother as being homosexual.

During his year of service with the Metropolitan Police, Nilsen frequented the local gay bars. Following his resignation from the police force, he became a security guard for a short period then settled into work at a job center. He embarked on several romantic relationships but all ended quickly, and he came to believe he was incapable of having a normal relationship. Now, he could act out those fantasies that had been on his mind for a long time.

Murders

Stephen Holmes met Nilsen at a pub in December 29, 1978. The young teenager had tried without success to buy some alcohol, and Nilsen, having consumed quite a bit of alcohol, invited him back to his house for drinks. Nilsen thought the boy was older. They drank until they fell asleep, and when Nilsen woke the next morning, he looked at Holmes sleeping and was scared the boy would leave and Nilsen would have to spend New Year's Eve by himself. So using a necktie, he strangled Holmes until he was unconscious then drowned him in a bucket of water.

After he had killed Holmes, he twice masturbated over the body then placed it under his floorboards. About eight months later, Nilsen constructed a pyre, like many cultures build to burn their dead, and incinerated Holmes in his backyard.

Nilsen met Kenneth Ockenden on December 3, 1979, in a pub in London. He offered to give the young Canadian a tour of London, and when it was finished, he invited him back to his apartment. While they were listening to music, he strangled Ockenden to death. The next morning, Nilsen posed the body in a variety of positions and took photographs. He watched television for a while then wrapped the body in plastic and put it under the floorboards. Over a two week period, Nilsen dug up and reburied Ockenden's body four times. In between each reburial, he would put the body in a chair near him while he drank alcohol and watched television.

Martyn Duffey was hitchhiking when he crossed paths with Nilsen. He was invited back to Nilsen's apartment and strangled into unconsciousness then drowned in the sink in the kitchen. He washed the body, and over the next two days, he masturbated over the body and kissed the corpse. He eventually placed the body under the floorboards when it started to bloat.

By August 1980, Nilsen had tried a number of methods to eliminate the decomposition odors and maggot infestations. He finally removed the bodies from beneath the floorboards, dismembered them, and burned them behind his home. His landlord told him he was going to renovate in October, so Nilsen disposed of Ockenden's body and shifted to a flat in Muswell Hill. This place was much smaller, with no garden access and no room under the floorboards, so it was going to be harder to dispose of any bodies.

Nilsen was followed home by William Sutherland in August 1980. Sutherland was soliciting for money by offering sex, which Nilsen initially declined. Back at his apartment, Nilsen woke up the next morning and found the strangled corpse of Sutherland but couldn't remember actually doing the deed.

In March 1982, John Howlett was invited back to Nilsen's apartment for a drink, and after Howlett fell asleep, Nilsen watched him for a while then tried to strangle him. Howlett woke and struggled against Nilsen as hard as he could, but Nilsen managed to strangle him unconscious again. After three unsuccessful attempts to strangle him to death, he eventually drowned Howlett in the bath. Howlett's body was dismembered, and the organs and flesh were flushed down the toilet. The bones were put out with the trash, without detection.

Archibald Graham Allen was killed sometime in late 1982, after being invited to Nilsen's apartment for a meal. While Allen was eating the omelet Nilsen prepared for him, he was strangled. His body was put into the bath, and stayed there for the next three days, at which point Nilsen requested a day off work so that he could dismember the body.

The last known victim was Stephen Sinclair, who was killed on January 26, 1983. They had consumed alcohol and drugs, and while Sinclair was in a stupor in the chair, Nilsen strangled him. Afterwards he removed bandages from Sinclair's wrists and discovered the young man had tried to kill himself just days before. He washed the body and applied talcum powder to it before laying it on his bed. He placed different mirrors around the bed, then undressed himself and lay beside Sinclair's corpse. He even slept beside it for the night. He then dismembered the body and disposed of it in trash bags.

Timeline of known murders:

December 29, 1978 - Stephen Dean Holmes, 14

December 3, 1979 - Kenneth Ockenden, 23

May 1980 - Martyn Duffey, 16

August 1980 - William Sutherland, 26

November 1980 - May 1981 - Seven unidentified victims

September 18, 1981 - Malcolm Barlow, 23

March 1982 - John Howlett, 23

Late 1982 - Archibald Graham Allen, 27

January 26, 1983 - Stephen Sinclair, 20

Arrest and Trial

Strangely, Nilsen made a complaint on February 4, 1983, that the drains were blocked, which seemed bizarre given the situation. A plumber investigated the problem and reported to Nilsen he had found it blocked with small bones and a fleshy substance. Nilsen joked that someone must have flushed their Kentucky Fried Chicken down the toilet.

The plumber and his supervisor came back the next day to finish clearing out the drain but discovered someone had already done it. This seemed suspicious so they further investigated the pipes and found more flesh and bones. They immediately notified the police who had the flesh and bones examined and identified as being human remains.

Police waited at Nilsen's door on February 9, for him to come home and they noticed the familiar decomposition odor wafting out under the door. When Nilsen arrived, they told him there were human remains in the drain and he pretended to be shocked. The officers asked him where the rest of the body was, and Nilsen took them inside and showed them the body parts in his closet.

When the officers asked if there were more victims, Nilsen stated that he would tell the long story at the station. On the drive to the station, one of the officers asked if the remains belonged to one person or were there two, to which Nilsen replied, "Fifteen or sixteen, since 1978." At the station he made a full confession and showed police where remains had been destroyed at his former place on Melrose Avenue.

For his trial, Nilsen was assessed by two psychiatrists to determine whether or not he was sane. They found he had difficulty with his emotions, and the only one he could express was anger. One of the psychiatrists diagnosed

him with borderline pseudo-normal narcissistic personality disorder, and he suffered from occasional schizoid outbreaks.

At his trial, he stated he never had a premeditated plan to kill his victims; rather it was something that suddenly occurred moments before the act. He was found guilty of six murders on November 4, 1983. He was sentenced to life imprisonment with the possibility of parole after 25 years.

Outcome

Home Secretary Michael Howard changed Nilsen's sentence to whole life tariff, removing the possibility of parole. Nilsen responded that he was happy with it, and that he didn't want to be free again anyway.

Trivia

- In the years following his incarceration, Nilsen has composed an unpublished, 400-page autobiography, entitled *The History of a Drowning Boy*.
- "When I was with people, I was in the "real" world, and in my private life, I snapped instantly into my fantasy life. I could oscillate between the two with instant ease."
- Several items confiscated from Nilsen's Cranley Gardens address — some of which had been introduced as evidence at Nilsen's trial — now remain on display at New Scotland Yard's Black Museum.[138] These exhibits include the stove upon which Nilsen had boiled the heads of his final three victims; the knives he had used to dissect several of his victims' bodies; the headphones Nilsen had used to strangle Kenneth Ockenden; the ligature he had fashioned to strangle his last victim; and the bath from his Cranley Gardens address in which he had drowned John Howlett and retained the body of Graham Allen prior to dissection.

Gordon Stewart Northcott

Date of birth: November 9, 1906

Aliases/Nicknames: Nil

Characteristics: Kidnapping, Homosexual Sadism, Dismemberment

Number of victims: 3 - 20

Date of murders: 1926 - 1928

Date of arrest: September 19, 1928

Murder method: Shooting, bludgeoning with an axe

Known victims: unidentified Mexican boy; Lewis Winslow¹²; Nelson Winslow, 10; Walter Collins, 9

Crime location: Riverside, California

Status: Executed by hanging on October 2, 1930.

Background

The childhood of Northcott is largely unknown, though he did claim that his father had sexually abused him when he was ten years old. His father ended up in a mental asylum, and later in life committed suicide. Northcott's paternal uncle was imprisoned for murder and died while serving a life sentence.

In 1926, Northcott, his mother Sarah Louise, and Sanford Clark, his 13-year-old nephew, settled on a chicken ranch in Wineville, near California. According to Clark following their arrest, Northcott had repeatedly raped and beaten Clark, and forced him to do things to the boys they abducted, including murder. Just how much his mother Sarah and young Clark were responsible for is unclear, but a number of boys disappeared at the chicken ranch, and all three were eventually caught and charged.

Murders

Brothers Lewis and Nelson Winslow went missing on May 16, 1928, in Pomona. Northcott later claimed that he had killed Lewis, but Sanford had killed Nelson. He said he felt sorry later, because Lewis had been so distressed at the time.

Walter Collins vanished from home on March 10, 1928. Northcott's mother was convicted of murdering the boy, but evidence suggested her son had ordered her to do it. The disappearance of Collins became a major incident, especially after another little boy appeared trying to convince Mrs. Collins that he was Walter. She knew he wasn't, and notified the authorities who eventually put her in to a mental institution. Eventually she was released, and the young boy, later identified as Arthur Hutchins Jr., confessed that he was an imposter.

After kidnapping the boys, Northcott would get tired of them after a while and kill them either with an axe or by gunshot. The bodies were covered with quick lime to dissolve the flesh and the bones were buried in the desert. Only one body was ever found, belonging to a Mexican teenaged boy, but the head was missing and the victim was never identified.

Arrest and Trial

In the summer of 1928, Northcott laid a complaint with the district attorney's office about his neighbor, claiming his behavior was violent and profane and upsetting his nephew. When this was discussed with the neighbor, he claimed he had seen Northcott beating Clark at times and he urged the investigators to see what was going on at the Northcott ranch.

Meanwhile, Sanford's parents' contacted immigration wanting their son back, so immigration officials went out to the ranch and took Sanford into custody. Once he was away from Northcott, Sanford informed authorities about what exactly had been going on at the ranch. He went back to the ranch with investigators and showed them grave sites. When these were dug up, fingers and ankle bones were discovered.

Also found at the ranch were a hatchet and axe, stained with blood.

Northcott had taken off to Canada, but was caught and sent back to face the murder charges. His mother was also arrested and charged with the murder of Walter Collins.

Northcott went on trial for 27 days, and it finally ended on February 8, 1929. He was found guilty of the murders of the Mexican victim and the Winslow brothers and was sentenced to death. His mother went on trial for the death of Collins, and after being found guilty, was sentenced to life imprisonment on December 31, 1928. The only reason she didn't get the death penalty was because she was female.

Outcome

On October 2, 1930, Northcott was lead to the execution room screaming. His whole body trembled as he begged the guards not to walk so fast. It was thirteen steps up to the gallows and the guards had to drag him almost the entire way. He asked the guards if the hanging would hurt and requested a blindfold so he wouldn't have to see the gallows. Northcott moaned, screamed and cried out all the way to the top, and just before the trapdoor was released, he screamed out "A prayer--please, say a prayer for me." The trapdoor sprung, and he was hanged.

Trivia

Film

The Changeling (2008) - A film based on the Wineville murders, and the search by Christine Collins to find her missing son, starring Angelina Jolie.

Anatoly Onoprienko

Date of birth: July 25, 1959

Aliases/Nicknames: The Beast of Ukraine, Terminator, Citizen O

Characteristics: Robbery

Number of victims: 52

Date of murders: 1989 - 1996

Date of arrest: April 16, 1996

Murder method: Shooting, striking with an Axe

Known victims: Men, women, children, including whole families

Crime location: Ukraine

Status: Death sentence later commuted to life imprisonment. Died from natural causes, on August 27, 2013.

Background

Onoprienko's father was a decorated soldier, who had served during World War II and received medals for bravery. His mother died when he was four years old, and Onoprienko was raised by his grandparents for a short while before being sent to an orphanage. His brother was thirteen years older, so was spared from being sent away.

Onoprienko later claimed that it was the orphanage and his experiences there that set him on the violent path he eventually took. By the time he was caught by the authorities at the age of 37, he had committed 52 murders, by his own accounts. Onoprienko spared no-one, killing every member of a household, including the children.

Murders

Onoprienko always looked for a house that was isolated, and would then create some sort of commotion outside to get the attention of the occupants. Then he would kill the adult male of the house, followed by the wife and then the children. To try and cover his tracks he would set the house on fire, hoping that by burning it down no evidence would be found. He also killed any potential witnesses who happened to cross his path at the scenes.

The first victims were a large family of ten in 1989. He had been in the middle of robbing their house when they interrupted him. He later claimed another man had been with him that night, Sergei Rogozin. Within the same year, Onoprienko killed five people who had been sleeping in their car. He then set fire to the bodies.

On December 24, 1995, he killed the Zaichenko family while robbing their home. The family of four was shot with a sawed-off double-barreled shotgun. He then set the house on fire. Another family of four was shot dead on January 2, 1996. Immediately after, Onoprienko killed a man who had walked by at the time.

Four more people were killed on January 6, 1996, but this time they weren't a family in their home. Onoprienko stopped cars on the highway, then killed the drivers. Eleven days later, he murdered the Pilat family in their home and set it on fire. Two other people were killed outside the home, as Onoprienko was worried about witnesses.

On January 30, 1996, a woman and her two sons were killed, as well as their visitor. Another family, the Dubchaks, was killed on February 19, 1996. The father was shot along with the son, but the mother and daughter

were mauled to death with a hammer. He tried to demand money from the daughter but she refused so he killed her.

The Bodnarchuk family was brutally killed on February 27, 1996. The parents were shot to death and the young daughters, just 7 and 8, were hacked to death with an axe. About an hour after killing the family, Onoprienko noticed a neighbor wandering around the property so he shot him and hacked his body with the axe.

The last of the known victims were the Novosad family of four. They were shot and killed on March 22, 1996, and their house was set on fire.

Timeline of murders:

1989 - A family of 10

1989 - Five victims sleeping in a car

December 24, 1995 - four members of the Zaichenko family

January 2, 1996 - family of four

January 6, 1996 - four people in separate killings

January 17, 1996 - five members of the Pilat family, and two witnesses

January 30, 1996 - Marusina, her two children and a visitor

February 19, 1996 - four members of the Dubchak family

February 27, 1996 - four members of the Bodnarchuk family and another man

March 22, 1996 - Four members of the Novosad family

Arrest and Trial

In April 1996, Onoprienko had moved in with a relative and they noticed he had a collection of weapons. The relative kicked him out of the home, and the police were notified. He was arrested on April 16, 1996, at which time police discovered over 100 items that could be linked to the multiple murders.

He confessed to killing eight people between 1989 and 1995 initially, but later admitted being responsible for a total of 52 murders. He told the authorities that he had been hearing voices that instructed him to kill.

His trial was delayed for a number of reasons, the main one being that under Ukraine law, the defendant is to read all of the evidence against them before the trial can start, and considering there were more than 99 volumes of information on the case, it was going to take a while. Also, under the law, the court must pay for accommodation and travel costs for witnesses, and in this trial there were going to be 400 witnesses called. The court was unable to finance it, so they made an appeal on television and the government agreed to carry the costs.

Once the trial started in November 1998, the defense lawyer initially tried to convince the court that Onoprienko was insane, but psychiatrists examined him and found him fit to stand trial. When Onoprienko was brought in to the court, he was put into a metal cage, most likely for his own protection from an enraged public.

His accomplice in the first murders, Rogozin, was charged at the same time and was convicted of being an accomplice for the first nine murders. He was sentenced to 13 years in prison. For Onoprienko, the jury deliberated

for just three hours before reaching their verdict of guilty. Onoprienko received the death penalty which was to be carried out by firing squad.

Fortunately for Onoprienko, the Ukraine was hoping to join the Council of Europe, and as such, they were to abolish capital punishment. Although many politicians and the general public felt that this case was so abhorrent he should still die, his sentence was commuted to life imprisonment.

Outcome

On August 27, 2013, Onoprienko died of heart failure while incarcerated at Zhytomyr prison. He was 54 years old at the time of his death.

Clifford Olson

Date of birth: January 1, 1940

Aliases/Nicknames: The Beast of British Columbia

Characteristics: Pedophilia, Rape, Mutilation

Number of victims: 11+

Date of murders: 1980 - 1981

Date of arrest: August 12, 1981

Murder method: Strangulation, stabbing, bludgeoning with a hammer

Known victims: Christine Weller, 12; Colleen Daignault, 13; Daryn Johnsrude, 16; Sandra Lynn Wolfsteiner, 16; Ada Anita Court, 13; Simon Patrick James Partington, 9; July Kozma, 14; Raymond Lawrence King Jr., 15; Sigrun Charlotte Elisabeth Arnd, 18; Terry Lyn Carson, 15; Louise Simonne Marie Evelyn Chartrand, 17

Crime location: British Columbia, Canada

Status: Sentenced to life imprisonment. Died from cancer on September 30, 2011.

Background

Olson had been a problem right from the start, constantly getting into trouble even as a young boy. He was quite short but very stocky as a child, and was regularly getting into fights, often losing and being beaten. He told his father he was going to learn how to box, and after he started training, he went round and sought revenge on every boy that had ever beaten him up.

Schooling was unsuccessful, with Olson dodging classes from the age of 10. As a result, he left school after completing eighth grade, and instead embarked on a life of committing crime. As a teenager, he was a loner, and failed at everything he attempted. The first time he went to jail was when he was 17, in 1957. Over the next 24 years, he was convicted of almost 100 crimes, including forgery, fraud, theft, armed robbery, escape, gross indecency, buggery, possession of firearms and numerous others.

Olsen managed to escape from jail on seven occasions, at one point feigning illness and escaping on his way to the hospital, despite being escorted by three guards. He was on the run for a week before being caught with the help of a police dog. It wasn't the first time he had been found by a police dog - he had experienced the same thing a year earlier while on the run.

In 1980, Olson met Joan Hale, a woman who had recently become divorced from her violent and abusive husband. A year later, their son Stephen was born, and a month after the birth, they married. What Joan didn't know, was that her new husband had already murdered someone by the time they married, and he had no intention of stopping.

Murders

Christine Weller, the first known victim, was abducted on November 7, 1980, from Surrey in British Columbia. Her body wasn't discovered until Christmas Day, and she had been stabbed multiple times until she was dead.

Olsen kidnapped Colleen Daignault on April 16, 1981, and her body was found five months later. The next victim was Daryn Johnsrude, who was killed on April 22. Two weeks after his death, his body was found. On May 19, Sandra Wolfsteiner was abducted and killed by Olsen, followed by Ada Court in June.

Olsen's murderous acts were escalating, and in July 1981, there were six victims. Nine-year-old Simon Partington was abducted on June 2, raped then strangled. The next was Judy Kozma, abducted from New Westminster, raped and strangled on July 9. Her body was found near Weaver Lake on July 25. Raymond King was abducted, raped and bludgeoned to death on July 23. Then, German tourist Sigrun Arnd was raped and bludgeoned to death on July 25.

The last two victims were Terri Lyn Carson and Louise Chartrand. Carson was raped and strangled to death on July 27, and Chartrand was killed on July 30.

Timeline of known murders:

November 17, 1980 - Christine Weller, 12

April 16, 1981 - Colleen Daignault, 13

April 22, 1981 - Daryn Johnsrude, 15

May 19, 1981 - Sandra Wolfsteiner, 16

June 21, 1981 - Ada Court, 13

July 2, 1981 - Simon Partington, 9

July 9, 1981 - Judy Kozma, 14

July 23, 1981 - Raymond King, 15

July 25, 1981 - Sigrun Arnd, 14

July 27, 1981 - Terri Lyn Carson, 15

July 30, 1981 - Louise Chartrand, 17

Arrest and Trial

Olsen was arrested on August 12, 1981, under suspicion of trying to abduct two girls. He was then charged with the murder of Judy Kozma on August 25. At this time he reached an agreement with the authorities that in exchange for confessing to eleven murders and showing them where the yet to be found bodies were, he would receive \$10,000 for each victim to be paid to his wife.

His wife and son received \$100,000 thanks to the deal Olsen made with the authorities, which made a lot of people angry. He then pleaded guilty to the eleven murders in January 1982. He received eleven life sentences to be served concurrently.

Outcome

It was reported by the media in September 2011 that Olson had terminal cancer, and he had been taken to a hospital for treatment. On September 30, 2011, he died, and was 71 years old at the time of his death.

Trivia

- Olson scored 38/40 on the Psychopathy Checklist.
- Escaped from prison seven times.
- Sent crude and vulgar cards to the parents of the murdered children.
- Sent pornographic letters to members of parliament.

Carl Panzram

Date of birth: June 28, 1891

Aliases/Nicknames: Carl Baldwin, Jeff Davis, Jefferson Davis, Jefferson Rhodes, Jeff Rhodes, Jack Allen, Jefferson Baldwin, John King, John O'Leary, Cooper John, Teddy Bedard

Characteristics: Sodomy, Robbery

Number of victims: 22

Date of murders: 1920 - 1929

Date of arrest: August 16, 1928

Murder method: Strangulation, shooting, bludgeoning

Known victims: Men and boys - most unnamed or unidentified

Crime location: New York, Massachusetts, Connecticut, Maryland, Pennsylvania, Kansas, USA - Luanda, Angola

Status: Executed by hanging on September 5, 1930.

Background

Panzram was raised on the family farm along with his five brothers and sisters. From the age of 12, he started stealing, starting with food and a gun from a neighbor. Not long afterwards, he was sent to the Minnesota State Training School to straighten him out. According to Panzram, he received numerous beatings and torture by staff. These took place in 'The Painting House' which was named as such by other children there as those who went into the room came out 'painted' - in other words they were covered in colorful bruises and blood. Full of hatred, Panzram burnt the 'Painting House' down, but was never suspected.

By the time he was into his mid-teens, Panzram was already an alcoholic. He committed multiple burglaries and thefts, and was in constant trouble with the law. He had run away from home when he was 14, and was allegedly gang-raped by a group of men on a train car. When he was 15, he enlisted in the army, but was convicted of larceny within a year. He was sent to Fort Leavenworth's United States Disciplinary Barracks and served a two-year sentence until he was released in 1910.

As an adult, Panzram continued to commit burglaries, and was incarcerated numerous times. Even in prison he was in constant trouble for attacks against the guards and failure to follow orders. As a result, the guards would sometimes beat Panzram or dole out other similar punishments. Panzram was a very strong man, enabling him to later overpower his victims.

Murders

For eight years, Panzram terrorized the people in many counties, robbing and killing as he traveled. His motive was almost always robbery, and if there happened to be someone present, they were killed. At one point he bought a yacht, and would lure sailors from bars in New York, get them drunk then rape them before shooting them. He would dump the bodies in Long Island Sound, near Execution Rocks Light.

After his yacht sank, Panzram traveled to Africa. According to Panzram, he killed a young boy, and another time he hired a rowing boat and shot the six rowers before tossing them overboard to the crocodiles. He returned to America, and beat one small boy to death on July 18, 1922, in Salem. Later that year, he strangled another young boy to death near New Haven.

According to Panzram he shot and killed a man in June 1923 when he attempted to rob Panzram. He claimed he had killed someone while burglarizing a home, and killed two more young boys in Philadelphia - one in 1921 and the other in 1928. He later claimed that he was considering putting arsenic into the city's water supply so he could kill masses.

Arrest and Trial

On August 16, 1928, Panzram was arrested for committing a burglary in Washington. While he was being interrogated about the burglary, he confessed to killing two boys. He was tried and convicted and sentenced to 25 years to life imprisonment. He told the warden he would kill the first person that bothered him, and this later came true.

On June 20, 1929, Panzram killed Robert Warnke, the prison laundry foreman. He bashed him to death with an iron bar. This time when he went on trial he was given the death sentence. He refused all efforts to appeal his sentence and when human rights activists tried to help on his behalf, he sent them death threats.

Outcome

On September 5, 1930, Panzram's scheduled execution took place. He didn't go quietly though, as he reportedly spat in the face of the executioner as he placed the hood over his head. After he was hanged he was buried at the Leavenworth Penitentiary Cemetery, and the only thing on his headstone is his prison number.

Trivia

- The best friend Panzram ever had was a prison guard, Henry Lesser, who eventually wrote out Panzram's life story.
- He boasted of committing over 1000 acts of sodomy.
- His final words were "Hurry it up, I could hang a dozen men while your fooling around."
- "I don't believe in man, God nor Devil. I hate the whole damned human race, including myself... I preyed upon the weak, the harmless and the unsuspecting. This lesson I was taught by others: Might makes right."

Poem written by Panzram:

I sat down to think things over a bit.

While I was sitting there,

a little kid about eleven or twelve years old came bumming around.

He was looking for something. He found it, too.

I took him out to a gravel pit about one-quarter mile away.

I left him there,

but first I committed sodomy on him and then killed him.

His brains were coming out of his ears when I left him,

and he will never be any deader.

Gerald Parker

Date of birth: 1955

Aliases/Nicknames: The Bedroom Basher, The Bludgeon Killer

Characteristics: Rape, Home Invasion

Number of victims: 5+

Date of murders: 1978 - 1979

Date of arrest: Was already in prison for a parole violation when DNA matched him to the killings.

Murder method: Bludgeoning with blunt objects

Known victims: Sandra Kay Fry, 17; Kimberly Gaye Rawlins, 21; Marolyn Kay Carleton, 31; Debora Kennedy, 24; Debra Lynn Senior, 17; an unborn child (Chantel Marie Green)

Crime location: Orange County, California

Status: Sentenced to death, awaiting execution.

Background

Parker was a former US Marine who had a fairly clean criminal record until 1980. He had spent a period of time in Juvenile Detention in the 1960s after being caught sniffing glue, but had stayed out of trouble from then onwards.

In 1980 he was stationed at the Marine Air Station in El Toro California.

During this time, he raped a 14 year old girl, and was quickly apprehended.

He received a six-year prison sentence for the crime, and a DNA sample was stored as was protocol. As time passed, and technology advanced, it was this sample that would crack open a case of murder, and further revelations from Parker himself would lead to the release of a man who had previously been wrongly convicted for a murder he never committed.

Murders

Parker was nicknamed the 'Bedroom Basher' because of the ferocity of the sex attacks and murders he committed in the 1970s in Orange County. Between 1978 and 1979, five women were raped and murdered by Parker. Another woman, Dianna D' Aiello (formerly Green) was pregnant when she was attacked, and though she survived, her unborn child did not.

Timeline of known murders:

December 2, 1978 - Sandra Kay Fry, 17

April 1, 1979 - Kimberly Rawlins, 21

September 14, 1979 - Marolyn Carleton, 31

September 30, 1979 - Unborn child (Chantel Marie Green)

October 7, 1979 - Debora Kennedy, 24

October 21, 1979 - Debra Lynn Senior, 17

Arrest and Trial

When Parker was linked to the murders through DNA technology, he was already imprisoned for other convictions. When investigators showed him the evidence, he confessed to being the Bedroom Basher. He went to trial and was convicted in October 1998, on six counts of first degree murder, one count of attempted murder, and six counts of first degree rape.

Parker was sentenced to death in January 1999, and also received life plus 64 years.

Outcome

The father of the unborn baby that was killed, Kevin Green, was initially arrested and charged with the attack on his wife that resulted in the loss of the baby. Because the baby was full-term, Kevin Green was charged and convicted of the murder and was sent to prison for 17 years before it was discovered that Parker was actually the attacker.

Thierry Paulin

Date of birth: November 28, 1963

Aliases/Nicknames: The Monster of Montmartre, The Grim Reaper of Paris, The Beast of Montmartre, The Old Lady Killer

Characteristics: Robbery

Number of victims: 18 - 21

Date of murders: 1984 - 1987

Date of arrest: December 1, 1987

Murder method: Strangulation, asphyxiation, stabbing, beating

Known victims: Anna Barbier-Ponthus, 83; Rachel Cohen, 79; Genevieve Germont; Suzanne Foucault, 89; Ioana Seigaresco, 71; Alice Benaim, 84; Marie Choy, 80; Maria Mico-Diaz, 75; others unnamed

Crime location: Paris, France

Status: Died from complications of AIDs while awaiting trial.

Background

Paulin was born in Fort-de-France, Martinique in 1963, and shortly after his birth, his father took off, leaving Paulin's teenaged mother to care for the baby. Unable to cope, Paulin's paternal grandmother took him in but didn't show him a lot of attention or affection. Paulin moved back in with his mother when he was ten, but she had married and he had to learn where he fit in with stepbrothers and sisters. His behavior towards the other children was violent, so his mother contacted his father and asked if he could live with him in France.

Paulin struggled at school both academically and socially, and was often teased or shunned because he was of mixed race. He failed his exams, and decided to enlist in military service at 17. He joined the parachutists, but his homosexuality and race brought him much disdain from his fellow soldiers. While he was in the army, he was arrested after robbing an old woman at knife-point, and although he received a two-year sentence, it was suspended and he was able to remain in the army.

Two years later, in 1984, Paulin left the army and went to live with his mother once again in Nanterre, Paris. Paulin began working in a night-club called the Paradis Latin, which put on transvestite shows. He then began working as a drag artist, imitating Eartha Kitt. It was while he was at the Paradis Latin that he met Jean-Thierry Mathurin. They became lovers, and both were drug addicts; however Mathurin's addiction was far worse than Paulin's. They needed money to pay for their habits, and selling drugs wasn't providing enough for them, so Paulin embarked on a robbery spree that would result in multiple murders.

Murders

Anna Barbier-Ponthus and her friend Germaine Petitot were attacked on October 5, 1984. Petitot survived, but Barbier-Ponthus died after being beaten and asphyxiated. Petitot was so traumatized by the incident that she was unable to give any details or descriptions to the police.

Eight other victims were killed between October and November 1984, most of who lived in the 18th precinct in Paris. The methods used to commit the murders varied - some were suffocated with plastic bags, one was made to drink drain cleaner, and others were beaten to death. The only things that linked all of the murders together were the ages of the victims and the fact they had all been robbed.

A further eight murders were committed between December 1985 and June 1986. There was little evidence, but police were able to compare fingerprints found with those at the previous crime scenes and concluded they were from the same person.

Rachel Cohen was murdered by Paulin on November 25, 1987. He attacked another elderly woman the same day who survived, Berthe Finalteri, then killed Genevieve Germont two days later by strangulation.

After recovering from the attack, Madame Finalteri was able to give the police a good description of the man who had attacked her. This led to the arrest of Paulin on December 1, after being recognized from the description by a police inspector as he walked along the road.

Timeline of known murders:

October 5, 1984 - Anna Barbier-Ponthus, 83

October 9, 1984 - Suzanne Foucault, 89

November 5, 1984 - Ioana Seigaresco, 71

November 7, 1984 - Alice Benaim, 84

November 8, 1984 - Marie Choy, 80

November 9, 1984 - Maria Mico-Diaz, 75

November 25, 1987 - Rachel Cohen, 79

November 27, 1987 - Genevieve Germont

NB: Eight more victims were killed between December 1985 and June 1986.

Arrest and Trial

Once he was in custody, Paulin confessed to the murders, admitting to 21 killings. He was charged with 18, and the others were yet to be fully investigated. He was sent to jail to await his trial.

Outcome

In the early months of 1988, Paulin's body was becoming more ravaged by AIDs. Within the next year, he was almost paralyzed and was sent to hospital with meningitis and tuberculosis. Paulin died on April 16, 1989. He was still awaiting his trial, and so was never convicted of the crimes he confessed to. Mathurin however, was tried and convicted, and received a life sentence plus 18 years without parole.

Louise Peete

Date of birth: September 20, 1880

Aliases/Nicknames: Louise M. Gould, Anna Lee

Characteristics: Murder for financial gain

Number of victims: 3+

Date of murders: 1912, 1920, 1944

Date of arrest: December 20, 1944

Murder method: Shooting

Known victims: Joe Appel; Jacob Charles Denton; Margaret Logan

Crime location: Texas, California

Status: Executed by gas chamber, April 11, 1947.

Background

Born Lofie Louise Preslar, Peete was born in to a wealthy family in Louisiana in 1880. Her parents paid a lot of money for her to receive the best possible education, but she was expelled from the school due to behavior deemed inappropriate.

In 1903, Peete met and married Henry Bosley, a traveling salesman. However, Bosley caught Peete in bed with another man and committed suicide. Peete ended up living in Boston for a while working as a ‘high-class’ prostitute. She was known to steal from her clients as well.

Her next marriage was to Joe Appel, who was a wealthy oil baron in Waco, Texas. He was later murdered, and his jewelry was missing, and Peete was accused of killing him. Appel wasn’t to be the only husband of Peete’s that met an untimely end, and Peete’s actions would eventually see her sent to the gas chamber.

Murders

Peete met Joe Appel, a wealthy oil baron, in Waco Texas, and they became involved in a relationship. He was later murdered, and his jewelry was missing. Peete was accused of killing Appel but she told the grand jury he had tried to rape her and she killed him in self-defense. She was therefore released from custody and the charges were dropped.

She married Harry Faurote, a hotel clerk, in 1913, and he allegedly found her having an affair and committed suicide. Then she married Richard Peete in Denver in 1915. After their daughter was born, Peete left, and went to Los Angeles. She met Jacob C. Denton there who was an oil magnate. He disappeared in 1920, and by the time police arrived to search the house, Peete had already gone. She returned to her husband, but when Denton's body was found, she was tracked down, arrested and charged.

Found guilty of Denton's murder, she was sentenced to life, but only served 18 years. While she had been incarcerated, her husband Richard committed suicide. Peete started working for Jessie Marcy as her housekeeper, but Marcy died soon after. Another co-worker died in what was considered suspicious circumstances.

Peete moved on to work for Emily Dwight Latham, and she also died. Her next job was housekeeper for Arthur C. Logan and his wife Margaret. Peete also remarried, to Lee Borden Judson. Margaret Logan went missing, and because Peete tried to pass checks with her forged signature, she was instantly the main suspect.

Arrest and Trial

Peete was arrested on December 20, 1944. At her trial she was convicted of murder and was sentenced to die in the gas chamber. Her husband Judson was acquitted of any crimes, but the day after he was questioned by the police, he committed suicide.

Outcome

Peete entered the gas chamber at 10:03 am on April 11, 1947. She was pronounced dead ten minutes later, at 10:13 am. She had appeared calm and was smiling as she walked into the chamber, but there was a trembling in her hands. She nodded and smiled at the warden who she had come to know well, and thanked a guard when he touched her on the shoulder and told her to 'take it easy'.

Trivia

Peete was the second woman executed in California.

Christopher Peterson

Date of birth: January 20, 1969

Aliases/Nicknames: Obadayah Ben-Yisrayl, Shotgun Killer

Characteristics: Robbery

Number of victims: 7

Date of murders: October - December 1990

Date of arrest: January 29, 1991

Murder method: Shooting

Known victims: Lawrence Mills, 43; Rhonda L. Hammersley, 25; Harchand Singh Dhaliwal, 54; Marie Meitzler, 48; Ora L. Wildermuth, 54; Eli Balovski 60; George Balovski, 66

Crime location: Indiana

Status: Death sentence commuted to life imprisonment.

Background

There is little information available on Peterson leading up to his arrest for murder. What is known is that for a time he was a Marine, until he deserted. He then lived with his mother and sister in Gary, Indiana. His arrest and subsequent convictions for murder were highly controversial, and there are still those who believe he was innocent.

The controversy stemmed from initial police reports into the multiple shootings which claimed the perpetrator to be a white man with long brown hair. Peterson is a black man who at the time had short hair. This opened up a whole lot of allegations of racial prejudice, improper collection of evidence, and wrongful convictions. However, when he was arrested, Peterson confessed to the murders. It wasn't until the trials started that he recanted.

Murders

Seven people were shot and killed by Peterson between October 30, 1990, and December 18, 1990, in northern Indiana. A witness was able to give police a description of the killer that would later be controversial. The killer was described as being a slender white man, clean-shaven, with long brown hair.

On October 30, 1990, Lawrence Mill was sitting in his car outside the American Legion Post 66 in Griffith when he was shot and killed. The same day, just hours later, Rhonda Hammersley was shot and killed in the parking lot of a gas station in Cedar Lake.

Harchand Singh Dhaliwal was killed while working at a gas station on December 13, and money had been taken from the cash register. The next victim was Marie Meitzler who was shot and killed on December 15, while working behind the reception desk at a motel. Money had been stolen during the murder. Just six minutes after Meitzler was killed, Peterson killed Ora L. Wildermuth who was standing by an automated teller machine.

The last known victims were brothers George and Eli Balovski. They were shot on December 18, 1990, in a building next to their tailor shop.

Timeline of known murders:

October 30, 1990 - Lawrence Mills, 43

October 30, 1990 - Rhonda Hammersley, 25

December 13, 1990 - Harchand Singh Dhaliwal, 54

December 15, 1990 - Marie Meitzler, 48

December 15, 1990 - Ora L. Wildermuth, 54

December 18, 1990 - George Balovski, 66

December 18, 1990 - Eli Balovski, 60

Arrest and Trial

On January 29, 1991, Peterson was arrested with Antwion McGee after they had committed a robbery and attempted to kill the restaurant manager at a mall near Merrillville. While being interviewed, McGee told investigators that another man, Ronald J. Harris, had been with Peterson on two occasions where victims were killed. He also claimed Peterson had admitted to killing them.

Peterson's first trial began in September, for the murders of Lawrence Mills and Rhonda Hammersley. Remarkably, despite the evidence and confession, Peterson was acquitted of these murders. It certainly didn't help that the original witness description was completely off course - Peterson wasn't white, skinny, or long-haired.

He then went on trial in January for the murder of Wildermuth and the attempted murder of a man who had survived an attack. Once again, Peterson was acquitted! The next trial was for the murders of Dhaliwal and Meitzler. At first a mistrial was called, but the process started again and evidence was put forward. This time, Peterson was convicted.

In April 1992, Peterson went on trial for the Balovski murders. He was convicted and despite the jury not recommending the death penalty, the judge overturned their recommendation and sentenced Peterson to death.

Of his alleged accomplices, Harris was convicted of murdering Dhaliwal and Hammersley. Towards the end of 1991, McGee was tried for the attempted murder of the restaurant manager and the robbery. The prosecution for Peterson's cases needed McGee to testify, so a plea deal was reached where McGee would only be prosecuted for a lesser offense, and receive a sentence of eight years.

Outcome

On December 12, 2004, Peterson was re-sentenced and received 120 years imprisonment instead of the death penalty.

Alexander Pichushkin

Date of birth: April 9, 1974

Aliases/Nicknames: The Chessboard Killer, The Bitsa Park Maniac

Characteristics: Most victims were homeless

Number of victims: 49 - 63

Date of murders: 1992 - 2006

Date of arrest: June 14, 2006

Murder method: Bludgeoning with a hammer

Known victims: Unnamed men, women and children

Crime location: Moscow, Russia

Status: Sentenced to life imprisonment, with first 15 years in solitary confinement.

Background

Pichushkin was considered to be a normal, sociable and happy child until an incident involving a swing resulted in a head injury. Almost overnight, his behavior became more impulsive and aggressive and he was taunted and physically bullied at school for being a 'retard'. His mother removed him from the mainstream school and enrolled him in a school for children with learning disabilities.

As a young teen, his grandfather recognized that Pichushkin was actually very intelligent, and believing the school wasn't encouraging him to achieve, took Pichushkin to live in his home so he could encourage him to become involved in intellectual pursuits. He had a strong interest in and talent for playing chess. Because he had been put back into mainstream schooling, the teasing and bullying by other children continued, and worsened when Pichushkin's grandfather died and he was forced to move back with his mother.

Around this time, Pichushkin began drinking alcohol, and would join the older men he played chess with at Bitsa Park in drinking vodka. He quickly discovered that the alcohol didn't have the same effect on him as his older chess partners. He also developed a dark hobby where he would film himself threatening young children, then watch the videos over and over, admiring his strength and power he had over his victims. But soon this hobby wasn't enough to satisfy him, and in 1992, he committed his first murder.

Murders

Pichushkin began killing in 1992, and by 2001, his murderous spree had escalated. He targeted elderly men who were homeless, and would lure them in by offering them vodka. He would drink with them for a while, then smash in their head with a hammer. Then, he would push the vodka bottle into the wound.

Later he expanded his victim choices, and killed younger men, women and children. His method was to attack his victim from behind to surprise them. It also helped him avoid getting blood all over his clothes. Sometimes he threw his victims down the sewers beneath Bitsa Park, but this wasn't as successful as one of the victims survived.

The last murder committed by Pichushkin was in the spring, 2006, and was that of Marina Moskalyova, 36. Her body was discovered in Bitsa Park with the same type of injuries the other victims had been inflicted with. She also had a metro train ticket that led the police to check surveillance tapes from the station. There they saw her walking with Pichushkin along the platform.

Arrest and Trial

Pichushkin was arrested on June 16, 2006. He was quick to confess to his crimes and went on trial the following year. On October 24, 2007, he was found guilty of 49 murders and 3 counts of attempted murder. Throughout his trial he had been kept in a special glass box to protect him from the public.

It took over an hour for the full verdict to be read out in court due to the vast number of charges he was convicted of. He was sentenced to life imprisonment, and the first 15 years were to be spent in solitary confinement.

Outcome

Pichushkin had planned to kill 64 people, to match the number of squares on a chessboard, but he was caught before he could reach his target. During his trial he asked the judge to add another 11 victims to the total to bring it up to 60, partly because he wanted to be better than his 'idol' Andrei Chikatilo.

Trivia

Quote by Pichushkin:

- "Life without murder is like a life for you without food."

Robert Pickton

Date of birth: October 26, 1949

Aliases/Nicknames: The Pig Farmer Killer, The Pigheaded Killer, Pork Chop Rob, Willie

Characteristics: Rape, Dismemberment

Number of victims: 6 - 49

Date of murders: 1995 - 2001

Date of arrest: February 2, 2002

Murder method: Shooting, strangulation with ligature

Known victims: Sereena Abotsway, 29; Mona Lee Wilson, 26; Andrea Joesbury, 22; Brenda Ann Wolfe, 32; Marnie Lee Frey, 25; Georgina Faith Papin, 35; Jacqueline McDonnell, 23; Dianne Rock, 34; Heather Bottomley, 25; Jennifer Furminger; Helen Hallmark; Patricia Johnson; Heather Chinnook, 30; Tanya Holyk, 23; Sherry Irving, 24; Inga Hall, 46; Tiffany Drew; Sarah de Vries; Cynthia Feliks; Angela Jardine; Diana Melnick; Debra Jones; Wendy Crawford; Kerry Koski; Andrea Borhaven; Cara Ellis, 25

Crime location: Port Coquitlam, British Columbia, Canada

Status: Sentenced to life imprisonment with possibility of parole after 25 years.

Background

Pickton and his brother David owned a farm in Port Coquitlam, British Columbia in 1992, and although it was meant to be a pig farm, there weren't actually many pigs on the property. There was however a very large boar that would roam the property with the dogs, chasing people and trying to bite at them. Pickton was described as fairly quiet, and difficult to have a conversation with.

The brothers began neglecting the farm and came up with another way to make money from it. They formed a non-profit charity called the Piggy Palace Good Times Society, and registered it with the Canadian government in 1996. The purpose of the charity was meant to be organizing and operating special events, functions, show and dances. However, it mainly involved wild parties with plenty of prostitutes attending. The parties were held in a slaughterhouse on the farm that had been converted, and at times there were up to 2,000 people attending. It even became a regular haunt for the local Hell's Angels gang.

In March 1997, there was an altercation between Pickton and a prostitute called Wendy Lynn Eistetter that took place at the farm. Eistetter claimed Pickton had handcuffed her and had cut her several times with a knife before she was able to escape by stabbing him in return. In January 1998, the charges against Pickton were dismissed. Following this, the authorities banned the Pickton's from throwing any more organized parties on the property and their non-profit charity status was cancelled.

Women who visited the property started going missing over the next three years, and it wasn't until the police searched the farm looking for illegal firearms, that the true nature of what was going on at the farm became clear.

Murders

The exact details of each murder including how they were killed and disposed of are yet to be discovered. What is known is that Pickton would bring prostitutes to his farm and handcuff them before raping them. After strangling them to death, it is alleged he sometimes bled the body, removed the gut, and put the body through a wood chipper. The remains were then fed to his pigs. Another allegation is that the victims' bodies were ground up and mixed in with mincemeat to create sausages. These were then given to his family and friends.

It's believed Pickton lured the prostitutes back to the farm with the pretense of wanting to pay for sexual services. Sometimes, while engaged in sexual intercourse, he would suddenly accuse the woman of doing something, like stealing from Pickton, and this would cause his rage to build up to the point where he would kill them.

Timeline of known victims:

August 2001 - Sereena Abotsway, 29

November 30, 2001 - Mona Lee Wilson, 26

June 2001 - Andrea Joesbury, 22

April 25, 2000 - Brenda Ann Wolfe, 32

Alleged victims:

August 1991 - Mary Ann Clark (Nancy Greek), 25

December 1995. - Diana Melnick

1996 - Cara Louise Ellis (Nicky Trimble), 25

October 1996 - Tanya Holyk, 23
1997 - Sherry Irving, 24
March 1997 - Andrea Fay Borhaven
August 1997 - Helen Mae Hallmark
December 1997 - Cynthia Feliks
January 1998 - Kerry Koski
February 1998 - Inga Monique Hall, 46
April 1998 - Sarah de Vries
November 20, 1998 - Angela Rebecca Jardine
January 1999 - Jacqueline Michelle McDonell, 23
December 1999 - Wendy Crawford
December 1999 - Tiffany Drew
1999 - Jennifer Lynn Furminger
December 2000 - Debra Lynne Jones
December 2000 - Dawn Teresa Crey
October 19, 2001 - Dianne Rosemary Rock, 34
April 17, 2001 - Heather Kathleen Bottomley, 25
March 2001 - Patricia Rose Johnson
April 2001 - Heather Chinook, 30
March 16, 2001 - Yvonne Marie Boen, 34

Arrest and Trial

A search warrant was issued to search the property for illegal firearms on February 6, 2002. The Pickton brothers were arrested and taken to the police station, and investigators requested another warrant so they could search for evidence related to the many missing women cases. It was granted and during the search they found a few items belonging to one of the missing women.

The following day, Pickton was charged with numerous firearm offenses, and released from custody, as there wasn't enough information to charge him with murder. Police did keep him under surveillance however. By the end of February, they had enough information and Pickton was arrested again on February 22. He was charged with first degree murder for the deaths of Mona Wilson and Sereena Abotsway.

Three more murder charges were added on April 2, regarding the deaths of Heather Bottomley, Jacqueline McDonell and Diane Rock. Also in April he was charged with murdering Andrea Joesbury and Brenda Wolfe. Then, on September 20, charges of murder for the deaths of Georgina Papin, Helen Hallmark, Patricia Johnson and Jennifer Furminger, with four more added on October 3, for the murders of Tanya Holyk, Heather Chinnook, Inga Hall and Sherry Irving.

Now charged with a total of 15 murders, Pickton was one of the worst serial killers in Canadian history, but it wasn't over yet. On May 26, 2005, he was charged with an additional 12 murders for the deaths of Andrea Borhaven, Cara Ellis, Debra Jones, Tiffany Drew, Marnie Frey, Sarah de Vries, Kerry Koski, Angela Jardine, Cynthia Feliks, Diana Melnick, Wendy Crawford and a Jane Doe. The total murder charges were 27.

Pickton's initial trial began in West Minster on January 30, 2006, where he pleaded not guilty. It took almost a year for all the evidence to be considered as to what could be presented in court and what wasn't allowed or suitable. The judge dismissed the charge for the Jane Doe due to lack of evidence on March 2.

The judge decided to split the charges due to the nature and size of the case into two groups - one with six murder charges and the other with the remaining twenty. The trial was delayed, but began on January 22, 2007. On December 9, 2007, the jury found Pickton not guilty of the first degree murder charges, but found him guilty of second-degree murder for each of the six victims. Pickton was sentenced to life imprisonment with the possibility of parole after 25 years.

Outcome

On August 4, 2010, the rest of the pending murder charges against Pickton were stayed by the Crown prosecutors. This meant Pickton would never go to trial for the other 20 murder charges.

Trivia

A book that had apparently been written by Pickton about his life went on sale in 2016. It was called 'Pickton: In His Own Words' and the controversy surrounding it went as high as the government. The public didn't agree with Pickton getting any financial gain from sales of the book.

Norbert Poehlke

Date of birth: September 15, 1951

Aliases/Nicknames: The Hammer-Killer

Characteristics: Parricide, Filicide, Bank Robbery

Number of victims: 6

Date of murders: 1984 - 1985

Date of arrest: Died before arrest

Murder method: Shooting

Known victims: Siegfried Pfitzer, 47; Eugene Wethey, 37; Wilfried Scheider, 26; His wife Ingeborg Poehlke and his sons Adrian and Gabriel

Crime location: Germany, Italy

Status: Committed suicide before apprehension.

Background

Poehlke was considered to be an upstanding member of society, a German police officer whose job it was to uphold the law. But Poehlke was secretly spending a lot of his time on the wrong side of the law, and as the authorities began investigating him, everything took a tragic turn for the worse.

Murders

Poehlke's first victim, Siegfried Pfitzer, was found on May 3, 1984, at a rest stop in Marback West Germany. He had been shot in the head, and his car was later found quarter of a mile away after it had been used in a bank robbery.

On December 21, Eugene Wethey was found dead at a rest stop near Nuremburg. He had been shot, and his car was missing. The car was used a week later by Poehlke to commit a bank robbery. Wilfried Scheider was found shot to death on July 22, 1985, in a parking lot in Beilstein-Schmidhausen. The weapon used was identified as a police issue pistol. The car had been used in the commission of a bank robbery.

Timeline of known murders:

May 3, 1984 - Siegfried Pfitzer, 47

December 21, 1984 - Eugene Wethey, 37

July 22, 1985 - Wilfried Scheider, 26

October 20, 1985 - Ingeborg Poehlke

October 20, 1985 - Adrian Poehlke

October 23, 1985 - Gabriel Poehlke

Arrest and Trial

On September 29, 1985, a police uniform was found in a locker in a railway station by anti-terrorist officers who were checking the station for bombs. The uniform was traced back to Poehlke, and he said he had left it there after changing in a hurry to get to a funeral. But when police looked into it, there hadn't been any deaths in Poehlke's family. They did discover however that he was in debt for up to \$400,000, largely due to costly medical treatment for his daughter who succumbed to cancer in 1984.

Poehlke requested sick leave on October 14, which was granted. Police went to his home several days later to question him about the robberies and the murders but nobody answered the door. The police officers assumed Poehlke had fled so they entered the house. In the bathroom they found the dead body of Poehlke's wife, who had been shot in the head twice. Their son Adrian was found in a bedroom also shot to death.

On October 23, Poehlke's car was found near Brindisi, Italy. Inside were the bodies of Poehlke and his son Gabriel. Both had been shot in what was obviously a murder-suicide. The case was considered closed.

Outcome

Following Poehlke's suicide, his gun was confirmed by ballistics to be the murder weapon used in the first three murders.

Harry Powers

Date of birth: 1889

Aliases/Nicknames: Cornelius O. Pierson, A.R. Weaver, Mail-order Bluebeard, The West Virginia Bluebeard

Characteristics: Murder for financial gain

Number of victims: 5+

Date of murders: 1931

Date of arrest: August 1931

Murder method: Hanging, bludgeoning with a Hammer

Known victims: Aster Eicher, 50, and her children Greta, 14, Harry, 12, and Anabel, 9; Dorothy Lemke, 50

Crime location: Quiet Dell, West Virginia

Status: Executed by hanging on March 18, 1932.

Background

Powers was born Herman Drenth in the Netherlands in 1892. In 1910, he immigrated along with his family to the United States, first settling in Iowa before moving to West Virginia in 1926. His father was a farmer, and Powers had no intention of being like him. He wanted a better and higher way of life, and he came up with numerous ways to make money.

Powers married Luella Strother in 1927. Luella had placed an advertisement in the Lonely Hearts Magazine, and stated she owned a grocery store and a farm, so naturally Powers was attracted to her straight away. Despite now having a wife, Powers started putting his own advertisements in the magazine and received many letters in response. Of course he didn't use his own name; he created aliases so nobody would know who he really was.

Receiving up to twenty letters a day, Powers decided to build a basement and garage at his home. Powers believed he had come up with the perfect way to increase his finances, and now he had a place where he could carry out his plans without detection.

Murders

Powers had been writing letters to Asta Eicher using the alias Cornelius O. Pierson. Eicher was a widow with three children, living in Park Ridge, Illinois. On June 23, 1931, Powers visited them and, leaving the children in the hands of Elizabeth Abernathy, Eicher went away with Powers.

Abernathy received a letter saying Powers was coming to collect the children, and when he had, he got one of the children to withdraw money from Eicher's account at the bank, but the bank refused to hand over any money due to the forged signature on the check. Powers gathered up the children and they quickly left, telling the neighbors they were going on a trip to Europe.

Powers' next victim was another lonely heart, Dorothy Lemke, who lived in Northboro, Massachusetts. After sending letters back and forth, he convinced her to come to Iowa to marry him. He managed to persuade her to withdraw a large amount from her account, to the value of \$4,000. She disappeared just as Eicher and her children had.

Arrest and Trial

On August 26, 1931, police were starting to investigate the disappearances of Eicher and her three children. By looking at her last known contacts they came across the name Cornelius O. Pierson. They quickly established that there was no such person by that name but the description was a match for Powers.

After Powers was arrested, police searched his home and found a horrific scene. There were four rooms in the basement, and bloody evidence was found in all of them. Hair, bloodstained clothes, a footprint of a child and a burned bankbook were amongst the first items found. A ditch outside the house appeared to have been filled in recently, so the police began to dig it up. Buried in the dirt were the bodies of all the murder victims.

All of the female victims had been strangled, but Eicher's son had been killed by being bashed in the head with a hammer. The officers discovered a large number of love letters in the trunk of Powers' car, and it looked as though he was already planning the next murder and robbery.

Powers' trial began on December 7, 1931, and lasted only five days. He was convicted of all crimes and on December 12, was sentenced to die by hanging.

Outcome

Powers was taken to the gallows at the Moundsville State Penitentiary on March 18, 1932. He declined to make a final statement, and after the hood was put over his head, the trapdoor was released and Powers was hanged. He was pronounced deceased eleven minutes later.

Trivia

- For an annual fee (\$4.95 for men, \$1.95 for women), members got a listing of available matches, mostly widows and widowers, with a description of their most attractive features - whether real or not.

Among American Friendship's clients in 1931 was a man who, based upon his written profile, should have had no trouble attracting the ladies.

"Wealthy widower," the ad read, "worth \$150,000. Has income from \$400 to \$2,000 a month." His profession was listed as "civil engineer. Own a beautiful 10-room brick home, completely furnished with everything that would make a good woman happy. My wife would have her own car and plenty of spending money. Would have nothing to do but enjoy herself."

Craig Price

Date of birth: October 11, 1973

Aliases/Nicknames: The Warwick Slasher

Characteristics: Juvenile Murderer

Number of victims: 4

Date of murders: 1987, 1989

Date of arrest: September 1989

Murder method: Stabbing

Known victims: Rebecca Spencer, 27; Joan Heaton, 39, and her daughters, Jennifer 10, and Melissa 8

Crime location: Warwick, Rhode Island

Status: Sentenced to a total of 29 years due to bad behavior while incarcerated.

Background

Price was one of, if not the, youngest serial killer ever discovered in America. He came from a working-class family in Rhode Island, and by the time he was 15 years old, he already had an extensive history of criminal offenses. These included peeping, theft, drugs and burglary, but what authorities didn't know, was that two years earlier he had committed one of his worst crimes ever. At the age of just 13, Price had committed his first violent murder.

Price had a violent temper, often getting into fights at home with family members, and the police had visited the home numerous times to break up disputes. At one point, he and a group of other young delinquents joined together to commit multiple burglaries, breaking into homes to steal whatever they could to make money.

This violent and troubled youth would eventually come under suspicion for a murder that had taken place in his neighborhood and during his interview with police, he calmly confessed to committing four murders.

Murders

Price's first victim, Rebecca Spencer, was killed when he was just 13 years old. The victim was a white woman living in the neighborhood who Price would often watch through her windows. On the day she died, he had broken into her house and stabbed her to death with a knife he found in the kitchen. Price was never considered a suspect, most likely because of his age.

Two years later, at 15, he killed Joan Heaton and her two daughters, Jennifer and Melissa. Like Spencer, they were a white family and they were killed in the same manner. It wasn't until a detective happened to notice a large cut on Price's hand that he became the number one suspect.

Arrest and Trial

Price was arrested in September 1989, and without any form of persuasion, he openly confessed to the murders. This made him the youngest serial killer in American history. Price was tried as a minor because of his age, which meant that even though he was convicted, he could only be incarcerated until he was 21.

In an effort to keep him in longer, Price was charged with numerous offenses while imprisoned, including criminal contempt, extortion and violation of probation for fighting while incarcerated. He received a further sentence of 10-25 years.

Outcome

Price and another inmate engaged in a fight on July 29, 2009. While correctional officers were breaking up the fight, one of them was stabbed in the finger by a shank being held by Price. As a result, Price was moved to another prison. He has been involved in other fights while incarcerated and his release date has been shifted to April 2020, depending on how he behaves between now and then.

Cleophus Prince Jr.

Date of birth: July 24, 1967

Aliases/Nicknames: The Clairemont Killer

Characteristics: Rape, Robbery

Number of victims: 6

Date of murders: January 12, 1990 –September 13, 1990

Date of arrest: February 4, 1991

Murder method: Stabbing

Known victims: Tiffany Schultz, 20; Janene Weinhold, 21; Holly Tarr, 18; Elissa Keller, 38; Pamela Clark, 42, and her daughter Amber, 18

Crime location: San Diego County, California

Status: Sentenced to death, awaiting execution.

Background

Prince was born and raised in Birmingham to parents Cleophus Sr. and Dorothy. Before he was two years old, his father was arrested and convicted of murder following an incident outside a grocery store. According to Cleophus Sr., he was confronted by several men armed with knives, so he shot a man to death to defend himself. He was sentenced to 40 years, but only served just over 11 years in prison.

While his father was in prison, Prince's mother struggled to take care of him and his sister, so the children spent a lot of their time living with their grandparents. The children enjoyed the carefree lifestyle they experienced with their grandparents away from the stressful lives of their parents.

Prince was not keen on school, and failed to stay in jobs, so in 1987 he enlisted in the Navy. His parents were pleased with this and supported him completely. Prince did his training at the Great Lakes Naval Training Center, located near Chicago, and was then sent to the Miramar Naval Air Station in San Diego, and worked as a mechanic.

In 1989, Prince was charged with larceny, and following his court-martial, he was sentenced to 27 days in the brig. He was subsequently discharged from the Navy and moved to Buena Vista Gardens and got an apartment. The following year, Prince's behavior took a deadly turn.

Murders

In each murder Prince committed, he entered the victim's home through an unlocked window or door during the day and waited for them to return home. He would surprise them either just after or during bathing, and stab them to death with the victim's kitchen knives. He bragged about the murders to a friend, and kept jewelry items from the victims. One woman's wedding ring was worn around his neck and another ring was given to his girlfriend.

A witness had seen Prince running from the Buena Vista Garden Apartment complex after the murder of Holly Tarr. He gave the police a description, and a composite drawing was distributed.

Timeline of known murders:

January 12, 1990 - Tiffany Schultz, 21

February 16, 1990 - Janene Weinhold, 21

April 3, 1990 - Holly Tarr, 18

May 20, 1990 - Elissa Keller, 38

September 13, 1990 - Pamela Clark, 42

September 13, 1990 - Amber Clark, 18

Arrest and Trial

In February 1991, a woman heard someone outside the front door just as she was getting ready to shower, and she ran from the house. She asked a neighbor for help, and they went and confronted Prince. He tried to make up an excuse then just rushed off. A witness noted his license plate number and identified him from photographs shown by the police.

Prince was arrested on February 4, 1991, and was asked to provide saliva and blood samples for DNA analysis, which he agreed to. When the results came back, it was linked to Janene Weinhold's murder. Due to the pattern and similarities between that case and the others, police were able to link Prince to all of the crimes.

Prince was put on trial in March 1992. Despite arguments from the defense, Prince was found guilty of six counts of first degree murder as well as 21 felony charges, on July 15, 1993. On November 5, 1993, he was sentenced to death.

Outcome

Sentenced to death, Prince lodged an appeal against his sentence, claiming the media coverage had created a 'presumption of guilt' with the jury. The California Supreme Court denied his appeal.

Prince is still on death row awaiting his execution.

Dennis Rader

Date of birth: March 9, 1945

Aliases/Nicknames: The B.T.K. Killer, The B.T.K. Strangler

Characteristics: Fetishist, Sadist

Number of victims: 10

Date of murders: 1974 - 1991

Date of arrest: February 25, 2005

Murder method: Strangulation with ligature, hanging, stabbing

Known victims: Joseph Otero, 38, his wife Julie, 34, and two of their children: Joseph II, 9, and Josephine, 11; Kathryn Bright, 21; Shirley Vian Relford, 24; Nancy Fox, 25; Marine Hedge, 53; Vicki Wegerle, 28; Dolores E. Davis, 62

Crime location: Sedgwick County, Kansas

Status: Sentenced to life imprisonment with the possibility of parole after 175 years.

Background

Rader displayed disturbing behaviors from a very young age, though nobody seemed to take them too seriously. He was known to torture small animals while he was still a young child, which is a known indicator these days of the potential to become a killer. Rader also developed a sexual fetish involving women's underwear, and would often wear them himself, especially if they had belonged to one of his victims.

From 1966 - 1970, Rader served in the United States Air Force, and after he left the service, he worked in the meat department of a supermarket. In 1971, he married Paula Dietz and they went on to have two children. Rader decided to further his education, and attended community college to gain an associate degree in electronics, graduating in 1973. He then enrolled with Wichita State University and attained a Bachelor's degree in administration of justice in 1979.

Despite his degrees, Rader went on to have a number of jobs over the years, including security work, outdoor supplies assembly and dogcatcher. Ironically, he would be employed to install security alarms for people who were terrified of the BTK killer. Little did they know the man they feared so much was in their homes! While working as the dogcatcher, many people reported his behavior with the animals as being overly strict and he was accused of euthanizing a dog for no legitimate reason.

Rader avoided suspicion for a long time because he was considered to be a fine member of society. He was a family man who worked hard, and he was a Cub Scout leader. He also attended church each week and was a member of the church council. Nobody had a clue that this man had brutally tortured and killed ten people, including children, over a period of nearly twenty years.

Murders

On January 15, 1974, Rader broke into the home of the Otero family and massacred them all. Father Joseph and his wife Julie were strangled to death. Their daughter Josephine was found bound and hanging in the basement and son Joseph was asphyxiated with a bag over his head. Their car was stolen and later found in a parking lot outside a store.

Kathryn Bright was attacked by Rader on April 4, 1974, in her home. She was stabbed to death and her brother was shot, but he survived his injuries. The next victim was Shirley Vian Relford, who was found bound and strangled in her home on March 17, 1977.

Rader next killed Nancy Fox on December 8, 1977. He had entered her home and strangled her to death. This time he placed a call to the emergency services to report the murder, and his voice is recorded for the first time.

On April 27, 1985, Marine Hedge disappeared from her home in the same block as Rader's. Her body was found on May 5. Vicki Wegerle was strangled in her home on September 16, 1985. Her car was stolen and later located two blocks away. Finally, the last known victim was Dolores Davis. She was abducted from her home on January 19, 1991 and was later found on February 1, 1991.

Timeline of known murders:

January 15, 1974 - Joseph Otero, 38

January 15, 1974 - Julie Otero, 33

January 15, 1974 - Joseph Otero II, 9

January 15, 1974 - Josephine Otero, 11

April 4, 1974 - Kathryn Bright, 21

March 17, 1977 - Shirley Vian Relford, 24

December 8, 1977 - Nancy Fox, 25

April 27, 1985 - Marine Hedge, 53

September 16, 1986 - Vicki Wegerle, 28

January 19, 1991 - Dolores E. Davis, 62

Arrest and Trial

As time went on and the police didn't seem closer to solving the cases, Rader started sending letters to the local media in 2004. Some of the letters had crime scene photographs or a copy of a driver's license enclosed to prove the letters were written by the killer. The return address was 'Bill Thomas Killman', the first indication of the initials BTK.

More letters followed with graphic details about the murders and even a chapter list for a proposed book 'The BTK Story' was sent. Some of the items sent to the media and the police were chillingly bizarre, including a doll that was bound at the wrists and feet and had a bag over its head.

In one of his letters, Rader actually asked the police if they could trace him if he put the letters on a floppy disk. The police placed an ad in the local paper saying it was safe to use disks, and Rader fell for the lie. Technicians found metadata embedded in a document Rader had deleted, which contained the words 'Christ Lutheran Church' and the modifier of the document was 'Dennis'.

Rader was arrested on February 25, 2005. The arresting officer asked him if he knew why he was being arrested and Rader replied that he had his suspicions why. A number of agencies joined in the search of Rader's home and vehicle, the church and the library where some of the letters had been sent from.

On February 28, 2005, Rader was charged with ten counts of first degree murder, and soon after, the press ran an article claiming he had confessed to other murders, but this was false information. His first court appearance was by video on March 1. His bail was set at \$10 million and he was appointed a public defender.

Rader entered not guilty pleas on all counts on May 3. Then, he changed his plea on June 27 to guilty on all ten counts of murder. He went on to graphically describe the murders and showed no remorse, emotion or made any apologies. Sentencing took place on August 18, 2005. He was sentenced to 10 consecutive life sentences, and would be eligible for parole in the year 2180.

Outcome

Despite showing no emotion throughout his trial, apparently while being transferred to El Dorado after his sentencing, he began crying when the radio broadcast the statements from the families of the victims. Rader is held in a special management unit, also known as solitary confinement, for his own protection and is likely to spend the rest of his days in there.

Trivia

Quotes by Rader:

- "When this monster entered my brain, I will never know, but it is here to stay. How does one cure himself? I can't stop it, the monster goes on, and hurts me as well as society. Maybe you can stop him. I can't."
- "I actually think I may be possessed with demons, I was dropped on my head as a kid."

Richard Ramirez

Date of birth: February 29, 1960

Aliases/Nicknames: The Night Stalker, The Walk-In Killer, The Valley Intruder

Characteristics: Robbery, Rape, Mutilation

Number of victims: 13 - 16+

Date of murders: April 10, 1984 - August 24, 1985

Date of arrest: August 31, 1985

Murder method: Stabbing, shooting, bludgeoning

Known victims: Jennie Vincow, 79; Dayle Okazaki, 34; Tsai "Veronica" Lan Yu, 30; Vincent Zazzara, 64, and his wife Maxine, 44; William "Bill" Doi, 66; Mable "Ma Bell" Keller, 83; Mary Louise Cannon, 75; Joyce Lucille Nelson, 61; Max Kneiding 68; Lela Kneiding, 66; Chainarong Khovananth, 32; Elyas Abowath, 35

Crime location: Los Angeles, California

Status: Sentenced to death. Died due to complications of B-Cell lymphoma, June 7, 2013.

Background

Ramirez was one of five children born to Julian and Mercedes Ramirez. His father had been a former police officer in Juarez, Mexico, but ended up working on the Santa Fe railroad after relocating to Texas. Although he was a hard-working man, he was prone to bursts of anger and would often physically abuse his wife and children.

When Ramirez was two years old, he was struck by a falling piece of furniture and sustained a large laceration on his forehead. Then when he was five, he was struck in the head by a swing and knocked unconscious, and from then on until his early teens, he suffered from frequent seizures.

From the age of 12, Ramirez spent a lot of time with his cousin Miguel Ramirez, who was much older, and had been an Army Green Beret combat veteran who served in the Vietnam War. He would tell young Ramirez about the atrocities he witnessed and the violent rapes he committed while stationed in Vietnam. There was even a photo of him posing with a severed head belonging to a woman he had brutalized.

Ramirez had been smoking cannabis from a young age, and would smoke with Miguel while listening to his gruesome war exploits. Miguel taught Ramirez some skills he learnt in the military, including stealth tactics and how to kill. On May 4, 1973, Ramirez was with Miguel at his home when Miguel shot his wife in the face during an argument. Though Miguel was found not guilty by reason of insanity, he spent the next four years incarcerated in the state mental hospital.

For a while after the shooting, Ramirez lived with his sister and her husband Roberto, and had become withdrawn from friends and family. Roberto was a peeping tom, and would take Ramirez along with him at

night to peep in the windows. It was at this time that Ramirez developed an interest in Satanism and started using harder drugs, namely LSD.

As a teenager, Ramirez began associating his sexual fantasies with violence, and while he was still at school he worked part-time at a Holiday Inn, which he used to his advantage. He would use his passkey to enter the rooms and rob the guests. One night however, a guest returned to his room to find Ramirez trying to rape his wife, and proceeded to beat him. Ramirez was arrested, but the charges were dropped when the couple refused to testify. Nevertheless, he lost his job at the Inn.

Ramirez moved from Texas to California when he was 22 years old, and decided to settle there. Within a few years, he would embark on a killing spree that would make him one of the most famous serial killers in America.

Murders

The body of Jennie Vincow was found on June 28, 1984, in her apartment. She had been stabbed multiple times while sleeping in her bed and her throat had been cut so deep that she was almost decapitated. Ramirez had gained access to her apartment through a mesh screen covering an open window.

On March 17, 1985, Maria Hernandez was shot in the face outside her apartment, but she survived. Her roommate Dayle Okazaki heard the gunshot and hid behind a counter in the kitchen. As she raised her head to see where Ramirez was, he shot her in the forehead, killing her. Shortly afterward, he came across Tsai-Lan Yu in her car in Monterey Park. He pulled her out of her car and shot her twice.

Ramirez broke into a home in Whittier on March 27, 1985, and killed Vincent Zazzara in his bed. When his wife Maxine woke, she was beaten by Ramirez and bound, and he demanded to know where to find their valuables. While he searched the room, Maxine managed to get herself free and pulled a shotgun out from under the bed. Unfortunately it wasn't loaded, and Ramirez, now enraged, shot her three times then mutilated her body with multiple stab wounds. He gouged out her eyes and put them in a jewelry box he took with him.

Bill Doi and his wife Lillian were surprised by Ramirez in their home on May 14, 1985. He shot Doi in the face then beat him until he was unconscious. He then bound Lillian and raped her before searching the house for valuables. Bill lived long enough to get to the hospital but succumbed to his injuries.

Ramirez, driving a stolen vehicle, entered the home of Mabel 'Ma' Bell and her sister Florence 'Nettie' Land on the night of May 29. Using a hammer he found in their kitchen, he bound Land and bludgeoned her. He then bound and bludgeoned Bell and gave her electric shocks using an electrical cord. Ramirez raped Land and drew a pentagram on her thigh and on the bedroom walls with lipstick. The women weren't found for two days, and although both were alive, Bell died later from her injuries.

On July 2, 1985, Ramirez quietly entered the home of Mary Louise Cannon. She was asleep in her bed when he bludgeoned her with a lamp until she was unconscious. Then he stabbed her using one of her own kitchen knives. Five days later, Joyce Lucille Nelson was beaten to death by Ramirez in her home while sleeping on the couch in the living room. He kicked her in the head leaving a clear shoe print from his sneaker on her face.

Ramirez bought a machete on July 20, 1985, and drove a stolen car to Glendale. He entered the home of Lela and Maxson Kneiding and burst into the bedroom. He hacked at both of them with the machete then shot them both in the head. After they died, he inflicted further wounds to their bodies with the machete.

Hours later, he killed Chainarong Khovananth in his home by shooting him in the head. Ramirez raped his wife Somkid multiple times, sodomized her and beat her. Their young son was bound as Ramirez dragged Somkid around telling her to show him where the valuables were. While he attacked her, he forced her to 'swear to Satan'.

The next victims were Elyas Abowath and his wife Sakina. On August 8, 1985, Ramirez entered the home and made his way to the bedroom. He shot Elyas in the head, killing him instantly. Sakina was handcuffed and beaten and forced to show where the jewelry was before being sodomized and

raped. She too was forced to 'swear to Satan'. Her young son entered the room so Ramirez tied him up. As soon as Ramirez left, Sakina untied her son and went to the neighbors seeking help.

The last known murder committed by Ramirez occurred on August 18. He broke into the home of Peter and Barbara Pan. Peter was shot in the head straight away and Barbara was sexually violated and beaten, then shot in the head. Remarkably, Barbara survived. Ramirez drew a pentagram on the bedroom wall in lipstick and wrote 'Jack the Knife'.

Timeline of known murders:

June 28, 1984 - Jennie Vincow, 79

March 17, 1985 - Dayle Okazaki, 34

March 17, 1985 - Tsai Lan Yu, 30

March 27, 1985 - Vincent Zazzara, 64

March 27, 1985 - Maxine Zazzara, 44

April 14, 1985 - William Doi, 66

June 1, 1985 - Mable Keller, 83

July 2, 1985 - Mary Louise Cannon, 75

July 7, 1985 - Joyce Lucille Nelson, 61

July 20, 1985 - Max Kneiding, 68

July 20, 1985 - Leila Kneiding, 66

July 20, 1985 - Chainarong Khovananth, 32

August 9, 1985 - Elyas Abowath, 35

Arrest and Trial

On August 24, Ramirez broke into the apartment of Bill Carns and Inez Erickson. Carns was shot in the head, and Ramirez raped Erickson. He tied her up and left, but she was able to get to the window and see the vehicle he was driving. She gave a description of the car and Ramirez to the police, and the information was broadcast on news reports. The car was identified by a teenager who managed to write down part of the license plate number.

On August 28, the car was located and a fingerprint was found on the mirror. They now knew their suspect was Ramirez. His mugshots were shown on national television and graced the covers of every major newspaper throughout California. The following day, a group of people saw Ramirez and surrounded him, beating him as he tried to steal another car. When police arrived, the angry mob was still beating Ramirez and the police had to intervene before they killed him.

The trial took place in 1989, and ended on September 20 with a guilty verdict on multiple charges. These included 13 counts of murder, 5 attempted murders, 14 burglaries and 11 sexual assaults. On November 7, 1989, he was sentenced to death.

Outcome

While awaiting his execution date, Ramirez became unwell with B-cell lymphoma, chronic hepatitis C infection and a history of chronic substance abuse. His health deteriorated further, and he was transferred to Marin General Hospital in Greenbrae, California, where he died on June 7, 2013 as a result of the lymphoma. He was 53 years old at the time of death and had been sitting on death row for 23 years.

Trivia

This questionnaire with Richard appeared in Answer Me! Issue 4:

Favorite Sports: Rugby, Football, Boxing

Favorite Music: Heavy Metal

Favorite Actress: Samantha Strong

Favorite Vacation Spot: URANUS

Favorite Food: Women's feet

Favorite Color: Red

Pastimes / Hobbies: Traveling and measuring coffins

Biggest Like: Cocaine

Biggest Dislike: Hypocrites, Authority

Make a Wish: To have my finger on a nuclear trigger device

What do you look for in a girl: Nice Ass, Good Legs

Perfect way to spend a date: Moonlit night drinking rum at a cemetery

Describe Yourself: Asshole - and proud of it

Motto: Live each day as if it's your last.

If you like a girl, how do you get a girl to notice you? I pull out my gun

What's one thing you'd change about yourself? Not a damn thing, except where I'm at.

How has your life changed as a result of your success? Privacy is a thing of the past.

What's your message to your fans? Keep your spirit strong.

David Parker Ray

Date of birth: November 6, 1939

Aliases/Nicknames: The Toy-Box Killer

Characteristics: Built a torture chamber

Number of victims: suspected of 60 murders

Date of murders: 1960s - 1999

Date of arrest: March 12, 1999

Murder method: Unknown

Known victims: Unidentified and unnamed women

Crime location: Truth or Consequences, New Mexico

Status: Not convicted of murder. Received a sentence of 224 years imprisonment for other crimes. Died of a heart attack on May 28, 2002.

Background

As a child, Ray was living with his grandfather but his abusive father would visit from time to time. As well as the physical abuse at the hands of his father, Ray was also bullied at school, largely because he displayed extreme shyness around the girls. By the time he was a teenager, he had started using drugs and alcohol regularly, and was having violent sexual fantasies.

Ray fantasized about torture, rape and murder, and collected photos of women in bondage. He also made a number of drawings, described as sadomasochistic, which were discovered by his sister. After he finished school he worked as a mechanic, before enlisting with the Army. While serving with the Army, he also worked as a mechanic, and when he left he received an honorable discharge.

Ray eventually lived in Elephant Butte, New Mexico, where he planned and designed the perfect torture chamber so he could carry out his horrendous fantasies. Known as the 'Toy Box', Ray fitted out a mobile home with every piece of equipment, tool and torture device he could think of, including wall charts on how to inflict the most pain.

In such an isolated location, Ray could just about get away with anything without detection. Until one of his abductees fought her way out of the Toy Box and made a run for it.

Murders

Ray was accused by many people including his accomplices of committing multiple murders, though no bodies have ever been found. The police think the number of murders could be as high as 60. He would abduct women and take them back to the toy box where he could do whatever he wanted to them, including brutal rape, sodomy, and torture.

He had set the toy box up with multiple tools and devices, mostly for inflicting pain and torture, including clamps, pulleys, whips, chains, leg spreader bars, straps, saws and surgical blades. There was also an abundance of sex toys, and diagrams showing different ways to inflict pain on a person. A mirror was on the ceiling so the victim could see what was being done to them.

On March 19, 1999, Ray pretended to be an undercover police officer and convinced Cynthia Vigil that she was being arrested for prostitution. He handcuffed her and took her to the toy box. Three days later, she managed to escape, during which she was involved in a fight with Ray's partner Cindy Hendy. Vigil stabbed Hendy in the neck with an icepick and ran out the door, naked, with an iron slave collar around her neck and padlocked chains.

Arrest and Trial

After Vigil contacted the police, they came and arrested Ray. At the time they thought Ray was only involved in the attack on Vigil, they were unaware that he was possibly a serial killer. Another victim came forward after details of the arrest were made public. Angelica Montano told the police she had endured the same vile treatment in the toy box and that she had reported it at the time, but nobody had followed it up.

A third victim was identified by a video Ray had recorded as he tortured her. Kelli Garrett was abducted and terrorized by Ray in July 1996. He drugged her over a two-day period while he raped and tortured her. When he had enough, he slashed her throat and dumped her on the side of the road, but he didn't realize she was actually still alive.

It was decided that Ray would have three trials: one for each victim. The first trial ended up a mistrial and a retrial was needed. Ray was found guilty of all twelve counts attributed to his attack on Cynthia Vigil. The second trial was meant to be for Angelica Montano's case, but she died before it started, so the trial was dropped. For the third trial he agreed to a plea bargain, and was sentenced to 224 years in prison.

Outcome

Ray was on the way to Lea County Correctional Facility in New Mexico to be questioned by the state police when he collapsed and died, on May 28, 2002. Ray had suffered a fatal heart attack.

Melvin Rees

Date of birth: 1928

Aliases/Nicknames: The Sex Beast

Characteristics: Rape

Number of victims: 5 - 9

Date of murders: June 26, 1957; January 11, 1959

Date of arrest: June 24, 1960

Murder method: Shooting, strangulation, asphyxiation, bludgeoning

Known victims: Margaret Harold; Carroll Jackson, his wife Mildred, and their two daughters, Susan, aged four, and Janet, aged eighteen months

Crime location: Maryland, Virginia

Status: Sentenced to life imprisonment. Died in 1995, due to heart failure.

Background

Rees' childhood is a bit of a mystery, with little known until he attended college. In the early 1950s he enrolled with the University of Maryland, near Washington. His fellow classmates later stated he had a lot of musical talent, and could play the piano, saxophone and clarinet very well. He eventually dropped out of college without graduating, with the hopes of becoming a successful musician.

The first criminal record of Rees was following an assault against a woman in 1955. Rees had apparently tried to force the woman in to his car, but she was able to get away. The woman refused to press charges though, and the case was dropped. At the time, friends of Rees ignored this incident as being anything serious, not realizing that it was a sign of things to come.

Murders

Margaret Harold and her boyfriend were driving down the road in Maryland on June 26, 1957, when Rees forced them off the road. He got out of his car and pointed a gun at them as he gestured for them to roll down the window. He demanded money and cigarettes, but the young couple refused to give him anything, and as a result, Harold was shot in the face and killed. Her boyfriend managed to get away and raised the alarm at a nearby farmhouse. When police arrived on the scene, Harold's clothing had been removed and Rees had sexually assaulted her.

While searching the crime scene area, officer found an abandoned building constructed from cinder blocks. The window of the basement was smashed. Inside the building, they found a large collection of violent pornographic pictures, and autopsy photos taped to the walls. But nothing was found to implicate Rees.

The Jackson family disappeared on January 11, 1959, after visiting relatives. Their car was found abandoned on the side of a road, and it was reported to the police. Around two months later, the body of Carroll Jackson was found in brush near Fredericksburg. He had been tied up and shot in the back of the head. Beneath him they found Janet, and it was determined she had been alive when put in the ditch, and had suffocated from the weight of her father's body. The bodies of Susan and Mildred were found in a forest near Annapolis on March 21. Postmortem examinations showed both had been sexually assaulted and tortured before they were killed.

Timeline of known murders:

June 26, 1957 - Margaret Harold

January 11, 1959 - Carroll Jackson

January 11, 1959 - Mildred Jackson

January 11, 1959 - Janet Jackson, 18 months

January 11, 1959 - Susan Jackson, 4

Arrest and Trial

The police received a letter suggesting they investigate Rees for the murders. Initially the letter was anonymous, but the writer was later identified as Glenn Moser. He told authorities that Rees and himself often had deep philosophical conversations, including whether murder was acceptable, and at one time Rees confided he would consider committing a murder as part of the 'human experience'. This particular conversation was on the day before the disappearance of the Jackson family murders.

Rees was arrested on June 24, 1960 in West Memphis, Arkansas. While searching his home, officers found notes written about the murders of the Jackson family. Later, a man who witnessed Margaret Harold being killed identified Rees as the man responsible.

Rees went on trial for the murder of Harold and was convicted, receiving a life sentence. He was then tried for the murders of the Jacksons and found guilty. Initially he was given the death penalty, but it was changed to life imprisonment in 1972.

Outcome

In 1995, he died from heart failure. It's believed he was responsible for other murders in the area surrounding the University of Maryland, including the deaths of Mary Shomette, Mary Fellers, Ann Ryan and Shelby Venable. He was never charged with these murders though.

Martha Rendell

Date of birth: August 10, 1871

Aliases/Nicknames: Nil

Characteristics: Sadism, Child Killer

Number of victims: 3

Date of murders: July 28, 1907; October 6, 1907; October 6, 1908

Date of arrest: July 1909

Murder method: Poisoning with hydrochloric acid

Known victims: Annie Morris, 7; Olive Morris, 5; Arthur Morris, 14

Crime location: Perth, Australia

Status: Executed by hanging, October 6, 1909.

Background

Born in Adelaide, Southern Australia, Rendell would grow to become a young woman who didn't follow the rules and conventions of society at that time. Unusually, she had moved out of the family home when she was just 16 years old, and quickly gave birth to three illegitimate babies. This made her an outsider to society, as promiscuity was a terrible sin. She then became involved with a married man, Thomas Nicholls Morris.

Thomas and his wife had nine children, and in the mid-1890's he started his affair with Rendell. In 1900, Thomas had to go where the work was, and moved his family to Perth, Western Australia. They also left because rumors were spreading around the small town of his affair with Rendell. Rendell, not willing to give up her affair with Thomas, left her own children behind and followed Thomas and his wife to Perth.

At the period in time, divorce was not a possibility, so there was no way Thomas could divorce his wife and be with Rendell. It was considered a sin to divorce as Christian marriage was the 'foundation of the state and of the welfare of its citizens and their happiness and prosperity'. A federal divorce bill had been proposed, but was quickly voted against.

Rendell and Thomas, however, continued their affair until he finally left his wife in 1906. Although they couldn't divorce, they could separate. He took the five youngest children with him and set up a house with Rendell. By now their affair had been going on for more than ten years, and it seemed Rendell finally had what she had always wanted. But it wasn't all wonderful as she had thought it would be.

They moved to East Perth, to a neighborhood where few would ask questions, and Rendell posed as Thomas' wife. Although they were

together at last, they were living in dire poverty, and Rendell spent all her time cleaning and taking care of the children. The children were resentful towards Rendell, as they most likely missed their mother who had been refused contact with them. The children were either too young or too busy to help out around the home, and Rendell was alone most of the time, with no family or friends. Unhappy with her lot in life, and fed up with the challenges of the children, Rendell took matters in to her own hands to try and get the life she wanted.

Murders

Little 7-year-old Annie was the first of the children to die at the hands of their stepmother. Rendell first put something into Annie's food to make her throat sore. Then, she would swab what she called 'medicine' on the back of her throat. The 'medicine' was actually hydrochloric acid, which made the throat so inflamed, the child was unable to eat. Annie essentially starved to death on July 28, 1907. When the doctor filled out the death certificate, he listed diphtheria as the cause of death.

A few months later, on October 6, 1907, Olive died in the same manner and once again the cause of death was determined to be diphtheria. Rendell then waited for a period of time before taking care of the youngest child living, Arthur. He was 14 at the time and it took longer for Rendell's 'treatment' to work. After his death on October 6, 1908, the doctor asked for an autopsy to be performed. Rendell agreed but only if she could witness the process. The doctors didn't find anything incriminating.

Rendell waited until April 1909 before she decided to end the life of another child, George. She gave him a cup of tea, and almost straight away he complained of having a sore throat. Rendell swabbed the acid on the back of his throat which scared George so much he ran off to his mother's home.

Timeline of known murders:

July 28, 1907 - Annie Morris, 7

October 6, 1907 - Olive Morris, 5

October 6, 1908 - Arthur Morris, 14

Arrest and Trial

When George was reported missing, neighbors contacted the police worried about the circumstances of the children's deaths and now the disappearance of George. Police investigators looked for George and found him at his mother's house. He told the police Rendell had killed his siblings and tried to kill him with 'spirits of salts', which is hydrochloric acid.

Because there had been a fairly long period since the last child died, the only way to check to see if they were murdered was to exhume the bodies. This was done on July 3, 1909, and the autopsies showed there had been poisoning of the children. But there was still no proof of Rendell swabbing their throats. So, they experimented with guinea pigs and rabbits, and the results were the same as was seen on the children's autopsies.

Rendell was arrested along with her husband Thomas, and both were initially charged with the murders of the children. Thomas was eventually acquitted, but Rendell was found guilty and sentenced to death.

Outcome

On October 6, 1909, Rendell was taken to the gallows at Fremantle Prison and hanged, at 8:00 am. She never showed any guilt or remorse for the crimes she had committed. She was buried in Fremantle Cemetery.

Trivia

- Martha Rendell was the last woman executed in the state of Western Australia.
- An illusion appears on one of the prison windows which can only be seen on the outside of the window; when inside the church looking out the glass is smooth and even, with no unusual shape or texture. An urban legend has it that this illusion is the portrait of Rendell, who watches over the prison.
- Serial killer Eric Edgar Cooke was later buried in the same grave as Rendell following his execution.

Robert Ben Rhoades

Date of birth: November 22, 1945

Aliases/Nicknames: The Truck Stop Killer

Characteristics: Torture, Rape

Number of victims: 3 - 50+

Date of murders: 1975 - 1990

Date of arrest: April 1, 1990

Murder method: Strangulation by ligature, shooting

Known victims: Regina Kay Walters, 14; Douglas Scott Zyskowski, 25;
Patricia Candace Walsh, 24; Ricky Lee Jones

Crime location: Texas, Illinois

Status: Sentenced to life imprisonment without parole.

Background

For most of his early childhood, Rhoades was raised by his mother only, but while he was at school, his father returned from overseas. His teen years were fairly unremarkable, until he was arrested at 18 for interfering with a vehicle. He graduated high school in 1964 and promptly enlisted in the Marines. Also in 1964, Rhoades' father was arrested for allegedly molesting a young 12-year-old girl, and before he could be tried, he committed suicide.

Rhoades was dishonorably discharged from the Marines in 1966, but the reason for this is not common knowledge. The following year he got into trouble with the law again and was arrested for stealing. As an adult, Rhoades married three women but only had one child. To support himself and his family he became a truck driver, which gave him the freedom he desired to commit multiple murders over a 15 year period.

There is no history of Rhoades being involved in violent crimes as a young man, and no record of him displaying any overtly disturbing behavior. Certainly there were no clues of the violence and torture he would later inflict on more than 50 women.

Murders

The first known victims of Rhoades were Douglas Zyskowski and his wife Candace Walsh. They were hitchhiking in January 1990 when they were offered a ride by Rhoades in his truck. Zyskowski was killed straight away, and his body was left on the roadside in Sutton County, Texas. He kept Walsh captive for a week, inflicting torture and raping her repeatedly. When she was dead, he disposed of her body in Millard County, Utah. She had been shot multiple times.

Ricky Lee Jones and his girlfriend Regina Kay Walters were believed to be the next victims of Rhoades. The youngsters had run away from home in Houston in February 1990, and disappeared. Rhoades picked them up while they were hitchhiking and most likely killed Jones immediately. Walters was held by Rhoades for so long, that when her body was found, her hair was longer.

Early in the morning of April 1, 1990, Rhoades' truck was found parked on the side of the highway with its hazard lights on by an officer from the Highway Patrol. When he looked inside, he saw a naked and handcuffed woman, who was screaming. Rhoades tried to talk his way out of the situation but failed, and was arrested.

Arrest and Trial

Rhoades was later charged with sexual assault, aggravated assault and unlawful imprisonment. After detectives investigated further, they found there was a connection between Rhoades and the murders in Houston. A search warrant was obtained for his house, and inside, police found multiple photographs of a naked teenager and another woman. They were identified as Walters and Walsh.

Rhoades went on trial in 1994 and was subsequently convicted of the first degree murder of Walters. He received a sentence of life imprisonment without parole.

Outcome

He was then extradited to Utah in 2005, for the murders of Walsh and Zyskowski. However, in 2006 the charges in Utah were dropped. Then, he was extradited to Texas for the murder counts of Walsh and Zyskowski. He agreed to a deal with the DA and received another life sentence.

Trivia

A photo Rhoades took of his victim Regina Kay Walters is well known, and chillingly shows her just minutes before she was murdered in an abandoned barn.

Gary Ridgway

Date of birth: February 18, 1949

Aliases/Nicknames: The Green River Killer

Characteristics: Rape, Necrophilia

Number of victims: 49+

Date of murders: 1982 - 1998

Date of arrest: November 30th, 2001

Murder method: Strangulation

Known victims: Wendy Lee Coffield, 16; Gisele Ann Lovvorn, 19; Debra Lynn Bonner, 23; Marcia Fay Chapman, 31; Opal Charmaine Mills, 16; Terry Rene Milligan, 16; Mary Bridget Meehan, 18; Debra Lorraine Estes, 15; Linda Jane Rule, 16; Denise Darcel Bush, 23; Shawnda Leea Summers, 16; Shirley Marie Sherrill, 18; Colleen Renee Brockman, 15; Alma Ann Smith, 18; Delores LaVerne Williams, 17; Gail Lynn Mathews, 23; Andrea M. Childers, 19; Sandra Kay Gabbert, 17; Kimi-Kai Pitsor, 16; Marie M. Malvar, 18; Carol Ann Christensen, 21; Martina Theresa Authorlee, 18; Cheryl Lee Wims, 18; Yvonne Shelly Antosh, 19; Carrie A. Rois, 15; Constance Elizabeth Naon, 19; Kelly Marie Ware, 22; Tina Marie Thompson, 21; April Dawn Buttram, 16; Debbie May Abernathy, 26; Tracy Ann Winston, 19; Maureen Sue Feeney, 19; Mary Sue Bello, 25; Pammy Avent, 15; Delise Louise Plager, 22; Kimberly L. Nelson, 21; Lisa Yates, 19; Mary Exzetta West, 16; Cindy Anne Smith, 17; Patricia Michelle Barczak, 19; Roberta Joseph Hayes, 21; Marta Reeves, 36; Patricia Yellowrobe, 38; Rebecca Marrero, 20; Unidentified White Female (12-17);

Unidentified White Female (17-19); Unidentified Black Female (18-27);
Unidentified White Female (14-18)

Crime location: Washington

Status: Sentenced to life imprisonment without parole.

Background

Ridgway was described by those who knew him as being a little strange but friendly. He had difficulty remaining loyal to his wives, and his first two marriages came to an end because both parties had been unfaithful. Marcia Winslow, his second wife, later stated that Ridgway had once put her in a chokehold, but no charges were ever laid.

During his second marriage, Ridgway discovered religion, and would go door-to-door to spread the word of God. He was often heard at work reading the Bible out loud, and would do the same at home. He instructed his wife to follow the church pastor's teachings. Sometimes Ridgway would cry after listening to sermons at church or even after reading passages in the Bible.

Throughout his marriage, Ridgway would pay for the services of numerous prostitutes. He asked his wife to engage in sexual activity with him in public places, or other areas where it would be inappropriate. Ridgway apparently had a very high sex drive, according to his ex-wives and girlfriends. At times he would demand sex several times in one day, and was particularly fond of having sex out in the woods.

Although Ridgway admitted to regularly hiring prostitutes, he seemed to constantly be torn between his religious beliefs and his lust, which at times was uncontrollable. He would complain regularly about the prostitutes being present in the neighborhood and how much it brought down the area, and then would pay for their services the same night.

It is perhaps this 'love-hate' relationship he had with the prostitutes, and with himself, that lead to him embarking on a long and prolific killing spree of the very women he loved to hate.

Murders

The number of murders committed by Ridgway is believed to be as high as 71, and possibly more. For a decade, he targeted prostitutes and runaways who were on the street at night. Most of the murders occurred in a two-year period, between 1982 and 1984. Ridgway himself isn't sure how many victims there were because there had been so many he just couldn't remember.

After killing his victims, Ridgway disposed of most of the bodies around the Green River, hence his nickname. Sometimes there were clusters of bodies dumped, all nude, and often posed for impact for anyone who found them. Occasionally Ridgway would go back and have intercourse with the corpses.

Ridgway's modus operandi was to gain the prostitute's trust by showing them a photo of his son. Once the prostitute agreed to go with him, he would rape them then strangle them to death. Because of the way the victim struggled and left marks on Ridgway when he manually strangled them, he began using a ligature instead.

The crime scenes included his truck, his home, or in some secluded areas where he could kill without being seen. While investigators were hunting Ridgway, they sometimes interviewed Ted Bundy to get his insight into the man they were looking for and the murders he committed. One tip Bundy gave them was that the killer was most likely going back to the bodies to have sex with them, which turned out to be right. He suggested that if they found a fresh grave, they should wait by it for him to return.

Because Ridgway had previous charges related to prostitution, he was considered a suspect in 1984, and was subjected to a polygraph test which

he passed. They interviewed Ridgway again in April 1987, this time taking saliva and hair samples from him. The analysis of the DNA testing confirmed that Ridgway was the Green River killer.

Timeline of known murders:

July 8, 1982 - Wendy Lee Coffield, 16

July 17, 1982 - Gisele Ann Lovvorn, 17

July 25, 1982 - Debra Lynn Bonner, 23

August 1, 1982 - Marcia Fay Chapman, 31

August 11, 1982 - Cynthia Jean Hinds, 17

August 12, 1982 - Opal Charmaine Mills, 16

August 29, 1982 - Terry Rene Milligan, 16

September 15, 1982 - Mary Bridget Meehan, 18

September 20, 1982 - Debra Lorraine Estes, 15

September 26, 1982 - Linda Jane Rule, 16

October 8, 1982 - Denise Darcel Bush, 23

October 9, 1982 - Shawnda Leea Summers, 16

October 20, 1982 - Shirley Marie Sherrill, 18

December 3, 1982 - Rebecca Marrero, 20

December 24, 1982 - Sandra Denise Major, 20

March 3, 1983 - Alma Ann Smith, 18

March 8, 1983 - Delores LaVerne Williams, 17

April 10, 1983 - Gail Lynn Mathews, 23
April 14, 1983 - Andrea M. Childers, 19
April 17, 1983 - Sandra Kay Gabbert, 17
April 17, 1983 - Kimi-Kai Pitsor, 16
April 30, 1983 - Marie M. Malvar, 18
May 3, 1983 - Carol Ann Christensen, 21
May 22, 1983 - Martine Theresa Authorlee, 18
May 23, 1983 - Cheryl Lee Wims, 18
May 31, 1983 - Yvonne 'Shelly' Antosh, 19
May 31, 1983 - Carrie Ann Rois, 15
June 8, 1983 - Constance Elizabeth Naon, 19
July 18, 1983 - Kelly Marie Ware, 22
July 25, 1983 - Tina Marie Thompson, 21
August 18, 1983 - April Dawn Buttram, 16
September 5, 1983 - Debbie May Abernathy, 26
September 12, 1983 - Trace Ann Winston, 19
September 28, 1983 - Maureen Sue Feeney, 19
October 11, 1983 - Mary Sue Bello, 25
October 26, 1983 - Pammy Annette Avent, 15
October 30, 1983 - Delise Louise Plager, 22
November 1, 1983 - Kimberly L. Nelson, 21
December 23, 1983 - Lisa Yates, 19

February 6, 1984 - Mary Exzetta West, 16

March 21, 1984 - Cindy Anne Smith, 17

October 17, 1986 - Patricia Michelle Barczak, 19

February 7, 1987 - Roberta Joseph Hayes, 21

March 5, 1990 - Marta Reeves, 36

January 1998 - Patricia Yellowrobe, 38

Arrest and Trial

While Ridgway was at work at a truck factory on November 30, 2001, officers arrived and arrested him. Initially he was arrested under suspicion of murdering four women twenty years earlier. In August 2003, Ridgway reportedly made a plea deal that if he pleaded guilty to the murders and confessed to the others, he wouldn't receive the death penalty.

At his trial on November 5, 2003, Ridgway pleaded guilty to 48 counts of aggravated first degree murder. The statement he made to the court was that he had killed all of the victims in King County, Washington, and had dumped them near Portland just to confuse the police. Sentencing occurred on December 18, 2003, and Ridgway received 48 life sentences with no possibility of parole. He also was sentenced to another life sentence, this one to be served consecutively. A further ten years per victim was added, totalling 480, for tampering with evidence in each murder.

Outcome

Initially Ridgway was kept in solitary confinement at the Washington State Penitentiary until he pleaded with the Federal government in 2005 to be moved to the minimum-medium security section of Airway Heights. He remained there until May 2015, at which time he was transferred to a high security federal prison in Colorado. However, in September that year, he was moved back to Washington partly due to public pressure. He was flown back in a chartered plane in October, so he could be more 'accessible' to investigators working on open murder cases.

Trivia

Quotes:

- Later in a statement Ridgway said that murdering young women was his "career".
- "I would talk to her... and get her mind off of the, sex, anything she was nervous about. And think, you know, she thinks, 'Oh, this guy cares'... which I didn't. I just want to, uh, get her in the vehicle and eventually kill her."

Joel Rifkin

Date of birth: January 20, 1959

Aliases/Nicknames: Joel the Ripper

Characteristics: Dismemberment

Number of victims: 9 - 17+

Date of murders: 1989 - 1993

Date of arrest: June 28, 1993

Murder method: Strangulation

Known victims: Heidi Balch ('Susie'), 25; Julie Blackbird (remains never found); Barbara Jacobs, 31; Mary Ellen DeLuca, 22; Yun Lee, 31; "Number six" unidentified, never found; Lorraine Orvieto, 28; Mary Ann Holloman, 39; "Number nine" unidentified; Iris Sanchez, 25; Anna Lopez, 33; Violet O'Neill, 21; Mary Catherine Williams, 31; Jenny Soto, 23; Leah Evens, 28; Lauren Marquez, 28; Tiffany Bresciani, 22

Crime location: New York

Status: Sentenced to 203 years to life.

Background

Rifkin was the result of an unwanted pregnancy, his biological parents both being young college students. He was put up for adoption within three weeks of his birth, and his adoptive parents were from Long Island, and considered upper-middle-class. His adoptive mother was of Spanish descent and his adoptive father was of Russian Jewish descent, and his mother converted to Judaism when they married.

The family moved to East Meadow in 1965, and Rifkin would spend most of his life there. He was keen on photography and craft hobbies, and although he was a bright child, he didn't fit in with the other kids. Despite having a high IQ, he didn't do well at school, most likely because he was constantly teased and bullied because of the way he stood and walked. His nickname was 'the Turtle' because he moved slowly with a slouching posture. Despite all of this, he did manage to graduate from high school, but although he tried many times at college, he was unable to graduate, dropping out numerous times.

Rifkin spent most of his time living at home, even as a young adult, and seemed unable to hold down a steady job. He was involved in a relationship with a girl at one point, and she described him as being sweet but would often suffer from depression. Rifkin's adoptive father was stricken with cancer, and in February 1987, he committed suicide to end his own suffering. Rifkin was tasked with delivering the eulogy at his funeral, and his behavior began to deteriorate from then onwards.

Rifkin was arrested for soliciting a prostitute in August, the same year his father died. He was able to keep the arrest a secret from his mother and escaped with just a fine. To prevent his mother finding out about him using prostitutes, he started traveling further away from home to solicit them.

Around this time he also started collecting books and newspaper clippings about murderers that had killed prostitutes. These included works about Arthur Shawcross and the Green River Killer, and two years after his father died, he crossed the line between fantasy and murder.

Murders

Rifkin's first murder occurred in 1989, after he killed a woman at his home in Long Island. He dismembered the body and removed the fingertips and teeth to prevent identification if the body was discovered. The woman's decapitated head was put into a paint can and left in the woods of a New Jersey golf course. Her legs were dumped further north, and the rest of her body went into the East River.

It is believed Rifkin killed another 16 women over the next four years. The bodies were often placed into objects like boxes and steam trunks before being dumped. At least four of his victims were discovered inside oil drums. How he killed them varied, and some of the bodies showed evidence of being strangled before being cut up and disposed of. Rifkin later admitted he had killed most of them after engaging in sex.

Timeline of known murders:

1989 - Heidi Balch ('Susie'), 25

1990 - Julie Blackbird

July 13, 1991 - Barbara Jacobs, 31

September 1, 1991 - Mary Ellen Deluca, 22

1991 - Yun Lee, 31

December 1991 - Lorraine Orvieto, 28

January 2, 1992 - Mary Ann Holloman, 39

April 1992 - Iris Sanchez, 25

May 25, 1992 - Anna Lopez, 33

1992 - Violet O'Neill, 21

July 1992 - Jane Doe

1992 - Jane Doe 2

October 2, 1992 - Mary Catherine Williams, 31

November 16, 1992 - Jenny Soto, 23

February 27, 1993 - Leah Evens, 28

March 2, 1993 - Lauren Marquez, 28

June 24, 1993 - Tiffany Bresciani, 22

Arrest and Trial

Rifkin came unstuck on June 28, 1993, when he was caught driving without license plates on his truck. They began chasing Rifkin, and it came to an end when he crashed the truck into a utility pole outside the courthouse in Mineola, New York. As police approached the truck to arrest Rifkin, they noticed a terrible smell coming from the back of the truck. They looked in, and found the body of Tiffany Bresciani, a dancer and prostitute.

The initial interrogation lasted for eight hours, during which time he confessed to killing 17 women. He gave out as much detail about each murder as possible, though sometimes he couldn't remember the names. He even drew maps showing where he had disposed of the victims so police could recover their remains.

The search of Rifkin's home where he lived with his mother turned up a plethora of evidence. In his bedroom they found items belonging to the victims including ID cards, credit cards, driver's licenses, jewelry, clothing and photographs. The worst discovery was in the garage, where they found a chainsaw and a wheelbarrow stained with human tissue.

When Rifkin went on trial in 1994, he was convicted of nine counts of second degree murder. He received a sentence of 203 years to life with the possibility of parole in the year 2197.

Outcome

In 1994, Rifkin was involved in a prison fight with Colin Ferguson, the mass murderer. Ferguson had been on the phone and asked Rifkin to be quiet, and the situation escalated when Ferguson stated he had killed 'six devils' while Rifkin had only killed women. Rifkin then replied that his murder rate was higher, and Ferguson responded by punching him in the mouth.

It was decided in 1996 that Rifkin's presence in the general prison population was disruptive, given the notoriety of his crimes. The corrections department therefore placed him in solitary confinement, where he was only allowed out of his cell for one hour per day. He stayed in solitary for four years, and then was transferred to the Clinton Correctional Facility.

Rifkin filed a lawsuit against the corrections department stating his time in solitary confinement was unconstitutional, but it was determined his rights had not been violated.

Trivia

- Tested IQ of 128.
- In early 1994, it was reported that Rifkin had engaged in a jailhouse scuffle with mass murderer Colin Ferguson. The brawl began when Ferguson asked Rifkin to be quiet while Ferguson was using the telephone. The New York Daily News reported the fight escalated after Ferguson told Rifkin, "I wiped out six devils and you only killed women," to which Rifkin responded, "Yeah, but I had more victims." Ferguson then punched Rifkin in the mouth.

John Edward Robinson

Date of birth: December 27, 1943

Aliases/Nicknames: John Osborne, The Slave Master, Internet Slavemaster

Characteristics: Rape

Number of victims: 8+

Date of murders: 1984 - 2000

Date of arrest: June 2, 2000

Murder method: Bludgeoning

Known victims: Paula Godfrey, 19; Lisa Stasi, 19; Catherine Clampitt, 27; Sheila Dale Faith, 45; Debbie Lynn Faith, 15; Izabela Lewicka, 21; Beverly Bonner, 49; Suzette Trouten, 28

Crime location: Kansas, Missouri

Status: Sentenced to death, awaiting execution.

Background

Robinson's father was an alcoholic, and his mother a strict disciplinarian. He was one of five children, and was raised in Cicero, Illinois. He became an Eagle Scout in 1957 and was sent with a group to London to perform in front of the Queen, which would have been a huge honor, even for a young boy. That same year he was enrolled at a private boy's school, Quigley Preparatory Seminary, which is where boys were sent if they aspired to become priests. However, there were some disciplinary issues and he left after only completing one year.

Robinson decided to become a medical X-ray technician and enrolled at Morton Junior College in 1961. He only lasted two years though before he dropped out. Three years later he moved to Kansas, where he met his wife Nancy. Their first child, a son, was born a year later, followed by a daughter in 1967 and twins in 1971.

In 1969 Robinson was arrested for embezzlement. He had used fake credentials to gain employment at a medical practice working as an X-ray technician. While employed there, he stole \$33,000 and was subsequently sentenced to three years' probation. The following year he violated the terms of his probation by moving away to Chicago without permission. He started working as an insurance salesman, and in 1971 he was in trouble once again for embezzlement. This time he was sent back to Kansas City to serve out his probation order which was extended to take into account the latest embezzlement charge.

Robinson just couldn't keep out of trouble, and in 1975 he was arrested for securities fraud as well as mail fraud, after setting up a fake medical consulting company. His probation was extended once again. All throughout this period, Robinson portrayed himself as a good family man,

and a valuable member of society. He coached baseball, was a Scoutmaster and even helped out as a teacher in Sunday School.

He was able to con his way on to the board of directors of a charity and forged letters supposedly from the executive director to the Kansas City mayor and also from the mayor to other community leaders, extolling his wonderful efforts as a volunteer and a member of the community. He even went so far as to host a 'Man of the Year' awards banquet, which he then awarded himself the title.

Despite finally finishing his probation in 1979, he still couldn't stop his fraud and forgery habits, and was arrested in 1980 for check forgery and embezzlement. This time he was sentenced to 60 days behind bars, which he served in 1982. On his release he created a fake company and scammed a friend out of \$25,000, alleging he could turn a quick profit so the friend could pay for the health needs of his dying wife.

At the same time, Robinson was becoming a nuisance in the neighborhood. He was sexually propositioning the wives of his neighbors, which lead to a physical fight with a husband. He also claimed he had joined a sadomasochistic cult that was very secretive, and called the International Council of Masters. He stated he was the 'Slavemaster' and it was his job to lure female victims to gatherings so they could be raped and tortured. His mindset was certainly changing from financial gain to violent fantasy.

Murders

Paula Godfrey was hired in 1984 to work as a sales representative by Robinson for one of his fraudulent companies. Soon after, he told everyone he had sent her away to do some training, but she was never heard from again. Her disappearance was reported to the police by her parents, who received a typed letter several days later supposedly written by Godfrey and saying she was ok and didn't want to have contact.

Robinson met Lisa Stasi in a battered women's shelter in Kansas City in 1985, and promised her a job, somewhere to live and daycare for her baby. He asked her to sign many sheets of blank paper. Robinson contacted his brother a few days later, and because his brother and his wife had been unable to adopt a baby through the regular process, he told them he had one they could adopt. He requested \$5,000 for legal fees and claimed the mother of the baby had killed herself. The adoption went ahead, and nothing was heard of Lisa Stasi.

Catherine Clampitt moved to Kansas City to find a job in 1987. Robinson hired her, making big promises of travel and wardrobe allowances, and she disappeared in June. Due to being incarcerated for various reasons, the next murder didn't occur until 1999, when he offered a job to Izabela Lewicka.

When Lewicka was hired by Robinson, he also offered her a bondage relationship. She moved to Kansas City and was given an engagement ring by Robinson, despite the fact he was still married. She signed a slave contract that enabled Robinson to have complete control over her life. She told her parents she had married, but didn't tell them to whom. Lewicka disappeared in summer of 1999.

Robinson's final known victim was nurse Suzette Trouten. She agreed to travel the world with Robinson as his submissive sex slave. Robinson was killed on March 1, 2000, but her parents continued to receive typed letters, telling them about the world travels and experiences she was allegedly having.

Timeline of known murders:

1984 - Paula Godfrey, 19

January 10, 1985 - Lisa Stasi, 19

June 15, 1987 - Catherine Clampitt, 27

1993 - Beverly Bonner, 49

Summer, 1994 - Sheila Dale Faith, 45

Summer, 1994 - Debbie Lynn Faith, 15

Summer, 1999 - Izabela Lewicka, 21

March 1, 2000 - Suzette Trouten, 28

Arrest and Trial

By 1999 Robinson had become sloppy in his attempts to cover his tracks. The authorities in Kansas and Missouri were taking notice of him because he kept appearing in missing persons reports and investigations.

On June 2, 2000, Robinson was arrested following a complaint of sexual battery and theft against him. Because there had been a theft charge, authorities had the probable cause they needed to search his farm. During the search, two large drums were found containing the decomposing bodies of Lewicka and Trouten.

In Missouri, the authorities searched a storage facility rented by Robinson and found three more large drums. These contained the bodies of Bonner, Sheila Faith and her daughter Debbie Faith. It was determined that all five victims had died from blows from a blunt instrument to the head.

Robinson went on trial in 2002 for the murders of Trouten, Stasi and Lewicka. He was convicted on all counts, and was given the death penalty for Trouten and Lewicka, and received life imprisonment for Stasi. Another 5-20 year sentence for arranging the adoption of Trouten's baby was added on.

A deal was proposed for Robinson to get leniency in the murder counts in Missouri if he provided information on where the remains of Stasi, Clampitt and Godfrey were located. Robinson refused, and so another plea deal was negotiated in October 2003. Robinson made a statement acknowledging that the prosecution had enough evidence to convict him of the remaining murders. Although technically not a guilty plea, he was convicted of the murders and sentenced to a life sentence for each murder.

Outcome

There were long periods of time where Robinson's movements and actions can't be accounted for, and this has led police to think that there may be more victims out there that are yet to be discovered.

Robinson remains on death row in Kansas awaiting his execution.

Tiago Gomes da Rocha

Date of birth: 1988

Aliases/Nicknames: The Goiânia Serial Killer

Characteristics: Claimed 'rage' killings following abuse as a child

Number of victims: 16 - 39+

Date of murders: 2011 - 2014

Date of arrest: October 14, 2014

Murder method: Shooting, strangulation, stabbing

Known victims: Diego Martins Mendes, 16; Bárbara Ribeiro Costa, 14; Beatriz Oliveira Moura, 23; Lílían Mesquita e Silva, 16; Ana Victor Duarte, 27; Wanessa Oliveira Felipe, 51; Janaína de Souza, 24; Bruna de Sousa Gonçalves, 26; Carla Barbosa Araújo, 22; Isadora Cândida dos Reis, 24; Thamara da Conceição Silva, 17; Taynara Rodrigues da Cruz, 13; Rosirene Gualberto da Silva, 29; Juliana Neubia Dias, 22; Ana Lília Gomes, 14; - Arlete dos Anjos Carvalho, 16; Mauro Ferreira Nunes, 51; others unnamed

Crime location: Goiânia, state of Goiás, Brazil

Status: Sentenced to 564 years and 4 months imprisonment.

Background

Rocha has never said a lot about his early life, other than he was raised by his grandparents and suffered sexual abuse at the hands of a neighbor when he was just 11 years old. He also claimed to be a victim of bullying as a child. As a young adult, he began working as a security guard, and used this to help him commit robberies.

When he was finally arrested for the murders, he claimed his reason for killing was because no woman had ever loved him.

Murders

Rocha's murders followed no specific patterns - the way he killed and the victims he chose were random rather than carefully planned murders. His first known murder was that of Diego Martins Mendes, a homosexual, on November 9, 2011. Rocha lured him into the forest under the pretense of wanting to have sex with him, but strangled him to death instead.

Barbara Costa was killed on January 18, 2014, shot to death as he drove past her on his motorcycle. She had been waiting in the square for her grandmother. The following day, he shot and killed Beatriz Moura. On February 3, 2014, Rocha killed Lilian Mesquita e Silva as she was on her way to collect her children from school. Rocha quietly walked up to her and shot her in the chest.

The next victim, Ana Duarte, was standing outside a snack bar when Rocha shot her. A month later, on April 23, he killed Wanessa Felipe by shooting her in the back while she was at a drugstore to purchase medicine. On May 8, he shot Janaína de Souza at a bar, then on the same day he killed Bruna Gonçalves while she was on the street waiting for a bus.

On May 23, he walked up to Carla Barbosa and her sister and asked them to hand over their cellphones. He shot Carla to death right in front of her sister. Isadora dos Reis was killed on June 10 while walking with her boyfriend down the street. Then, Thamara Silva, who was pregnant, was killed on her way to church on June 15. The same day, he shot and killed Taynara Rodrigues da Cruz.

Rosirene de Silva was killed on July 19, and a week later, Juliana Dias was shot while spending time with her boyfriend. The last known victim was Ana Gomes, who was shot to death while waiting for a bus.

Timeline of known murders:

November 9, 2011 - Diego Martins Mendes, 16

January 18, 2014 - Barbara Ribeiro Costa, 14

January 19, 2014 - Beatriz Cristina Oliveira Moura, 23

January 28, 2014 - Arlete dos Anjos Carvalho, 16

February 3, 2014 - Lilian Mesquita e Silva, 27

February 28, 2014 - Mauro Ferreira Nunes, 51

March 14, 2014 - Ana Maria Victor Duarte, 26

April 23, 2014 - Wanessa Oliveira Felipe, 22

May 8, 2014 - Janaína de Souza, 24

May 8, 2014 - Bruna de Sousa Gonçalves, 26

May 23, 2014 - Carla Barbosa Araújo, 22

June 10, 2014 - Isadora Cândida dos Reis, 24

June 15, 2014 - Thamara da Conceição Silva, 17

June 15, 2014 - Taynara Rodrigues da Cruz, 13

July 19, 2014 - Rosirene Gualberto da Silva, 29

July 25, 2014 - ; Juliana Neubia Dias, 22

August 2, 2014 - Ana Lúcia Gomes, 14

Arrest and Trial

Within minutes of Gomes' murder, police had noticed the license plate on Rocha's motorcycle was stolen, and he was eventually found and arrested on October 14, 2014. During the interrogation, he confessed to all of the murders, which surprised the police because they had initially thought the crimes were committed by local gangs or drug cartels.

After searching his house, they found his gun, and ballistic testing showed it was the same weapon used in the murders.

Rocha was put on trial 26 times, and subsequently was convicted of committing 24 murders, as well as illegal possession of a weapon and robbery. There are likely to be more charges laid in the future.

Outcome

While incarcerated awaiting his trials, Rocha smashed a light bulb in his cell and used it to cut his wrists, in an attempt to commit suicide. He was found quickly and treated.

Trivia

- Police chief Eduardo Prado, one of those in charge of the investigation into the slayings, said: “He asked whether he would face trial if he killed someone else in custody.”
- “He still wants to kill. His attitude is very strange.”

Dayton Leroy Rogers

Date of birth: September 30, 1953

Aliases/Nicknames: The Molalla Forest Killer

Characteristics: Rape, Torture, Mutilation

Number of victims: 7 - 8+

Date of murders: 1983 - 1987

Date of arrest: August 7, 1987

Murder method: Stabbing

Known victims: Cynthia "Dee Dee" Diane DeVore, 21; Maureen Ann Hodges, 26; Reatha Marie Gyles, 16; Nondace "Noni" Kae Cervantes, 26; Lisa Marie Mock, 23; Christine Lotus Adams, 35; Jennifer Lisa Smith, 25; unidentified victim

Crime location: Clackamas County, Oregon

Status: Sentenced to death, awaiting execution.

Background

Rogers was born in Idaho, and as a child his family moved around a lot. He was one of three siblings, and his parents adopted another four children, meaning Rogers was no longer the baby of the family. From a young age, he began committing petty crimes, and in seventh grade he was caught firing a BB gun at cars as they drove past.

In 1972, Rogers was in a relationship with a 15-year-old girl, and on August 25, he took her into the woods supposedly to have sexual intercourse, but he ended up stabbing her in the abdomen. He told her he couldn't trust her anymore, but immediately afterwards, he asked her to marry him before driving her to the hospital for treatment.

Arrested and charged, he plead guilty to second-degree assault and was given a sentence of four years' probation. A year later he used a broken bottle to attack two 15 year old girls and was charged with assault again. This time he was acquitted by reason of insanity and sent to a state hospital. On December 12, 1974, he was released.

Rogers was charged with first-degree rape in January 1976, but was found innocent by a jury a few months later. However, in February, while waiting for his trial to start, he raped a high school girl and used a knife to threaten another. Once again he plead innocent by reason of insanity, but was convicted. This time he received a five-year jail sentence. The prosecutor of the case said Rogers was "a murder case looking for a place to happen". Despite this, he was given parole 17 months into his sentence. He promptly violated his parole and went back for another 10 months. Several years later, the prosecutor's prediction came true.

Murders

Rogers was linked to seven murders, his victims often prostitutes, runaways and drug addicts. The bodies of six of his victims were found together in a dump site on private forest land near Molalla, Oregon.

One of his victims, Jennifer Smith, was working as a prostitute on August 7, 1987, when she was picked up by Rogers. He parked his truck in a lot, and then stabbed her eleven times. She suffered stab wounds to her abdomen, breasts and back. She fell out of the truck and witnesses rushed to her aid, but she later died in hospital.

After Smith fell out of the truck, witnesses used their cars to block in Rogers' truck, but he managed to escape by driving over the landscaping. One of the witnesses gave chase through Milwaukie, Gladstone, Oregon City and Canby. When Rogers parked in a driveway, the witness wrote down the address and phoned the police.

Arrest and Trial

Rogers was arrested soon after he killed Smith and was charged with her murder. While he was waiting to go on trial, investigators discovered the remains of seven women in the Molalla Forest. They had all suffered the same savage abuse, including mutilation. Rogers was subsequently charged with eight murders in total.

He was found guilty of murdering Smith and received a life sentence. Then on June 7, 1989, he was convicted of the other seven murders and was sentenced to death.

Outcome

The death penalty for Rogers was overturned by the Supreme Court twice, in 1992 and 2000. In 2012, the death sentence was once again overturned, and a new trial for the appropriate penalty was pending.

On November 16, 2015, Rogers was sentenced to death for the fourth time. For the sentence to be commuted to a whole life sentence, Rogers would have to waive any future appeal options and admit his crimes.

Trivia

- He cut off and took the feet of most of his victims as trophies.

Glen Rogers

Date of birth: July 15, 1962

Aliases/Nicknames: The Cross Country Killer, The Casanova Killer

Characteristics: Robbery, Rape

Number of victims: 5+

Date of murders: 1993, 1995

Date of arrest: November 13, 1995

Murder method: Stabbing, strangulation

Known victims: Mark Peters, 71; Sandra Gallagher, 33; Linda Price, 30s; Tina Marie Cribbs; Andy Jiles Sutton

Crime location: California, Mississippi, Kentucky, Florida, Louisiana

Status: Sentenced to death, awaiting execution.

Background

Rogers came from a large family which included seven children, and was raised in Hamilton, Ohio by his parents Claude and Edna Rogers. Before he had turned 16, Rogers was expelled from junior high school, but there is no information as to why. Not long afterwards, his girlfriend Deborah Ann Nix who was 14 at the time fell pregnant to another boy. Despite this, they married, and went on to have another child in 1981.

According to Nix, Rogers was physically abusive towards her and she filed for divorce in 1983. Little is known about what happened in Rogers's life between the time of the divorce up to his capture and arrest for murder in 1995. During questioning he would claim responsibility for nearly 70 murders, but later changed his story saying he had just been 'joking'. However, his jailhouse confessions would lead to many questions being asked, including whether or not it was Rogers who killed Nicole Simpson and Ron Goldman.

Murders

The body of Mark Peters was discovered on January 10, 1994, in a cabin belonging to Rogers' family. Peters had once given Rogers a place to stay before October 1993, around the same time Peters was reported missing. Rogers also disappeared, and the police were eventually lead to the cabin by Rogers' brother Clay. When Peters was found, his skeletal remains were tied to a chair and hidden beneath a heap of furniture.

Sandra Gallagher met Rogers in a bar in Van Nuys, Los Angeles, on September 28, 1995. Her body was found the next day, strangled and burned, in her car. The car was parked near Rogers' apartment. Rogers moved on, first to Mississippi, then Louisiana and Florida. He killed a woman in each state he resided in.

Rogers met Linda Price at a beer tent at the Mississippi State Fair, and they ended up sharing an apartment together in Jackson for a while. Her sister went to visit on Halloween, 1995, but Price wouldn't answer the door, and Rogers was nowhere to be seen. Price's body was eventually found dead in the bathtub.

On November 5, 1995, Rogers met Tina Marie Cribbs at a bar in Tampa, Florida. According to the bartender, Rogers asked Cribbs for a ride. Her body was found at a motel two days later, with stab wounds to buttocks and the chest. The motel clerk confirmed Rogers had arrived at the motel a few days before Cribbs was killed. The day after her body was discovered, her wallet was found at a rest area, and the fingerprints on it matched Rogers.

An acquaintance of Rogers, Andy Jiles Sutton, lived in Bossier City Louisiana. On November 9, 1995, her body was found on her waterbed,

with multiple slashing wounds. Just a few days later, Rogers' murder spree would come to an end.

Timeline of known murders:

October 1993 - Mark Peters, 71

September 28, 1995 - Sandra Gallagher, 33

October 30, 1995 - Linda Price

November 5, 1995 - Tina Marie Cribbs, 34

November 9, 1995 - Andy Jiles Sutton, 37

Arrest and Trial

Rogers was stopped while driving Cribbs car on November 13, 1995, in Kentucky. He claimed she had leant it to him, but the officers didn't believe him. By now it was known Rogers was the number one suspect in several murders and he was promptly arrested and taken in for questioning.

Rogers initially confessed to committing up to 70 murders, but later changed his story and recanted his statement. He claimed he had only been joking, and that he hadn't committed any murders at all.

But, when he went on trial, the jury didn't believe him, and he was convicted of killing Tina Marie Cribbs on July 11, 1997, and later sentenced to death. On June 22, 1999, he was convicted of murdering Sandra Gallagher. He was sentenced on July 16 to death.

Outcome

The appeal process has just about run out for Rogers, so unless his final appeal succeeds, he will stay on death row until it's time for his execution.

Trivia

- Was obsessed with redheads

Danny Rolling

Date of birth: May 26, 1954

Aliases/Nicknames: The Gainesville Ripper, James R. Kennedy

Characteristics: Rape, Necrophilia, Mutilation, Decapitation

Number of victims: 8

Date of murders: November 4, 1989 – August 27, 1990

Date of arrest: September 8, 1990

Murder method: Stabbing

Known victims: Julie Grissom, 24; Sean Grissom, 8; William Grissom, 55; Sonja Larson, 18; Christina Powell, 17; Christa Hoyt, 18; Manuel "Manny" Taboada, 23; Tracy Paules, 23

Crime location: Louisiana, Florida

Status: Executed by lethal injection, October 25, 2006.

Background

From the time he was born, Rolling's police officer father James told him he was an unwanted child. The children and their mother suffered terrible abuse by their father, and at one point Rolling's mother attended the local hospital claiming her husband had tried to get her to cut herself. She tried to leave her husband numerous times, but she always went back to him.

During one incident, Rolling was handcuffed by his father then taken away by the police, because his father said he was 'embarrassed' by his son.

Throughout his teens and into young adulthood, Rolling committed numerous robberies and was arrested multiple times. He also got caught watching a cheerleader get dressed. He had difficulty as an adult holding down a steady job, and just didn't seem to fit in so well with the rest of society. Things started coming to a head when in May 1990, Rolling tried to kill his father. He was unsuccessful, but his father did lose an ear and an eye.

A few months after the attack on his father, Rolling went on a robbery spree that quickly escalated to murder.

Murders

On November 4, 1989 in Shreveport, William Grissom, his daughter Julie and grandson Sean were at home getting ready to have dinner when they were attacked and killed by Rolling. Julie's body suffered mutilation, and had then been cleaned and posed. Rolling has never confessed to these murders, but he wrote about them with details only the killer would now.

During the month of August, 1990, five students were murdered by Rolling while he was on a burglary spree in Florida. The first murders occurred on August 24. Rolling broke into the apartment shared by Christina Powell and Sonja Larson. He came across Powell asleep on the couch, but proceeded upstairs where he found Larson asleep in her room. He put tape over her mouth and stabbed her to death. Then he went back downstairs, taped Powell's mouth and tied her wrists together. He raped her and stabbed her in the back five times before posing both girls bodies in provocative poses.

The following day he broke into Christa Hoyt's apartment, and waited for her to return home. He attacked her from behind, choking her until she was subdued, then taped her mouth and bound her wrists. He raped her and stabbed her in the back before decapitating her. He placed her head on a shelf looking towards the corpse.

On Monday August 27, Rolling broke into the apartment shared by Tracy Paules and Manny Taboada. He struggled with Taboada before killing him, which attracted Paules' attention. She tried to barricade her bedroom door, but Rolling broke through it. He taped her mouth and wrists and raped her. He stabbed her in the back, and posed her dead body.

Timeline of known murders:

November 4, 1989 - William Grissom, 55

November 4, 1989 - Julie Grissom, 24

November 4, 1989 - Sean Grissom, 8

August 24, 1990 - Sonja Larson, 17

August 24, 1990 - Christina Powell, 17

August 25, 1990 - Christa Hoyt, 18

August 27, 1990 - Tracy Paules, 23

August 27, 1990 - Manny Taboada, 23

Arrest and Trial

Rolling was picked up and arrested late in 1990 for a burglary, and during that investigation, it was found that his tools matched marks left at the crime scene of the Grissom family murders. They searched the camp where he was living and found recordings of Rolling singing songs he had written that more or less were a confession of the murders. In November 1991, he was charged with several counts of murder.

In 1994, Rolling issued a guilty plea to all charges. He was subsequently sentenced to death for each murder he committed.

Outcome

On October 25, 2006, Rolling was executed by lethal injection. He was pronounced deceased at 6:13 pm. Before his execution, he had declined to make a last statement but did sing a gospel hymn. He had made a written statement before his death in which he confessed to murdering the Grissom family.

Trivia

- While on death row at Florida State Prison, Rolling wrote songs and poems and drew pictures.
- The blockbuster movie ‘Scream’ was inspired by the crimes of Rolling.

Robert Rozier

Date of birth: July 28, 1955

Aliases/Nicknames: Neriah Israel

Characteristics: Member of 'the Temple of Love', black supremacist cult - killed on order; mutilation.

Number of victims: 7

Date of murders: 1981 - 1986

Date of arrest: October 31, 1986

Murder method: Stabbing

Known victims: Raymond Kelly, 61; Cecil Branch, 45; Rudy Broussard, 37; Anthony Brown, 28; others unnamed

Crime location: Florida, New Jersey, Missouri

Status: Plea deal - 22 years for murders, released after 10. Convicted on 3rd strike law for check fraud, and sentenced to 25 years to life.

Background

Rozier was born in Alaska, but after the family moved to California, he attended Cordova High School in Sacramento. He started at Aberdeen Junior College, and then transferred to play for the football team at the University of California, at Berkeley. In 1979 he was drafted by the St. Louis Cardinals in the 9th round of the NFL Draft. However he only played six games for the Cardinals before being released from his contract, with rumors stating drug issues as the reason.

Rozier began committing petty crimes, and after six months in prison, he moved into Yahweh ben Yahweh's 'Temple of Love' in 1982. He then decided to change his name to 'Neariah Israel', which translates to 'child of god'.

Murders

Yahweh had a secret group called 'The Brotherhood' and Rozier joined in 1985. To gain entrance to the exclusive group, applicants were required to kill a white man and bring a part of their body back. This set Rozier on a deadly path that would see him murder seven innocent people to please the Brotherhood.

One of his first orders was to go out and kill a white man to prove his worth. As he walked the streets, he came across Raymond Kelly who had consumed a bit too much alcohol and was asleep in his car in the parking lot behind the lounge he had been in all evening. Rozier, spotting Kelly, walked up to the car, opened the door and stabbed Kelly with his sword over and over. He had to take back a token of proof, so he cut off one of Kelly's ears. But he dropped it and couldn't find it, so he had to cut off the other one.

Cecil Branch didn't like the harassment he received from cult members on the street, and on one particular day, he pushed a female member out of the way. His license plate number was taken down, and three members turned up at his apartment that night, but he scared them off. So the four Death Angels, including Rozier, went back, gagged him and tied him to a chair. They then stabbed him 25 times. His ear was cut off and taken back to Yahweh.

The next targets were Anthony Brown and Rudy Broussard. They were against the cult purchasing their apartment building and they made their opinion known to anyone who listened. So the Death Angels, with Rozier, were sent to sort the problem out on Halloween, 1986. First, they lured Broussard out of the apartment and shot him in the head, and Brown tried to escape but was tackled to the ground and shot. This time there were witnesses.

Arrest and Trial

Rozier was arrested that night, October 31, 1986. To help himself, he offered to tell the authorities everything they wanted to know about the crimes being committed by the cult, including the many murders. For the information he gave them, he was put into the witness protection program and given a new identity.

Outcome

Rozier, under his new name Ramses, was arrested for bouncing a bad check on February 5, 1999. Police were able to track down 29 bad checks he had passed adding up to over \$2,000. He then told the police his real name, thinking that because he was in the protection program, he couldn't be charged.

But, he was wrong, and he was convicted of fraud. Because he had already spent time in prison, he fell under the three strike law in California, so he was automatically given a 25 to life sentence. He will be eligible for parole in 2024.

Marc Sappington

Date of birth: February 9, 1978

Aliases/Nicknames: The Kansas City Vampire

Characteristics: Cannibalism, Drug Addiction, Schizophrenia

Number of victims: 4

Date of murders: March - April 2001

Date of arrest: April 12, 2001

Murder method: Stabbing, shooting

Known victims: David Mashak; Terry T. Green, 25; Michael Weaver Jr., 22; Alton "Fred" Brown Jr., 16

Crime location: Kansas

Status: Sentenced to life imprisonment.

Background

Sappington was raised by his mother, a single parent who worked hard to support herself and her son. His father had disappeared before he was even born, and they would never meet. To try and keep her son on the straight and narrow without a strong male influence, his mother insisted he attend church every Sunday. Sappington even became a choir boy, which was not common in the poverty-stricken neighborhood they lived in full of gangsters and rappers.

Although he wasn't a very good student at school, there was something about Sappington that drew others to him. One young boy who became close with Sappington was 16-year-old Alton Brown, who everyone called Freddie. He saw Sappington as a big brother of sorts, and had a lot of admiration for him. But, Sappington wasn't as innocent as he once had been.

As a teenager, Sappington discovered drugs and became particularly fond of PCP - a potent drug that can cause psychotic paranoia. He would smoke cigarettes that had been soaked in embalming fluid then dried out, commonly referred to as 'danks' on the streets. While under the influence, Sappington got into trouble with the local police, typically for minor issues, none of which were violent or crimes against other people.

On March 16, 2001, Sappington's drug use resulted in the brutal and horrific murder of the young man who had considered him a brother.

Murders

The first time Sappington was involved in a murder it wasn't meant to be, it was meant to just be a robbery. Along with an acquaintance, Gaytan, they chose David Mashak as their target and planned to walk up to him, threaten him with the gun they had, and demand all his money and jewelry. Mashak didn't hesitate to hand everything over, but for some reason, Sappington opened fire and killed him anyway.

His next victim was his one friend, Terry Green. Because they had been friends for a long time, Green wasn't surprised when Sappington arrived on his doorstep on April 7, 2001. According to Sappington, the voices in his head took over, and they instructed him to lure Green down to the basement. There, he attacked him with a knife so ferociously that the walls were splattered with blood. The voices then told Sappington to drink Green's blood, and he obliged by lapping it up. He then disposed of the body.

On April 10, the voices once again took over and told Sappington to find another victim. He saw his friend Michael Weaver sitting outside his house and they began chatting. Sappington suggested they go for a ride in Weaver's car, and they ended up in a dark alley. There he stabbed his friend to death and was told to drink his blood, but he was worried about getting caught and left, with Weaver's body still lying there.

On his way home from killing Weaver, he came across Alton Brown. Obeying the voices, he invited Brown over to his house. This time instead of stabbing, he killed Brown with a shotgun. He drank his blood, then butchered the body and ate some of the flesh raw. He put Brown's remains, or what was left, into a trash bag and left the house.

Timeline of known murders:

March 16, 2001 - David Mashak

April 7, 2001 - Terry Green, 25

April 10, 2001 - Michael Weaver, 22

April 10, 2001 - Alton 'Fred' Brown, 16

Arrest and Trial

Sappington was brought into the police station for questioning after Brown's body was found in the basement of his house, on April 12, 2001. During the interrogation, Sappington was linked to the other murders he had committed.

Initially he was charged with the murders of Green, Weaver and Brown. On June 23, 2004, he was found guilty, despite his defense team establishing Sappington had been under the influence of PCP at the time of the murders. He was sentenced to three terms of life imprisonment, as well as 32 months for burglary and 79 months for kidnapping. He was later convicted of the robbery and murder of Mashak, and received another life sentence with the possibility of parole after serving 20 years.

Outcome

Sappington claimed that the voices in his head were telling him that if he didn't drink the blood or eat the flesh of humans, he was going to die. Many thought this was indicative of insanity, but in actual fact, the hallucinogenic drugs he was abusing most likely caused the auditory hallucinations. It was later discovered he had a fascination with serial killer Jeffrey Dahmer, who was also fond of cannibalism.

Trivia

- During an interview with a homicide detective in Kansas City, Sappington asked if he could ‘chomp on the cop’s leg’.
- Officers who interviewed Sappington described him as articulate, funny and bright.

Arthur Shawcross

Date of birth: June 6, 1945

Aliases/Nicknames: The Genesee River Killer, The Monster of the Rivers, The Rochester Strangler

Characteristics: Possible cannibalism

Number of victims: 13

Date of murders: 1972, 1988 - 1990

Date of arrest: January 5, 1990

Murder method: Strangulation, asphyxiation, bludgeoning

Known victims: Jake Blake, 10; Karen Ann Hill, 8; Patricia Ives, 25; Frances Brown, 22; June Cicero, 34; Darlene Trippi, 32; Anne Marie Steffen, 28; Dorothy Blackburn, 27; Kimberly Logan; June Stotts, 30; Marie Welch, 22; Elizabeth Gibson; Dorothy Keller, 59

Crime location: Monroe and Wayne Counties, New York

Status: Sentenced to life imprisonment without parole. Died from natural causes, November 10, 2008.

Background

Shawcross was born in Maine, and when he was still a young child, the family moved to Watertown in New York State. According to Shawcross, he was a constant bed-wetter as a child and suffered terrible sexual abuse at the hands of his mother. He alleged she would insert objects into his rectum, and when he was 9 years old, she performed oral sex on Shawcross. He later admitted to having a sexual relationship with his own sister while he was at junior high school.

Although Shawcross achieved good grades when he first started school, his grades deteriorated after the first two years, and he was subsequently tested which showed his IQ to be only 86. This meant he was borderline mentally retarded, but when he was tested again later on in life, the score was a little higher, at 105. Shawcross was a bully at school and would lash out violently, until he dropped out in 1960.

In 1967 Shawcross was drafted by the Army. Although he was only 21 years old at this time, he was already married and had an 18-month-old son. As he entered the Army, he divorced his wife and gave up his parental rights to the child, a child he never saw again. During his one tour of the Vietnam War, he claimed to have participated in gruesome acts such as beheading the Vietnamese women. However, his records showed he never saw any combat.

Following his return from Vietnam, Shawcross was stationed in Oklahoma, and married his second wife Linda. She noticed he seemed to get a perverse delight in lighting fires, and a psychiatrist from the Army explained to her Shawcross got a sexual enjoyment from the fires.

When Shawcross was discharged from the Army, he and his wife moved to Clayton, New York. He started committing crimes including burglary and arson, and he ended up receiving a five-year sentence in prison. He was released after serving just 22 months, partly because during a prison riot he had helped rescue a guard. After his release, Shawcross, who was now divorced again, move back to Watertown. In May 1972, the community would be rocked by the deaths of two young children and suspicion fell on Shawcross.

Murders

The first murders committed by Shawcross were the terrible killings of two small children. On May 7, 1972, he lured Jack Owen Blake into the woods in Watertown, then raped and killed him. A few months later, on September 2, he did the same with Karen Ann Hill, who was visiting the area for the Labor Day Weekend. He was quickly arrested in October, and confessed to the two murders. He negotiated a plea bargain which lowered his charges to manslaughter. He was sentenced to 25 years, but was released on parole in April, 1987.

For the next series of murders, Shawcross's MO changed completely. Instead of targeting small children, he now focused on adult prostitutes in the area, except for June Stott, who was a local woman. As multiple women were turning up dead, police used aerial surveillance to find missing bodies. On January 3, 1990, they found the body of June Cicero. Nearby, the surveillance team saw Shawcross standing beside his car urinating over the Salmon Creek Bridge, into the water where his last victim was disposed of.

Timeline of murders:

May 7, 1972 - Jack Owen Blake, 10

September 2, 1972 - Karen Ann Hill, 8

March 18, 1988 - Dorothy "Dotsie" Blackburn, 27

July 9, 1988 - Anna Marie Steffen, 28

July 29, 1989 - Dorothy Keeler, 59

September 29, 1989 - Patricia "Patty" Ives, 25

October 23, 1989 - June Stott, 30

November 5, 1989 - Marie Welch, 22

November 11, 1989 - Frances "Franny" Brown, 22

November 15, 1989 - Kimberly Logan, 30

November 25, 1989 - Elizabeth "Liz" Gibson, 29

December 15, 1989 - Darlene Trippi, 32

December 17, 1989 - June Cicero, 34

December 28, 1989 - Felicia Stephens, 20

Arrest and Trial

Shawcross was arrested on January 5, 1990. During the interrogation he gave no indication of being responsible for all the murders. They had found enough evidence against him and he was charged with eleven murders.

Under legal advice, he pleaded not guilty on all of the charges. A psychiatric assessment was ordered, and numerous tests were given to Shawcross. Although the report found he had a lot of mental issues, he was by legal definition, sane.

He was found guilty of all charges and sentenced to spend the rest of his life in prison.

Outcome

Shawcross died of natural causes on November 10, 2008. He had been complaining of leg pain, and was transported to the Albany Medical Center, where he suffered a cardiac arrest. He was pronounced dead at 9:50 pm.

Trivia

Psychiatrist's analysis:

Dr. Kraus, compiled an extensive report which suggested that Arthur Shawcross was "an emotionally unstable, learning disabled, genetically impaired, biochemically disordered, neurologically damaged individual, psychologically alienated from significant others during his entire life, venting his frustration and rage, mixed with fear and defiance in a lifetime of ever more violent and destructive aggression, which ultimately turned to overpowering murderous fury."

Quotes from Shawcross:

- "I took the right leg of that woman's body, from the knee to the hip took the fat off and ate it while he stared at the other girl. When I bit into it she just urinated right there."
- "She was giving me oral sex, and she got carried away . . . So I choked her."

Harold Shipman

Date of birth: January 14, 1946

Aliases/Nicknames: Dr. Death, The Angel of Death

Characteristics: Poisoning of his patients

Number of victims: 215 - 250+

Date of murders: 1975 - 1998

Date of arrest: September 7, 1998

Murder method: Poisoning by lethal injection of diamorphine

Known victims: Marie West, 81; Irene Turner, 67; Lizzie Adams, 77; Jean Lilley, 59; Ivy Lomas, 63; Muriel Grimshaw, 76; Marie Quinn, 67; Laura Kathleen Wagstaff, 81; Bianka Pomfret, 49; Norah Nuttall, 64; Pamela Hillier, 68; Maureen Ward, 57; Winifred Mellor, 73; Joan Melia, 73; Kathleen Grundy, 81; Eva Lyons, 70; Sarah Hannah Marsland, 86; Mary Ellen Jordan, 73; Harold Bramwell, 73; Annie Campbell, 88; Alice Gorton, 76; Jack Shelmerdine, 77; May Slater, 84; Elizabeth Ashworth, 81; Percy Ward, 90; Moira Fox, 77; Dorothy Tucker, 51; Gladys Roberts, 78; Joseph Bardsley, 83; Winifred Arrowsmith, 70; Mary Winterbottom, 76; Ada Ashworth, 87; Joseph Overall, 80; Edith Wibberley, 76; Eileen Cox, 72; Peter Lewis, 41; May Brookes, 74; Ellen Higson, 84; Margaret Conway, 69; Kathleen McDonald, 73; Thomas Moulton, 70; Mildred Robinson, 84; Frances Turner, 85; Selina Mackenzie, 77; Vera Bramwell, 79; Fred Kellett, 79; Deborah Middleton, 81; Dorothy Fletcher, 74; Thomas Fowden, 81; Mona White, 63; Mary Tomlin, 73; Beatrice Toft, 59; Lily Broadbent, 75; James Wood, 82; Frank Halliday, 76; Albert Cheetham, 85; Alice

Thomas, 83; Jane Frances Rostron, 78; Nancy Anne Brassington, 71; Margaret Townsend, 80; Nellie Bardsley, 69; Elizabeth Ann Rogers, 74; Elizabeth Fletcher, 90; Alice Mary Jones, 83; Dorothea Hill Renwick, 90; Ann Cooper, 93; Jane Jones, 83; Lavinia Robinson, 84; Rose Ann Adshead, 80; Alice Prestwich, 69; Walter Tingle, 85; Harry Stafford, 87; Ethel Bennett, 80; Wilfred Chappell, 80; Mary Emma Hamer, 81; Beatrice Helen Clee, 78; Josephine Hall, 69; Hilda Fitton, 75; Marion Carradice, 80; Elsie Harrop, 82; - Elizabeth Mary Burke, 82; Sarah Jane Williamson, 82; John Charlton, 81; George Edgar Vizor, 67; Joseph Frank Wilcockson, 85; Dorothy Rowarth, 56; Mary Rose Dudley, 69; Monica Rene Sparkes, 72; Hilda Mary Couzens, 92; Olive Heginbotham, 86; Amy Whitehead, 82; Mary Emma Andrew, 86; Sarah Ashworth, 74; Marjorie Parker, 74; Nellie Mullen, 77; Edna May Llewellyn, 68; Emily Morgan, 84; Violet May Bird, 60; Jose Kathleen Diana Richards, 74; Edith Calverley, 77; Joseph Leigh, 78; Eileen Robinson, 54; Charles Edward Brocklehurst, 90; Joan Milray Harding, 82; Christine Hancock, 53; Elsie Platt, 73; Mary Alice Smith, 84; Ronnie Devenport, 57; Cicely Sharples, 87; Alice Christine Kitchen, 70; Maria Thornton, 78; Henrietta Walker, 87; - Elizabeth Ellen Mellor, 75; John Bennett Molesdale, 81; Alice Kennedy, 88; Lucy Virgin, 70; Netta Ashcroft, 71; Lily Bardsley, 88; Marie Antoinette Fernley, 53; John Crompton, 82; Frank Crompton, 86; Vera Brocklehurst, 70; Angela Philomena Tierney, 71; Edith Scott, 85; Clara Hackney, 84; Renate Eldtraude Overton, 47; Kate Maud Sellors, 75; Clifford Barnes Heapey, 85; Bertha Moss, 68; Brenda Ashworth, 63; Ernest Rudol, 82; Ada Matley Hilton, 88; Irene Aitken, 65; Arthur Henderson Stopford, 82; Geoffrey Bogle, 72; Dora Elizabeth Ashton, 87; Muriel Margaret Ward, 87; Edith Brock, 74; Charles Henry Barlow, 88; Konrad Peter Ovcarr-Robinson, 43; Elizabeth Teresa Sigley, 67; Kenneth Wharmby Woodhead, 75; Hilda Mary

Hibbert, 81; Erla Copeland, 79; Jane Elizabeth Shelmerdine, 80; John Sheard Greenhalgh, 88; Minnie Doris Irene Galpin, 71; Marjorie Hope Waller, 79; John Stone, 77; Elsie Godfrey, 85; Edith Brady, 72; Valerie Cuthbert, 54; Lilian Cullen, 77; Renee Lacey, 63; Leah Fogg, 82; Gladys Saunders, 82; Nellie Bennett, 86; Margaret Mary Vickers, 81; Tom Balfour Russell, 77; Carrie Leigh, 81; Marion Elizabeth Higham, 84; Elsie Hannible, 85; Elsie Barker, 84; Sidney Arthur Smith, 76; Dorothy Mary Andrew, 85; Anne Lilian Ralphs, 75; Millicent Garside, 76; Irene Heathcote, 76; Samuel Mills, 89; Thomas Cheetham, 78; Kenneth Ernest Smith, 73; Eileen Daphne Crompton, 75; David Alan Harrison, 47; Elsie Lorna Dean, 69; Irene Brooder, 76; Charlotte Bennison, 89; Charles Henry Killan, 90; Betty Royston, 70; Joyce Woodhead, 74; Rose Garlick, 76; May Lowe, 84; Mary Coutts, 80; Elsie Cheetham, 76; Lena Norah Slater, 68; Ethel May Kellet, 74; Doris Earls, 79; Vera Whittingslow, 69; Maureen Lamonier Jackson, 51; John Loudon Livesey, 69; Lily Newby Taylor, 86; Dorothy Doretta Hopkins, 72; Nancy Jackson, 81; Mavis Mary Pickup, 79; Bessie Swann, 79; Enid Otter, 77; Florence Lewis, 79; Mary Walls, 78; Elizabeth Mary Baddeley, 83; Elizabeth Battersby, 70; Alice Black, 73; James Joseph King, 83; Mabel Shawcross, 79; Cissie Davies, 73; Laura Frances Linn, 83; Irene Berry, 74; Joan Edwina Dean, 75; Harold Eddleston, 77; Margaret Anne Waldron, 65; Irene Chapman, 74; Dorothy Long, 84; Lily Higgins, 83; Ada Warburton, 77; Martha Marley, 88

Crime location: West Yorkshire, Greater Manchester, England

Status: Sentenced to life imprisonment. Committed suicide in his cell by hanging, on January 13, 2004.

Background

Shipman was born in Nottingham, England, to parents who were devout Methodists. As a youngster, he played rugby league and was considered very good at it. He also was an accomplished long distance runner, and became the vice-captain of the athletics team in his final year of school.

When Shipman was 7 years old, his mother died of lung cancer, and because he had been very close to his mother, her illness and death had a deep effect on him. Towards the end of her life, doctors would come to the home and administer her morphine, and Shipman was present to see the effects the drug had on his mother. To him, morphine took away all the pain his mother was suffering, even though her illness was terminal.

Shipman married in 1966, and the marriage produced four children. Four years after their marriage, Shipman graduated from Leeds School of Medicine with a medical degree, and the first few years of his career were spent working at the General Infirmary in Yorkshire. He started working as a general practitioner (GP) in 1974 in West Yorkshire.

Shipman was caught forging prescriptions in 1975. He had been prescribing himself pethidine, also known as Demerol, for his own personal use. He was fined and made to attend a rehabilitation clinic. Two years later, he was a GP again, this time at the Donnybrook Medical Center in Hyde. He stayed with this medical center until 1993, when he started his own surgery.

In March 1998, suspicions arose in the community regarding the high number of patients who were dying under the care of Shipman. What started as a general concern grew into a full-blown inquiry, the results of which shocked the nation.

Murders

In March 1998, Deborah Massey from a local funeral parlor contacted Dr. Linda Reynolds of the Brooke Surgery in Hyde and expressed her concern at the growing number of clients she was receiving from Shipman. The South Manchester District coroner, John Pollard, was also contacted about the high death rate. Of particular note, was that there were a large number of cremation forms for elderly women that he had needed to be countersigned. The police were contacted but at that time they felt there wasn't enough evidence to charge anyone.

A taxi driver, John Shaw, contacted police in August 1998, saying he suspected that Shipman may have been murdering a large number of patients. There were also concerns about a will that may not have been authentic, after Angela Woodruff's elderly mother died. She had left nothing to her children and family, but left a large sum of money, £386,000, to Shipman. They reported their concerns to the police.

The police initiated an investigation, and exhumed Woodruff's mother, Kathleen Grundy. Her body was found to contain traces of a drug called diamorphine, used to control pain in patients who have terminal cancer. There was now a case where charges could be laid.

Timeline of known and suspected murders:

March 17, 1975 - Eva Lyons, 70

August 7, 1978 - Sarah Hannah Marsland, 86

August 30, 1978 - Mary Ellen Jordan, 73

December 7, 1978 - Harold Bramwell, 73

December 20, 1978 - Annie Campbell, 88
August 10, 1979 - Alice Maude Gorton, 76
November 28, 1979 - Jack Leslie Shelmerdine, 77
April 18, 1981 - May Slater, 84
August 26, 1981 - Elizabeth Ashworth, 81
January 4, 1983 - Percy Ward, 90
June 28, 1983 - Moira Ashton Fox, 77
January 7, 1984 - Dorothy Tucker, 51
February 8, 1984 - Gladys Roberts, 78
April 15, 1984 - Joseph Bardsley, 83
April 24, 1984 - Winifred Arrowsmith, 70
September 21, 1984 - Mary Winterbottom, 76
November 27, 1984 - Ada Ashworth, 87
December 17, 1984 - Joseph Vincent Overall, 80
December 18, 1984 - Edith Wibberley, 76
December 24, 1984 - Eileen Theresa Cox, 72
January 2, 1985 - Peter Lewis, 41
February 1, 1985 - May Brookes, 74
February 4, 1985 - Ellen Higson, 84
February 15, 1985 - Margaret Ann Conway, 69
February 22, 1985 - Kathleen McDonald, 73
June 26, 1985 - Thomas Moulton, 70

June 26, 1985 - Mildred Robinson, 84
August 23, 1985 - Frances Elizabeth Turner, 85
December 17, 1985 - Selina Mackenzie, 77
December 20, 1985 - Vera Bramwell, 79
December 31, 1985 - Fred Kellett, 79
January 7, 1986 - Deborah Middleton, 81
April 23, 1986 - Dorothy Fletcher, 74
June 6, 1986 - Thomas Fowden, 81
September 15, 1986 - Mona Ashton White, 63
October 7, 1986 - Mary Tomlin, 73
November 17, 1986 - Beatrice Toft, 59
December 16, 1986 - Lily Broadbent, 75
December 23, 1986 - James Wood, 82
March 30, 1987 - Frank Halliday, 76
April 1, 1987 - Albert Cheetham, 85
April 16, 1987 - Alice Thomas, 83
May 8, 1987 - Jane Frances Rostron, 78
September 14, 1987 - Nancy Anne Brassington, 71
December 11, 1987 - Margaret Townsend, 80
December 29, 1987 - Nellie Bardsley, 69
December 30, 1987 - Elizabeth Ann Rogers, 74
January 5, 1988 - Elizabeth Fletcher, 90

January 15, 1988 - Alice Mary Jones, 83
February 9, 1988 - Dorothea Hill Renwick, 90
February 15, 1988 - Ann Cooper, 93
February 15, 1988 - Jane Jones, 83
February 16, 1988 - Lavinia Robinson, 84
September 18, 1988 - Rose Ann Adshead, 80
October 20, 1988 - Alice Prestwich, 69
November 6, 1988 - Walter Tingle, 85
December 17, 1988 - Harry Stafford, 87
December 19, 1988 - Ethel Bennett, 80
January 31, 1989 - Wilfred Chappell, 80
March 8, 1989 - Mary Emma Hamer, 81
May 12, 1989 - Beatrice Helen Clee, 78
June 5, 1989 - Josephine Hall, 69
July 6, 1989 - Hilda Fitton, 75
August 14, 1989 - Marion Carradice, 80
September 22, 1989 - Elsie Harrop, 82
September 26, 1989 - Elizabeth Mary Burke, 82
October 15, 1989 - Sarah Jane Williamson, 82
October 16, 1989 - John Charlton, 81
October 18, 1989 - George Edgar Vizor, 67
November 6, 1989 - Joseph Frank Wilcockson, 85

September 18, 1990 - Dorothy Rowarth, 56
December 30, 1990 - Mary Rose Dudley, 69
October 7, 1992 - Monica Rene Sparkes, 72
February 24, 1993 - Hilda Mary Couzens, 92
February 24, 1993 - Olive Heginbotham, 86
March 22, 1993 - Amy Whitehead, 82
April 8, 1993 - Mary Emma Andrew, 86
April 17, 1993 - Sarah Ashworth, 74
April 27, 1993 - Marjorie Parker, 74
May 2, 1993 - Nellie Mullen, 77
May 4, 1993 - Edna May Llewellyn, 68
May 12, 1993 - Emily Morgan, 84
May 13, 1993 - Violet May Bird, 60
July 22, 1993 - Jose Kathleen Diana Richards, 74
August 16, 1993 - Edith Calverley, 77
December 16, 1993 - Joseph Leigh, 78
December 22, 1993 - Eileen Robinson, 54
December 31, 1993 - Charles Edward Brocklehurst, 90
January 4, 1994 - Joan Milray Harding, 82
January 13, 1994 - Christine Hancock, 53,
February 9, 1994 - Elsie Platt, 73
May 17, 1994 - Mary Alice Smith, 84

May 25, 1994 - Ronnie Devenport, 57
June 15, 1994 - Cicely Sharples, 87
June 17, 1994 - Alice Christine Kitchen, 70
July 27, 1994 - Maria Thornton, 78
November 25, 1994 - Henrietta Walker, 87
November 30, 1994 - Elizabeth Ellen Mellor, 75
December 29, 1994 - John Bennett Molesdale, 81
January 9, 1995 - Alice Kennedy, 88
March 1, 1995 - Lucy Virgin, 70
March 7, 1995 - Netta Ashcroft, 71
March 7, 1995 - Lily Bardsley, 88
March 13, 1995 - Marie Antoinette Fernley, 53
March 21, 1995 - John Crompton, 82
March 26, 1995 - Frank Crompton, 86
March 31, 1995 - Vera Brocklehurst, 70
April 10, 1995 - Angela Philomena Tierney, 71
April 13, 1995 - Edith Scott, 85
April 14, 1995 - Clara Hackney, 84
April 21, 1995 - Renate Eldtraude Overton, 47
May 4, 1995 - Kate Maud Sellors, 75
June 2, 1995 - Clifford Barnes Heapey, 85
June 13, 1995 - Bertha Moss, 68

June 17, 1985 - Brenda Ashworth, 63
June 29, 1995 - Ernest Rudol, 82
July 12, 1995 - Ada Matley Hilton, 88
July 31, 1995 - Irene Aitken, 65
August 29, 1995 - Arthur Henderson Stopford, 82
September 14, 1995 - Geoffrey Bogle, 72
September 26, 1995 - Dora Elizabeth Ashton, 87
October 24, 1995 - Muriel Margaret Ward, 87
November 8, 1995 - Edith Brock, 74
November 22, 1995 - Charles Henry Barlow, 88
November 25, 1995 - Konrad Peter Ovcarr-Robinson, 43
December 14, 1995 - Elizabeth Teresa Sigley, 67,
December 14, 1995 - Kenneth Wharmby Woodhead, 75
January 2, 1996 - Hilda Mary Hibbert, 81
January 11, 1996 - Erla Copeland, 79
February 21, 1996 - Jane Elizabeth Shelmerdine, 80
February 27, 1996 - John Sheard Greenhalgh, 88
March 12, 1996 - Minnie Doris Irene Galpin, 71
April 18, 1996 - Marjorie Hope Waller, 79
April 24, 1996 - John Stone, 77
May 7, 1996 - Elsie Godfrey, 85
May 13, 1996 - Edith Brady, 72.

May 29, 1996 - Valerie Cuthbert, 54

May 30, 1996 - Lilian Cullen, 77

June 6, 1996 - Renee Lacey, 63

June 10, 1996 - Leah Fogg, 82

June 17, 1996 - Gladys Saunders, 82

June 25, 1996 - Nellie Bennett, 86

June 25, 1996 - Margaret Mary Vickers, 81

July 2, 1996 - Tom Balfour Russell, 77

July 11, 1996 - Irene Turner, 67 (CONVICTED)

July 16, 1996 - Carrie Leigh, 81

July 19, 1996 - Marion Elizabeth Higham, 84

July 24, 1996 - Elsie Hannible, 85

July 29, 1996 - Elsie Barker, 84

August 30, 1996 - Sidney Arthur Smith, 76

September 12, 1996 - Dorothy Mary Andrew, 85

September 20, 1996 - Anne Lilian Ralphs, 75

October 23, 1996 - Millicent Garside, 76

November 20, 1996 - Irene Heathcote, 76

November 23, 1996 - Samuel Mills, 89

December 4, 1996 - Thomas Cheetham, 78

December 17, 1996 - Kenneth Ernest Smith, 73

January 2, 1997 - Eileen Daphne Crompton, 75

January 3, 1997 - David Alan Harrison, 47

January 8, 1997 - Elsie Lorna Dean, 69

January 20, 1997 - Irene Brooder, 76

January 27, 1997 - Charlotte Bennison, 89

February 3, 1997 - Charles Henry Killan, 90

February 4, 1997 - Betty Royston, 70

February 23, 1997 - Joyce Woodhead, 74

February 28, 1997 - Lizzie Adams, 77 (CONVICTED)

March 22, 1997 - Rose Garlick, 76

March 27, 1997 - May Lowe, 84

April 21, 1997 - Mary Coutts, 80

April 25, 1997 - Elsie Cheetham, 76

April 25, 1997 - Jean Lilley, 58 (CONVICTED)

May 2, 1997 - Lena Norah Slater, 68

May 12, 1997 - Ethel May Kellet, 74

May 21 - Doris Earls, 79

May 29, 1997 - Ivy Lomas, 63 (CONVICTED)

June 24, 1997 - Vera Whittingslow, 69

July 7, 1997 - Maureen Lamonnier Jackson, 51

July 14, 1997 - Muriel Grimshaw, 76 (CONVICTED)

July 25, 1997 - John Loudon Livesey, 69

July 28, 1997 - Lily Newby Taylor, 86

August 10, 1997 - Dorothy Doretta Hopkins, 72

September 1, 1997 - Nancy Jackson, 81

September 22, 1987 - Mavis Mary Pickup, 79

September 26, 1997 - Bessie Swann, 79

September 29, 1997 - Enid Otter, 77

November 10, 1997 - Florence Lewis, 79

November 14, 1997 - Mary Walls, 78

November 21, 1997 - Elizabeth Mary Baddeley, 83

November 24, 1997 - Marie Quinn, 67 (CONVICTED)

December 8, 1997 - Elizabeth Battersby, 70

December 9, 1997 - Laura Kathleen Wagstaff, 81 (CONVICTED)

December 10, 1997 - Bianka Pomfret, 49 (CONVICTED)

December 18, 1997 - Alice Black, 73

December 24, 1997 - James Joseph King, 83

January 22, 1998 - Mabel Shawcross, 79

January 26, 1998 - Norah Nuttall, 64 (CONVICTED)

February 2, 1998 - Cissie Davies, 73

February 9, 1998 - Pamela Marguerite Hillier, 68 (CONVICTED)

February 13, 1998 - Laura Frances Linn, 83

February 15, 1998 - Irene Berry, 74

February 18, 1998 - Maureen Alice Ward, 57 (CONVICTED)

February 27, 1998 - Joan Edwina Dean, 75

March 4, 1998 - Harold Eddleston, 77

March 6, 1998 - Margaret Anne Waldron, 65

March 7, 1998 - Irene Chapman, 74

March 13, 1998 - Dorothy Long, 84

March 17, 1998 - Lily Higgins, 83

March 20, 1998 - Ada Warburton, 77

March 24, 1998 - Martha Marley, 88

May 11, 1998 - Winifred Mellor, 73 (CONVICTED)

June 12, 1998 - Joan May Melia, 73 (CONVICTED)

June 24, 1998 - Kathleen Grundy, 81 (CONVICTED)

Arrest and Trial

Shipman was arrested on September 7, 1998, and while searching his property they found a typewriter, the same type that was used to type up the forged will of Kathleen Grundy. The police investigated all of the cases where Shipman had signed the death certificates, a total of 15 cases to begin with.

In each case they discovered a pattern of Shipman administering the Diamorphine, signing the death certificates, and then falsifying the medical records to say the patient had been in poor health. A massive enquiry was undertaken to look at every case Shipman had dealt with and it was discovered there were up to 250 victims.

On October 5, 1999, Shipman's trial began. He was charged with the murders of Irene Turner, Marie West, Jean Lilley, Lizzie Adams, Ivy Lomas, Marie Quinn, Muriel Grimshaw, Kathleen Wagstaff, Norah Nuttall, Bianka Pomfret, Pamela Hillier, Winifred Mellor, Maureen Ward, Kathleen Grundy and Joan Melia. The charges were of murder by lethal injection, between the years of 1995 and 1998.

At the end of the trial, the jury deliberated for six days. On January 31, 2000, he was found guilty of the 15 counts of murder and one count of forgery. He received 15 life sentences, plus four years for the will forgery. In 2002, the Home Secretary confirmed the whole life tariff was appropriate.

Outcome

On January 13, 2004, Shipman took his own life by hanging himself in his cell at Wakefield Prison. He was discovered at 6:20 pm and declared dead at 8:10 pm. He had used his bed sheets and tied them to the bars on the windows of his cell to hang himself. Although some families of his victims were relieved he was dead, others felt as though they had been cheated, as now there would never be a confession or answers as to why he had killed his patients.

Although it is uncertain as to why he committed suicide, he had mentioned to his probation officer that if he killed himself, his wife would remain financially secure and continue to get the pension. If Shipman lived past the age of 60, she wouldn't have been entitled to the pension.

Trivia

- For the 2002 movie, Harold Shipman: Doctor Death, John Hurt was initially offered the lead role but he declined, because he thought the project was ‘distasteful’.
- There is a memorial garden for Shipman’s victims in Hyde Park called the ‘Garden of Tranquility’.

Daniel Lee Siebert

Date of birth: June 17, 1954

Aliases/Nicknames: Nil

Characteristics: Rape, Robbery

Number of victims: 9 - 12

Date of murders: 1979, 1985 - 1986

Date of arrest: September 4, 1986

Murder method: Strangulation, stabbing

Known victims: An unnamed homosexual man; Gidget Castro, 28; Nesia McElrath, 23; His girlfriend Sherri Weathers, 24, and her two sons, Chad, 5, and Joseph, 4; Linda Jarman, 33; Linda Faye Odum, 32; Beatrice McDougall, 57

Crime location: California, New Jersey, Alabama

Status: Sentenced to death. Died due to cancer, April 22, 2008.

Background

Siebert was another child raised in a home that was full of violence, abuse and domination. His father was a sadistic man who abused Siebert both physically and sexually. According to Siebert, his father had raped him, beaten him, was made to perform oral sex, and have sex with his father. He was also made to put on girl's underwear before having sex with his father. At times he would be gagged and tied up, and he claims his father urinated on him sometimes.

Siebert's father was fond of using a bullwhip on his son, and the physical scars from the beatings remained throughout his life. His mother was so terrified of her husband that she was too afraid to tell anyone what was going on or to leave. She finally got the courage to take the kids and go when Siebert was 11 years old. A year later, his mother became involved with a new man, and Siebert ran away from home. He became involved in the drug and prostitution scene while he was living on the streets.

Siebert decided to straighten himself out in 1972, and using an alias, Daniel Marlow, he managed to enlist with the Marines. Although he thought the disciplinary environment of the Marines would be good for him, he was dishonorably discharged early, though it is not clear why. Within the next two years, Siebert fathered two children, and his son would later become a prison inmate as an adult.

In 1979, Siebert was convicted of manslaughter, and after his release from prison, he began traveling around from state to state under another alias, Danny Spence. In late 1985, he met Donald Hendren who was on his way to Alabama to work at the Institute for the Deaf and Blind. He invited Siebert to go with him, but he declined and they parted ways. However,

Hendren called Siebert in January, a month later, and this time Siebert agreed and moved in with Hendren in Talladega, Alabama.

Siebert started volunteering at the Institute as an art teacher, and he was hoping it would become a permanent paid position. But Siebert started dating one of the students, Sherri Weathers, which was against the policy of the school, and what happened next would ensure he would never get that position he was hoping for.

Murders

In 1996, Sherri Weathers had missed her classes at the Alabama Institute for the Dead and Blind in Talladega for over a week. When her apartment was searched, they found the dead bodies of Sherri and her two children. All three had been murdered. As they investigated further, they discovered another student was missing, Linda Jarman, and they also found her murdered in her apartment.

During the investigation into the student's murders, they questioned an art student called Daniel Spence, because people had suggested he was interested in Sherri Weathers. But when they checked his fingerprints, the man wasn't who they thought he was - he was in fact Siebert, and he had previously been charged with manslaughter and there was a current warrant for his arrest in an assault case.

Further checks showed he had been dating Linda Odum before she went missing on February 19, 1986. Her body was found a month later, and it was clear she had been murdered. Her car had been stolen, and when it was found, there were fingerprints on it that matched Siebert.

Siebert went on the run for the next six months, until he placed a call to a friend who quickly reported it to the police. The next time he called the friend, it was traced, and police now knew where he was.

Timeline of known murders:

December 1985 - Gidget Castro, 28

December 1985 - Nesia Gail McElrath, 23

February 19, 1986 - Linda Jarman, 33

February 19, 1986 - Sherri Weathers, 24

February 19, 1986 - Chad Weathers, 5

February 19, 1986 - Joseph Weathers, 4

February 19, 1986 - Linda Faye Odum, 32

March 8, 1986 - Beatrice McDougall, 57

Arrest and Trial

When Siebert showed up to work on September 4, 1986, he was met by police officers and arrested. While he was being interviewed at the police station, he eventually confessed to committing five murders in Alabama and several others in other states. In total, he believed he had killed 12 people.

When he stood trial, he was found guilty and sentenced to death.

Outcome

Siebert was due to be executed on October 25, 2007, but just hours beforehand, his execution was delayed. He was suffering from pancreatic cancer at the time and receiving treatment. In December of that year, Siebert was questioned regarding a pornography case, but no charges were filed against him.

On April 22, 2008, Siebert died from complications of his cancer at 1:35 pm. By then he had been waiting to be executed for over 21 years.

Robert Joseph Silveria, Jr.

Date of birth: March 3, 1959

Aliases/Nicknames: The Boxcar Killer, Sidetrack

Characteristics: Robbery, Gang member

Number of victims: 14+

Date of murders: 1981 - 1996

Date of arrest: March 2, 1996

Murder method: Stabbing, bludgeoning

Known victims: Anthony Garcia, 62; Darren Royal Miller, 19; Willie Clark, 52; Michael Garfinkle, 20; Roger Bowman, 38; James McLean, 50; Charles Randall Boyd; Paul Wayne Matthews, 43; William Avis Pettit Jr., 39; Michael Clites, 24; Michael Brandolino; others unidentified

Crime location: Several locations in America

Status: Sentenced to life imprisonment without parole.

Background

Despite being born into a middle-class family, Silveria would go on to have a lifelong problem with alcohol and drugs. He used heroin regularly, as well as meth and crack cocaine, and washed it all down with alcohol. If there was anything he could get a high out of, he would take it.

His father got Silveria into many different jobs at the airport where he worked, but he lost each and every one of them due to his substance abuse. He had been married, but his wife left, unable to tolerate the drugs and alcohol and Silveria's habit of wandering off.

At the time, there was a group called the Freight Train Riders of America (FTRA), a group who spent their days and nights riding the box cars of the freight trains. It was originally founded by returned Vietnam War veterans, but before long, others were able to join, including Silveria. To show he was a member, Silveria always carried a bandanna with him as well as a flashback button. This button identified him as being a member of a group called the Wrecking Crew. It was their job to maintain control and order amongst the FTRA members.

The FTRA became associated with multiple crimes on the freight trains, including robbery and assault. And for drug-addled Silveria, who suffered from an internal rage he had trouble controlling, these assaults would often go way too far.

Murders

As Silveria rode the freight trains, he found there was a high supply of potential victims for him. He generally attacked men who were homeless, no matter their race or age. He preferred to beat his victims to death with his hands and a large stick he called a 'Goon Stick'. Sometimes they were killed by metal poles or rocks, whatever was at hand at the time. Silveria didn't try to hide or dispose of the bodies after the murders; he just left them beside the railroad.

Once the victim was dead, he would take their belongings, especially items he thought he could use or sell, including money and drugs. He also took the person's identification so he could collect welfare benefits and food stamps.

Silveria was fully aware of a 'rage' he had inside him, and he would start out by meeting a homeless transient, spend some time partying with them, and then create an excuse to get angry with them. Then he would beat them to death, and let all that rage out.

Timeline of known murders:

April 9, 1989 - Anthony Garcia, 62

July 8, 1992 - Darren Royal Miller, 19

April 28, 1994 - Willie Clark, 52

August 2, 1994 - Michael Garfinkle, 20

April 21, 1995 - Roger Bowman, 38

July 22, 1995 - James McLean, 50

July 26, 1995 - Charles Randall Boyd

October 1995 - Unidentified drug dealer

October 15, 1995 - Paul Wayne Matthews, 43

December 1, 1995 - William Avis Pettit Jr., 39

December 6, 1995 - Michael A. Cites, 24

December 23, 1995 - Michael A. Brandolino

Arrest and Trial

The body of Michael Cites was found on a train in Oregon, and the detective in charge of the case was able to locate others who had been on the train at the same time. They said that the last person they saw with Cites was 'Sidetrack'. Others referred to the man as Silveria. The detective initially thought it was two people, not realizing they were one. According to the witnesses, Silveria and Cites had gone in search of drugs.

Notices were distributed to all law enforcement agencies to try and find Sidetrack or Silveria. On March 2, 1996, Silveria was caught in California and taken in to custody. In the interview room, it was discovered that Sidetrack and Silveria were the same person. Silveria claimed that God told him to surrender and he confessed to the murders of William Pettit and Michael Cites.

Throughout his interrogation, he continued to confess to a number of murders he had committed. He provided drawn maps to show where each murder had taken place, and gave details on each killing. This information showed that he had been a part of 14 murders at least.

Silveria went on three trials for murder. He was found guilty on January 30, 1998, February 17, 1998 and May 20, 1998, of all three murder charges. Because he had agreed to a plea bargain, he received life imprisonment without the possibility of parole.

Outcome

In total Silveria confessed to committing 47 murders, but police suspect he was involved in just 14. Because of the nature of the crimes, and the transiency of the people killed and the perpetrator, many cases may never be solved.

George Joseph Smith

Date of birth: January 11, 1872

Aliases/Nicknames: Brides in the Bath Murderer, Oliver George Love, George Rose Smith, Charles Oliver James, John Lloyd, Henry Williams

Characteristics: Bigamy, Insurance Fraud

Number of victims: 3

Date of murders: 1912 - 1914

Date of arrest: February 1, 1915

Murder method: Drowning

Known victims: Beatrice "Bessie" Mundy, 31; Alice Burnham, 25; Margaret Elizabeth Lofty, 38

Crime location: England

Status: Executed by hanging on August 13, 1915.

Background

As a child, Smith was no angel. He was sent to a reformatory for boys when he was only nine years old because of his behavior, and later ended up serving time for theft and swindling. In 1886, he managed to convince a woman to steal some money from her employer so he could open a baker's shop. He got caught and was sentenced to serve 12 months behind bars.

Smith married Caroline Thornhill in 1898, but not under his own name. By then he was fond of using aliases, and married her under the name of Oliver George Love. They moved from Leicester to London, and while she worked as a maid she would steal to line her husband's pockets. Eventually she was caught and convicted, and was sentenced to serve 12 months in prison.

When she was released from prison, she immediately pointed the finger at Smith, claiming he was also involved in the thefts. He was subsequently convicted and sentenced to 2 years in prison. His wife left the country and moved to Canada. Smith had married another woman in 1899, bigamously, and after his release from prison he emptied out her bank accounts and left.

Smith married again in June 1908, to widow Florence Wilson. The following month he left her, having taken £30 from her bank account and selling up her personal belongings for cash. He then married Edith Peglar that same month, after she replied to his advertisement looking for a housekeeper. None of these marriages were legal, and most were undertaken using false names.

Despite ongoing marriages, Smith always went back to Peglar, bringing his ill-gotten gains with him. In October 1909, Smith, using the name George Rose Smith, married Sarah Freeman. Once again he cleared out her

finances, to a total of £400, which was a vast sum in those days, and left. His next wives were Alice Burnham and Bessie Munday.

Using the alias Charles Oliver James, he married Alice Reid in September 1914. In total, Smith had entered into seven marriages, all bigamous, between 1908 and 1914, and always left his 'wife' after stealing her money. By 1915, suspicions were aroused following the deaths of two women, one of who was Alice Smith (nee Burnham) and the investigation would lead the authorities to Smith.

Murders

Division Detective Inspector Arthur Neil received a letter in January 1915 from a man who owned a boarding house in Blackpool. The owner, Joseph Crossley, included two newspaper clippings in the letter reporting the deaths of two women in very similar circumstances. The first, Margaret Elizabeth Lloyd, was found dead in the bathtub at her lodgings and had been found by her husband, John Lloyd and the landlady. The death had occurred just before the end of 1914.

The second clipping was about the death of Alice Smith who had died in 1913 in the bathtub at her boarding house. She had been found by her husband George Smith. Crossley's letter was written on behalf of his wife and a man named Charles Burnham, who were suspicious of the circumstances of the two deaths, and they urged the police to investigate.

Neil went to the location of Margaret Lloyd's death. When he saw the size of the bathtub he couldn't believe a grown woman could have drowned in it. He spoke to the coroner and asked about signs of violence, but the only mark that was found was a bruise above the left elbow. Neil also discovered a will had been made just three hours before her death, and her husband was the sole beneficiary. All of her savings had been withdrawn that day as well.

After he left, the coroner called saying the insurance company had made an inquiry into the death because of the will and insurance policy. Neil told the doctor to delay responding until he could get more information. He then contacted the Blackpool police about the death of Alice Smith.

Investigations showed she had also taken out an insurance policy just before her death, and the will favored her husband. Also, when they were looking at moving into the boarding house, Mr. Smith had to inspect the bathtub before they would agree to move in.

Neil contacted the coroner and told him to give a good report to the insurance company so that when the suspect went to claim it at his lawyer's office they could grab him. His plan worked, and on February 1, the man appeared. Neil asked if he was John Lloyd, to which the man said yes, but when asked if he was George Smith he denied it. Neil told him he was going to question him about bigamy, and Smith agreed that he was both men.

Arrest and Trial

After he was arrested, more information came out about the murder of Beatrice Munday. She too had died in the bathtub about a year before Alice Smith. Her husband's name was Henry Williams, another alias of Smith.

On June 22, Smith went on trial at the Old Bailey, and because of British law at the time, he could only be charged with the murder of Beatrice Munday. But the prosecution was able to use the details of the other deaths to establish Smith's pattern of criminal activity. After just 20 minutes of deliberation, Smith was found guilty on July 1. He was sentenced to death.

Outcome

Smith was taken to the gallows and hanged on August 13, 1915. During his trial, the use of 'system' came in to play, where other crimes committed could be presented as evidence in murder trials. For example, in cases where there was more than one murder, they could both be used in one trial to show a pattern. This set a precedent for other murder trials later on.

Lemuel Smith

Date of birth: July 23, 1941

Aliases/Nicknames: Nil

Characteristics: Rape, Mutilation, Robbery

Number of victims: 6

Date of murders: 1958, 1976 - 1977, 1981

Date of arrest: August 19, 1977

Murder method: Strangulation, shooting, beating

Known victims: Dorothy Waterstreet; Robert Hedderman, 48; Hedderman's secretary, Margaret Byron, 59; Joan Richburg, 24; Maralie Wilson, 30; Donna Payant, 31 (female correctional officer)

Crime location: Albany, New York

Status: Sentenced to death but commuted to life imprisonment.

Background

Smith was born into a religious household in New York. He later claimed that he had almost smothered a 9-year-old girl to death when he was just 11 years old, but there is no proof that this happened. Despite being in a family that went to church and practiced religion, Smith had a dark side, filled with violence.

When he was 16, he was considered a suspect in the robbery and murder of Dorothy Waterstreet on January 21, 1958. There was evidence to suggest Smith was the guilty party, but the case was dropped when the district attorney made mistakes in his rush to try and get a confession. Smith was therefore not formally arrested or charged with the murder.

Not long afterwards, Smith moved to Baltimore, Maryland, to escape the constant pressure he felt he was under from the local police. But, before long he kidnapped a woman and beat her almost to death, until he was interrupted by a witness. This time he was arrested and convicted, and sentenced to 20 years in prison on April 12, 1959.

Almost ten years later, Smith was given parole in May 1968. He didn't stay out of trouble for long though, as the following May he kidnapped a woman and sexually assaulted her. She was able to escape from Smith, and he then kidnapped a friend of his mother's and raped her the very same day. She convinced Smith to release her, and he was again arrested and convicted, receiving a sentence of up to 15 years.

Incredibly, Smith had been behind bars for 17 out of 18 years until a new law saw him released back into society once more. On October 5, 1976, Smith walked out of the prison a free man. By the end of the next month, he committed his worst violent crimes yet - murder.

Murders

A month after Smith had been released from prison, the bodies of Robert Hedderman and his secretary Margaret Byron were found in the back of Hedderman's religious store in Albany, on November 24. The evidence was contaminated by human feces, which actually turned out to be useful forensically in detecting a suspect.

On December 23, Joan Richburg was attacked in her car at a mall in Colonie. She was raped, murdered and mutilated. Hair was found at the scene which matched Smith, but he was still free while police continued their investigations.

Maralie Wilson was found strangled to death and mutilated on July 22, 1977, near train tracks in Schenectady, New York. This time the mutilation was much more severe than in previous murders. She was found in an area where Smith was known to frequent, and the witness descriptions fit, so Smith became the prime suspect.

Then on August 19, 1977, Smith abducted Marianne Maggio, 18, and raped her. He forced her to drive towards Albany, and when the car was stopped by police, he was arrested.

Timeline of known murders:

January 21, 1958 - Dorothy Waterstreet

November 24, 1976 - Robert Hedderman, 48

November 24, 1976 - Margaret Byron, 59

December 23, 1976 - Joan Richburg, 24

July 22, 1977 - Maralie Wilson, 30

May 15, 1981 - Donna Payant, 31

Arrest and Trial

While investigating Smith, Police Lt. Don Pinto as looking at crime scene photos of Maralie Wilson and noticed what looked like a bite mark on her nose. They exhumed her body and the bite mark was matched to Smith's bite pattern.

Late in October, a lineup was created with Smith and four other men, and they were placed behind individual screens at the end of Bleecker Stadium. Officers then gave a police dog the scent of the clothing stained with feces from the Hedderman store murders. The dog went directly to Smith. They rearranged the men again, and the dog went to Smith a second time.

When the bite mark evidence was produced to Smith on March 5, 1978, he confessed to committing five murders. He also claimed to have multiple personality disorder, and said he was controlled by his dead brother's spirit. Despite his attempts to be considered insane, he was eventually found guilty of rape on March 9, 1978 and received 10 to 20 years in prison.

A four-day bench trial on July 21, 1978, resulted in Smith being found guilty of kidnapping, and he received 25 years to life. On February 2, 1979 he was found guilty of the double murder at Hedderman's store and received 50 years to life.

He was originally indicted for the murders of Wilson and Richburg, but because he was never going to be released from prison due to his previous convictions, the indictments were dismissed.

Outcome

Because he had committed the murder of a corrections officer while he was incarcerated, Smith was put in to solitary confinement for nearly twenty years because of the serious risk he posed to other inmates and staff. At that time, it was the longest time any prisoner had spent in solitary.

Morris Solomon Jr.

Date of birth: March 15, 1944

Aliases/Nicknames: The Sacramento Slayer

Characteristics: Rape, Prostitutes

Number of victims: 6 - 7

Date of murders: June 1986–April 1987

Date of arrest: April 22, 1987

Murder method: Undetermined due to level of decomposition

Known victims: Yolanda Johnson, 22; Angela Polidori, 25; Maria Apodaca, 18; Cherie Washington, 16; Linda Vitela, 24; Sheila Jacox, 17; Sharon Massey, 29

Crime location: Sacramento, California

Status: Sentenced to death, awaiting execution.

Background

Another killer raised in a violent and abusive household, Solomon was raised by his grandmother who doled out harsh beatings for the slightest misdoings. Solomon was regularly beaten for wetting the bed, saying words incorrectly, or even crying while he was being beaten would make her fiercer in her discipline. There were times where Solomon and his brother were beaten for no apparent reason at all.

As a young boy, his grandmother would put him over her knee and hit him. Other times, she would make him strip off his clothes and stand on a stool in the corner so she could beat him with switches or electrical cords. He was beaten so badly, he often bled from his wounds. If he tried to be clever and back away from her, she would tie him to the bed post with an extension cord.

Until he was 13, Solomon had barely known his parents, but they were reunited after he moved to Isleton with his grandmother, near where his parents lived. It was a poor part of town often called ‘Cannery Row’ or ‘Tinpan Alley’, and his parents regularly beat each other or sexually assaulted one another in front of the children. Now it wasn’t just his grandmother beating him; his mother would beat him as well, and took great delight in abusing him verbally when they were out in public.

When he finished high school, Solomon went to classes at the community college, and he managed to work in a variety of jobs including driving buses and carpentry. He went in to the Army and served in the Vietnam War for a year in 1966. Afterwards, he went back to Isleton, and his fiancé broke off their engagement, which prompted him to move to the San Francisco Bay area. There, he met another woman and married, and a daughter was born.

Following their divorce, Solomon moved back to live in Sacramento and started working as a handyman. The first time Solomon crossed paths with the police, was when he reported finding a dead woman's body. But he wasn't the good citizen reporting a crime they at first thought he was.

Murders

The body of Yolanda Johnson was found on June 18, 1986, after her murder was reported to the police by Solomon. She was partially nude, bound. She was a known prostitute and drug user. When Angela Polidori was found on July 20, she was also bound and partially nude.

Marie Apodaca was another prostitute and drug user, and was killed on March 19, 1987. Her body was wrapped up in bedding and buried. The next victim was Cherie Washington, who was killed on April 20, 1987. She was possibly a prostitute and drug user, and was found nude, bound, and wrapped up in bedding.

Another prostitute and drug user, Linda Vitela, was murdered on April 22, 1987. She was also nude and wrapping up in bedding, and the same with Sheila Jacox and Sharon Massey. All of these women fit a pattern, and the cases were almost identical.

When Solomon reported the death of Johnson, he had to submit a blood sample and his fingerprints were taken. Although his statements were inconsistent, he wasn't arrested or charged. He was questioned again after the discovery of Apodaca's body and again gave false statements. He tried to explain that this was because he thought he had some outstanding misdemeanor warrants.

Solomon gave permission for the police to search his car on April 20, 1987. It was parked on a lot, and while they were there, they noticed the soil seemed to be depressed in one area. They got hold of a shovel and started digging, and found the body of Washington. Two days later, they found the bodies of Jacox and Vitela at another property linked to Solomon. Later

they found the body of Massey at the same place as they had found Apodaca's.

Timeline of known murders - dates bodies found:

June 18, 1986 - Yolanda Johnson, 22

July 20, 1986 - Angela Polidori, 25

March 19, 1987 - Maria Apodaca, 18

April 20, 1987 - Cherie Washington, 26

April 22, 1987 - Linda Vitela, 24

April 22, 1987 - Sheila Jacox, 17

April 29, 1987 - Sharon Massey, 29

Arrest and Trial

Solomon was arrested on April 22, 1987 and questioned about the murders. He was charged with all seven murders, but the charges for the murder of Polidori were eventually dropped. The defense team tried to convince the court that Solomon was suffering from mental issues due to abuse as a child, his cocaine use, and his experiences fighting in the Vietnam War. However, he was convicted of the six remaining murders he had been charged with and sentenced to death.

Outcome

Solomon remains on death row awaiting his execution.

Anthony Sowell

Date of birth: August 19, 1949

Aliases/Nicknames: The Cleveland Strangler, The Imperial Avenue Murderer

Characteristics: Kidnapping, Rape, Necrophilia

Number of victims: 11

Date of murders: May 2007 - September 2009

Date of arrest: October 31, 2009

Murder method: Strangulation with objects

Known victims: Crystal Dozier, 38; Tishana Culver, 31; Leshanda Long, 25; Michelle Mason, 45; Tonia Carmichael, 53; Nancy Cobbs, 43; Amelda Hunter, 47; Telacia Fortson, 31; Janice Webb, 49; Kim Yvette Smith, 44; Diane Turner, 38

Crime location: Cleveland, Ohio

Status: Sentenced to death, awaiting execution.

Background

Sowell was one of seven children born to Claudia Garrison, a single mother. His sister also had seven children, and following her death due to illness, they all lived in the house with Sowell, his mother and his siblings.

Garrison would abuse these children but not her own, who would watch while she whipped them. Sowell's niece was once forced to take off all her clothes and was then whipped with an electrical cord by Garrison until her wounds bled. She was also raped by Sowell nearly every day for around two years, starting when she was just 11 years old.

Sowell enlisted with the Marines when he was 19, in 1978. He trained as an electrician in the Marines, and in 1980 he spent a year with the 3rd Force Service Support Group overseas. When he returned he spent time at Cherry Point, before he was then sent to the Marine Corps Base Camp Butler in Japan, in 1984. The following year, he spent three days at Camp Pendleton in California, and was discharged from the military on January 18, 1985.

His military service saw Sowell receive a number of awards, including a Sea Service Deployment Ribbon, a Good Conduct Medal with one service star, a Meritorious Mast, two Letters of Appreciation and a Certificate of Commendation.

Sowell attacked a pregnant woman in 1989, choking her and tying her up with a belt. She managed to get away and he was charged with attempted rape, receiving a 15 year prison sentence. He served the full time, and was released from prison in 2005.

For the next two years he worked in a factory, but he stopped working and started claiming the unemployment benefit in 2007. He would make extra money from selling scrap metal. He joined an online dating service, and his

profile stated he was a master looking for a submissive woman so he could 'train her'. Around this time, the neighbors started to notice a terrible smell in the area, and the health department received a number of complaints. Sowell claimed it was coming from the sausage shop next door to his house, but soon it would be discovered where the stench was really coming from.

Murders

Sowell invited a woman back to his place for a drink in September 2009. On September 22, she went to the police and claimed that after they had a few drinks, he became angry and hit her before choking her and raping her while she was passed out. The police went to Sowell's home on October 29 with an arrest warrant but he wasn't there. They did however find two dead bodies on the living room floor.

As they investigated the home, they found four more bodies in the crawl spaces and one was buried in the basement in a shallow grave. Outside they found three more bodies and a fourth set of partial remains. A skull was found in a bucket. All up, they had found the remains of eleven victims. The majority of them had been strangled, and some still had ligatures around their necks.

Timeline of known murders:

November 10, 2008 - Tonia Carmichael, 53

May 17, 2007 - Crystal Dozier, 35

June 2008 - Tishana Culver, 33

August 2008 - Leshanda Long, 17

October 8, 2008 - Michelle Mason 45

January 17, 2009 - Kim Y. Smith, 44

April 24, 2009 - Nancy Cobb, 44

Spring 2009- Amelda (Amy) Hunter, 47

June 2009 - Janice Webb, 49

June 3, 2009 - Telacia Fortson, 31

September 2009 - Diane Turner, 38

Arrest and Trial

Sowell was located and arrested on October 31, 2009. He was charged with the murders and his bond was set at \$5 million. After numerous delays, Sowell went on trial on June 6, 2011. As well as the eleven counts of aggravated murder, there were 70 additional charges related to rapes, kidnapping, abuse of a corpse and tampering with evidence. Initially he plead not guilty by reason of insanity, but he later changed it to just not guilty. On July 22, he was found guilty of all but two counts.

Sentencing took place on August 12, and Sowell was sentenced to death.

Outcome

Despite launching multiple lawsuits and appeals, Sowell's death sentence remained in place. He is still awaiting his execution date, and has been on death row since September 14, 2011.

Timothy Wilson Spencer

Date of birth: March 17, 1962

Aliases/Nicknames: The Southside Strangler, The Southside Slayer, The Southside Rapist

Characteristics: Rape

Number of victims: 5

Date of murders: 1984, 1987 – 1988

Date of arrest: January 20, 1988

Murder method: Strangulation by ligature

Known victims: Carol Hamm; Debbie Dudley Davis, 35; Dr. Susan Hellams; Diane Cho, 15; Susan Tucker, 44

Crime location: Arlington County, Virginia

Status: Executed by electric chair, April 27, 1994.

Background

Spencer was raised in Green Valley, Arlington, considered to be one of the 'toughest black' neighborhoods in the area. He was well known to the police for committing multiple burglaries throughout his youth. He later became the first murderer to be convicted purely on DNA evidence in the United States, which would also lead to an innocent man being exonerated for a crime he didn't commit.

Murders

It is believed that in 1984, Spencer's first murder victim was Carol Hamm. David Vasquez was originally tried and convicted of this murder and later exonerated, after Spencer's arrest for the other murders.

Debbie Dudley Davie was murdered sometime between September 18 and September 19, 1987. Her body was found naked on the bed in her apartment by the police. A ligature was around her neck with a ratchet-type device attached. Her cause of death was determined to be strangulation by ligature.

On October 2, 1987, Dr. Susan Hellams was killed in her home. Her husband came home and found her dead on the floor of the bedroom closet, partially clothed. She had two belts fastened around her neck and death was by ligature strangulation.

The next victim was Diane Cho, a high school student, who was murdered on November 22, 1987. She was found in the family home, and she had been raped before being strangled to death. The last known victim of Spencer was Susan Tucker. She was raped and murdered in her home on November 27, 1987. She wasn't found until December 1, and although she was living in a different area, the similarities between the murders made it clear they were all committed by the one person.

Timeline of known murders:

1984 - Carol Hamm

September 18, 1987 - Debbie Dudley Davis, 35

October 2, 1987 - Dr. Susan Hellams

November 22, 1987 - Diane Cho, a 15

November 27, 1987 - Susan Tucker, 44

Arrest and Trial

Spencer was arrested on January 20, 1988, in Arlington County for the rape and murder of Tucker. Spencer had traveled to Arlington from Richmond to have Thanksgiving with his mother who lived close to Tucker.

He was later charged with the murders of Davis, Hellams and Cho in Richmond. He had been living within walking distance of the homes of both Davis and Hellams at the time of their murders. Forensic testing was undertaken on the biological samples found at the crime scenes. Results linked Spencer by DNA to the murder of Tucker, and it was the first time DNA had been used in a Virginia criminal case. Spencer's DNA was also a match to samples found at the murders of Davis, Hellams and Hamm.

His Arlington trial began on July 11, 1988, for the rape, murder and burglary of Tucker. With the help of the DNA evidence, he was convicted and sentenced to death. He then went on trial in Richmond, for the murder, rape and burglary of Davis. Again the DNA evidence was paramount, and he was convicted.

At his next trial for the murder, rape and burglary of Hellams, on January 17, 1989, he was found guilty. He was also found guilty of the charges in the Cho murder.

Outcome

Spencer was executed by electric chair at Greenville Correctional Center on April 27, 1994, and declared deceased at 11:13 pm. He received four rounds of electricity, the first of which made his body clench. He declined to donate his organs, and made no final statement before his death.

The man originally convicted for the murder of Carol Hamm, David Vasquez was granted an unconditional pardon on January 4, 1989. By that time he had served five years of his 35-year sentence. He became the very first American exonerated on the basis of DNA evidence.

Trivia

- The electric chair used in Spencer's execution was built by inmates during the 1960s.

Cary Stayner

Date of birth: August 13, 1961

Aliases/Nicknames: The Yosemite Killer

Characteristics: Decapitation, Rape

Number of victims: 4

Date of murders: February 1999, July 1999

Date of arrest: July 24, 1999

Murder method: Throat cutting, strangulation

Known victims: Carole Sund, 42, her daughter, Juli, 15, and their Argentine friend, Silvina Pelosso, 16; Joie Ruth Armstrong, 26

Crime location: Mariposa County, California

Status: Sentenced to death, awaiting execution.

Background

Stayner's childhood was rocked by the loss of his younger brother in 1972. Steven was abducted by Kenneth Parnell, a child molester, and held captive for a staggering seven years before he escaped. Stayner later said he had felt as though he was neglected and ignored by his parents during his brother's captivity, as they were grieving, believing Steven had been murdered. Stayner also claimed that his uncle had molested him when he was eleven years old.

When his brother Steven had miraculously returned to the family in 1980, it was a major media event, including a book and a movie being made for television. Both of these were called 'I Know My First Name Is Steven', a statement he first made when questioned by the authorities after he had escaped from Parnell.

Nine years after the escape, Steven was killed in a motorcycle accident. In 1990, a year later, Stayner's uncle was murdered. Stayner had been staying with the uncle at the time of the murder. The following year, Stayner tried to commit suicide but he survived. Then in 1997, he was arrested for the possession of methamphetamine and marijuana, but these charges were dropped. That same year he started working at the Cedar Lodge Motel as a handyman, near the Yosemite National Park entrance. He was still working here in 1999, when the bodies of two women were found in the trunk of a burnt out car nearby.

Murders

While working as a handyman at the Cedar Lodge Motel in El Portal, near the entrance to Yosemite National Park, Stayner murdered four women between February and July 1999. The first two victims were Silvina Pelosso and Carole Sund. Their bodies were found burned beyond recognition in the trunk of Sund's rental car. They were identified using dental records.

The police received a note with a map drawn showing where the body of Juli Sund could be found. At the top of the note, the killer had written, "we had fun with this one". Investigators rushed to the location indicated and found Juli with her throat cut.

Because three of the victims had been staying at the motel, the employees were interviewed, including Stayner. At that point he wasn't considered a suspect, and he had no prior criminal history. However, when the body of Joie Armstrong was found, decapitated, witnesses reported seeing a blue 1979 International Scout, the car belonging to Stayner, parked outside the same cabin Armstrong had been renting.

Arrest and Trial

Stayner had fled, but was found staying at a nudist resort in Wilton and was arrested. Evidence in his vehicle linked him to Armstrong's murder, and while he was being interrogated, he confessed to all of the murders. He claimed he had been fantasizing about committing murders of women since he was seven years old.

When Stayner stood trial, he pleaded not guilty by reason of insanity. After he was assessed, he was deemed sane, and was subsequently convicted.

Outcome

Stayner was convicted of four counts of first degree murder and was sentenced to death in 2001. He is still awaiting his execution, and there are appeals pending.

Trivia

- Stayner asked for child pornography in exchange for his confession.
- Stayner suffered from obsessive-compulsive disorder.

Peter Sutcliffe

Date of birth: June 2, 1946

Aliases/Nicknames: The Yorkshire Ripper, Peter William Coonan

Characteristics: Claimed to hear voices - targeted prostitutes

Number of victims: 13

Date of murders: 1975 - 1980

Date of arrest: January 2, 1981

Murder method: Stabbing, striking with hammer

Known victims: Wilma McCann, 28; Emily Jackson, 42; Irene Richardson, 28; Patricia Atkinson, 32; Jayne MacDonald, 16; Jean Jordan, 20; Yvonne Pearson, 21; Helen Rytka, 18; Vera Millward, 40; Josephine Whitaker, 19; Barbara Leach, 20; Marguerite Walls, 47; Jacqueline Hill, 20

Crime location: West Yorkshire, England

Status: Sentenced to life imprisonment without parole.

Background

Sutcliffe was raised in a Catholic family in Yorkshire by parents John and Kathleen. At 15, he left school and worked in a number of jobs considered menial, including that of being a gravedigger in the 1960s. From November 1971 until April 1973, he worked on the packaging line at a local factory, but left after being offered the job of traveling salesman.

In 1975, Sutcliffe voluntarily took redundancy from his job and used the money to train as an HGV driver. He completed his license and started working for a tire company as a driver in September 1975. Within a year, he was fired for stealing tires, and he remained unemployed until he found more driving work in October 1976.

Sutcliffe married Sonia Szurma in August 1974, and despite all efforts, she suffered multiple miscarriages before they were told she could never have children. She went back to training as a teacher, during which time she had an affair, yet the couple remained together. In 1977, they bought a house using her salary as a teacher in Heaton, Bradford, where they would remain until the police came looking for Sutcliffe.

Murders

After numerous random and violent attacks on women, Sutcliffe graduated up to murder in 1975. The first victim, Wilma McCann, was killed on October 30. She was hit with a hammer twice and stabbed a total of 15 times, in the chest, abdomen and neck.

The next victim was Emily Jackson, who was killed in January 1976. She was hit in the head with a hammer and stabbed with a sharpened screwdriver. She had been stabbed in the chest, abdomen and neck, and Sutcliffe had stomped on her thigh so hard he left a boot impression.

Irene Richardson was bludgeoned to death on February 5, 1977. Sutcliffe had beaten her with a hammer and used a knife to mutilate her body. Then, on April 23, Patricia Atkinson was killed in her flat in Bradford. Sutcliffe's murderous urges were escalating, and he was killing more frequently now.

Jayne McDonald, 16, was murdered on June 26, 1977. On October 1, Sutcliffe murdered Jean Jordan, a prostitute. Her body wasn't found until ten days after the murder, and investigators determined her body had been moved after she had died. According to Sutcliffe, he had given Jordan a new £5 note, and worried it could be traceable, he went back to her body to retrieve it. He then mutilated the body and shifted it.

In January 1978, Yvonne Pearson was killed. Sutcliffe hid her body beneath an old sofa that had been thrown out, and it remained hidden until March. He then killed prostitute Helen Rytka on January 31, and her body was discovered three days later. The next victim, Vera Millward, was murdered on May 16 in the parking lot of the Manchester Royal Infirmary, a major hospital in Manchester.

Sutcliffe murdered Josephine Whitaker on April 4, 1979, as she was walking home. Then on September 1, he killed Barbara Leach and dumped her body behind a building, beneath a pile of bricks. Marguerite Walls was murdered on August 20, and Jacqueline Hill was killed on November 17.

Timeline of murders:

October 30, 1975 - Wilma McCann, 28

January 1976 - Emily Jackson, 42

February 5, 1977 - Irene Richardson, 28

April 23, 1977- Patricia Atkinson, 32

June 26, 1977 - Jayne MacDonald, 16

October 1, 1977 - Jean Jordan, 20

January 1978 - Yvonne Pearson, 21

January 31, 1978 - Helen Rytka, 18

May 16, 1978 - Vera Millward, 40

April 4, 1979 - Josephine Whitaker, 19

September 1, 1979 - Barbara Leach, 20

August 20, 1980 - Marguerite Walls, 47

November 17, 1980 - Jaqueline Hill, 20

Arrest and Trial

Throughout the investigations into the murders, Sutcliffe had been interviewed numerous times but wasn't considered a suspect. However, on January 2, 1981, he was pulled over by the police and had a prostitute, Olivia Reivers, in the car with him. The license plates on his car were false, so he was arrested and taken back to the station.

Sutcliffe matched many of the physical characteristics of the Yorkshire Ripper, and so was questioned again about the murders. The following day, police went back to where he had been arrested and found a hammer, knife and rope he had dumped when he told the arresting officer he was busting to go to the toilet and they allowed him to. At the police station they found another knife hidden in the toilet cistern.

Police obtained a search warrant for his home, and while they were doing that, Sutcliffe was subjected to a strip search. They discovered he was wearing a V-neck sweater inverted under his pants. The sleeves of the sweater were over his legs, with the V-neck exposing his genitals.

Sutcliffe was questioned for two days before he finally confessed on January 4, 1981 that he was the Ripper. He then spent the next day describing all of the attacks and murders in detail. On January 5 he was formally charged with 13 counts of murder.

When he went on trial, he pleaded not guilty to murder, but guilt of the lesser charge manslaughter due to diminished responsibility. He claimed he was instructed by God to murder prostitutes. The diminished responsibility plea was subsequently quashed by the judge, and the full trial was set to start on May 5, 1981.

After two weeks on trial, Sutcliffe was found guilty on all counts of murder and was sentenced to 20 sentences of life imprisonment. Initially it was recommended he serve at least 30 years, but later the High Court issued Sutcliffe a whole life tariff.

Outcome

Sutcliffe was assaulted by fellow inmate James Costello while incarcerated at Parkhurst Prison on January 10, 1983. Costello struck Sutcliffe twice in the face with a broken coffee jar, and Sutcliffe required 30 stitches to repair the four lacerations the jar caused.

In 1984, Sutcliffe was sectioned under the Mental Health Act and sent to Broadmoor Hospital. He was once again attacked by a fellow inmate, Paul Wilson, on February 23, 1996. Wilson attempted to strangle Sutcliffe with a headphone cable, and he was saved when two convicted murderers, Jamie Devitt and Kenneth Erskine, came to his assistance after hearing him scream.

On March 10, 1997, Sutcliffe was attacked by inmate Ian Kay, which resulted in him losing his vision in one eye and severely damaging the other. He was attacked again on December 22, 2007, by Patrick Sureda, who lunged at him with a knife. Sutcliffe managed to move away quickly enough to save his remaining working eye, but was stabbed in the cheek.

Trivia

Sutcliffe was later diagnosed as having paranoid schizophrenia

James Swann

Date of birth: 1964

Aliases/Nicknames: The Shotgun Stalker

Characteristics: Paranoid Schizophrenia, Drive-by Shootings

Number of victims: 4

Date of murders: February - April 1993

Date of arrest: April 19, 1993

Murder method: Shooting

Known victims: Julius Bryant, 58; Elizabeth Hutson, 28; Edward Fleming, 35; Nello Hughes, 61

Crime location: Washington

Status: Found not guilty by reason of insanity. Held at a psychiatric facility.

Background

Swann was born and raised in Iselin, New Jersey, and it wasn't until his teenage years that he started showing signs of suffering from some form of mental illness. He was seen and heard talking to himself all the time, and sometimes he would burst into laughter for no apparent reason. Little is known about his parents and family situation other than his father, James, had been a former Navy man and had worked at the Treasury Department.

As an adult, Swann worked as a security guard occasionally, despite having a mental illness. However, he was eventually fired after insisting on walking backwards while on patrol. He later moved to Oxon Hill to live with his sister, but she kicked him out of the home in early 1993 after an argument. From then onwards, Swann would move between New Jersey, New York, Pennsylvania and Philadelphia.

That same year, 1993, the voices in his head were becoming more and more demanding and Swann could no longer ignore them.

Murders

Swann's first murder victim was shot and killed in a barbershop. Swann purposely entered the shop and killed a client while he was sitting in the barber chair. Police at first assumed it was a drug-related shooting. Then six days later, Swann killed Elizabeth 'Bessie' Hutson as she was walking her dogs. Then on April 10 he fired randomly at pedestrians, killing Edward Fleming, and injuring two others.

On April 19, Swann opened fire on a group of pedestrians again, and this time he killed Nello Hughes. He missed all of the other pedestrians. This was his last murder. Straight after the murder of Hughes, Swann caught the attention of the police when he ran through a red light. An officer followed Swann until he stopped near a building and tried to run, but he was caught by the officer and placed under arrest.

Timeline of known murders:

February 26, 1993 - Julius Bryant, 58

March 23, 1993 - Elizabeth Hutson, 28

April 10, 1993 - Edward Fleming, 35

April 19, 1993 - Nello Hughes, 61

Arrest and Trial

In Swann's car was a 20-gauge shotgun, similar to the weapon used in the shooting spree. He was charged with the murders and the attempted murders for those who were injured and went on trial. He was found not guilty by reason of insanity on September 27, 1994. It was determined by psychiatrists that he had been suffering from paranoid schizophrenia at the time of the shootings.

Outcome

Swann was sent to St. Elizabeth's Hospital, a psychiatric hospital with a maximum-security unit. During his incarceration at the hospital, Swann has managed to earn an Associate's Degree in Computer Science. Despite his good behavior at St. Elizabeth's and no psychotic episodes since 2003, any requests made by Swann to leave have been denied.

Trivia

- While incarcerated, Swann would often be seen wearing a t-shirt that said 'thrill to kill' - given to him by his father.
- He has subsequently been diagnosed with narcissistic personality disorder as well as the paranoid schizophrenia.

Vasile Tcaciuc

Date of birth: circa. 1900

Aliases/Nicknames: The Butcher of Iasi

Characteristics: Robbery

Number of victims: 21 - 26+

Date of murders: 1917 - 1935

Date of arrest: 1935

Murder method: Axe

Known victims: Unknown

Crime location: Iasi, Romania

Status: Shot and killed by police during an attempted escape.

Background

Very little is known about the background and childhood of Romanian killer Vasile Tcaciuc. He was in police custody for burglary and robbery charges when the actions of a dog lead to the discovery of bodies buried beneath Tcaciuc's home. Following the unearthing of the bodies, Tcaciuc explained how he had built a special axe to use purely for committing the murders.

Murders

His motive for committing murder was predominantly for financial gain. He would kill his victim then rob them of any money or valuables they had. When his victims were discovered, all showed signs of being hit by an object most likely to be an axe.

Arrest and Trial

Tcaciuc was taken out of the jail to help reconstruct his crimes, having confessed to committing 26 murders, and during the excursion, he attempted to escape. He was shot and killed by a policeman, and the real reason behind Tcaciuc's crimes remains unknown.

Outcome

After his arrest, Tcaciuc offered to help the authorities by reconstructing the crimes. During one such event, Tcaciuc tried to escape custody while the officers were distracted. However, the officers present realized what was happening and opened fire on Tcaciuc, killing him on the spot.

John Floyd Thomas

Date of birth: July 26, 1936

Aliases/Nicknames: The Westside Rapist, The Southland Strangler, Willie Eugene Wilson

Characteristics: Rape

Number of victims: 7 - 15+

Date of murders: 1972 - 1986

Date of arrest: March 31, 2009

Murder method: Asphyxiation

Known victims: Ethel Sokoloff, 68; Elizabeth McKeown, 67; Cora Perry, 79; Maybelle Hudson; Miriam McKinley; Evalyn Bunner; Adrian Askew, 85

Crime location: Los Angeles

Status: Sentenced to life imprisonment without parole.

Background

When Thomas was 12 years old, his mother died and he was subsequently raised by his godmother and aunt, moving between the two homes. He attended public schools in Los Angeles before joining the Air Force in 1956. During his service, a superior officer once noted that Thomas was often late and was 'slovenly' in his appearance. He received a dishonorable discharge from the Air Force after serving for a short period of time.

After he left the military, Thomas was arrested for attempted rape and burglary. He was found guilty and sentenced to six years in prison, and because he later violated his parole twice, he remained in prison until 1966. It is believed he started raping and killing during the 1970s, but he wouldn't be arrested until 2009, thanks in part to DNA evidence.

Murders

In the mid-1970s, the Westside Rapist was terrorizing elderly women in Los Angeles who lived by themselves. He would break into their homes, rape them and choke them until they died or passed out. There were at least 17 victims and they were usually found with their faces covered by blankets or pillows. Then, a decade after this spate of killings, five elderly women were found dead in Claremont, and they too had their faces covered with blankets or pillows.

In October 2008, Thomas was asked to provide a DNA sample for an offender database the state of California was trying to put together. Because he had been charged twice before for sexual crimes, he was of particular interest. This DNA sample led to a huge break in the hunt for the Westside Rapist, as Thomas was now identified as the killer.

Timeline of known murders:

1972 - Ethel Sokoloff, 68

1976 - Elizabeth McKeown, 67

September 20, 1975 - Cora Perry, 70

April 1976 - Maybelle Hudson

June 1976 - Miriam McKinley

October 1976 - Evalyn Brunner

June 1986 - Adrian Askew

Arrest and Trial

Thomas was arrested on March 31, 2009, and questioned about the murders of the elderly women over the previous 30 years. On April 2, he was formally charged with the murders of Ethel Sokoloff and Elizabeth McKeown. By September 23, he was charged with five more murders, those of Cora Perry, Maybelle Hudson, Miriam McKinley, Evalyn Bunner and Adrian Askew.

At his first court appearance, Thomas pleaded not guilty to the seven charges of murder. On April 1, 2011, he changed his plea to guilty to the seven counts of murder as part of a plea deal so he could avoid the death sentence for the murder of Adrian Askew. He was subsequently sentenced to life imprisonment without the possibility of parole.

Outcome

Initially Thomas was charged with two murders, but eventually he was charged with killing seven women. The prosecution officials have stated they have DNA evidence linking him to the murders. Also, authorities believe he may be responsible for up to 30 unsolved homicides, and was most likely killing for over forty years.

Dubbed the 'Westside Rapist' because it was thought his crimes only centered on the Westside area of Los Angeles, it is now believed he may have been preying on women in other areas, including Claremont, Lennox, Pomona, and Inglewood.

Peter Tobin

Date of birth: August 27, 1946

Aliases/Nicknames: Peter Wilson, James Kelly, Paul Semple, John Tobin, Peter Proban, Pat McLaughlin

Characteristics: Rape

Number of victims: 3+

Date of murders: February 10, 1991; August, 1991; September 24, 2006

Date of arrest: October 3, 2006

Murder method: Stabbing

Known victims: Vicky Hamilton, 15; Dinah McNicol; Angelika Kluk, 23

Crime location: Scotland, England

Status: Sentenced to life imprisonment without parole.

Background

Tobin, one of eight children in the family, was described as a ‘difficult’ child and was sent off to a special school in 1953, when he was seven years old. Later, he was sent to a young offender institution, and eventually he was charged and convicted of forgery and burglary and sentenced to prison in 1970.

After his release, he moved to Brighton in Sussex along with his girlfriend, Margaret Louise Robertson Mountney who was only 17 at the time. They were married in August, 1970, but divorced a year later in 1971. Sutcliffe married again in 1973, to Sylvia Jeffries, a 30-year old nurse. They had two children, but unfortunately the second child died soon after she was born. This marriage was violent, and in 1976, Sylvia fled the home with their son.

In 1987, Tobin had another child to Cathy Wilson, who was only 15 at the time, and they married in 1989. Three years later, they moved to Bathgate, but the relationship ended soon after. All three of Tobin’s wives claimed he had been charming right up until they married, at which point he would then become a sadistic and violent psychopath.

Tobin moved to Margate in May 1991 to be closer to his youngest son. In August 1993, two teenage girls were attacked in his flat in Leigh Park, Havant. The 14 year olds had tried to visit Tobin’s neighbor who wasn’t home at the time, and they asked if they could wait in his flat until their friend returned home. Once inside, Tobin produced a knife and threatened the girls, forcing them to drink alcohol until they were intoxicated. He then raped and stabbed both girls and stabbed one of them, all while his child was in the flat. Tobin then turned the gas taps on, thinking they would die, but they both survived.

Tobin went on the run and tried to hide amongst a religious sect, the Jesus Fellowship, in Coventry, but was later caught because he was still using his own vehicle and it was located. He was convicted and given a 14-year sentence in May 1994, but would only serve 8 years, being released in 2004 when he was 58 years old. But that wasn't to be the end of Tobin's reign of terror, and many would later suspect he could possibly have been Bible John.

Murders

Vicky Hamilton disappeared while waiting for a bus home on February 10, 1991. In June 2007, Tobin's old residence in Margate was searched in relation to the murder of Vicky, and her body was found buried in the garden.

Dinah McNicol had been hitchhiking home from a music festival on August 5, 1991, when she disappeared. Her boyfriend had been with her, but after he was dropped off, she continued on in the car with the stranger. Her body was found on November 16, 2007, and later was identified as McNichol.

Tobin was working as a handyman for the St. Patrick's Roman Catholic Church in Glasgow in September 2006, under the false name of Pat McLaughlin. This was because he was still on the sex offender register and he didn't want anyone to know. He had left Paisley without notifying the police so there was a warrant for his arrest.

Polish student Angelika Kluk was working as a cleaner at the church to make some money and was staying at the presbytery. The last time she was seen alive, on September 24, 2006, she had been in the company of Tobin. Her body was found on September 29 beneath the floor in the confessional. She had been raped, beaten and stabbed to death. Tobin was arrested soon afterwards on October 3.

Timeline of known murders:

February 10, 1991 - Vicky Hamilton, 15

August 5, 1991 - Dinah McNicol, 18

September 24, 2006 - Angelika Kluk, 23

Arrest and Trial

After his arrest on October 3, 2006, Tobin was heavily questioned about the murders of Hamilton and McNicol. He was formally charged with the murder of Angelika Kluk and his trial was set to take place in March 2007.

The trial lasted for six weeks, ending on May 4, 2007. He denied being responsible for the murder of Kluk and the rape, but was found guilty of the crimes. He was sentenced to life imprisonment with a minimum sentence of 21 years.

After the bodies of Hamilton and McNicol were found in his garden, Tobin was formally arrested on July 21 2007 for the murders. The first trial was for the murder of Vicky Hamilton, and after a month, he was convicted on December 2, 2008. He was again sentenced to life imprisonment.

Tobin was charged with McNicol's murder on September 1, 2008. The trial started in June, 2009, but had to be postponed due to the poor health of Tobin, who was awaiting surgery. The trial resumed on December 14, 2009. On December 16, he was found guilty by the jury after they deliberated for just 15 minutes. He received a third life sentence and the judge recommended he should never be released.

Outcome

Tobin suffered chest pains on August 9, 2012, and was taken to the Edinburgh Royal Infirmary with a suspected heart attack. He survived and returned to prison. In February 2016, he once again was sent to hospital with a suspected stroke. He remains in prison and is unlikely to ever be released.

The British Police created a task force called 'Operation Anagram' which focuses solely on the movements of Tobin before his arrest. The purpose of the operation is to investigate the possibility of Tobin being responsible for dozens of murders across Britain. Police forces across the country are involved. Through Operation Anagram the bodies of two victims Dinah McNicol and Vicky Hamilton were located. In June 2011, the operation was wound down due to their inability to locate or identify any further victims.

After Tobin was convicted of the murders, the similarities between his physical appearance, locations he had lived in, and his methods of killing, led to speculation that he may have been the killer known as Bible John, a serial killer that had been operating in Glasgow. Interestingly, Tobin moved away from Glasgow at the same time as the murders stopped. Tobin looked very similar to the identikit pictures provided by witnesses, and one witness statement said the killer had a tooth missing in the upper-right area of his mouth. Dental records showed the Tobin had a tooth removed in the same area in the late 1960s.

Maury Travis

Date of birth: October 25, 1965

Aliases/Nicknames: Nil

Characteristics: Rape

Number of victims: 12 - 17+

Date of murders: 2001 - 2002

Date of arrest: June 7, 2002

Murder method: Strangulation by ligature

Known victims: Brenda Beasley, 33; Yvonne Crues, 50; Verona Thompson, 36; suspected - Betty James, 46; Teresa Wilson, 36; Alysa Greenwade, 34; Mary Shields, 61; others unidentified

Crime location: Ferguson, Missouri

Status: Committed suicide by hanging in the police cell before going to trial, June 10, 2002.

Background

Everything about Travis' background seems to have been 'normal' and ordinary. His neighbors, teachers at school, and more or less everyone who knew Travis, described him as polite, helpful and quiet. His parents had divorced in 1978, and although his mother remarried and later divorced again, there is no record of this having a major impact on Travis.

He was so ordinary, that many of his former classmates at school couldn't even remember him. He is not even identifiable in any yearbook photographs from his time at school. One teacher did remember him as a student and described Travis as being very reserved and withdrawn, but not a problem in class. There is also no record of any type of violence or abuse in the household when he was growing up, and nothing to suggest he indulged in torturing or killing animals as a child, which is a common predictor of a burgeoning killer.

When he was 22, Travis attended college in Atlanta, and during his time at the school he developed a cocaine addiction. He went home for spring break in March 1988 and desperate for money to feed his cocaine habit, he robbed several shoe stores over an eight-day spree. He was arrested and subsequently convicted, and by the time sentencing came round, he told the Judge he had attended rehabilitation and was no longer using drugs. There were multiple letters of support for Travis asking for leniency in the sentencing, and he ended up being sentenced to 15 years imprisonment.

Travis only served five years and a few months of his sentence despite receiving 13 conduct violation reports during his imprisonment. However these violations were not considered serious enough to affect his parole and he was released on June 14, 1994. It was then that he moved into a duplex home on Lucas & Hunt Road. Travis would later serve two more sentences

for drug charges in the following years, and during the 2000 and 2001 summers, he was working at the Mayfair Hotel restaurant as a waiter.

One of his co-workers at the restaurant was Dave Wucher, who later stated Travis constantly talked about his car, almost obsessively. During a conversation between the two men one day, Wucher had told Travis about a friend's car that was stolen and set on fire in East St. Louis. In response, Travis stated that East St. Louis was a "good place to dump things because there's not many police around".

Wucher's girlfriend at the time, Julie Kroenig, was working at a news channel as an intern. Travis asked her one day if the station had done a story on prostitutes in the area that were being murdered. He told her he had heard from friends that bodies had been dumped there. She checked with the station boss, but no information could be found related to Travis' story. Three months later, the police released details about a serial killer murdering prostitutes in the area, and Kroenig finally realized the truth behind what Travis had told her.

Murders

Not long after Travis was released from prison in March 2001, the bodies of women who had been strangled started to appear around Ferguson, Missouri. Each of the bodies bore signs of being tortured before death, and most of the victims were prostitutes.

Travis was on the suspect list early on, largely because of his criminal history, but there was no evidence to arrest him for the murders. But, Travis tried to be clever with the authorities which backfired on him and lead to his capture.

The police were sent a letter on May 21, 2002, written by the serial killer. Included in the letter was a map showing where the body of the latest victim had been disposed of. Police searched the area shown on the map and found the remains of a murdered woman. At this time, the investigators took a good look at the map and realized it had been downloaded from the internet.

What Travis didn't know, was that when he downloaded the map, the IP address of his computer was stored electronically. Therefore, when police contacted the source of the map, they were able to give them the address where the computer was located. And it led straight to Travis.

Timeline of murders (identified victims):

July 31, 2000 - Mary Shields, 61

April 1, 2001 - Alysa Greenwade, 34,

May 15, 2001-Teresa Wilson, 36

May 23, 2001 - Betty James, 46

June 29, 2001- Verona Thompson, 36,

August 25, 2001- Yvonne Crues, 50

October 8, 2001 - Brenda Beasley, 33

January 30, 2002 - unidentified female remains found

March 11, 2002 - unidentified female remains found

March 28, 2002 - unidentified female remains found

Arrest and Trial

On June 7, 2002, police arrested Travis and took him into custody. When they searched his house, they found a huge collection of video tapes showing the torture, rape and murder of many of the victims. There was no doubt they had captured the right man.

However, while Travis was in custody at the St. Louis County jail, he did one more thing that would ensure he would never stand trial for the multiple murders.

Outcome

Travis committed suicide by hanging himself on June 10, 2002, while in jail awaiting his trial for the murders. He should have been put on suicide watch, but the officers who had been trained in it didn't show up.

Henry Louis Wallace

Date of birth: November 4, 1965

Aliases/Nicknames: The Taco Bell Strangler

Characteristics: Rape

Number of victims: 9+

Date of murders: 1990 - 1994

Date of arrest: March 12, 1994

Murder method: Stabbing, strangulation

Known victims: Caroline Love; Shawna Hawk; Audrey Ann Spain; Valencia M. Jumper; Michelle Stinson; Vanessa Little Mack; Betty Jean Baucom; Brandi June Henderson; Deborah Slaughter; Tashonda Bethea

Crime location: Charlotte, North Carolina

Status: Sentenced to death, awaiting execution.

Background

Wallace was the product of an affair between his mother Lottie Mae Wallace and a school teacher, who promptly ended the affair as soon as he discovered she was pregnant. His mother was therefore a single parent, and was known to be very harsh when it came to disciplining her son. Wallace was criticized by his mother for any mistake he made, even if it was minor.

Wallace graduated from high school in 1983 and attended multiple colleges until 1985, when he enlisted in the Navy. That same year, he also married Maretta Brabham, who had been his high school sweetheart. He remained with the Navy until he received an honorable discharge in 1992.

While Wallace had been in the Navy, he was using a variety of drugs, and his criminal career started around the same time. He began committing burglaries around Seattle, and in January 1988 he was arrested after breaking into a store. As a result, he was sentenced to two years of supervised probation, but he failed to turn up to most of his mandatory meetings. Burglary was just the start of things to come however, as his first murder was committed in 1990.

Murders

Unlike many other serial killers who kill random strangers, Wallace focused largely on women he knew. They were friends of his girlfriend, co-workers, employees and friends of Wallace's sister. Remarkably, Wallace wasn't linked to the murders until he had committed eleven, despite being him being very much in the picture at the funerals and work places of the victims.

Tashonda Bethea was Wallace's first known victim. He murdered her in early 1990 and dumped her body in a lake. Her body wasn't discovered until weeks after her death. During the investigation, Wallace was questioned about her disappearance and murder but no charges were laid.

Wallace picked up Sharon Nance, a prostitute and known drug dealer, on May 1992. When it came time to pay her, Wallace beat her to death then dumped her body by the railroad tracks, where it was found a few days later.

The next month, Caroline Love was raped and strangled at her apartment. She was a friend of Wallace's girlfriend, and he was with her sister when she filed the missing person's report. Wallace disposed of her body in an area of woods in Charlotte, and she wouldn't be found for two years.

On February 19, 1993, Wallace had sex with Shawna Hawk at her home then killed her. He was her supervisor at work and even attended her funeral. Another coworker, Audrey Spain, was raped and strangled by Wallace on June 22.

Wallace raped and strangled a friend of his sister, Valencia M. Jumper, on August 10, 1993. To cover up the murder he set her body on fire. He accompanied his sister to the funeral a few days later. In September, he

went to the home of a friend from work, Michelle Stinson. He raped her, then later strangled and stabbed her, in front of one of her children.

The next murder occurred on February 20, 1994, when Wallace killed another one of his employees. Vanessa Little Mack was killed in her apartment. Weeks later, on March 8, he strangled Betty Baucom. After she was dead, he robbed her house of any valuables and left in her car, which he later abandoned at a shopping center. Baucom was a coworker of Wallace's girlfriend.

The same night, he went back to the same apartment complex and murdered his friend's girlfriend Brandi June Henderson. He raped her first, while she was holding on to her baby, then he strangled her. He attempted to strangle her son, but he managed to survive. Wallace robbed the apartment before leaving.

His final victim was Deborah Ann Slaughter, another coworker of his girlfriend, around March 12. He strangled her to death then stabbed her in the chest and stomach 38 times.

Timeline of murders:

1990 - Tashonda Bethea

May 1992 - Sharon Nance

June 1992 - Caroline Love

February 19, 1993 - Shawna Hawk

June 22, 1993 - Audrey Spain

August 10, 1993 - Valencia M. Jumper

September 1993 - Michelle Stinson

February 20, 1994 - Vanessa Little Mack

March 8, 1994 - Betty Jean Baucom

March 8, 1994 - Brandi June Henderson

March 12, 1994 - Deborah Ann Slaughter

Arrest and Trial

Wallace was arrested on March 13, 1994, and over a period of twelve hours, he confessed to murdering ten women in Charlotte, describing each murder in detail. He was charged with the murders and held in custody awaiting his trial.

The trial was delayed a number of times over the next two years due to the choice of venue, jury selection and DNA evidence. Finally it began in September 1996, with his defense attorney trying to blame mental illness for Wallace's actions in an attempt to avoid the death penalty.

The defense plan failed, and on January 7, 1997, Wallace was convicted of nine murders and sentenced to nine death sentences.

Outcome

While incarcerated, Wallace got married on June 5, 1998, to Rebeca Torrijas who had been a former nurse at the prison. The wedding ceremony took place next to the execution chamber, and the manager of the Death Row unit attended.

Wallace has been appealing his death sentence on a number of grounds, including his claims that his confessions were coerced. He also claimed the investigating officers had violated his constitutional rights. To date his appeals have failed so far, and he is still awaiting an execution date.

Faryion Wardrip

Date of birth: March 6, 1959

Aliases/Nicknames: Nil

Characteristics: Rape

Number of victims: 5

Date of murders: 1984 - 1986

Date of arrest: May 6, 1986; February 14, 1999

Murder method: Stabbing, asphyxiation, strangulation

Known victims: Terry Lee Sims, 20; Toni Jean Gibbs, 24; Debra Taylor, 25; Ellen Blau, 21; Tina Elizabeth Kimbrew, 22

Crime location: Wichita County, Texas

Status: Sentenced to death, awaiting execution.

Background

Wardrip was born in Salem in 1959, to parents George and Diana. He didn't do well in school, receiving poor grades, and eventually he left before he had finished the 12th grade. In 1978 he joined the Army National Guard and as far as anybody was aware, he had settled into his role well.

In 1983, he married his first wife, and he was working as a janitor for the local hospital. The same year, he was promoted at work, and became an orderly. The following year, he received a less-than-honorable discharge from the National Guard for drug use, unlawful absences and misconduct.

Also in 1984, Wardrip was arrested for rape and murder, and as a result he was sent to prison. He served 11 years before being released on parole. He married his second wife following his release, after his first marriage had ended in 1985. It was now 1997, and it would be another two years before Wardrip would be linked to string of murders that occurred in the 1980s through DNA evidence.

Murders

The first known murder victim of Wardrip was Terry Lee Sims. In 1984, her body was found at home, having been sexually assaulted then stabbed to death. She had tried to stop Wardrip from entering her home, but he broke down the door, and because she was being resistant, he tied her hands together with an electrical cord. He later said he killed her for no apparent reason at all.

On January 19, 1985, Toni Gibbs disappeared. She had been working at Wichita General Hospital at the time, and two days after she went missing, her car was found within a few miles away. Her body was found in a field on February 15, and a postmortem revealed she had been sexually assaulted and stabbed to death.

Debra Taylor was killed on March 24, 1985, in Fort Worth Texas. She met Wardrip at a bar after her husband had gone home, and he offered to drive her home. According to Wardrip, he made some advances towards her and she rejected him so he killed her. Her body was found a week later at a construction site.

The murder of Ellen Blau occurs on September 20, 1985, after she had left work that night. Wardrip forced her to drive to an area that was secluded then strangled her to death, though he had stated once that he broke her neck. He took her car and purse and abandoned them in Wichita Falls.

Tina Elizabeth Kimbrew was killed in her apartment on May 6, 1986. Wardrip later said he killed her because she reminded him of his former wife. Kimbrew was suffocated to death with a pillow, and after her body was discovered, her neighbors reported they had seen a tall man, white, with brown hair leaving her apartment.

On May 9, Wardrip phoned the police and confessed that he was responsible for the murder of Kimbrew. He was subsequently sentenced to serve 35 years in prison, but was paroled in 1997. He seemed to turn his life around at this point, having remarried and gotten a job in a factory in Olney.

Meanwhile, a cold case investigation was underway in Wichita Falls to investigate the murders of Sims, Gibbs, Blau and Taylor. At two of the crime scenes, the murder site of Sims and Gibbs, DNA had been found and the samples from each site matched. It was now clear they were dealing with a serial killer.

As they investigated, a link was made between Blau and Wardrip. While Wardrip was on trial for Kimbrew's murder, he had stated he had known Blau, but nobody followed it up. Then further evidence was found linking Wardrip to the murders. They needed a DNA sample from him, and to get it, they approached his work and asked for the paper cup he had been drinking out of. The officer said he needed it to spit his chewing tobacco into, so there would be no suspicion.

Analysis was done on the DNA straight away, and came back positive in the cases of Gibbs and Sims.

Timeline of murders:

1984 - Terry Lee Sims, 20

January 19, 1985 - Toni Jean Gibbs, 23

March 24, 1985 - Debra Taylor, 25

September 20, 1985 - Ellen Blau, 21

May 6, 1986 - Tina Elizabeth Kimbrew, 21

Arrest and Trial

Wardrip was arrested on February 14, 1999, and he confessed to the murders of Sims, Blau, Taylor and Gibbs. His trial took place the same year, and he was found guilty of all charges. Wardrip was sentenced to death.

Outcome

Wardrip received the death penalty for murdering Sims, but in 2008, nine years after sentencing, it was recommended by a federal magistrate that Wardrip's death sentence should be overturned due to his defense being ineffective throughout his trial. In June 2011, the Circuit Court of Appeals ordered the State of Texas to either change the sentence to life or embark on a new sentencing trial.

The case is under review by the US District Court, and in the meantime, Wardrip is still on death row.

Carl "Coral" Watts

Date of birth: November 7, 1953

Aliases/Nicknames: Coral, The Sunday Morning Slasher

Characteristics: Stalking, Torture

Number of victims: 22 - 100

Date of murders: 1974 - 1982

Date of arrest: May 23, 1982

Murder method: Strangulation, stabbing, drowning, slashing, bludgeoning

Known victims: Jeanne Clyne, 35; Linda Tilley, 22; Elizabeth Montgomery, 25; Phyllis Tamm, 27; Margaret Fossi, 25; Elena Semander, 20; Emily LaQua, 14; Edith Leder, 34; Yolanda Gracia, 21; Carrie Jefferson, 32; Suzanne Searles, 25; Michelle Maday, 20; Helen Dutcher, 36; Gloria Steele, 19; others unidentified

Crime location: Michigan, Texas

Status: Sentenced to life imprisonment without parole. Died from prostate cancer, September 21, 2007.

Background

Watts' father was a private in the Army and his mother was an art teacher at a kindergarten when Watts was born in 1953. The family lived in Killeen Texas, and when he was two, his parents separated and Watts remained in the care of his mother. They then moved to Michigan, and his mother remarried in 1962, and two daughters were born.

According to Watts, he first started to fantasize about murder and torture when he was just 12 years old. As a teenager, he enjoyed stalking girls and young women in his neighborhood, and it was later suspected that his first murder was committed when he was only 15 years old.

Watts contracted the disease meningitis when he was 13, and had to be kept back in the eighth grade at school. He found it hard to keep up with his fellow students, and he failed most of his grades. By the time he was 16, he could only read at a third grade level, and suffered from severe bullying by his peers.

The first time he came into contact with law enforcement was in June, 1969, when he was arrested for sexual assault on Joan Gave, 26. Instead of going to prison, he was sentenced to the mental hospital in Detroit, the Lafayette Clinic. He was found to have a very low IQ of just 75, which is classified as mild mental retardation. The psychiatrists also found he had a delusional thought process, yet one of the arresting police officers thought he had an excellent memory and seemed very intelligent.

Watts was released from the clinic in November 1969, and went back to high school. He managed to graduate in 1973, despite his appalling grades, and was given a football scholarship to Lane College, in Jackson, Tennessee. However he only lasted three months before being expelled for

assaulting and stalking women. At the time he was also implicated in the murder of a female student, but there wasn't enough evidence to charge him.

Watts moved to Houston Texas, and had a daughter with his girlfriend Deloris. In 1979, he married another woman, Valeria Goodwill, but they divorced several months later, in May 1980. By then he had already become a serial killer, but it would be two more years before he was caught.

Murders

When Watts was 20 years old, he began killing women. He would kidnap them from their homes, inflict torture on them, and then murder them. He targeted women between the ages of 14 and 44, and killed them in a variety of ways. The methods he used were strangling, bludgeoning, drowning and stabbing.

Watts managed to go undetected for a very long time for a number of reasons. He always killed in different places, such as different states and jurisdictions, so the murders were less likely to be linked together. He rarely engaged in sexual acts with his victims so he wouldn't leave his DNA behind.

Not all of his attacks were fatal however, and there were a large number of women who received vicious injuries, some so severe that they were almost lethal. Later after his arrest, Watts claimed he had killed around 40 women and when combined with the non-fatal attacks, the number was around 80.

Identified victim's timeline:

1979 - Helen Dutcher

October 31, 1979 - Jeanne Clyne, 35

September 5, 1981- Linda Tilley, 22

September 12, 1981 - Elizabeth Montgomery, 25

January 4, 1982 - Phyllis Tamm, 27

January 17, 1982 - Margaret Fossi, 25,

February 7, 1982 - Elena Semander, 20

March 20, 1982: Emily LaQua, 14

March 27, 1982: Edith Ledet, 34

April 15, 1982: Yolanda Gracia, 21

April 16, 1982: Carrie Jefferson, 32

April 21, 1982: Suzanne Searles, 25

May 23, 1982: Michelle Maday, 20

Arrest and Trial

Watts broke into the home of two women on May 22, 1982, and this would be his last attempt to commit murder. This time, he was caught and arrested and taken back to the police station to be interviewed.

As he was questioned, a number of things urged police to look at other murders, and eventually they were able to link them back to Watts. In the early months of 1981, he had lived in Michigan, and the investigators believed he was the man behind at least ten murders of women there. He had been questioned in 1975 about the murders, but there wasn't enough evidence back then to charge him.

The prosecutors didn't think they could convict Watts with the evidence they had, so the only alternative was to offer him a plea bargain. In 1982, they told Watts that if he confessed to all of his murders and gave the full details of each crime, he wouldn't be charged with murder. Instead, he would be charged with burglary with the intent to murder, which was a 60-year sentence.

Watts agreed to the deal and confessed to committing 12 murders in the state of Texas. The authorities in Michigan didn't want to go in on the deal, so those cases remained open. He received the 60-year sentence as promised, but because of a technicality, he was reclassified as nonviolent, so this meant he could have been eligible for an early parole.

The Michigan Attorney General made a plea on national television in 2004 asking for information to help prosecute Watts for murder. A witness claimed he had seen Watts murder Helen Dutcher in 1979, and subsequently positively identified him. Even though he had immunity in Texas for the murders he confessed to, no such immunity existed for Watts in Michigan.

He was charged with the murder of Helen Dutcher, and went on trial later that year. On November 17, 2004, he was convicted of the murder. He was sentenced on December 7, receiving a life sentence. Two days after his sentencing, Watts was then charged with the murder of Gloria Steele, murdered in 1974.

The trial for this murder started on July 25, 2007. Two days later, he was found guilty and sentenced to life imprisonment without parole.

Outcome

On September 21, 2007, Watts died as a result of prostate cancer.

Watts was suspected of being responsible for 90 murders in total.

Fred West and Rosemary West

Date of birth: September 29, 1941; November 29, 1953

Aliases/Nicknames: The Gloucester House of Horrors

Characteristics: Incest, Torture, Rape, Dismemberment, Mutilation

Number of victims: 11 - 13+

Date of murders: 1971 - 1987

Date of arrest: February 25, 1994

Murder method: Asphyxiation, strangulation

Known victims: Charmaine West, 8; Catherine Bernadette "Rena" West, 27; Lynda Carole Gough, 19; Carol Ann Cooper, 15; Lucy Katherine Partington, 21; Theresa Siegenthaler, 21; Shirley Hubbard, 15; Juanita Marion Mott, 18; Shirley Anne Robinson, 18; Alison Jane Chambers, 16; Heather Ann West, 16

Crime location: Gloucestershire, England

Status: Fred committed suicide by hanging while on remand. Rose was sentenced to life imprisonment.

Background

Fred West

The deeply disturbing environment West was raised in most likely played a large part in what he would become infamous for later on in his life. He was born into a poor family, his parents Walter and Daisy both being farm workers in Much Marcle, Herefordshire. There were six children in the family, and West later claimed that his father had incestuous relationships with all of his daughters. It seems that incest was acceptable to the family, and West's father was also the person who introduced West to bestiality. He would say to his son that he could do what he wanted, as long as he didn't get caught. West also claimed to have been sexually abused by his mother from the age of 12 years.

West did not do well in the academic subjects at school but was very good at art and woodwork. He left school in December 1956, at the age of 15. In 1958, he was involved in a motorcycle accident and received fractures of his skull, arm and leg. He remained in a coma for just over a week, and after the accident, he tended to suffer from sudden fits of anger and rage. He suffered another head injury two years later, after falling from a fire escape, and was unconscious for 24 hours.

When West was 20, he was arrested and charged with the molestation of a 13-year-old girl. Despite being convicted, he managed to escape being sent to prison. From then onwards, his family more or less disowned him. After all, his father had told him repeatedly not to get caught.

Rosemary West

Rosemary was born to William and Daisy Letts following a very difficult pregnancy. Her mother had suffered from bouts of depression throughout

the pregnancy and received electroconvulsive therapy at one point. It was later suspected that perhaps this treatment had damaged West's brain while she was in the womb. She did grow up to be particularly moody as a teenager and didn't do well at school.

Her parents divorced when she was a teenager and she lived with her mother for a time before moving into her father's home when she was 16. This was surprising, as her father sexually abused her repeatedly and was a violent man. She met Fred West around this time and started dating, which her father was not happy about at all. He threatened Fred and also threatened to call social services.

Eventually, Rosemary moved in with Fred at the Lake House Hotel Caravan Park, and started taking care of Fred's daughter Anne-Marie (from his previous marriage to Rena Costello) and his stepdaughter, Charmain, who was the daughter of Rena and another man. In 1970, Rosemary discovered she was pregnant, and the family moved to a house on Midland Road, Gloucester.

In January 1973, a young woman named Caroline Roberts escaped the home of Rosemary and Fred and reported the couple to the police for sexual assault. They only received a fine and were convicted of indecent assault.

Rosemary worked often as a prostitute, and when she brought the men home, Fred would watch. Disturbingly, one of the most regular visitors was her own father, and he continued to indulge in sex with Rosemary even after the birth of her fourth child. He also raped Anne-Marie, Fred's daughter. Rosemary went on to give birth to eight children, only five of whom were fathered by Fred.

Fred made films of himself raping his daughter, and she told some of her school friends about it which lead to a parent informing the police. Fred

was charged on August 6, 1992, and Rosemary was also charged with being an accomplice. Rosemary received other charges including child cruelty, and the children were taken away and put in to foster care. The whole case collapsed when two witnesses refused to testify and they walked free.

By now rumors were starting to circulate about the disappearance of their daughter Heather. It was during this investigation, that Fred and Rosemary's Gloucester House of Horrors was finally discovered.

Murders

Fred and Rosemary killed at least eight women over a six-year period. Some came to the house at 25 Cromwell Street as lodgers, and some worked for the family as child minders or housekeepers. Lynda Gough was killed in April 1973, and was known to Fred and Rosemary as she worked as a seamstress.

In November 1973, Carol Ann Cooper went missing while walking home from the cinema, and was later confirmed a victim of the Wests. Lucy Katherine Partington was on her way home in December, and was waiting at a bus stop when she was abducted by the Wests. For over a week they kept her captive, raping her and inflicting terrible torture on her body before they killed her.

Over the next five years, another five more women were killed by the couple. They most likely continued to kill after 1979, as people like the Wests don't just stop, but no other bodies were found on the property at Cromwell Street. Except for their daughter Heather. Fred started abusing Heather, and when she refused, she was forced to comply. In June 1987, things went too far, and she was strangled to death. They then cut up her body and buried it in the garden.

Timeline of murders:

Summer 1967 - Anne McFall

June 1971 - Charmaine West, 8

August 1971 - Catherine Bernadette "Rena" West, 27

April 1973 - Lynda Carole Gough, 19

November 1973 - Carol Ann Cooper, 15

December 1973 - Lucy Katherine Partington, 21

April 1974 - Theresa Siegenthaler, 21

November 1974 - Shirley Hubbard, 15

April 1975 - Juanita Marion Mott, 18

May 1978 - Shirley Anne Robinson, 18

August 1979 - Alison Jane Chambers, 16

June 1987 - Heather Ann West, 16

Arrest and Trial

Fred filmed himself in May 1992, raping his own daughter on three occasions, and his daughter told her school friends what had happened. One of the friends told her mother, who went straight to the police on August 4 and reported it. Two days later, the police investigated, and both Fred and Rosemary were arrested for committing rape.

As well as being charged as an accomplice, Rosemary was also charged with child cruelty. The children were all put into foster care for their protection. The trial for Fred and Rosemary for the rape was meant to go ahead on June 7, 1993, but two of the witnesses refused to testify and the case collapsed.

Meanwhile, police were still trying to find out what had happened to Heather. On speaking to the social workers, they were told that the children had said Fred used to say that if they didn't behave they would 'end up under the patio like Heather'. This was enough to get a search warrant, which was granted in February 1994, and they began excavating the property on February 24.

Fred was arrested on February 25, and human bones were found. Fred then confessed to killing Heather. He then retracted his confession then confessed again, saying that Rosemary hadn't been involved. As the excavation continued, more bodies were found buried on the property, and Fred finally confessed on March 4 that he had committed another nine murders as well as Heather.

Both Fred and Rosemary were brought before the court on June 30, 1994. Fred was charged with committing eleven murders and Rosemary was

charged with ten. Fred was arrested again straight afterwards for the murder of Ann McFall., and he was charged on July 3.

Rosemary wouldn't confess to committing any murders, and the evidence the prosecutors had was circumstantial at best. However, at her trial in October 1995, she was found guilty of all ten murders and received a life sentence. It was recommended she never be released.

Outcome

While Fred West was on remand, he hanged himself in his cell on January 1, 1995. A funeral was held, with only three people in attendance, and his body was cremated. In October 1996, the house in Gloucester where the atrocities had taken place was demolished, and a pathway was created instead. The rubble from the house was completely destroyed to ensure souvenir hunters stayed away.

Nathaniel White

Date of birth: July 28, 1960

Aliases/Nicknames: Nil

Characteristics: Rape

Number of victims: 6

Date of murders: 1991 - 1992

Date of arrest: August 2, 1992

Murder method: Stabbing, beating

Known victims: Juliana R. Frank, 28; Christine M. Klebbe, 14; Laurette Huggins Reviere, 34; Angelina Hopkins, 23; Brenda L. Whiteside, 20; Adriane M. Hunter, 27

Crime location: Orange County, New York

Status: Sentenced to 150 years to life.

Background

White was born in 1960, and that's about all the information that is available regarding his childhood. As an adult, he became a serial killer in the Hudson Valley area of New York, early in the 1990s. He had served a one year prison sentence for the abduction of a 16 year old girl, and started killing just a few months after he was released. After he was apprehended for murder, there was a lot of controversy surrounding his previous short sentence and early parole. White had agreed to plead guilty to a misdemeanor as part of a plea bargain, instead of a felony charge, which is why he received such a light sentence.

He later claimed to hear voices, but he was never diagnosed with any form of mental illness. He also claimed that one of his murders mimicked a scene he had seen in the Robocop movie.

Murders

The first murder committed by White was that of Juliana Frank, on March 25, 1991. She was pregnant at the time, and after he killed her White left her naked body near railroad tracks in Middleton. His next victim was Christine Klebbe, who was only 14 years old. She disappeared on June 29, 1991, and her body was discovered on August 4.

On July 10, 1992, White murdered Laurette Huggins Reviere in her own home in Middleton. Ten days later, White met Angela Hopkins and Brenda Whiteside at a tavern, and both women were last seen getting into his pickup truck. Their bodies were found at the same time as Klebbe's, on August 4. The cause of death for Hopkins and Whiteside was blunt trauma to the head.

In the early hours of July 30, 1992, Adriane Hunter was brutally stabbed to death. Her body was found the same day, in Goshen.

Angela Hopkins's sister Cecilia had seen Hopkins and Whiteside leave the bar with four men the night they disappeared. Then on August 2, Cecilia saw White back at the same bar, and notified the police.

Timeline of murders:

March 25, 1991 - Juliana Frank, 29

June 29, 1991 - Christine Klebbe, 14

July 10, 1992 - Laurette Huggins Reviere

July 20, 1992 - Angela Hopkins

July 20, 1992 - Brenda L. Whiteside

July 30, 1992 - Adriane Hunter, 27

Arrest and Trial

White was arrested on August 2, 1992. During his interview, he confessed to the murders and showed the police where his dumping ground was in Goshen. His arraignment for the murder of Klebbe took place on August 7. On September 9, five more murders were added to the indictment, meaning White was charged with six murders.

Outcome

Although White did plead not guilty by reason of insanity, he was in fact declared sane at the time of the murders. Therefore, he was sentenced to 150 years to life in prison, and he started his incarceration on May 27, 1993 at the Great Meadow Correctional Facility.

The New York governor George Pataki cited White's crimes as a push to get the death penalty reinstated.

Wayne Williams

Date of birth: May 27, 1958

Aliases/Nicknames: The Atlanta Child Killer

Characteristics: Child murderer

Number of victims: 2 - 31

Date of murders: 1979 - 1981

Date of arrest: June 21, 1981

Murder method: Asphyxiation, strangulation

Known victims: Nathaniel Cater, 28; Jimmy Ray Payne, 21; Alfred Evans, 13; Yusef Bell, 9; Eric Middlebrooks, 14; Christopher Richardson, 12; Aaron Wyche, 10; Anthony Carter, 9; Earl Terrell, 11; Clifford Jones, 13; Charles Stephens, 12; Aaron Jackson, 9; Patrick Rogers, 16; Lubie Geter, 14; Terry Pue, 15; Patrick Baltazar, 11; Curtis Walker, 13; Jo Jo Bell, 15; Timothy Hill, 13; Eddie Duncan, 21; Larry Rogers, 20; Michael McIntosh, 23; John Porter, 28; William Barrett, 17

Crime location: Atlanta, Georgia

Status: Sentenced to life imprisonment.

Background

Born and raised in Dixie Hills, Atlanta, Williams was considered a bit of a dreamer and a liar, coming up with incredible stories about himself that were too ridiculous to be true. He was trying to be a DJ, and ran a radio station from his parent's home, albeit an amateur station. Williams was known for being a musician scout in the area, and was particularly fond of scouting for teenage musicians.

There were rumors around the neighborhood that Williams was gay, but this has not been proven to be fact. In 1976, he had impersonated a police officer and was arrested, but never charged. This was the only time he had ever come into contact with the police prior to his later arrest as a suspect for committing the murders of children.

Murders

Between 1979 and 1981, a multitude of young African-American young and teenaged boys were turning up dead in Atlanta. By May 1981, 29 had been killed, and most had died in the same manner - by strangulation or asphyxiation. Included in the victims were two older men - Jimmy Ray Payne and Nathaniel Cater.

The FBI entered the investigation in 1980. In May 1981, Williams's car was seen on a bridge when a loud splash occurred in the river below. The bridge and the river were being staked out at the time, in an effort to catch the killer. Advice had been given that the killer was most likely going to dispose of his next victim in water, as the bodies were being found too quickly.

The police stopped Williams and he claimed he was on his way out of town for a young singer's audition. However, when police looked into his alibi, much of the information he had given was wrong, such as the phone number and address he gave them.

The naked body of Nathaniel Cater was found three days later in the river. The postmortem indicated he most likely died due to asphyxia. Because Williams had been seen on the bridge a few days earlier, police became suspicious. They brought him in for further questioning, and made him take a polygraph test, which he failed.

They searched his home and car, and found a number of fibers and hairs that were similar to those found on the bodies of some of the victims.

Witnesses came forward saying they had seen Williams with scratches on his arms and face when some of the murders had occurred. Trying to plead

his innocence, Williams conducted a press conference outside the home of his parents, but it fell on deaf ears.

Timeline of murders:

July 28, 1979 - Edward Hope Smith, 14

July 28, 1979 - Alfred Evans, 14

September 4, 1979 - Milton Harvey, 14

October 21, 1979 - Yusuf Bell, 9

March 4, 1980 - Angel Lenair, 12

March 11, 1980 - Jeffrey Mathis, 11

May 18, 1980 - Eric Middlebrooks, 14

June 9, 1980 - Christopher Richardson, 12

June 22, 1980 - Latonya Wilson, 7

June 23, 1980 - Aaron Wyche, 10

July 1980 - Anthony Carter, 9

July 1980 - Earl Terrell, 11

August - November 1980 - Clifford Jones, 13

August - November 1980 - Charles Stephens, 12

August - November 1980 - Aaron Jackson, 9

August - November 1980 - Patrick Rogers, 16

January 3, 1981 - Lubie Geter, 14

January 1981 - Terry Pue, 15

February 1981 - Patrick Baltazar, 11

February 1981 - Curtis Walker, 13

March 1981 - Jo Jo Bell, 15

March 1981 - Timothy Hill, 13

March 1981 - Eddie Duncan, 21

March 1981 - Michael McIntosh, 23

April 1981 - Larry Rogers, 20

April 1981 - John Porter, 28

April 1981 - Jimmy Ray Payne, 21

May 1981 - William Barrett, 17

May 1981 - Nathaniel Cater, 27

Arrest and Trial

On June 21, 1981, Williams was arrested and charged with the murders of Cater and Payne, but he wasn't charged over the murders of the boys. His trial began on January 6, 1982, and the prosecution relied on circumstantial evidence, which isn't great, but they did have a lot of it.

The trial lasted two months, with many pieces of forensic evidence being produced in court. As well as the fibers and hairs from his dog, they also found blood in his car that matched some of the victims. Some witnesses testified that Williams was a pedophile who liked black boys.

On February 27, the jury spent ten hours deliberating before finding him guilty of the murders of Payne and Cater. He was sentenced to two terms of life to be served consecutively.

Outcome

There has been a lot of controversy surrounding Williams' conviction, as many people, particularly those from his community, do not believe he committed the murders. Four of the murder cases were reopened in DeKalb County in May 2005, but authorities in nearby Fulton County have not reopened any of their cases. The authorities in DeKalb later closed the cases again due to lack of new evidence.

John E. Douglas, former FBI profiler and author of the book *Mindhunter*, stated that while he believes Williams committed some of the murders he doesn't believe he was responsible for all of them. In his book he says he believes the authorities have an idea who the other killers are, and that "it isn't a single offender and the truth isn't pleasant".

Trivia

- During the investigation, Charles Sanders, a member of the Ku Klux Klan, was suspected of being involved in the murders of at least some of the boys, but he later passed lie detector tests and was eliminated from the enquiry.

Randall Woodfield

Date of birth: December 26, 1950

Aliases/Nicknames: The I-5 Bandit, The I-5 Killer

Characteristics: Rape, Robbery

Number of victims: 3 - 18+

Date of murders: October 1979 - February 1981

Date of arrest: March 7, 1981

Murder method: Shooting

Known victims: Darci Fix; Doug Altic; Shari Hull; Julie Reitz; others
unnamed or not confirmed

Crime location: Washington, California, Oregon

Status: Sentenced to life imprisonment plus ninety years.

Background

Born in Salem, Oregon, Woodfield's early childhood seemed to be normal, a regular middle-class family with no history or signs of any form of dysfunction. He was popular at school and with his friends, and while he attended Newport High school, he was a football star. He went on to attend Portland State University, where he continued to play football.

During his teen years though, Woodfield started to show some sexual behaviors that were considered to be antisocial. He had a habit of exposing himself indecently, and his first arrest for this occurred while he was still in high school. Being a much-needed football player though, his coaches kept it quiet so he could remain on the team.

In the early 1970s, Woodfield was arrested three times for public indecency and vandalism, but he still managed to be drafted by the Green Bay Packers. By 1974, he had been arrested over a dozen times for indecent exposure and he was dismissed from the team. The next year, he went on a spree of sexual assault and robbery, where he would use a knife to threaten his victims. He was caught and convicted, but only for second degree robbery, and sentenced to ten years, of which he only served four.

Woodfield continued his crimes after his release from prison. From 1979 he spent the next two years robbing gas stations, homes and ice cream parlors, and if his victims were female, they would be sexually assaulted, and sometimes murdered. Woodfield came under investigation for murder in 1981, following the shooting death of a woman in Beaverton, Oregon, who just happened to be an acquaintance of Woodfield.

Murders

In November 1980, Darci Fix and Doug Altic were both shot to death in Fix's home in North Portland. It appeared they had been killed execution style, by gunshots to the head, and a revolver belonging to Fix was missing. Although Fix was acquainted with Woodfield through a friend, he wasn't considered by the police to be involved in the murders.

On January 18, 1981, Shari Hull and Beth Wilmot were sexually abused by a man who entered their office building while they were working. He killed Hull and wounded Wilmot, thinking she was also dead, but she survived. The next victim was Julie Reitz who was shot and killed in Oregon on February 15, 1981. Sylvia Durante was strangled to death in Seattle in December 1979.

The bodies of Marsha Weather and her friend Kathy Allen were found together in May, 1980.

Bodies belonging to Donna Eckard and her daughter were found on February 3, 1981. They were in a bed together and both had received multiple gunshots to the head. Postmortem examinations revealed the young girl had been sodomized before being killed.

Timeline of murders:

November 1980 - Darci Fix

November 1980 - Doug Altic

January 18, 1981 - Shari Hull

February 15, 1981 - Julie Reitz

Suspected:

December 1979 - Sylvia Durante, 21

May 1980 - Marsha Weather, 19

May 1980 - Kathy Allen, 18

February 3, 1981 - Donna Eckard, 37

February 3, 1981 - daughter of Donna Eckard aged 14

Arrest and Trial

During the investigation into the shooting death in Beaverton, police came across Woodfield, who was an acquaintance of the murder victim. Police had enough grounds to search his property and they located evidence of his involvement in this murder and the attempted murders of two women.

On March 7, 1981, Woodfield was arrested and charged with three murders - the murder in Beaverton and the mother and daughter killed in California.

His trial took place in October 1981, and he was also charged with the murder of Shari Hull. He was convicted and sentenced to life imprisonment plus 90 years.

Outcome

While incarcerated, Woodfield got married three times, and divorced twice. He was suspected in 44 murders by 1990, and DNA testing later linked him to two murders from the early 1980s in Oregon.

Trivia

Written by Woodfield on his MySpace account:

"I'm Randy, I'm 55. I spend the remainder of my days in prison because I have committed a murder along with many other crimes. I once tried out for the Green Bay Packers. The only reason I didn't make it is because the skills I had to offer they didn't need at the time."

Steven Wright

Date of birth: April 24, 1958

Aliases/Nicknames: Suffolk Strangler, Ipswich Ripper

Characteristics: Killed prostitutes

Number of victims: 5

Date of murders: October-December 2006

Date of arrest: December 19, 2006

Murder method: Strangulation, asphyxiation

Known victims: Tania Nicol, 19; Gemma Adams, 25; Anneli Alderton, 24; Annette Nicholls, 29; Paula Clennell, 24

Crime location: Ipswich, Suffolk, England

Status: Sentenced to life imprisonment with the recommendation he never be released.

Background

The son of a military policeman, Wright was born in Erpingham, Norfolk. During his father's service, the family had also lived in Singapore and Malta. When Wright was 8 years old, his mother left the family, and they divorced in 1977. The children stayed with their father, who later remarried and had two more children.

After he finished school in 1974, Wright joined the Merchant Navy and became a chef, working on the ferries. He married Angela O'Donovan in 1978, and they had a child, Michael. In 1987 they separated and eventually divorced. Wright worked as a steward on the liner QE2 for a while, before taking on a variety of jobs such as bartending and driving trucks and forklifts.

He married again in 1987, to Diane Cassell, but they separated in July 1988. At that time he was a landlord at a pub. A year later he was involved with Sarah Whiteley and they had a daughter in 1992. He was fired from his job as the pub landlord due to heavy drinking and gambling. In 2001, he was convicted of stealing £80. He continued to rack up huge gambling debts and at one point was declared bankrupt.

Twice Wright had tried to kill himself, the first time taking place in the mid-1990s. He had tried to gas himself by carbon monoxide poisoning, but failed. Then in 2000, he took an overdose of pills, but survived once again. In 2001 he met Pamela Wright (coincidental surname) and they moved in together in 2004. But when she started working night shifts, their intimate relationship was failing, and Wright again turned to the services of prostitutes, like he had during his time in the Navy. It wasn't until the later months of 2006 some of these prostitutes started to turn up dead, and Wright was under suspicion.

Murders

Wright targeted women working as prostitutes in Ipswich, Suffolk. His first victim, Tania Nicol, was killed on October 30, 2006. Her body wasn't found until December 8, and was in a river near Copdock Mill. The autopsy was inconclusive as to the exact cause of death and there were no indications of sexual assault.

On November 15, 2006, Gemma Rose Adams disappeared from West End Road in Ipswich. On December 2, her body was found in a river at Hintlesham, naked, but the autopsy showed no evidence that she had been sexually assaulted. She had been working as a prostitute to fund her drug habit.

The third victim, Anneli Alderton, went missing on December 3, after taking a train to Ipswich. Seven days later her body was found in the woods in front of Amberfield School in Nacton. This time the cause of death was identified as asphyxiation, and she had been pregnant when she was murdered. Her body was naked, like the other victims, but she had been posed, with her body in the position of a crucifix.

Annette Nicholls went missing on December 8 from the town center in Ipswich. She was also working as a prostitute so she could pay for her drug habit. Her naked body was discovered on December 12, near Levington, and she had been posed in the crucifix position. According to her postmortem, she hadn't been sexually assaulted, and although the cause of death wasn't clear, she had suffered from some kind of disruption to her breathing.

Wright's last known victim was Paula Clennell who went missing on December 10, and her body was found two days later, the same day

Nicholls' body was found. Clennell was naked when found near Levington, and her autopsy showed her throat had been compressed, causing her death. Like the other women, she hadn't been sexually assaulted.

Timeline of murders:

October 30, 2006 - Tania Nicol, 19

November 15, 2006 - Gemma Rose Adams, 25

December 3, 2006 - Anneli Alderton, 24

December 8, 2006 - Annette Nicholls, 29

December 10, 2006 - Paula Clennell, 24

Arrest and Trial

As police investigated the murders, which they could tell were all linked, they decided to look at CCTV footage from the date and place of their disappearances. It involved painstakingly sorting through hours and hours of footage. But, they eventually noticed that one particular vehicle was on camera on each occasion. They traced the license plate and it came back to Wright.

Forensic testing revealed Wright's DNA was found on three of the victims, which was enough to enable an arrest warrant. Wright was arrested on December 19, 2006. While he was being interviewed, he refused to answer any questions other than to say 'no comment'.

He was formally charged with the five murders and at the end of his trial, on February 21, 2008, he was found guilty of all charges. He was sentenced to life imprisonment and the judge recommended he remain in prison for the rest of his life, without parole.

Outcome

Despite lodging numerous appeals against his convictions and sentence, on February 2, 2009, Wright decided to halt all appeals on his behalf. Because the judge recommended he never be released, Wright is most likely going to spend the rest of his living days behind bars.

Trivia

- Quote by his father on learning of his arrest for the murders: “He’s just not the type. Steve is soft! He’s daft. He wouldn’t even know how to kill five people, take them and distribute their bodies all over Suffolk.”

Aileen Carol Wuornos

Date of birth: February 29, 1956

Aliases/Nicknames: Sandra Kretsch, Susan Lynn Blahovec, Lee Blahovec, Cammie Marsh Greene, Lori Kristine Grody

Characteristics: Prostitution, Robbery

Number of victims: 7

Date of murders: 1989 - 1990

Date of arrest: January 1, 1991

Murder method: Shooting

Known victims: Richard Mallory, 51; Dick Humphreys, 56; Troy Burress, 50; David Spears, 43; Walter Gino Antonio, 62; Peter Siems, 65; Charles Carskaddon, 40

Crime location: Florida

Status: Executed by lethal injection, October 9, 2002.

Background

Wuornos was born to her 15-year-old mother, who had already filed for divorce from her husband Leo Pittman just a couple of months before the birth. Leo was arrested and convicted of the rape and attempted murder of a 7-year-old girl when Wuornos was born, and she never met him. He had been diagnosed schizophrenic and was in and out of prison regularly for various sex crimes against children, before he hanged himself while incarcerated in 1969.

When Wuornos was around four years old, her mother took off, leaving the children with their grandparents who subsequently adopted Wuornos and her brother legally in March 1960. By the time she was 11 years old, Wuornos had already learned how to trade sexual favors for food, drugs and cigarettes, even at school. Her brother was no exception, and she claimed to have been involved with sexual activities with him as well.

She later stated that her grandfather had beaten and sexually assaulted her, and that he was an alcoholic. Wuornos was raped by a friend of her grandfather when she was 14 years old, which resulted in a pregnancy. She was placed in a home for unwed mothers and the baby was put up for adoption. A few months later, Wuornos and her brother were made wards of the court following the death of their grandmother, and around this same time, she dropped out of school. After her grandfather kicked her out of the house, Wuornos started living in the woods nearby and worked as a prostitute to support herself.

In May 1974, Wuornos was arrested for driving under the influence, firing a pistol from a moving vehicle and disorderly conduct. She failed to appear at her court appearances. In 1976 she hitchhiked her way to Florida, and met Lewis Gratz Fell, a 69-year-old yacht club president. They married, but

Wuornos was constantly getting into trouble by getting involved in confrontations at a bar, and she was sent to prison for assault. She assaulted her husband with his own walking cane as well, and he gained a restraining order against her.

Wuornos went back to Michigan, but was soon in trouble again. She was arrested on July 14, 1976 for assault after throwing a cue ball at the head of a bartender. Three days later, her brother Keith died due to cancer, and she received a payment of \$10,000 from his insurance. Her marriage to Fell was annulled the same month.

From then onwards, Wuornos was constantly in trouble with the law for a variety of crimes, including grand theft auto, obstruction of justice, resisting arrest, firearms possession, forgery and robbery. In 1986, she met a hotel maid named Tyria Moore at a gay bar in Daytona. A relationship ensued and they moved in together. Trouble continued, and accusations of assault were placed against Wuornos with Moore often acting as a witness in her defense. Ironically, years later, Moore would once again be a witness in a case against Wuornos, but this time it would be for the prosecution.

Murders

Richard Mallory, a convicted rapist, was shot and killed by Wuornos on November 30, 1989, in what she later claimed to be self-defense. His body was located on December 13 in the woods in Clearwater, Florida. He had been shot multiple times but it was two bullets in his lung that caused his death.

On June 1, 1990, the naked body of David Spears was found beside the highway in Citrus County, Florida. Wuornos had shot him six times. Her next victim was Charles Carskaddon, who she shot nine times on May 31, 1990. His body was found in Pasco County, Florida, on June 6, 1990. Peter Siems went missing in June, 1990, and his car was later found on July 4 in Orange Springs. Witnesses had seen Wuornos and Moore abandon the car, and a palm print belonging to Wuornos was found on the door handle. The body of Peter Siems had never been found.

Troy Burress was reported missing on July 31, 1990. His body was found in the woods beside State Road 19, Marion County, on August 4. On September 11, Charles ‘Dick’ Humphreys was shot six times in the torso and head. His body was discovered the next day in Marion County, and his car was later located in Suwannee County.

The last known victim of Wuornos was Walter Jeno Antonia. He was shot and killed on November 1, and his body was almost nude when it was found by a logging road in Dixie County. Police found his car five days later in Brevard County.

Timeline of murders:

30 November 1989— Richard Mallory, 51

June 1, 1990 - David Spears, 43

May 31, 1990 - Charles Carskaddon, 40

June 1990 - Peter Siems, 65

July 31, 1990 - Troy Burress, 50

September 11, 1990 - Charles 'Dick' Humphreys, 56

November 19, 1990 - Walter Jeno Antonia, 62

Arrest and Trial

After Wuornos and Moore dumped Siems's car, the witnesses provided their descriptions and names to the police, who embarked on a media campaign to try and find the two women. Property belonging to the victims was found in pawn shops, and they were able to lift fingerprints off some of the items. Because Wuornos had been arrested before, her fingerprints were on file, and a match was made.

Police arrested Wuornos on January 9, 1991, on an outstanding warrant. The following day, Moore was found, and she agreed to get a confession out of Wuornos in exchange for immunity. She returned to Florida from Pennsylvania with the police and they placed her in a motel. She then made a number of phone calls to Wuornos asking her to help clear her name. On January 16, she confessed to committing the murders, allegedly out of self-defense against them trying to rape her.

Wuornos went on trial on January 14, 1992, for the murder of Mallory. The prosecution was allowed to present evidence from Wuornos' previous crimes during the trial, under Florida's Williams Rule, to show an illegal activity pattern.

The trial ended on January 27, 1992, and Wuornos was found guilty of Mallory's murder. She was subsequently sentenced to death four days later.

Outcome

Wuornos petitioned the Supreme Court to allow her to fire her legal counsel and stop the appeal process. Her reasoning was: I killed those men, robbed them as cold as ice. And I'd do it again, too. There's no chance in keeping me alive or anything, because I'd kill again. I have hate crawling through my system...I am so sick of hearing this 'she's crazy' stuff. I've been evaluated so many times. I'm competent, sane, and I'm trying to tell the truth. I'm one who seriously hates human life and would kill again."

This resulted in the Governor instructing three psychiatrists to evaluate Wuornos to ensure she was competent to make the decision. They all concluded she was mentally fit and understood that she was going to die by execution.

While waiting for her execution date, Wuornos started making wild accusations, including that a prison matron had been abusing her. She also claimed her food was tainted with spit, dirt and urine. She said she had overheard conversations where they were planning to push her over the 'brink' so she would commit suicide. Also that they were "wishing to rape me before execution". She started to complain about everything, that the handcuffs were too tight and left bruises, the strip searches, the frequency of window checks, mildew, and low water pressure in the showers.

Wuornos was provided KFC for her last meal and taken to the death chamber on October 9, 2002. Her last words were "Yes, I would just like to say I'm sailing with the rock, and I'll be back, like Independence Day with Jesus. June 6, like the movie. Big mother ship and all, I'll be back, I'll be back." She was pronounced deceased at 9:47 am.

Wuornos was cremated and her ashes were given to her old friend Dawn Botkins, who spread them underneath a tree in Michigan. She had requested a song by Natalie Merchant called 'Carnival' to be played at her funeral.

Trivia

- Tenth woman executed in America since 1976.
- Second woman ever executed in Florida.

Yang Xinhai

Date of birth: July 17, 1968

Aliases/Nicknames: The Monster Killer

Characteristics: Rape

Number of victims: 67

Date of murders: 2000 - 2003

Date of arrest: November 3, 2003

Murder method: Beating to death with a hammer

Known victims: Unnamed children, women, men

Crime location: Henan, China

Status: Executed by gunshot to the head, February 14, 2004.

Background

Yang was born into an extremely poor family in Henan Province, China, in 1968. In fact, his family was one of the most poverty-stricken in the village they lived in. Yang was described as intelligent but introverted, and he left school in 1985 when he was 17 years old. He refused to go back to the family home and instead traveled around China finding work as a laborer.

Yang was convicted of theft in both 1988 and 1991, and was sent to labor camps to serve his sentences. He was arrested in 1996 for attempted rape, and this time he was sent to prison for 5 years. He only served 3 years however, and was released in 1999. This was the same year his gruesome killing spree began, each crime more brutal than the one before it, and he would continue to kill until at least 67 people had died at his hands.

Murders

Yang went on a murder spree between 1999 and 2003, in the Hebei, Shandong, Anhui and Henan provinces. He would enter homes at night and kill everyone who occupied the property. Most of the victims were farmers, and if a whole family was present, he would kill them all.

His preferred method was to hack and bash them to death with hammers, axes and shovels. He always wore large shoes, so if forensic prints were taken, they wouldn't match his regular shoes. He also wore new clothes at each murder to reduce the amount of forensic transfer as he went from crime scene to crime scene.

One of his most brutal murders was in October, 2002. He broke into a home and killed the father and raped the mother, who was pregnant, and killed their six year old child. Incredibly the woman survived the attack but had serious head injuries.

Timeline of known murders:

September 19, 2000 - Guozhuang Village, 2 murders

October 1, 2000 - Chunshuzhuang, Xiaoying Village, 3 murders, 1 rape

August 15, 2001 - Fangcheliu Village, 3 murders, 1 rape

Autumn 2001 - Kanglou Township, 2 murders

Winter 2001 - Henan Province, 2 murders

January 27, 2002 - Tongxu County, 3 murders, 1 rape

June 30, 2002 - Chaigang Township, 4 murders, 1 rape

July 28, 2002 - Dengzhou City, 4 murders, 2 rapes

October 22, 2002 - Zhaihu Village, 2 murders, 1 rape, 1 seriously injured

November 8, 2002 - Gaoli Village, 4 murders, 2 rapes, 1 seriously injured

November 16, 2002 - Liuzhuang Village, 2 murders, 1 rape

November 19, 2002 - Shiguai Village, 2 murders

December 1, 2002 - Yanwan Village, 2 murders, 1 rape, 1 seriously injured

December 6, 2002 - Liuzhuang Village, 5 murders, 1 rape

December 13, 2002 - Sijia Village, 2 murders

December 15, 2002 - Xiaolizhuang, Miaocha Town, 3 murders, 1 rape

February 5, 2003 - Kuzhuang Township, 3 murders, 1 rape, 1 seriously injured

February 18, 2003 - Chiying Township, 4 murders, 2 rapes

March 23, 2003 - Chengguan Town, 4 murders, 1 rape

April 2, 2003 - Sanlizhai Village, 2 murders

August 5, 2003 - Lidao Village, 3 murders

August 8, 2003 - Dongliangxiang Village, 5 murders

Arrest and Trial

On November 3, 2003, Yang was seen acting suspiciously in Hebei, and was detained by the police. During questioning, police discovered Yang was wanted for murder in four separate provinces. He subsequently confessed to committing 65 murders, 23 rapes, and five attacks that resulted in serious injury. His DNA was also matched to several of the crime scenes.

Yang went on trial, and on February 1, 2004, he was found guilty of all charges and sentenced to death.

Outcome

Yang's execution was carried out swiftly following sentencing. He was sentenced on February 1, 2004, and executed just 13 days later, on February 14. The execution was carried out by a gunshot to his head.

Trivia

Quote by Yang:

"When I killed people I had a desire. This inspired me to kill more. I don't care whether they deserve to live or not. It is none of my concern...I have no desire to be part of society. Society is not my concern."

Robert Lee Yates

Date of birth: May 27, 1952

Aliases/Nicknames: Spokane Serial Killer

Characteristics: Rape

Number of victims: 16 - 18+

Date of murders: 1975; 1988; 1996 - 1998

Date of arrest: April 20, 2000

Murder method: Shooting

Known victims: Patrick Oliver, 21; Susan Savage, 22; Stacy Hawn, 23; Shannon Zielinski, 39; Patricia Barnes, 60; Heather Hernandez, 20; Jennifer Joseph, 16; Darla Scott, 28; Melinda Mercer, 24; Shawn Johnson, 36; Laurie Wason, 31; Sunny Oster, 41; Linda Maybin, 34; Melody Murfin, 43; Michelyn Dering, 47; Connie Ellis, 35; Shawn McClenahan, 39

Crime location: Washington

Status: Sentenced to death, awaiting execution.

Background

Yates was brought up in a religious middle-class family in Oak Harbor Washington. In 1970 he completed high school, and in 1975 started working as a prison guard at the Washington State Penitentiary. Six months later, he enlisted in the Army and trained to fly civilian helicopters and transport planes. During his time in the Army he was stationed in a number of countries including Germany and Somalia.

Yates was in the military for 19 years, during which time he earned a number of medals and military awards. These included three Army commendation medals, three Army achievement medals, three meritorious service medals and two Armed Forces expeditionary medals. Despite his distinguished military career, there was a very dark side to Yates, and little did the Army know he had killed two people while on active duty. Even worse, he would go on to murder many more following his discharge from the Army.

Murders

Yates murdered numerous women over a two year period between 1996 and 1998 in Spokane. He would go to the 'Skid Row' area where the prostitutes could be found and solicit them. Then, after having sex with them, he would kill them. The bodies were always dumped in rural areas where there were less people around.

He killed each victim by shooting them in the head. All of the murders were much the same, except for Melody Murfin. After he killed her, he buried her outside his home's bedroom window.

Dates victims were discovered:

July 13, 1975 - Patrick Oliver, 21

July 13, 1975 - Susan Savage, 22

December 28, 1988 - Stacy E. Hawn 23

June 14, 1996 - Shannon Zielinski, 39

August 25, 1996 - Patricia Barnes, 60

August 26, 1997 - Heather Hernandez, 20

August 26, 1997 - Jennifer Joseph, 16

November 5, 1997 - Darla Scott, 28

December 7, 1997 - Melinda Mercer, 24

December 18, 1997 - Shawn Johnson, 36

December 26, 1997 - Laurie Wason, 31

December 26, 1997 - Shawn McClenaghan, 39

February 8, 1998 - Sunny Oster, 41

April 1, 1998 - Linda Daveys (Maybin), 34

May 12, 1998 - Melody Murfin, 43

July 7, 1998 - Michelyn Dering , 47

October 13, 1998 - Connie LaFontaine Ellis, 35

Arrest and Trial

Witnesses had come forward saying they had seen a very specific looking car picking up the victims on the nights they disappeared and were murdered. The car was a 1977 white Corvette, which wasn't a common vehicle. It was soon established that Yates had owned that particular model of car. Rather than arrest him straight away, they surveilled him for a couple days so they could make sure they had what they needed to charge him.

Yates was arrested on April 18, 1999, and was initially charged for the murder of Jennifer Joseph. A search warrant was issued to search the corvette he had previously owned. Inside they found blood that matched to both Joseph and Yates. They then matched Yates's DNA to the other twelve victims.

Yates was convicted in 2000 of 13 counts of first-degree murder, and one count of attempted murder. He had made a deal to avoid the death penalty by confessing to the murders. He received a sentence of 408 years.

A year later, Yates was charged with two more murders, Melinda L. Mercer and Connie Ellis. In October 2002, he was found guilty and this time he was given the death penalty.

Outcome

His first execution date was meant to be September 19, 2008. However, on September 11 he was granted a stay of execution, to allow his defense team the time they needed to file more appeals. Today he is still sitting on death row.

Trivia

- Robert Lee Yates worked as a prison guard in Walla Walla, Washington.
- Quote by Yates: “Every life has meaning.”

Yoo Young-chul

Date of birth: April 18, 1970

Aliases/Nicknames: Raincoat Killer

Characteristics: Cannibalism, Mutilation

Number of victims: 20

Date of murders: 2003 - 2004

Date of arrest: July 17, 2004

Murder method: Beating to death with a hammer

Known victims: Unnamed wealthy men, prostitutes

Crime location: Seoul, South Korea

Status: Sentenced to death, awaiting execution.

Background

Yoo was a criminal from a young age, having been arrested and convicted of a number of crimes from the age of 18 years. These were predominantly theft charges in the early years, and didn't take on a more violent note until the year 2000. His early crimes were as follows:

1988	Theft
1991	Theft (10 months in prison)
1993	Theft (8 months in prison)
1995	Sale of illegal pornography
1998	Theft, identity theft, forgery (2 years in prison)
2000	Rape and sexual abuse of a child (3 years, 6 months in prison)

Yoo had married his girlfriend in 1993 and their son was born in October 1994. Following his arrest in 2000, she divorced him. He was released from prison on September 11, 2003. Less than 2 weeks later, he killed his first victim.

Murders

Yoo went on a horrendous murder spree between September 2003 and July 2004. He proclaimed to be a cannibal, and he targeted wealthy men and prostitutes. At least eleven of his victims were mutilated and burned, and he confessed to eating the livers from some of the victims.

Killing spree timeline:

September 24, 2003 - Two victims aged 67 and 72. One victim stabbed and struck by a 4kg hammer, the other killed with the hammer.

October 9, 2003 - Three victims aged 85, 35, and 60. All three were killed with the hammer.

October 16, 2003 - One victim aged 60. Killed with the hammer, though survived for a few hours before dying.

November 18, 2003 - Three victims, two aged 87 and 53, and the third was a baby. The two adults were killed with the hammer and the house set on fire to try and hide any evidence.

March 16, 2004 - One victim, a female escort, aged 23. Strangled then mutilated, and the remains dumped on a trail near the local University.

April May 2004 - Unknown female escort. Struck with the hammer then decapitated. Mutilated the body and the remains dumped on a construction site near a temple.

May 2004 - One victim aged 25. Killed in the same manner as the previous victim, strangling and then with mutilation and decapitation.

June 1, 2004 - One victim aged 35. Now he had a signature, and was killing each victim in the same manner.

June 2004 - Unknown female victim killed the same way.

June 9, 2004 - One victim aged 26, who was also killed in the same manner.

June 18, 2004 - One female victim aged 27. Killed the same way as the previous victims.

June 25, 2004 - One victim aged 28, strangled, decapitated and mutilated like the others.

July 2, 2004 - One victim aged 26, killed the same way.

July 9, 2004 - One female escort victim aged 24. Killed in the same way.

July 13, 2004 - Another female escort, aged 27, killed in the same way.

Arrest and Trial

Yoo was arrested on July 17, 2004, two days after his last victim was killed. He confessed to killing 21 people, but when he went on trial, he was only convicted of 20 murders. One of the cases was dropped because of a technicality.

He was sentenced to death on June 19, 2005.

Outcome

Although capital punishment had not been carried out in South Korea since 1997, the extreme nature of Yoo's crimes resulted in him receiving the death penalty.

Yoo is currently awaiting his execution.

Trivia

Quote:

- "Women shouldn't be sluts, and the rich should know what they've done."

Zodiac Killer

Date of birth: Unknown

Aliases/Nicknames: Red Phantom

Characteristics: Called the police after the attacks

Number of victims: 5 - 37

Date of murders: 1960s - 1970s

Date of arrest: Never apprehended

Murder method: Shooting, stabbing

Known victims: Confirmed: David Faraday, 17; Betty Lou Jensen, 16; Darlene Ferrin, 22; Cecelia Shepard, 22; Paul Stine, 29; Suspected: Robert Domingos, 18; Linda Edwards, 17; Cheri Jo Bates, 18; Donna Lass, 25

Crime location: California

Status: Unknown

Background

The 'Zodiac Killer' terrorized California for a number of years, and because he has never been identified, he was never captured. There were some clues as to his true identity, but never enough information has been gathered to point the finger at a specific person. There have been a great number of theories and speculative suggestions, but nothing precise or concrete has been established.

The Zodiac Killer has intrigued millions of people for decades, largely due to the cryptic clues he would send to the local news media during his prolific killing period in the 1960s and 1970s. Experts tried tirelessly to solve all the puzzles to no avail. The story of the Zodiac is still in the forefront of many today, in part because of books and movies that have been made on the case, and partly because of the fear of him never being apprehended.

Who was the Zodiac Killer? And the number one question that has been asked all along, is, why did he stop killing? Or did he...

Murders

The Zodiac's first known murders occurred on December 20, 1968, in California. Teenagers David Faraday and Betty Lou Jensen were both shot and killed with a .22 pistol. There were no further known murders until July 4, 1969. Michael Mageau and Darlene Ferrin were sitting in a parked car in the Blue Rock Springs Park parking lot in Vallejo when the Zodiac killer appeared and fired at them. Ferrin was killed, but Mageau survived albeit with severe injuries.

At Lake Berryessa on September 27, the next two victims were attacked by the Zodiac. Bryan Hartnell and Cecelia Shepard were tied up before being stabbed. Shepard was able to give a description of the shooter, before she died a few days after being shot. Hartnell survived the attack.

The last murder definitively ascribed to the Zodiac killer occurred on October 11. The killer had taken a ride in a taxi driven by Paul Stine in Presidio Heights, San Francisco. For some reason, the Zodiac then shot and killed Stine, taking a small piece of his shirt with him to send in a letter.

Timeline of murders:

December 20, 1968 - David Arthur Faraday, 17

December 20, 1968 - Betty Lou Jensen, 16

July 4, 1969 - Darlene Elizabeth Ferrin, 22

September 27, 1969 - Cecelia Ann Shepard, 22

October 11, 1969 - Paul Lee Stine, 29

Suspected:

June 4, 1963 - Robert Domingos, 18

June 4, 1963 - Linda Edwards, 17

October 30, 1966 - Cheri Jo Bates, 18

September 6, 1970 - Donna Lass, 25

Letters

Three letters allegedly prepared by the Zodiac killer were sent to the Vallejo Times Herald, the San Francisco Examiner and the San Francisco Chronicle, on August 1, 1969. In the letters, which were almost identical, the killer claimed responsibility for the murders at Blue Rock Springs and Herman Road. Each of the letters also contained 1/3 of a cryptogram, made up of 408 symbols, that the killer claimed would reveal his identity when solved. The killer demanded the letters be printed on the front page of each paper or he would kill again.

Another letter arrived at the San Francisco Examiner on August 7, 1969. Within the letter were details of the murders that had not been made public knowledge as well as his assertion that when the code was cracked, they would know who he was.

The cryptogram was finally solved by Donald and Bettye Harden on August 8, 1969. The misspelled message was as follows:

"I LIKE KILLING PEOPLE BECAUSE IT IS SO MUCH FUN IT IS MORE FUN THAN KILLING WILD GAME IN THE FORREST BECAUSE MAN IS THE MOST DANGEROUE ANAMAL OF ALL TO KILL SOMETHING GIVES ME THE MOST THRILLING EXPERENCE IT IS EVEN BETTER THAN GETTING YOUR ROCKS OFF WITH A GIRL THE BEST PART OF IT IS THAE WHEN I DIE I WILL BE REBORN IN PARADICE AND THEI HAVE KILLED WILL BECOME MY SLAVES I WILL NOT GIVE YOU MY NAME BECAUSE YOU WILL TRY TO SLOI DOWN OR ATOP MY COLLECTIOG OF SLAVES FOR MY AFTERLIFE EBEORIETEMETHHPITI"

The last part is indecipherable, but perhaps that is the real clue to the whole puzzle.

Suspects

Description:

Approximately 5' 8" to 5' 10" in height

Curly brown or light reddish brown hair worn in a crew cut.

Wearing horn rimmed eyeglasses and usually wore dark clothing, usually wool trousers and dark navy blue or black windbreaker jacket with distinctive military chukka boots known as a "Wing walkers".

Medium or slightly stocky build

Odd walking gait

Shoeprints were size 10 ½

Glove size 7

Slow, monotone voice.

Suspect - Louie Myers

1951 - 2002

- Confessed on his deathbed that he was the Zodiac Killer.
- Attended the same schools as the first victims.
- Worked at the same place as the second female victim.
- Able to access the military boots through his father's work.
- Served in the Army.
- Long haul truck driver.
- Petty theft and disorderly conduct charges and convictions.
- Stationed in Germany at a military base during the period the Zodiac wasn't killing.

Problem - did not fit the physical description.

Suspect - Richard 'Rick' Marshall

1928-2008

- Had training in code
- Navy sailor
- Movie buff and projectionist at a theater
- Ham radio enthusiast
- Bad temper especially with women

Problem - not enough to go on.

Suspect - Jack Tarrance

1928 - 2006

- Former enlistee with Air Force and Navy
- Ham radio operator
- Worked for a steel company
- Foreman at General Electric
- Attendant at a laundromat

His stepson reported him as a possible suspect after finding a number of pieces of what he thought were 'evidence' that his stepfather was the Zodiac Killer. Items he handed over to the authorities included the following:

- Handwriting samples
- A hood similar to one reported by surviving victims
- Knife with bloodstains
- Undeveloped film with gruesome images
- Taped phone conversation where Tarrance hints he may have been the Zodiac

Problem - The FBI did DNA testing to either incriminate or rule out Tarrance but the results came back as inconclusive.

Suspect - Arthur Leigh Allen

1933 - 1992

- Considered to be the prime suspect
- Was dishonorably discharged from the Navy
- Worked as a teacher at an Elementary School
- Sail maker
- Lifeguard
- Had bloodstained knives but claimed the blood was from a chicken
- Jailed for child molestation during the period the Zodiac ceased killing
- Survivor Michael Mageau picked out Allen during a photo lineup in 1991 as being the Zodiac Killer

Problem - Fingerprints and handwriting samples were not a match. DNA testing was done using stamps from an envelope and this came back negative. However, it was known that Allen did not like licking stamps because the taste of the glue made him feel sick.

For references and mugshots of the serial killer profiles you've read about, go to <http://jackrosewood.com/mugshots>

To complete this A to Z reference book of serial killers, there is an added chapter on the Making of Serial Killers on the next page.

The making of a serial killer

“I was born with the devil in me,” said H.H. Holmes, who in 1893 took advantage of the World’s Fair – and the extra room he rented out in his Chicago mansion – to kill at least 27 people without attracting much attention.

“I could not help the fact that I was a murderer, no more than the poet can help the inspiration to sing. I was born with the evil one standing as my sponsor beside the bed where I was ushered into the world, and he has been with me since,” Holmes said.

The idea of “I can’t help it” is one of the hallmarks of many serial killers, along with an unwillingness to accept responsibility for their actions and a refusal to acknowledge that they themselves used free will to do their dreadful deeds.

“Yes, I did it, but I’m a sick man and can’t be judged by the standards of other men,” said Juan Corona, who killed 25 migrant workers in California in the late 1960s and early 1970s, burying them in the very fruit orchards where they’d hoped to build a better life for their families.

Dennis Rader, who called himself the BTK Killer (Bind, Torture, Kill) also blamed some unknown facet to his personality, something he called Factor X, for his casual ability to kill one family, then go home to his own, where he was a devoted family man.

“When this monster entered my brain, I will never know, but it is here to stay. How does one cure himself? I can’t stop it, the monster goes on, and hurts me as well as society. Maybe you can stop him. I can’t,” said Rader,

who said he realized he was different than the other kids before he entered high school. “I actually think I may be possessed with demons.”

But again, he blamed others for not stopping him from making his first murderous move.

“You know, at some point in time, someone should have picked something up from me and identified it,” he later said.

Rader was not the only serial killer to place the blame far away from himself.

William Bonin actually took offense when a judge called him “sadistic and guilty of monstrous criminal conduct.”

“I don’t think he had any right to say that to me,” Bonin later whined. “I couldn’t help myself. It’s not my fault I killed those boys.”

It leaves us always asking why

For those of us who are not serial killers, the questions of why and how almost always come to mind, so ill equipped are we to understand the concept of murder on such a vast scale.

“Some nights I’d lie awake asking myself, ‘Who the hell is this BTK?’” said FBI profiler John Douglas, who worked the Behavioral Science Unit at Quantico before writing several best-selling books, including “Mindhunter: Inside the FBI’s Elite Serial Crime Unit,” and “Obsession: The FBI’s Legendary Profiler Probes the Psyches of Killers, Rapists, and Stalkers and Their Victims and Tells How to Fight Back.”

The questions were never far from his mind - “What makes a guy like this do what he does? What makes him tick?” – and it’s the kind of thing that keeps profilers and police up at night, worrying, wondering and waiting for answers that are not always so easily forthcoming.

Another leader into the study of madmen, the late FBI profiler Robert Ressler - who coined the terms serial killer as well as criminal profiling – also spent sleepless nights trying to piece together a portrait of many a killer, something that psychiatrist James Brussel did almost unfailingly well in 1940, when a pipe bomb killer enraged at Con Edison was terrorizing New York City.

(Brussel told police what the killer would be wearing when they arrested him, and although he was caught at home late at night, wearing his pajamas, when police asked him to dress, he emerged from his room wearing a double-breasted suit, exactly as Brussel had predicted.)

“What is this force that takes a hold of a person and pushes them over the edge?” wondered Ressler, who interviewed scores of killers over the course

of his illustrious career.

In an effort to infiltrate the minds of serial killers, Douglas and Ressler embarked on a mission to interview some of the most deranged serial killers in the country, starting their journey in California, which “has always had more than its share of weird and spectacular crimes,” Douglas said.

In their search for a pattern, they determined that there are essential two types of serial killers: organized and disorganized.

Organized killers

Organized killers were revealed through their crime scenes, which were neat, controlled and meticulous, with effort taken both in the crime and with their victims. Organized killers also take care to leave behind few clues once they’re done.

Dean Corll was an organized serial killer. He tortured his victims overnight, carefully collecting blood and bodily fluids on a sheet of plastic before rolling them up and burying them and their possessions, most beneath the floor of a boat shed he’d rented, going there late at night under the cover of darkness.

Disorganized killers

On the flip side of the coin, disorganized killers grab their victims indiscriminately, or act on the spur of the moment, allowing victims to collect evidence beneath their fingernails when they fight back and oftentimes leaving behind numerous clues including weapons.

“The disorganized killer has no idea of, or interest in, the personalities of his victims,” Ressler wrote in his book “Whoever Fights Monsters,” one of several detailing his work as a criminal profiler. “He does not want to know who they are, and many times takes steps to obliterate their personalities by

quickly knocking them unconscious or covering their faces or otherwise disfiguring them.”

Cary Stayner – also known as the Yosemite Killer – became a disorganized killer during his last murder, which occurred on the fly when he was unable to resist a pretty park educator.

Lucky for other young women in the picturesque park, he left behind a wide range of clues, including four unmatched tire tracks from his aging 1979 International Scout.

“The crime scene is presumed to reflect the murderer’s behavior and personality in much the same way as furnishings reveal the homeowner’s character,” Douglas and Ressler later wrote, expanding on their findings as they continued their interview sessions.

Serial killers think they're unique – but they're not

Dr. Helen Morrison – a longtime fixture in the study of serial killers who keeps clown killer John Wayne Gacy's brain in her basement (after Gacy's execution she sent the brain away for an analysis that proved it to be completely normal) – said that at their core, most serial killers are essentially the same.

While psychologists still haven't determined the motives behind what drives serial killers to murder, there are certain characteristics they have in common, said Morrison, who has studied or interviewed scores of serial killers and wrote about her experiences in "My Life Among the Serial Killers."

Most often men, serial killers tend to be talkative hypochondriacs who develop a remorseless addiction to the brutality of murder.

Too, they are able to see their victims as inanimate objects, playthings, of you will, around simply for their amusement.

Empathy? Not on your life.

"They have no appreciation for the absolute agony and terror and fear that the victim is demonstrating," said Morrison. "They just see the object in front of them. A serial murderer has no feelings. Serial killers have no motives. They kill only to kill an object."

In doing so, they satisfy their urges, and quiet the tumultuous turmoil inside of them.

"You say to yourself, 'How could anybody do this to another human being?'" Morrison said. "Then you realize they don't see them as humans. To them, it's like pulling the wings off a fly or the legs off a daddy

longlegs.... You just want to see what happens. It's the most base experiment.”

Nature vs. nurture?

For many serial killers, the desire to kill is as innate as their hair or eye color, and out of control, but most experts say that childhood trauma is an experience shared by them all.

In 1990, Colin Wilson and Donald Seaman conducted a study of serial killers behind bars and found that childhood problems were the most influential factors that led serial killers down their particular path of death and destruction.

Former FBI profiler Robert Ressler – who coined the terms serial killer and criminal profiling – goes so far as to say that 100 percent of all serial killers experienced childhoods that were not filled with happy memories of camping trips or fishing on the lake.

According to Ressler, of all the serial killers he interviewed or studied, each had suffered some form of abuse as a child - either sexual, physical or emotional abuse, neglect or rejection by parents or humiliation, including instances that occurred at school.

For those who are already hovering psychologically on edge due to unfortunate genetics, such events become focal points that drive a killer to act on seemingly insane instincts.

Because there is often no solid family unit – parents are missing or more focused on drugs and alcohol, sexual abuse goes unnoticed, physical abuse is commonplace – the child's development becomes stunted, and they can either develop deep-seeded rage or create for themselves a fantasy world where everything is perfect, and they are essentially the kings of their self-made castle.

That was the world of Jeffrey Dahmer, who recognized his need for control much later, after hours spent in analysis where he learned the impact of a sexual assault as a child as well as his parents' messy, rage-filled divorce.

"After I left the home, that's when I started wanting to create my own little world, where I was the one who had complete control," Dahmer said. "I just took it way too far."

Dahmer's experiences suggest that psychopathic behavior likely develops in childhood, when due to neglect and abuse, children revert to a place of fantasy, a world where the victimization of the child shifts toward others.

"The child becomes sociopathic because the normal development of the concepts of right and wrong and empathy towards others is retarded because the child's emotional and social development occurs within his self-centered fantasies. A person can do no wrong in his own world and the pain of others is of no consequence when the purpose of the fantasy world is to satisfy the needs of one person," according to one expert.

As the lines between fantasy and reality become blurred, fantasies that on their own are harmless become real, and monsters like Dean Corll find themselves strapping young boys down to a wooden board, raping them, torturing them and listening to them scream, treating the act like little more than a dissociative art project that ends in murder.

Going inside the mind: Psychopathy and other mental illnesses

While not all psychopaths are serial killers – many compulsive killers do feel some sense of remorse, such as Green River Killer Gary Ridgeway did when he cried in court after one victim's father offered Ridgeway his forgiveness – those who are, Morrison said, are unable to feel a speck of empathy for their victims.

Their focus is entirely on themselves and the power they are able to assert over others, especially so in the case of a psychopath.

Psychopaths are charming – think Ted Bundy, who had no trouble luring young women into his car by eliciting sympathy with a faked injury – and have the skills to easily manipulate their victims, or in some cases, their accomplices.

Dean Corll was called a Svengali – a name taken from a fictional character in George du Maurier's 1895 novel "Trilby" who seduces, dominates and exploits the main character, a young girl – for being able to enlist the help of several neighborhood boys who procured his youthful male victims without remorse, even when the teens were their friends.

Some specific traits of serial killers, determined through years of profiling, include:

- **Smooth talking but insincere.** Ted Bundy was a charmer, the kind of guy that made it easy for people to be swept into his web. "I liked him immediately, but people like Ted can fool you completely," said Ann Rule, author of the best-selling "Stranger Beside Me," about her experiences with Bundy, a man she considered a friend. "I'd been a cop, had all that psychology — but

his mask was perfect. I say that long acquaintance can help you know someone. But you can never be really sure. Scary.”

- **Egocentric and grandiose.** Jack the Ripper thought the world of himself, and felt he would outsmart police, so much so that he sent letters taunting the London officers. “Dear Boss,” he wrote, “I keep on hearing the police have caught me but they won’t fix me just yet. I have laughed when they look so clever and talk about being on the right track. That joke about Leather Apron gave me real fits. I am down on whores and I shan’t quit ripping them till I do get buckled. Grand work the last job was. I gave the lady no time to squeal. How can they catch me now? I love my work and want to start again. You will soon hear of me with my funny little games. I saved some of the proper red stuff in a ginger beer bottle over the last job to write with but it went thick like glue and I can’t use it. Red ink is fit enough I hope ha. ha. The next job I do I shall clip the lady’s ears off and send to the police officers ... My knife’s so nice and sharp I want to get to work right away if I get a chance. Good luck.”
- **Lack of remorse or guilt.** Joel Rifkin was filled with self-pity after he was convicted of killing and dismembering at least nine women. He called his conviction a tragedy, but later, in prison, he got into an argument with mass murderer Colin Ferguson over whose killing spree was more important, and when Ferguson taunted him for only killing women, Rifkin said, “Yeah, but I had more victims.”
- **Lack of empathy.** Andrei Chikatilo, who feasted on bits of genitalia both male and female after his kills, thought nothing of taking a life, no matter how torturous it was for his victims. “The

whole thing - the cries, the blood, the agony - gave me relaxation and a certain pleasure,” he said.

- **Deceitful and manipulative.** John Wayne Gacy refused to take responsibility for the 28 boys buried beneath his house, even though he also once said that clowns can get away with murder. “I think after 14 years under truth serum had I committed the crime I would have known it,” said the man the neighbors all claimed to like. “There’s got to be something that would... would click in my mind. I’ve had photos of 21 of the victims and I’ve looked at them all over the years here and I’ve never recognized anyone of them.”
- **Shallow emotions.** German serial killer Rudolph Pliel, convicted of killing 10 people and later took his own life in prison, compared his “hobby” of murder to playing cards, and later told police, “What I did is not such a great harm, with all these surplus women nowadays. Anyway, I had a good time.”
- **Impulsive.** Tommy Lynn Sells, who claimed responsibility for dozens of murders throughout the Midwest and South, saw a woman at a convenience store and followed her home, an impulse he was unable to control. He waited until the house went dark, then “I went into this house. I go to the first bedroom I see...I don’t know whose room it is and, and, and, and I start stabbing.” The victim was the woman’s young son.
- **Poor behavior controls.** “I wished I could stop but I could not. I had no other thrill or happiness,” said UK killer Dennis Nilsen, who killed at least 12 young men via strangulation, then bathed and dressed their bodies before disposing of them, often by burning them.

- **Need for excitement.** For Albert Fish - a masochistic killer with a side of sadism that included sending a letter to the mother of one of his victims, describing in detail how he cut, cooked and ate her daughter - even the idea of his own death was one he found particularly thrilling. "Going to the electric chair will be the supreme thrill of my life," he said.
- **Lack of responsibility.** "I see myself more as a victim rather than a perpetrator," said Gacy, in a rare moment of admitting the murders. "I was cheated out of my childhood. I should never have been convicted of anything more serious than running a cemetery without a license. They were just a bunch of worthless little queers and punks."
- **Early behavior problems.** "When I was a boy I never had a friend in the world," said German serial killer Heinrich Pommerencke, who began raping and murdering girls as a teen.
- **Adult antisocial behavior.** Gary Ridgeway pleaded guilty to killing 48 women, mostly prostitutes, who were easy prey and were rarely reported missing – at least not immediately. "I don't believe in man, God nor Devil. I hate the whole damned human race, including myself... I preyed upon the weak, the harmless and the unsuspecting. This lesson I was taught by others: Might makes right."

‘I felt like it’

Many psychopaths will say after a crime, "I did it because I felt like it," with a certain element of pride.

That's how BTK killer Dennis Rader felt, and because he had no sense of wrong regarding his actions, he was able to carry on with his normal life with his wife and children with ease.

Someone else's demeanor might have changed, they may have become jittery or anxious, and they would have been caught.

Many serial killers are so cold they are can pop into a diner right after a murder, never showing a sign of what they've done.

"Serial murderers often seem normal," according to the FBI. "They have families and/or a steady job."

"They're so completely ordinary," Morrison added. "That's what gets a lot of victims in trouble."

That normalcy is often what allows perpetrators to get away with their crimes for so long.

Unlike mass murderers such as terrorists who generally drop off the radar before perpetrating their event, serial killers blend in. They might seem a bit strange – neighbors noticed that Ed Gein wasn't too big on personal hygiene, and neighbors did think it was odd that William Bonin hung out with such young boys - but not so much so that anyone would ask too many questions.

"That's why so many people often say, "I had no idea" or "He was such a nice guy" after a friend or neighbor is arrested.

And it's also why people are so very, very stunned when they see stories of serial killers dominating the news.

"For a person with a conscience, Rader's crimes seem hideous, but from his point of view, these are his greatest accomplishments and he is anxious to share all of the wonderful things he has done," said Jack Levin, PhD, director of the Brudnick Center on Violence and Conflict at Northeastern University in Boston and the author of "Extreme Killings."

A new take on psychopathy

Psychopathy is now diagnosed as antisocial personality disorder, a prettier spin on an absolutely horrifying diagnosis.

According to studies, almost 50 percent of men in prison and 21 percent of women in prison have been diagnosed with antisocial personality disorder.

Of serial killers, Ted Bundy (who enjoyed sex with his dead victims), John Wayne Gacy and Charles Manson (who encouraged others to do his dirty work which included the murder of pregnant Sharon Tate) were all diagnosed with this particular affliction, which allowed them to carry out their crimes with total disregard toward others or toward the law.

They showed no remorse.

Schizophrenia

Many known serial killers were later diagnosed with some other form of mental illness, including schizophrenia, believed to be behind the crimes of David Berkowitz (he said his neighbor's dog told him to kill his six victims in the 1970s), Ed Gein, whose grisly saving of skin, bones and various female sex parts was a desperate effort to resurrect his death mother and Richard Chase (the vampire of Sacramento, who killed six people in California in order to drink their blood).

Schizophrenia includes a wide range of symptoms, ranging from hallucinations and delusions to living in a catatonic state.

Borderline personality disorder

Borderline personality disorder – which is characterized by intense mood swings, problems with interpersonal relationships and impulsive behaviors – is also common in serial killers.

Some diagnosed cases of borderline personality disorder include Aileen Wuornos, a woman whose horrific childhood and numerous sexual assaults

led her to murder one of her rapists, after which she spiraled out of control and killed six other men who picked her up along with highway in Florida, nurse Kristen H. Gilbert, who killed four patients at a Virginia hospital with overdoses of epinephrine, and Dahmer, whose murder count rose to 17 before he was caught.

With a stigma still quite present regarding mental illness, it's likely we will continue to diagnose serial killers and mass murderers after the fact, too late to protect their victims.

Top signs of a serial killer

While there is still no simple thread of similarities – which is why police and the FBI have more trouble in real life solving crimes than they do on shows like “Criminal Minds” – there are some things to look for, experts say.

- **Antisocial Behavior.** Psychopaths tend to be loners, so if a child that was once gregarious and outgoing becomes shy and antisocial, this could be an issue. Jeffrey Dahmer was a social, lively child until his parents moved to Ohio for his father’s new job. There, he regressed – allegedly after being sexually molested – and began focusing his attentions on dissecting road kill rather than developing friendships.
- **Arson.** Fire is power, and power and control are part of the appeal for serial killers, who enjoy having their victims at their mercy. David Berkowitz was a pyromaniac as a child – his classmates called him Pyro as a nickname, so well-known was he for his fire obsession - and he reportedly started more than 1,000 fires in New York before he became the Son of Sam killer.
- **Torturing animals.** Serial killers often start young, and test boundaries with animals including family or neighborhood pets. According to studies, 70 percent of violent offenders have episodes of animal abuse in their childhood histories, compared to just 6 percent of nonviolent offenders. Albert DeSalvo – better known as the Boston Strangler – would capture cats and dogs as a child and trap them in boxes, shooting arrows at the defenseless animals for sport.
- **A troubled family history.** Many serial killers come from families with criminal or psychiatric histories or alcoholism. Edmund Kemper killed his grandparents to see what it would be like, and later – after

he murdered a string of college students – he killed his alcoholic mother, grinding her vocal chords in the garbage disposal in an attempt to erase the sound of her voice.

- **Childhood abuse.** William Bonin – who killed at least 21 boys and young men in violent rapes and murders – was abandoned as a child, sent to live in a group home where he himself was sexually assaulted. The connections suggest either a rage that can't be erased – Aileen Wuornos, a rare female serial killer, was physically and sexually abused throughout her childhood, resulting in distrust of others and a pent-up rage that exploded during a later rape - or a disassociation of sorts, refusing to connect on a human level with others for fear of being rejected yet again.
- **Substance abuse.** Many serial killers use drugs or alcohol. Jeffrey Dahmer was discharged from the Army due to a drinking problem he developed in high school, and he used alcohol to lure his victims to his apartment, where he killed them in a fruitless effort to create a zombie-like sex slave who would never leave him.
- **Voyeurism.** When Ted Bundy was a teen, he spent his nights as a Peeping Tom, hoping to get a glimpse of one of the neighborhood girls getting undressed in their bedrooms.
- **Serial killers are usually smart.** While their IQ is not usually the reason why serial killers elude police for so long, many have very high IQs. Edmund Kemper was this close to being considered a genius (his IQ was 136, just four points beneath the 140 mark that earns genius status), and he used his intelligence to create complex cons that got him released from prison early after killing his grandparents, allowing eight more women to die.

- **Can't keep a job.** Serial killers often have trouble staying employed, either because their off-hours activities take up a lot of time (Jeffrey Dahmer hid bodies in his shower, the shower he used every morning before work, because he was killing at such a fast rate) or because their obsessions have them hunting for victims when they should be on the clock.

Trademarks of a serial killer

While what we know helps us get a better understanding of potential serial killers – and perhaps take a closer look at our weird little neighbors – it is still tricky for police and FBI agents to track serial killers down without knowing a few tells.

The signature

While serial killers like to stake a claim over their killings – “Serial killers typically have some sort of a signature,” according to Dr. Scott Bonn, a professor at Drew University in New Jersey – they are usually still quite neat, and a signature does not necessarily mean evidence.

“Jack the Ripper, of course, his signature was the ripping of the bodies,” said Bonn.

While there are multiple theories, Jack the Ripper has yet to be identified, despite the similarities in his murders.

Too, the Happy Face Killer, Keith Hunter Jespersen – whose childhood was marked by alcoholic parents, teasing at school and a propensity to abuse small animals - drew happy faces on the numerous letters he sent to both media and authorities, teasing them a bit with a carrot on a string.

“If the forensic evidence itself - depending upon the bones or flesh or whatever is left - if it allows for that sort of identification, that would be one way of using forensic evidence to link these murders,” Bonn said.

The cooling off period

Organized killers are so neat, tidy and meticulous that they may never leave clues, even if they have a signature.

And if there’s a long cooling off period between crimes, tracking the killer becomes even more of a challenge.

After a murder – which could be compared to a sexual experience or getting high on drugs – the uncontrollable urges that led the killer to act dissipate, at least temporarily.

But according to Ressler, serial killers are rarely satisfied with their kills, and each one increases desire – in the same way a porn addiction can start with the pages of Playboy then turn into BDSM videos or other fetishes when Playboy pictorials are no longer satisfying.

“I was literally singing to myself on my way home, after the killing. The tension, the desire to kill a woman had built up in such explosive proportions that when I finally pulled the trigger, all the pressures, all the tensions, all the hatred, had just vanished, dissipated, but only for a short time,” said David Berkowitz, better known as the Son of Sam.

Afterwards, the memory of the murder, or mementos from the murder such as the skulls Jeffrey Dahmer retained, the scalps collected by David Gore or the box of vulvas Ed Gein kept in his kitchen, no longer become enough, and the killers must kill again, creating a “serial” cycle.

That window between crimes usually becomes smaller, however, which allows authorities to notice similarities in murder scenes or methodology, making tracking easier.

In the case of William Bonin, there were months between his first few murders, but toward the end, he sometimes killed two young men a day to satisfy his increasingly uncontrollable urges.

“Sometimes... I’d get tense and think I was gonna go crazy if I couldn’t get some release, like my head would explode. So I’d go out hunting. Killing helped me... It was like ... needing to go gambling or getting drunk. I had to do it,” Bonin said.

Hunting in pairs

Some serial killers – between 10 and 25 percent - find working as a team more efficient, and they use their charm as the hook to lure in accomplices.

Ed Gein may never have killed anyone had his accomplice, a mentally challenged man who helped Gein dig up the graves of women who resembled his mother, not been sent to a nursing home, leaving Gein unable to dig up the dead on his own.

Texas killer Dean Corll used beer, drugs, money and candy to bribe neighborhood boys to bring him their friends for what they were promised was a party, but instead would turn to torture and murder. He would have killed many more if one of his accomplices had not finally shot him to prevent another night of death.

William Bonin also liked to work with friends, and he enticed boys who were reportedly on the low end of the IQ scale to help him sadistically rape and torture his victims.

Other red flags

According to the FBI's Behavioral Science Unit – founded by Robert Ressler - 60 percent of murderers whose crimes involved sex were childhood bed wetters, and sometimes carried the habit into adulthood. One such serial killer, Alton Coleman, regularly wet his pants, earning the humiliating nickname "Pissy."

Sexual arousal over violent fantasies during puberty can also play a role in a serial killer's future.

Jeffrey Dahmer hit puberty about the same time he was dissecting road kill, so in some way, his wires became crossed and twisted, and sex and death aroused him.

Brain damage? Maybe

While Helen Morrison's test found that John Wayne Gacy's brain was normal, and Jeffrey Dahmer's father never had the opportunity to have his son's brain studied, although both he and Jeffrey had wanted the study, there is some evidence that some serial killers have brain damage that impact their ability to exact rational control.

"Normal parents? Normal brains? I think not," said Dr. Jonathan Pincus, a neurologist and author of the book "Base Instincts: What Makes Killers Kill."

"Abusive experiences, mental illnesses and neurological deficits interplayed to produce the tragedies reported in the newspapers. The most vicious criminals have also been, overwhelmingly, people who have been grotesquely abused as children and have paranoid patterns of thinking," said Pincus in his book, adding that childhood traumas can impact the developmental anatomy and functioning of the brain.

So what do we know?

Serial killers can be either uber-smart or brain damaged, completely people savvy or totally awkward, high functioning and seemingly normal or unable to hold down a job.

But essentially, no matter what their back story, their modus operandi or their style, "they're evil," said criminal profiler Pat Brown.

And do we need to know anything more than that?



If you haven't joined Audible yet, you can get any of my audiobooks for **FREE!**

Click on the image or [HERE](#) and click "Buy With Audible Credit" and you will get the audiobook for **FREE!**

More books by Jack Rosewood



From rampage killers to hunters that seek out human prey in the shadows of the night, this serial killer anthology is a collection of horror stories.

Collectively these men were responsible for hundreds of deaths, and they all belong in the realm of the worst serial killers to date. Delve into eight different cases and explore the heinous deeds committed, the background of each killer, and the apparent motives for their crimes.

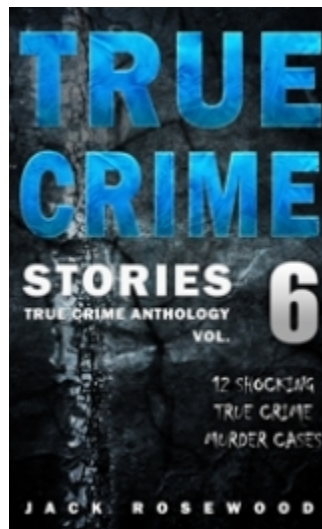
There are those who went on deadly rampages, such as Cho Seung-Hui and George Hennard; men who decided to inflict as much terror in one day as they possibly could. Famous serial killers are included, such as the Hillside Stranglers, Kenneth Bianchi and Angelo Buono, and the Beast of the Ukraine, Anatoly Onoprienko. There are also lesser known murderers such as Fritz Haarmann and Ronald Dominique, who preyed on young men for their own deviant pleasures.

Each of these true murder stories will leave you with a sense of horror and perhaps a little fear. David Parker Ray's surviving victims still live in fear

today, and this notorious true crime story is one of the most sadistic and disturbing. With tales of torture, mind control and violence, very few survived their time in Ray's toy box.

The true crime stories in this book have been selected because of the horrendous nature of their actions and the sheer volume of victims they slaughtered. Innocent people, going about their daily business or asleep in their beds, all make up these serial killers true crime stories.

[GET IT HERE](#)



In the following true crime anthology, you will read about twelve true crime stories that have baffled investigators and captured the imagination of the public for years. Among some of the more shocking stories is a trio of mass murder cases from around the world. You will be intrigued to read about how Ronald DeFeo Junior mercilessly gunned down six members of his family in cold blood and how two other cases of mass murder that although not well-known in the United States, shocked the small countries where they took place. You will also follow the criminal investigations of some high-profile cases, such as that of best-selling author Michael Peterson, and see how they were resolved.

Some of the true crime murder cases profiled in this volume can only be described as bizarre. You will be introduced to Elifasi Msomi, a failed Zulu witch doctor who became a notorious serial killer, notorious for keeping some of his victims' blood for various rituals. You will also read about two potential curses that sent many of the people involved with their respective cases to early graves. Finally, the strange case of Robert Dirscherl is profiled. The authorities initially ruled Dirscherl's death a suicide, but after

several decades it now appears that the death may be a case of true murder and not suicide.

If you are interested in learning more about man's dark side, then open the pages of this book. But be warned, some of the murder stories you will read about will be shocking and disturbing. Despite being disturbed by many of these cases, you will also find this volume extremely intriguing and exciting!

[GET IT HERE](#)



Get this 8 book boxed set and save \$24!

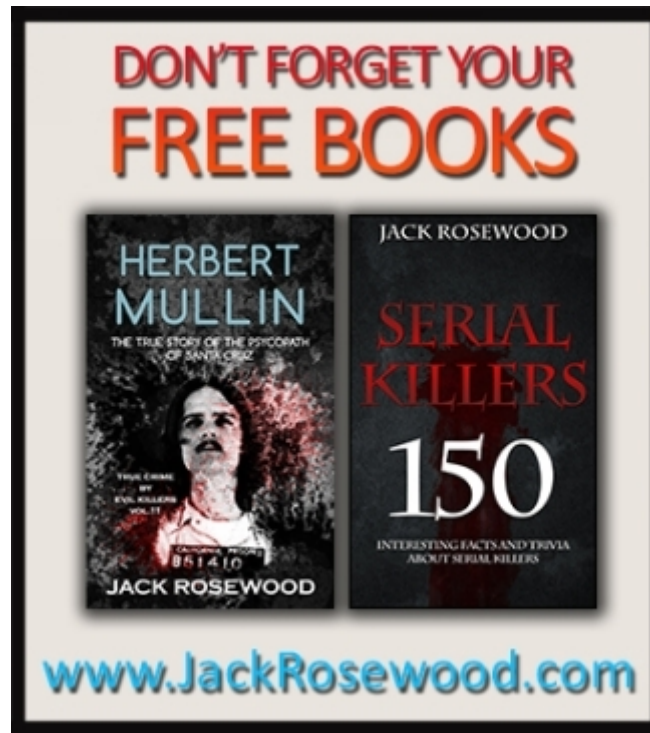
[GET IT HERE](#)



[□ CLICK HERE □](#)

[TO SEE ALL BOOKS BY JACK ROSEWOOD](#)

GET THESE BOOKS FOR FREE



Go to www.jackrosewood.com/free and get these E-Books for free!

A Note From The Author

Hello, this is Jack Rosewood. Thank you for reading this book. I hope you enjoyed the read. If you did, I'd appreciate if you would take a few moments to **post a review on Amazon.**

Here's the link to the book: [Amazon](#)

I would also love if you'd sign up to my newsletter to receive updates on new releases, promotions and a FREE copy of my Herbert Mullin E-Book, [CLICK HERE](#)

Thanks again for reading this book, make sure to follow me on [Facebook](#).

Best Regards

Jack Rosewood

True Crime
By
Evil Killers
Book 5 to 10

Table of Contents of the books in this collection

[Robert Berdella: The True Story of The Kansas City
Butcher](#)

[Dean Corll: The True Story of The Houston Mass
Murders](#)

[Donald Gaskins: The Meanest Man In America](#)

[The Briley Brothers: The True Story of The Slaying
Brothers](#)

[Martin Bryant: The Port Arthur Massacre](#)

[William Bonin: The True Story of The Freeway
Killer](#)

Robert Berdella: The True Story of The Kansas City Butcher

by Jack Rosewood

Historical Serial Killers and Murderers

True Crime by Evil Killers

Volume 5

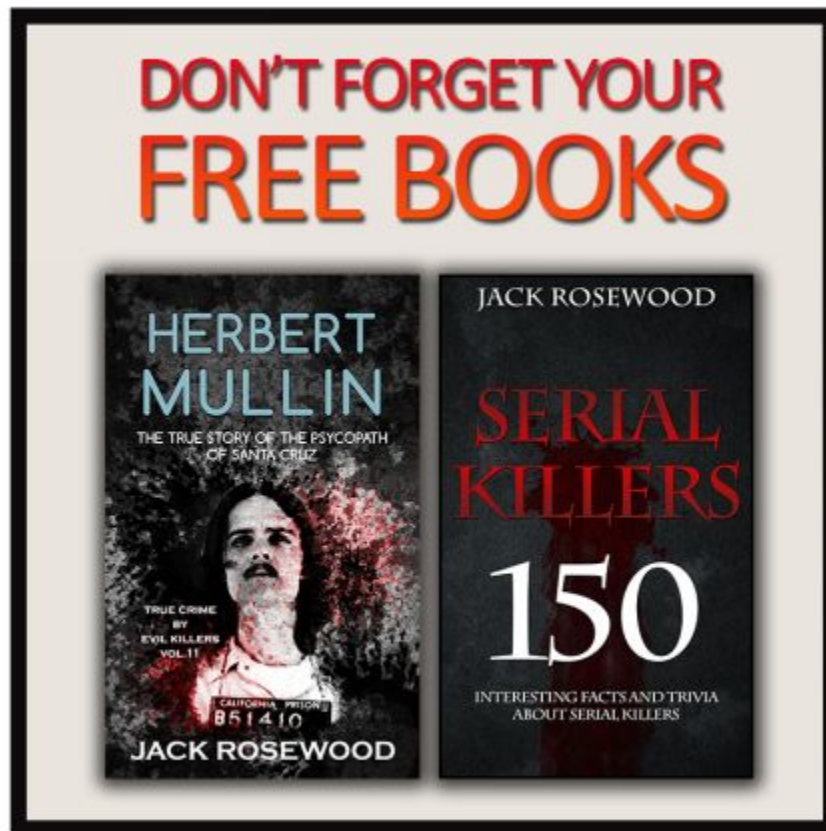


Copyright © 2015 by Wiq Media

ALL RIGHTS RESERVED

No part of this book may be reproduced, stored in a retrieval system, or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic, mechanical, photocopying, recording, scanning, or otherwise, without the prior written permission of the publisher.

GET THE BOOK ABOUT HERBERT MULLIN FOR FREE



Go to www.jackrosewood.com and get these E-Books for free!

Contents

[True Crime By Evil Killers Book 5 to 10](#)

[GET THE BOOK ABOUT HERBERT MULLIN FOR FREE](#)

[Robert Berdella: The True Story of The Kansas City Butcher](#)

[GET THE BOOK ABOUT HERBERT MULLIN FOR FREE](#)

[Prologue](#)

[Chapter One](#)

[The Early Years](#)

[Chapter Two](#)

[The Turning Point - Victim Number One - Jerry Howell](#)

[Chapter Three](#)

[The Monster Returns - Victim Number Two – Robert Sheldon](#)

[Chapter Four](#)

[The Darkening Sky – Victim Number Three – Mark Wallace](#)

[Chapter Five](#)

[To Close for Comfort. Victim Number Four – Walter Ferris](#)

[Chapter Six](#)

[Depravity Unleashed - The Brutal Death of Todd Stoops](#)

[Chapter Seven](#)

[The Pain Laboratory and Victim Number 6 – Larry Pearson](#)

[Chapter Eight](#)

[The One that Got Away.](#)

[Chapter Nine](#)

[Pulling Back the Curtain on Evil](#)

[Chapter Ten](#)

[The Investigation](#)

[Chapter Eleven](#)

[The Caged Killer](#)

[Chapter Twelve](#)

[Berdella on Trial](#)

[Epilogue](#)

Prologue

It was close to 95 degrees in the hot sun on July 5th, 1984. Kansas City was in one of its worst heat waves of recent memory – the air stifling hot and the forecast for the next few days was for even warmer temperatures. Things were good in America – the economy had bounced back under President Ronald Reagan, the Vietnam War was a distant memory and there was a sense of optimism in the air. Duran Duran's pop hit "Reflex" was number one on the music charts and the Eddie Murphy crime comedy Beverly Hills Cop was the top movie in Kansas City theaters.

For those that lived on Charlotte Street in the Kansas City neighborhood of South Hyde Park, there was never much reason to give a second look to the man who had lived at 4315 Charlotte since 1969. It was like any other house on the street, a two and a half story, wood clad, Victorian style home with a steep sidewalk leading up from the street. The yard was slightly overgrown and the front porch a little worn from the effects of time, but certainly nothing that would lead even the most suspicious neighbor to suspect this was the den of serial killer.

Like many of the longtime residents on Charlotte Street, most knew each other by name and Robert Berdella was no different. He was a life-long bachelor and an open homosexual who owned a small curiosity shop down at the Old West Port Flea Market. He more or less kept to himself and was quiet and unassuming. Certainly nothing to make one suspect he was capable of unimaginable evil.

There was little to suggest that on this night, in the hot upper floor of this unassuming home, Robert Berdella would finally succumb to a long

growing dark evil fantasy inside him, and start down the path of becoming Kansas City's most notorious serial killer.

By the time authorities would arrest Berdella, 6 men, all believed to be active male prostitutes, would be brutally tortured and sodomized before finally being bled out like pigs in a slaughterhouse and cut up with a chainsaw. Once drained of their blood, they would be dismembered in a sexually fueled sadistic trance that would shock even the most senior investigators of the major crimes unit of the Kansas City Police Department.

The brutality of the crimes spoke of a dark rage, one where Berdella found intense sexual excitement from the terror of his victims. His fascination grew with the amount of pain he could inflict on the men he had bounded to a steel bed frame on the second floor of his home. His torture methods were designed to provide him a sexual release, drawing particular excitement from the inability of his victims to stop his assault or fight back. He craved control and would often use cotton swabs to rub liquid bleach into the eyes of his prey causing temporary blindness and extreme pain. If they were to scream, he would inject liquid drano into their throats, causing a terrible burning reaction caused by the sodium hydroxide that would start to dissolve tissue in and around the vocal cords.

Driven by his sexual fetish, Berdella's obsession with torture was an outreach of his homosexuality and ignited by an experience when he was sixteen, where he was sexually assaulted by a co-worker while working as a line cook. By the time he had reached his 30's, his torture methods included forced sodomy fueled by an unquenchable excitement during which he would anally rape his victims as many as 5 times per day.

His methods were always the same – and included injections, electric shocks and physical beatings with a steel bar. He kept detailed notes on his exploits and the type of torture he would inflict including detailing the drugs and substances he injected his victims with. During his torture sessions, he would keep track the various foreign objects including vegetables and steel bars he would insert into the anuses of the men he held captive.

He had concocted a crude abbreviation system to keep track of the timeline of his torture tactics using hand written notations such as “Fing F” which stood for fucking his victim with his finger – or “Carrot F” which referred to the use of a large carrot to sodomize his victims. He would take dozens of Polaroid photographs of his torture session which would serve as a morbid diary paralleling the detailed notes he made on his torture and the sodomy of his prisoners.

Many of the photographs showed him in the act of torturing his victims, or in various states of sexual assault including repeatedly having anal sex - their rear ends visibly covered in blood from the repeated penetrations of both his penis, his fist and a variety of objects including carrots and cucumbers.

At other times, he would use battery clips attached to the men’s nipples or testicles and send excruciatingly painful jolts of electricity through their bodies for extended periods of times. One unfortunate victim had his eyes gouged out while he was still alive – something Berdella later told Police he did “just because he wanted to see what would happen”.

As is the case with many serial killers and psychopath’s, Berdella’s morbid fascination with death and torture remained hidden from those around him, only rarely showing signs of a deviant or suspect behavior. He owned and

ran a small shop in a flea market called Bob's Bazaar Bizarre which featured oddities and novelties from around the world, but nothing that would suggest he was deeply disturbed and capable of such horrific crimes.

Behind closed doors though, ritualistic brutality was his greatest pleasure and he would rape and torture his victims for weeks on end. Some, such as Todd Stoops, died of blood loss and an infection caused by a ruptured anal wall as the result of his torture over a period stretching from June 17th to July 7th. Others died more quickly – sometimes from being suffocated when Berdella became bored of their company – others died of choking on their own vomit.

Of the 6 men that were raped and tortured, no complete bodies were ever found. His methodical habit of dismembering the corpses of his dead victims and then disposing them in plastic bags on garbage day proved to be an effective method of getting rid of the evidence.

In the end, Robert Berdella would take his place in history as one of the nation's most terrifying and notorious serial killers - remembered for his sheer brutality and desire to extend the painful deaths of his victims for as long as possible in order to feed his evil sexual fetishes. What makes this case unique in the annals of crime is the extensive self-documentation of his crimes, which offer the reader a terrifying insight into the mind of a killer driven by the desire to rape, torture and inflict as much pain as possible on his victims.

This is the story of Robert Berdella. The Butcher of Kansas City.

Chapter One

The Early Years

When a parking meter attendant on Charlotte Street reported he saw a naked man wearing nothing but a dog collar and leash jump from a second story window, it was clear something was wrong....

Unlike most serial killers, Robert Berdella showed little sign of deviant behavior as a child growing up in the small town of Cuyahoga Falls, Ohio. (This though would change in his later teens) Born January 31st, 1949, Berdella grew up in a normal family. He attended church services regularly and his father was steadily employed at the Ford Motor Company. From all reports, his childhood was uneventful and non-descript except for his poor eye sight that caused him to have to wear thick prescription lenses – something that lead to him being bullied in the school yard during the early period of his life. Berdella did well in school and had above average intelligence – although it wasn't uncommon for teachers to find him frustrating or difficult to teach. He was intelligent and at times over confident in his intellect, often making him appear as being rude and condescending – particularly towards women. This would be a trait that would remain with him his entire life.

In early 1966, at the age of 16, Berdella's 39 year old father died unexpectedly of a heart attack and it fundamentally changed Berdella. His

mother remarried shortly after, which caused the teen a great deal of anger and he refused to accept his new “step father“.

During his high school years, Berdella was employed part time as a line cook at a local restaurant where he was sexually assaulted by another male employee, and it would be his first homosexual encounter. In a time where such matters were rarely reported to the authorities, the violation of the assault was kept hidden from those around him including the few friends he had and his family.

It was shortly after this troubled period where he saw the motion picture “The Collector“ – a story about a man who becomes obsessed with a female co-worker and subsequently takes her prisoner, convinced she will eventually fall in love with him. This would set in motion a deep fantasy for Berdella, one that two decades later would result in his own fetish towards taking prisoners – but he would add his own twist to his tale – that being the brutal torture and drawn out deaths of 6 men who had the misfortune of meeting him.

Still suffering the effects of his sexual assault and the death of his father – Berdella enrolled in the Kansas City Art Institute. During this period, his fantasies towards torture began to increase, and this is where he first began experimenting on animals including boiling a duck alive as well as killing a chicken and a dog – both of which he injected with a variety of sedatives and drugs in an effort to gauge their reactions. Two years into the program, he was expelled for using a dead dog as part of an art exhibit.

Those that knew Berdella when he was a school boy remembered him as a loner who preferred writing long letters to pen-pals in faraway countries instead of spending time with children his own age. As he progressed through college, he became more outgoing and opinionated and enjoyed

engaging in lively debates with people he considered intelligent. He preferred things to be in order – showing mild signs of OCD during his early twenties and prided himself on being on time for appointments and meetings.

After being kicked out of art school, Berdella became an accomplished chef and became involved in a Neighborhood Watch program. During this period he volunteered with several programs created to help young men and teenagers turn their troubled lives around.

At age twenty, he took the savings he had put away from his job as a cook and bought a home on Charlotte Street in Kansas City where he was in the habit of keeping to himself, occasionally talking with neighbors or offering a friendly wave in passing, but rarely socialized with them.

In his early twenties, he openly professed to be a homosexual and increasingly preferred the company of the young teen boys that sold themselves on the streets of Kansas City. He had numerous relations during the 70's with several young men – often exchanging room and board for sexual company. During this time he opened a small curiosity and antique shop in an old flea market while also continuing on with his culinary career. His sedated lifestyle combined with heavy alcohol and drug use began to slow his metabolism and he began to gain weight. In turn, he found the only way to find lover's affection was to pay for their sexual favors, and a sense of resentment began to form.

As the 1970's gave way and the new light of the 80's dawned, Robert "Bob" Berdella found that it was becoming more and more difficult to keep his homosexual appetite satisfied - and deep inside him burned a growing fantasy that was becoming more and more difficult to contain, one that alarmed even himself.

Chapter Two

The Turning Point - Victim Number One - Jerry Howell

In 1982, Berdella became sexually and emotionally involved with a Vietnam veteran and the two men had a passionate affair. The relationship ended abruptly and within a few weeks he began once again seeking comfort with the company of young male prostitutes. During this period he would offer young men a place to sleep and live, and it wasn't uncommon for all of the bedrooms in his large house to be occupied. Some young men stayed because they needed a place to sleep - others were there because they were involved physically with Berdella. During this period, he still hadn't embraced his dark fantasies and in many instances, worked with them to help them turn their lives around and get them off the streets.

In 1984 – two years after his traumatic break up with his gay lover – Berdella began spending more and more time with a 19 year old male prostitute named Jerry Howell, who he had known since 1979 when the boy was just 14. Jerry's father also had a booth at the flea market and he had become fascinated by Berdella's stories of far off places and exotic things - and in particular his open homosexuality. The two would joke about gay sex and began to spend more and more time together much to the anger of Howell's father who openly threatened both his son and Berdella. He had already heard things on the street about Berdella and how he treated young men and it disgusted him.

Berdella's own fantasies were starting to grow and he found himself often masturbating to the thoughts of bondage and inflicting pain on the young man. He wondered if there was something wrong with him and why he fantasized about torture, and the thought of having his own private sex toy held as a captive prisoner turned him on to no end.

It was on a hot summer July evening that his fantasy became reality, and a lifelong growing obsession with rape and torture would finally become unbearable.

Earlier in their relationship, Berdella has helped pay a legal bill for Howell who in turn continued to make excuses as to why he couldn't pay the money back. The issue became a point of focus for Berdella, and with each passing day, he became more resentful and angry over the subject. Whether that was what finally set him off no one will ever be sure – but on the evening of July 4th, 1984, Berdella picked up Howell and the two men returned to his house on Charlotte Street where they spent a few hours partying together, drinking several cans of beer and smoking a couple of joints as well as injecting themselves with a variety of street drugs including cocaine. It had been several months since the two men had been together sexually although Berdella had tried several times to get Howell to sleep with him, each time Howell would back out or refuse to go through with it which was angering Berdella as he felt the young man owed him for all that he had done for him.

Once again, Howell resisted and Berdella decided that he would simply drug him enough so Howell was unable to stop his advances and prevent him from having anal sex with him. Berdella loaded up the syringe with a large enough dose of tranquilizers to render Howell unconscious – and

within a few minutes, Howell was sound asleep. He stripped off his clothes, and tied his hands behind his back.

This would be the first time Berdella would give fully in to his violent fantasy of complete control over his prisoner. What had begun as a simple means to gain sexual gratification now took on the added excitement of confinement and control. He injected Howell his buttock cheeks with another heavy dose of drugs to ensure he remained under his control.

While Howell was unconscious, he raped him repeatedly until he was unable to ejaculate any more – and then followed the assault with a cucumber and a carrot to the point where Howell's anus was bleeding rather profusely. With each assault he took a Polaroid photo to capture the moment. Through the entire day, Howell was kept drugged, subdued and tied to the bed. As the night wore on, he was given more drugs to keep him in a semi state of consciousness, unable to fight back or defend himself, he remained incapacitated through the next day.

When the sun came up on July 5th, it was business as usual for Berdella who went to his shop and opened it as normal. Showing no visible signs to his fellow shop keepers that would indicate anything was out of the normal in his life or that he had a drugged, bleeding young male prostitute tied to his bed at home. He was exhausted sexually and still feeling the effects of some of the drugs he had ingested during his night of sexual conquest. But after five hours away, he felt energized and ready for a repeat session. He closed up his small shop early and returned home – excited at the thought of being able to sodomize Howell as many times as he wanted.

Upon returning home that evening, Howell was given more tranquilizers and Berdella repeatedly raped him again – each time making a note in his journal of the position and time it happened. A sense of anger and

aggressiveness started to seep into his mind – and Berdella walked across the room, picked up a metal rod and beat him on the back several times for no apparent reason. All of the rejection, all of the times these young men had taken advantage of him were all boiling over into a sexual fueled rage.

At approximately 10 pm on the evening of July 5th, much to Berdella's surprise, Howell died from choking on his own vomit. Dumbfounded, he didn't know whether it was brought on by the assault or the likely overdose of drugs he had injected him with – all he knew was he was dead and suddenly realized he was not only a sexual deviant, but a murderer. In retrospect, Howell would be one of the lucky ones – his ordeal only lasted a mere 24 hours.

As with any murder, there is always the issue of what to do with the body, and Berdella contemplated how to dispose of Howell's corpse. He dragged his lifeless body down the stairs and then into the basement. It was here that he would earn his nick name – the Kansas City Butcher.

He began by suspending the body from two ropes tied around Howell's feet and strung him from antique pullies he had mounted on the ceiling of his basement. Raising his body upside down, he proceeded to make slices into the 19 year old's jugular and in the arteries of his arms, which allowed the blood in Howell's body to drain out into a large cooking pot that he placed below him.

A sense of excitement raced through Berdella, and as was his habit, he took numerous pictures while fondling himself to the site of the prostrate naked body hanging upside down before him. From there, he used his razor sharp chef knives to dismember the body into manageable pieces. When he found that the blade of the knife wasn't sufficient to cut through the bone, he used a gas chain saw to finish chopping up the body of Jerry Howell.

With the job complete, he then carefully wrapped the pieces in paper and plastic before putting them along with anything he thought could be construed as evidence into green garbage bags. On the following Monday, he casually carried the bags out to the curb, placed them neatly in a pile and watched as the garbage men tossed them into the truck to be disposed of at the landfill.

With his first kill in the proverbial books, and as the excitement of the event started to wear off and fade into memory - Berdella decided the best way to recapture his excitement was to make notes as to what he could remember, and he carefully matched them to the pictures that he repeatedly would masturbate to. The monster had been unleashed, and he already knew that he wanted to feel that excitement again.

Chapter Three

The Monster Returns - Victim Number Two – Robert Sheldon

It had been 10 months since Bob Berdella had felt the rush of such control and every ounce of his being craved it. For several months he had lived in fear that the police would figure out he had killed Howell. Initially he had worried that someone may have found the body parts in the land fill – or a nosy neighbor may have heard the chainsaw cutting into the cadaver of the dead man. The only hint of a problem was Jerry Howell's father who had heard that Berdella and his son were intimately involved and was spending more and more time at his house.

As the days went on, he felt a great deal of turmoil over the entire event. Part of him was disgusted with himself – but at the same time, he missed the excruciating excitement of his terrible deed. The fear of being caught robbed him of his enjoyment, and he promised himself that he would not kill again, content with the vivid memories of his past crime and a carefully selected hiding spot for the diary and photos he so cherished. For several months he was determined to not even think about the matter and to never do something so foolish again that could see him end up behind prison bars for the rest of his life. He hid the pictures and his notes in a hollowed up section of his floor where he was sure no one would be able to ever find them.

But with the warm spring sun and a sense of feeling that he was in the clear – he realized that no one really cared – including the police - about a

missing gay street prostitute and the seed of an idea began once again to fester deep in the darkness of his sexually deviant mind. Several times a day he would look through the pictures of what he had done with Howell and would masturbate to the memory of his conquest.

It was in the early days of spring in 1985, that he invited Robert Sheldon to come and party with him and stay over a few days as he had several times in the past. For several weeks now, Berdella had been contemplating taking another prisoner, and his old memories of the movie he saw when he was 16 had begun to form an idea in his mind. He wondered if Robert Sheldon was a good candidate for him to try and “Keep“ for himself – a reference from the movie “Collector” he had watched with interest when he was 16.

The two men was partying heavily one night, and Berdella flipped back and forth between whether he felt he should act on his plan. He had injected Sheldon several times already and the man was clearly intoxicated but still awake. It was then that Berdella decided Sheldon wasn't the right person for his fantasy and rather than take him prisoner, decided to go to bed. Berdella had known Sheldon for several years and the two had partied numerous times but he didn't feel overly attracted to him. Over the past half year, Sheldon would often show up drunk at Berdella's house and the act was wearing thin on him.

When Berdella awoke the next morning he found Sheldon sick on the bathroom floor and complaining about stiffness in his joints. Concerned for his well-being, Berdella took the man down to the University of Kansas Medical Center to ensure he was OK. He was given a prescription for penicillin and sent home.

That evening the two men began partying again and it was at this point where Berdella's inner monster would once again appear with terrifying and

deadly consequences. He had decided that he would “keep him” and gave Sheldon a heavy dose of tranquilizers including crushed valium. After the man passed out, he stripped him of his clothes and tied his legs together and carried the limp man up to a bedroom on the third floor of his house. It was just after 11pm when Berdella first began sodomizing the unconscious man, and he made a note of “BF – 11:15” which stood for Butt Fucked him at 11:15.

For the next several hours he sodomized the man repeatedly with a variety of objects including a carrot and a cucumber and raped him over and over until he was unable to ejaculate any more. Fueled by a sexually induced rage, he elected to see what would happen if he was to put liquid drano into the eye of his prisoner, with the idea that if he was to permanently blind him, he would make a better long term captive and play thing for him to act out his bizarre sexual rituals. During his experimenting with the drain cleaner, he also used a syringe to put it into his left ear causing Sheldon to scream in agony. He made a note in his diary of “DC LE” which stood for drain cleaner in his left eye as well as left ear.

Sheldon’s screams only served to excite Berdella more and his desire on inflict pain on his prisoner began to escalate. Using pliers and a hammer, he crushed the bones in Robert Sheldon’s hands while stroking his erection. He knew he risked being discovered if a neighbor or passerby was to hear the commotion so he reluctantly gave him more tranquilizers to prevent him from making noise.

For four days he repeatedly raped and sodomized the bound man, often beating him unmercifully with a steel pipe and injecting him with chemicals and drugs. Gagging him with a cloth and piano wire – he ignored Sheldon’s pleas for him to stop and continued his systematic rape and torture of his

battered body. At one point – Berdella decided to tattoo the man with a scalding hot coat hanger he had fashioned to read with the word “hot“ on the back left shoulder. During another moment of bizarre creativity with his torture methods, he used silicon window caulking to fill his ears in an effort to deprive him of his hearing. Berdella was disappointed the next day when the caulking fell out as it wouldn’t adhere to the inner ear of his victim.

He became more and more fascinated with needles and injecting his prey with a variety of substances, but also began to experiment on Sheldon with what he would call a form or “Bizarre Acupuncture“. This included jabbing the tied up man in a variety of places on his body including his testicles and under his fingernails just to see how he would react despite the heavy sedatives he was under.

As Berdella became more and more creative with his torture methods – he began to see his sexual enjoyment and his infliction of pain becoming more parallel. He felt a sense of control, and when he had his victim completely at his mercy, he felt the most satisfied.

As with Howell, he took hundreds of Polaroid pictures and made even more detailed notes on each form of torture he performed including what drugs he administered. He had discovered that he preferred to let much of the effect of the tranquilizers wear off so that he could feel confident his prey could emotionally embrace himself being violated. Later that evening, when Sheldon protested and demanded that he let him go - Berdella hit him on back of the head with a rubber mallet just hard enough to induce a significant amount of pain but not to knock him unconscious.

Sheldon was also the first he would try his new 7000 volt electrical transformer on. Using alligator style clips he attached them to his nipples and turned the current on for a few seconds. Sheldon’s body would go stiff

and jump of the bed with each jolt of electricity. Later he discovered that if he was using hypodermic needles pierced through the skin on a variety of places, he could then connect the clips to the needles and electrocute Sheldon at will, without worry of them falling off as they had when he would convulse from the electrical current.

In his diary, Berdella noted that the piano wire he had tied Sheldon to the bed with was starting to cause nerve damage to his hands and that this was a good thing as it would make him less able to try and untie himself or escape in the future. Through the entire process he snapped a continual stream of Polaroid photographs. During one particularly brutal electrocution session, lasting nearly five minutes, he took 17 photos of the event and made detailed notes in his scribbler.

It was on April 15th that Berdella had to make a snap decision to suffocate Sheldon by placing a bag over his head after he returned home to find a handyman he had hired several months earlier finally arriving unexpectedly to trim some trees around his house. He had thought about giving him more drugs to try and sedate him, but he knew that could be a risk, so he decided to kill him as fast and silently as he could. As he pulled the transparent bag over his head and tethered it shut at his neck - he watched with curiosity and a bit of regret the life slip from the body of Sheldon. The plastic bag filling with moisture as he gasped for what little oxygen remained in the bag – his eyes bulging and his chest heaving despite the sedative drugs still in his body. Within a few minutes it was over and Berdella had murdered his second victim.

Berdella would dismembered the body, this time using his bath tub where he bled him out before cutting him into pieces to be disposed of with the trash – using a variety of knives, two skills saws and his chainsaw to cut of

his head as he had down with Howell. It would though be the first time he decided to keep a true trophy, and rather than disposing of the severed head of Sheldon, he buried it in the back yard of his house in an area that was a grown over garden.

He had committed the most heinous of crimes and once again there was no sign that he would be caught by the authorities. More importantly, he didn't feel the same shame and regret he had with his young friend Jerry Howell. The monster was truly free now and his confidence grew – along with his depraved fantasy of what he would do to his next victim.

Chapter Four

The Darkening Sky – Victim Number

Three – Mark Wallace

The summer was just around the corner and it had barely been two months since he killed Robert Sheldon. It gave Berdella a sense of comfort and odd closeness to know that his head still remained buried in his back yard – especially after hiring a young man named Mark Wallace, who Berdella had hired to help tidy up his backyard, and was now practically standing right on top of the spot where he had carefully buried the head of Sheldon. As was his custom, Berdella enjoyed spending time with young men and Wallace certainly could use the money. He had been staying where ever he could for several months, and money was tight.

It was June 22nd, and nearly an entire calendar year had passed since his first kill. His mind began to fantasize about what it would be like to rape the young gardener and once again the dark rage that drove him found its way to the daylight. During a violent thunderstorm, Berdella found the near homeless fellow in his garden shed after his dogs had been barking in the back yard. He invited the young man into his home where they shared a few beers and talked about Wallace's life and how he was becoming depressed with the whole situation. Wallace began to get drunk, and shortly before 1am, Berdella suggested that to help him calm down and relax, he would give him an injection of a calming tranquilizer he had in the house – of which Wallace readily accepted. Berdella gave him an injection of one and a half cc's of Chlorpromazine which put him to sleep and then followed this

dose up with an injection of Ketamine which rendered him completely unconscious.

With Wallace incapacitated, he then stripped the man of his clothing, tied his hands together and rolled him over on the couch where he rubbed his penis between the man's buttocks until he climaxed. With no signs of movement by Wallace, Berdella used a carrot to penetrate the anus of the unconscious man for several minutes before deciding to carry him up to a bedroom on the third floor in the house. Occasionally Wallace would try to speak or cry out but made little sense with the heavy drugs he was on.

Just after 5am Wallace began to regain consciousness and Berdella sodomized him three more times before 7am. Ever since his first victim Jerry Howell, his note taking had become more and more meticulous and after each "activity" he would make a written abbreviation of what he had done and the reaction it created. At 6:45 he noted in his diary that he had "Front Fucked" Wallace – a sexual position where he would lift the legs of the man up so his knees were pressing against his chest, which in turn would make the man's anus available for him to penetrate.

It had been several hours since he had given Wallace any drugs as he wanted him to be "more into it" and he enjoyed the muffled screams the man made. If he fought back too much, he would club him in the head with the rubber mallet as he had with Sheldon. He enjoyed the look of confusion in the eyes of Wallace after he would hit him – noting in his diary that he would become disoriented and confused after being struck. At one point, he used the mallet to repeatedly pound Wallace's testicles causing him to cry out in agony.

For the next several hours Berdella raped Wallace repeatedly – this time electrocuting him with alligator clips attached to his nipples and then his

swollen testicles. Over and over he would turn the current on and watch Wallace shake violently as the electricity burned and tortured his body, all while snapping photographs with his Polaroid camera and making notes in his book.

At 11am, Berdella gave Wallace another large injection of drugs – enough that he felt confident that he would remain asleep while he went to his shop. Arriving home just before 4 that afternoon, he found Wallace awake and trying to untie himself. Furious, Berdella gave him a large injection of tranquilizers again and the man lapsed back into unconsciousness. Enraged, he used dish soap and a large syringe to perform an enema on Wallace, which he had hoped would not only clean the rectum of stool and blood, but also lubricate his anus enough so that he could get his fist in, of which ultimately was unable to. When he realized it wouldn't be able to fit his fist in his rectum – he paused to make write down “S and W” in his diary - which stood for Soap and Water enema.

Throughout the night he continued to sodomize and torture Wallace. He used razor sharp syringe needles to poke and prod his body. Each time enjoying the reaction Wallace would make when he hit a nerve or particularly sensitive spot on his body such as his testicles or eyeballs. If he found a particularly painful spot he would make a note of it to ensure he could remember it for future use. During the night, he continued to inject Wallace with more drugs and just as the sun had come up, he realized that his torture methods no longer had any effect on his victim. He checked for a pulse and realized he was dead. In his diary, he noted, “7AM – No Signs of Life” It was June 23rd, 1985.

That night, Berdella cut up Wallace into pieces and again carefully wrapped them in plastic before putting them into empty dog food bags and then into

green garbage bags, which he took out to the curb for the garbage man, arriving the next morning. He took down the license plate of the garbage truck and noted it in his diary.

It had been barely a year since he had killed Jerry Howell and now had just finished torturing and murdering his third victim. The Kansas City Butcher was officially a serial killer.

Chapter Five

To Close for Comfort. Victim Number

Four – Walter Ferris

Berdella felt disappointed. Wallace had only lasted barely 48 hours and he began to realize that if he truly wanted to keep one of his “sex toys” prisoner for an indefinite time, he would need to learn to pace his torturous rage so that they would not die so quickly. He started to think of ways to try and sustain how long they would last. Ironically, it was never his intention to kill them, but rather to just keep them as prisoners for his own gratification, and to this point, death had been the result rather than the intention - of which he now felt very little remorse over.

It had taken nearly 10 months to get over his first killing. Berdella was shocked at his own capacity for inflicting pain and although he had masturbated repeatedly to the photos he had kept, he also had lived in fear that he was going to get caught. The second murder – that of Robert Sheldon had been the result of a lot of planning. When the opportunity to snatch Wallace presented itself, there was no such plan in place – just a sexually fueled rage that was a short lived temporary release for his fantasy, but he wanted something else – a long term prisoner that would in time learn to obey willingly his every demand and submit to his every depraved whim.

Always the intellect, Berdella often would wonder why he found such satisfaction in the cruel domination of the young men he raped, tortured and eventually killed. He felt an anger growing in himself towards the “Chicken

Hawks“ – a term used to refer to young male prostitutes that made themselves available on the street corners of downtown Kansas City. In some cities, Chicken Hawks were the men who paid to have sex with the young male prostitutes – but in KC, the term was used by both the johns to refer to the teenagers that sold their bodies to the homosexual men that lived in the city – and were often victims themselves of being robbed or black mailed by the conniving young criminals.

Ironically, for many years, Berdella had tried to help several young men off the street, giving them a home and feeding them. Yet time and time again he would be let down or feel betrayed. They would steal from him when he wasn't home or not share the same emotional attachment he had for them. His patience for their antics was growing thin and he had developed a growing intense resentment towards their unwillingness to appreciate all that he tried to provide for them.

When he first drugged and raped Jerry Howell – his motive was fueled by anger over an unpaid bill. But after now killing three young men, he began to enjoy immensely the feeling of being in complete control of the situation and knowing that they were helpless to stop him. The fear in their eyes betrayed their deepest emotions and the intensity of his own orgasms all fed his growing evil.

But something was missing. It was one thing to be able to control another human being for a short period of time, but what he really craved for was the ability to make another person give up all hope and be his permanent prisoner where he no longer had to fear them trying to escape or fight back. He had instinctively taken steps to try and prevent them from escaping – and this is where his torture methods began to naturally develop. A key step was to ensure they couldn't untie themselves the way Wallace almost had.

Breaking their fingers would prevent them from being able to undo the knots of the rope as would eliminating their eyesight. After all, it would be near impossible to untie a knot if they had no real mobility in their fingers – and couldn't see what they were doing. If they were blind it would also make escaping that much more difficult. He had also noted when he had tied Sheldon with piano wire to the bed posts, it created a great deal of damage to the nerves of his hands and likely would be an effective way of preventing a future prisoner from escaping.

The only conflict he had in toning down his assault, was that he derived true enjoyment in the terror and pain he could see in their eyes – but as he had learned, no human could withstand the amount of torture and pain he inflicted for a long period of time.

He also had continued to think of ways to deprive his captives of their sensory perception. When he had put caulking in their ears it was about preventing them from being able to hear as it made it more difficult to interpret what was happening or coming next – and gave him an important sense of control over them. It was all a way to demonstrate his power over his victims, and make them more helpless in the future to resist.

Down on McGee and 10th street where the Chicken Hawks hung out looking for Johns, word had started to spread that Berdella was someone to avoid. Jerry Howell's father had been asking questions about where his son had vanished to and now Robert Sheldon was missing – both had been friends and lovers of Berdella and both had been seen with him not long before they went missing. The police had looked briefly into the disappearance of the Howell, mostly because of the relentless encouragement of Howell's father who had a friend on the police force by the name of Charles Neuner, who he had convinced that his son wasn't just

a runaway, and that he had last been seen with Berdella who had a reputation for taking advantage of young male prostitutes.

Neuner brought Berdella in for questioning who showed up with his lawyer and although he noted in the interview that Berdella seemed nervous, there was very little in the line of evidence to tie the two men together or any solid evidence to suggest the young man was truly missing. The only facts were that the two knew each other and both were homosexuals. The one lead they had from a source other than Howell's father was from a street hustler named Todd Stoops who had lived with Berdella briefly in 1984. When he was questioned by Neuner, he told him that he thought Berdella has given Howell a "hot shot injection" and that Jerry had likely died of an overdose from it. The only problem was Stoops had been in jail the night Howell went missing and couldn't have seen Berdella do anything to Howell.

Police knew that the young prostitutes lived a high risk lifestyle and it wasn't uncommon for them to move to another city without notice or disappear for months on end. Although they opened a file on the missing Howell man as well as Berdella, none of the detectives were overly worried about the report of a missing Chicken Hawk.

Never the less, word got around that Berdella had a habit of being rough with his lovers and liked to tie them up and aggressively sodomize them. But he also had a large supply of drugs and a warm house to stay in with comfortable beds. He would feed them and treat them with respect and for many, despite the rough sex, it was preferable to the back seat of a car where most Johns wanted to engage in sex.

Throughout his life, Berdella had several run ins with the Police, ranging from being arrested when he was in college for selling narcotics to a variety

of petty crimes and issues. The interview with Neuner had shaken him up, but hadn't deterred his dark fantasies, now that it seemed that the police were unwilling to dig deep enough to solve the disappearance of a young prostitute. With this knowledge, his fear of being caught diminished.

It was in the late winter of 1985 that Berdella had yet another run in with the Police – this time about a drug sale where he was questioned about selling marijuana to a couple of young men named Walter Ferris and Gene Shaw. Berdella had known Shaw from the Flea Market and he had sold the two young men a bottle of chlorpromazine, which they then asked the next day if they could exchange for a bag of marijuana. A few days later, the police arrived at his small shop to question him about selling drugs and he immediately suspected that Ferris had set him up.

It was later that year in late September that Berdella and Ferris would cross paths again. Ferris was still hanging around with Shaw and the three men would party late into the night. It became an annoying habit that the two would call Berdella at all hours either stoned or looking for a place to stay and after one particular incident, Berdella was furious after he returned home to discover the two had broken into his house and rooted through his things looking for drugs.

On September 26th, Ferris called Berdella and asked him to meet him at the Midnight Sun – a bar popular with the homosexual community in Kansas City. The two met shortly after 7:30pm and Ferris wanted to know if he could stay with him for a few days. By this time, Berdella had already started to formulate his plan to “keep” Ferris as his next victim and he was happy to agree to his request. The two men returned to Berdella's house where he crushed up several tranquilizers into a bowl of chili and by 9pm Ferris was sleeping soundly in a second floor bedroom. Berdella injected

him with a heavy dose of drugs to render him unable to fight back and the cycle of rape and torture would begin again.

Throughout the evening Berdella made detailed notes of his exploits as he had with his other prisoners. He repeatedly sodomized Ferris for three hours before the young man started to regain consciousness which was the perfect time to try out his new invention – two steel cooking spatulas that were hooked up to his 7000 watt transformer. This would allow him to shock and electrocute him at will and quickly move the current to where ever he wanted on Ferris's body without having to disconnect the wires.

Berdella's torture methods were becoming more and more brutal and sadistic. His spells of electrical shock would last up to four or five minutes at a time. He would electrocute Ferris's genitals or touch the electrified panels to his eye lids. With each shock treatment – Ferris would jolt upright and become ridged and stiff – trying to scream in terror and agony through the gag that was held in place by piano wire in his mouth. Berdella noted in his diary that even with the gag not completely tight in Ferris's mouth, he was unable to scream very loud as Ferris had damaged his vocal box in a car accident when he was young which made it difficult for him to yell or talk very loud. His voice was always low and raspy from the accident and it reduced the fear Berdella had that someone would hear Ferris screaming for help.

For the next several hours and In between being electrocuted – Berdella would turn the young man over and repeatedly rape him in the anus. This cycle continued through the night until sunrise, where Berdella took Ferris's temperature which was just under a 100 degrees – a slight fever. Concerned that Ferris was becoming ill, he injected him with an antibiotic to ensure that infection wouldn't rob him of his new prey.

Throughout the day, Berdella kept up his string of sexual assaults, injections and torture methods. Delirious, Ferris was conscious but unable to sit up or muster the energy to fight back against the assaults. It was just before midnight when Berdella noted in his diary that Ferris had labored breathing and was snoring heavily. Just after midnight, he jotted down in the notepad that Ferris was “86” which was a common term in the restaurant industry to describe when a product was no longer available or out of stock – or in this case – dead.

Berdella dragged the lifeless body of Ferris to the bathroom on the third floor of his house and put him in the bathtub. He cut his major arteries so that the body would bleed out before he would begin the process of dismembering it. As he did the first three times, he chopped up the corpse of Ferris into smaller pieces and wrapped them carefully in plastic bags, then put them in garbage bags which he put out for the garbage man to remove.

He was disappointed that Ferris was dead so soon, but he felt an immense sense of self-satisfaction knowing that the man he suspected of trying to sell him out to the police as a drug dealer had died a horrible painful death at the hands of the man he tried to betray.

Chapter Six

Depravity Unleashed - The Brutal Death of Todd Stoops

10th and McGee was a common hang out for the Chicken Hawks and was becoming a hunting ground for Berdella. Berdella didn't like the name Chicken Hawks – he thought the term was better used to describe young boys with no pubic hair than the teenage prostitutes that sold themselves on the street corners.

In search of a new victim, and with growing confidence, Berdella was cruising the area looking for a new young man to spend time with. It was becoming more and more difficult to get the young Hawks to get into the car with him as word had spread that he was responsible for Jerry Howell's disappearance and that he was someone to keep a distance from.

In 1984, Berdella had met a young prostitute named Todd Stoops, who he had let stay at his house for several months. Stoops was married, and both he and his young wife were drug addicts with very little money or possessions and Berdella had tried to help them get back on their feet. Berdella had always felt a strong attraction to the handsome Stoops, but the young man refused his sexual advances for fear his wife would find out and not react kindly.

Two years later, while cruising the area down on McGee, Berdella spotted Stoops on the traffic loop and pulled over. At first, the young addict and prostitute didn't recognize Berdella when he got into the car, but the two quickly began to talk about old times. It turned out Stoops had been in

prison in Oklahoma and had lost contact with his wife. Hungry and in need of another fix – Stoops was in rough shape and readily agreed to return to Berdella's house. The Kansas City Butcher couldn't believe his luck, his next victim was going to be a young man he had long desired and was extremely attracted towards.

The two men talked casually back at Berdella's home on Charlotte Street. Sitting at the kitchen table, Berdella made him a peanut butter sandwich, in which he had crushed up several tranquilizers and valium. Within an hour, Stoops was sleeping and Berdella gave him a heavy dose of drugs to make sure he remained unconscious.

Despite his drug addiction and transient nature, Todd Stoops was still a handsome man. With an attractive head of curly hair and a lean strong body, Berdella was anxiously looking forward to having his way with him. This time he vowed to himself that he would take more care to ensure that he wasn't robbed too soon of his new prized possession.

Throughout the night Berdella repeatedly sodomized the sleeping man until he could no longer maintain an erection. Feeling sexually satisfied, he began to formulate his plan to ensure that Stoops wouldn't die and if possible, would be his long time prisoner and sex slave. At shortly after 7am, Berdella pulled out his electric transformer and began to use the electrified spatulas on Stoops eyes with the intent of trying to blind him, making it far harder for him to escape. For the next 17 hours the electrocution, rapes and torture would continue as Stoops endured a terrifying string of brutality. As the torture went on, Berdella's erection returned and he repeatedly had sex with the semi-conscious man who could do little to resist. At one point despite being heavily drugged, Stoops cried out in pain after Berdella bent back his index finger and the bones snapped.

Later that night Berdella was rather pleased that he was able to as he noted in his journal “fist fuck“ Stoops. This went on for several minutes and shortly afterwards he noted in his journal that Stoops was now bleeding severely from his anus. Undeterred, Berdella began to whip the man furiously with an electrical cord. With each painful strike, the bleeding and battered Stoops would writhe in agony which only served to turn Berdella on even more. Stoops tried to scream and even though he was gagged with a cloth tied to his mouth with piano wire – he still was making too much noise for Berdella to be sure that a neighbor with an open window might be able to hear him.

Thinking back to the raspy voice of Walter Ferris, it occurred to Berdella that if he was to inject drain cleaner to the voice box of Stoops, he might be able to damage his throat enough to make yelling loudly impossible. Using a syringe, he injected liquid Drano to the side of Stoops voice box, being careful not to get the injection too close to where it could get into his throat and reach his stomach where it could end up poisoning him.

The next day, with Stoops regaining consciousness, Berdella gave him some soda and ice cream but the man was unable to keep it down. He had started to develop a fever which concerned Berdella and he administered a shot of antibiotics to fight the possibility of infection. As the day progressed, Stoops began to cry and beg for Berdella to let him go.

“You are never leaving Todd and these are the facts of life“ he calmly explained to him. Berdella told to him that if he did not do what he asked, or resisted, that he would continue to electrocute and whip him until he wished he were dead.

The next day, with Stoops regaining a little of his strength, he ate a small lunch and was able to keep it from throwing it back up. The young man had

little energy or will to fight back, and let Berdella do as he pleased or requested. For 13 days the sodomizing continued and Stoops became weaker and weaker. His body had lost much of its mass and he was extremely dehydrated.

Berdella had cut Stoops hair off as the curls had kept getting tangled in the restraints, and the man was barely recognizable from who he was just two weeks prior. The damage to his rectum from the sodomy was extensive and Berdella no longer put his penis in his anus, but instead would use the friction of rubbing against Stoops to bring himself to climax.

On July 1st, Berdella carried Stoops to the bathroom to give him a bath and try and clean him up. After the bath he became concerned that Stoops needed to somehow clear his lungs as his breathing had become labored. He then tied Stoops to a chair so he wouldn't fall over as he had become too weak to balance himself. Shortly before noon, still strapped to the chair, Todd Stoops died – no longer able to fight the infection of the ruptured wall in his rectum caused by Berdella's violent fist fucking.

Once again Berdella made precision cuts in order to drain the blood from Stoops's lifeless body. The garbage pickup wasn't for several days and he took his time cutting up the man. With each piece of his body he would wrap it in plastic and take it down stairs to the basement where he hoped the cooler temperatures would help slow the decaying process. On Monday morning, July 7th, the unsuspecting garbage men arrived at Berdella's home on Charlotte Street, picked up the garbage bags containing the body parts of Todd Stoops and took them to the same landfill where Jerry Howell, Robert Sheldon, Mark Wallace and Walter Ferris had also been dumped.

Chapter Seven

The Pain Laboratory and Victim Number

6 – Larry Pearson

It was 1987, and more than 11 months since Berdella had taken another man prisoner. Life during this time had been relatively normal and Berdella continued to see young prostitutes but hadn't found anyone he thought worth "keeping" as a prisoner.

In June of 1987, 11 months after the violent death of Todd Stoops, Berdella was on his way to Ohio to visit his family when he got a call from Larry Pearson, a young, often homeless man that he had known for several years. Pearson had been arrested for indecent exposure after flashing passing cars during a drug fueled bender and was being held in a Kansas City holding cell. His bail had been set at \$150 and he wanted to know if Berdella could lend him the money so he could get out of prison.

Berdella had always liked Pearson who was polite and soft spoken. Although he had let the young man stay at his home several times over the years, the two men had never engaged in a sexual relationship. Berdella agreed to pay the bond on one condition – that Pearson agreed to come with him to Ohio to meet his family. Faced with either spending the next foreseeable future in jail or taking a road trip with Berdella, he readily agreed, and the two men spent the next week together before returning home to Kansas City. For the next two weeks Pearson slept on the living room couch of Berdella's house showing little interest in getting a job or helping out around the house which angered him to no end.

It wasn't until after the two men went and saw the horror movie Creepshow II that Berdella began to contemplate taking Pearson prisoner. On the way home from the theatre, they drove by some young Chicken Hawks standing on the street corner and Pearson laughed about how him and his friends used to beat up young homosexuals for fun. As Pearson bragged about his exploits – Berdella felt the rage inside him begin to grow and he knew what he wanted to do.

Throughout the next day Berdella and Pearson drank heavily and Pearson passed out at around 6:30pm. Pearson was a larger man than the others had been and carrying him upstairs would be difficult, so Berdella decided to clean an area out in the basement where he would hold him prisoner. He injected him with several tranquilizers to ensure he wouldn't wake up and dragged him down the stairs where he bound him tightly with piano wire to ensure he would not escape. He then injected his throat with drain cleaner to damage the voice box as, he had learned with Todd Stoops, was an effective way to reduce their ability to cry out.

For the next five days, Pearson endured electrocution, injections, painful acupuncture with syringes and was continually raped. For the most part, Pearson remained semi-conscious and would offer little resistance to Berdella's sexual assaults.

Berdella had explained the rules to Pearson – that he was only to talk when spoken to and that he must not resist sex. If he didn't follow the rules, he would be severely punished. One morning Pearson started yelling for help and Berdella came down into the basement, turned on the power transformer and tortured the man with long bouts of electrical shock to his testicles.

As the days wore on, a daily routine was established. Each morning Berdella would come down into the basement and have sex with Pearson, followed by a large injection of tranquillizers before he would head to work, to keep him sedated while he was gone. Upon returning home before dinner, Berdella would begin assaulting Pearson with a variety of methods typically designed to prevent him from escaping. He would use an iron bar to hammer the fingers of his prisoner, or inject more drain cleaner into his throat – all part of his strategy to keep him as his long term captive.

After the first week, Berdella moved a mattress down to the basement as he was finding sex with the man was too uncomfortable on the cold cement floor. Pearson was becoming more and more cooperative and Berdella told him that he was going to be his “sex slave” and that if he didn’t fight back and did as he was told that he would be rewarded. It was then that he was told that from then on, Pearson was to call him “Master Bob”.

Pearson had been kept prisoner for nearly three weeks when Berdella decided to move him up to the bedroom on the second floor, where he had held the other men prisoners. Berdella put a dog collar around Pearson’s neck and led him up the stairs by a dog leash with no resistance.

Berdella made clear to the young man that if he behaved he would be allowed to watch television and remain in the bedroom but if he disobeyed him he would be returned to the damp cold basement. As the will to resist left Pearson’s mind, he became more and more submissive to Berdella, pretending to enjoy the anal sex he was receiving on a daily basis and telling Berdella how good it felt. This pleased Berdella and the two started in the habit of having breakfast together each morning. As Pearson accepted his role and Berdella became more confident and relaxed with his sex slave – Berdella began receiving oral sex from his captive on a regular basis.

It was now early August and Pearson had been captive for nearly two months. Berdella had almost completely stopped the torture methods and would only electrocute him if he broke the house rules. A bizarre relationship ensued with Berdella living his life normally during the day and returning home each night to sodomize his sex slave, which he kept tied up in the second floor bedroom of his home.

On August fifth, as was the daily ritual, Berdella was going through his mail while receiving oral sex from Pearson when suddenly a terrible pain shot through him and he realized Pearson had bit his penis as hard as he could. Enraged, Berdella picked up a large wooden stick and told Pearson that he was going to “feel what it was like“ and began beating the man on the back, head, face and ribs until Pearson lost consciousness. Strapping him back down, he drove himself to Menorah Memorial Hospital where he received stitches to stop the bleeding, and was told he would have to stay for several days until his wounds were safely healed. Knowing that Pearson was likely to regain consciousness soon, he told the Doctor that he needed to quickly take a taxi home and check on his dog which had just had puppies and then would return in less than a few hours.

When Berdella returned home, he found Pearson still breathing but unconscious with severe bruises and red marks all over his body from the beating he had received. With several stitches in his penis from the bite, Berdella knew it would be quite some time before he would be able to have anything but a painful erection, and Pearson’s value to him was no longer important. Casually, he picked up a plastic bag, walked over to where the man was tied down, put the bag over his head and suffocated him until he was sure he was dead. He left the dead man on the bed and walked downstairs to the waiting taxi out front of his house.

Larry Pearson had been dead for nearly three days by the time Berdella was released from the hospital. Before he had taken the taxi back to the hospital after suffocating the man, Berdella had turned up the air conditioning full blast in an effort to keep the house cool and slow down the decaying process. When Berdella arrived home, he had little time remaining before the smell of the dead man was going to start becoming an issue. Despite being in relatively rough shape after having his penis operated on, and a catheter still inserted up into his bladder, he dragged Pearson down to the basement where he started the dismemberment process. Weak and still in considerable pain, Berdella could only manage to work on one part of the body at a time before having to rest, and it took two days to fully cut up all the pieces and wrap them in plastic.

Because he was so weak he used the chainsaw more than he had in the past to cut through the bone. He noted in his diary how easy the flesh pulled away from the joints on a body that had been dead for several days instead of the tissue still being pliable and strong as would be the case in attempting to dismember a person who had only been dead a few hours. There was no need to drain Pearson of blood as most of it had begun to harden into a pasty gel.

When Berdella severed the head from Pearson's body he decided he wanted to keep it rather than dispose of it with the rest of the body parts. Still feeling weak and rather ill from his hospital ordeal, he wrapped the head in plastic and put it in the freezer for nearly a week before digging up Robert Sheldon's head and replacing it with the head of Larry Pearson.

Sheldon's head was fairly far along in the decaying process and with the fresh head of Pearson now buried in the yard – Berdella took the old one into the house and soaked it in a bucket of water. He removed the teeth with

pliers and put the upper teeth in a small envelope and the lower teeth in a separate envelope. He had buried the head originally with many of the vertebrae still attached to the neck of the skull and he had been careful to dig those up as well, which he now kept in a plastic bag. All of the fragments and bones were then put into his growing gallery – a closet in the house that contained all of the memories he kept of his victims.

Chapter Eight

The One that Got Away

It was March 29th, 1988, when Chris Bryson found himself wandering the streets of downtown Kansas City when Robert Berdella drove past him on 10th and McGee. Most of the other Chicken Hawks knew to keep their distance from the man who drove the Toyota Tercel hatchback and wore the wire rim glasses with a thick and long mustache. Bryson though had never seen the car or the man before and when the man asked him if he wanted to party, he got in and the two men drove around for a half hour drinking the beer in the cooler that was in the backseat. Berdella suggested the two of them head back to his house where he had a selection of drugs they could party with and Bryson agreed.

Once back at 4315 Charlotte Street, the two of them chatted for a while and drank another few beers. Berdella then suggested that they go upstairs and watch some TV. As they headed up the stairs, Bryson walking first – Berdella picked up a two foot iron pipe and smashed him on the back of the head knocking him to the ground. He fell face first onto the stairs where Berdella quickly injected him with a heavy dose of drugs which rendered him unconscious.

This had become old hat to Berdella who dragged the man to the bathroom and began undressing him all while taking his standard array of Polaroid photographs of his new prisoner in various positions. He then picked up Bryson and carried him to the bedroom where he tied him to the bedframe as he had done so many times before. It had been over nine months since his last “guest” and he was anxious to get back to business.

The first entry in Berdella's diary was "5:30-6. Tied on bar / Frt fu, finger" which stood for front friction fuck and then he used his finger in the anus of the man. Shortly before 8am Bryson started to regain consciousness and tried to scream, but was unable to with the gag tied tightly into his mouth and held in place with piano wire. Berdella looked down at him and took his pointing index finger and jabbed Bryson hard in the right eye repeatedly. With his hands tied behind his back and the gag in his mouth he could do nothing to stop the assault.

Berdella then took a cotton swab dripping with bleach and held open Bryson's eyes and dabbed his eyeballs, causing the man to shake violently from the burning in his pupils. By now Berdella was an expert in torture and through his experience he knew both what he liked and what inflicted the most pain. There was no hesitation or thought required – Berdella knew that he wanted to get the new prisoner into a position of total submission, and that meant the sooner Bryson realized he was never going to leave this place and accepted his fate, the sooner he would submit to his sexual demands.

Taking the same steel bar he had hit Bryson over the head with, Berdella began smashing at his hands that were still tied to the bedpost breaking several joints and causing incredible pain to the prisoner who was still trying to wrap his mind around where he was and what was happening.

Berdella then clipped a heavy set of electrical clips to the testicles of Bryson and turned the current on causing his body to go ridged and jump off the bed. The entire time, he took picture after picture of the torture and the reaction of his prisoner. His methods had become methodical and specific – and he furiously made notes in his scribbler as he inflicted each new step of pain on the man. Electrocution – beatings – needle injections –

bleach in his eyes – it was all part of the process that Berdella had perfected.

Once again, as he had in the past, he injected the man's throat with drain cleaner near his vocal cords all while telling him that if he kept trying to scream he would put it directly into his voice box and he would never be able to speak again.

He then turned Bryson over and began to have anal intercourse with him, violently thrusting deep into the restrained young man who could offer no resistance against him. Once he was finished, he began to explain the rules to his new guest. He told him he was only to talk when asked a question, and that for him to survive he would need to obey his every demand and not fight back at any time or he would be punished severely and taken to the basement – or given to other men who would be glad to have a captive Chicken Hawk all to themselves and were far worse than him.

Later that evening the two men began to talk and Berdella learned that Bryson was 21, married and had a son at home. Berdella warned him about trying to escape and said that if he ever tried to bite him that he would remove all his teeth with pliers and no pain killer or sedatives. If he tried to hit him he would break his arms and not set them properly so he would be unable to use them again – and that if he tried to escape in any way he would be fed to his vicious dogs that patrolled the yard and main floor of the house.

As the days melded from one to the next, he put a heavy leather dog collar around Bryson's neck and attached a dog leash to it that would allow him to control him when he would take Bryson to the bathroom.

Berdella would continually talk of the rules that Bryson had to obey. He showed him photographs of the other men he had captured and told them

that they all had died because they wouldn't follow the rules and that he wouldn't hesitate to kill him as well. If he behaved he would be rewarded with perks – but there was no negotiation regarding the sex which was to happen each morning before he went to work, and each night without questions and if he “bitched about it” he would be punished.

Soon a routine was in place where Berdella would have anal sex with Bryson before going to work and then he would tie him tightly to bed to insure he wouldn't be able to get himself free or escape. He would then place a washcloth gag in his mouth and tie it to his head with a length of piano wire that would cut into his cheeks and lips if he struggled and tried to get the cloth out. Finally, just before leaving for work, he would turn up the television so no neighbor could hear him trying to yell – and so he would not be able to tell where Berdella was in the house or if he was home or not.

One night, Berdella brought home several packs of cigarettes, a half dozen packages of Polaroid film and a few movies to watch. He forced Bryson to pose like a fashion model and took numerous pictures before forced once again to have sex with him repeatedly.

The next morning, after their morning ritual of sex – Bryson asked Berdella if it would be possible to not tie his hands over his head as it cut off the circulation to his arms and was extremely uncomfortable. Berdella agreed and for the next two consecutive days he tied him up with his hands tied to a rope around his legs. Bryson realized that if he worked at it he could get the ropes around his wrists free, but was terrified at the thought of Berdella discovering him trying to get free.

Four days had passed since he had been taken prisoner, and it was now Saturday. After the morning sex ritual, Bryson waited until he was sure

Berdella was gone and then started working the ropes off his wrists. Within 20 minutes he had his hands free and was able to then remove the gag from his mouth. As he tried to get the knots undone around his ankles, he realized the rope was too tight and it could take hours to get them off. Instead, using matches from the night stand, he carefully burned the ropes until they finally gave way.

Getting to his feet, he struggled to keep his balance. He didn't know where his clothes were and knew he might only have minutes to escape. Stumbling over to the window, he opened it enough to be able to climb through. It was on the second story and the bright sunlight burned at his swollen red eyes as he squinted to try and get a bearing of his surroundings. Positioning himself on the ledge, he jumped and landed heavily, breaking a bone in his foot.

He struggled to his feet and stumbled down the sidewalk to the front street where he walked disoriented down the road, bare naked except for the dog collar around his neck with the leash still attached to it.

A meter man walking up the sidewalk was the first to see the naked man - bruised, limping and battered with swollen red eyes. Bryson screamed for help and struggled to talk with the effects of the drain cleaner still in his voice box – but was able to tell the man he had been held captive by a “crazy son of a bitch at that house there” – he pointed to 4315 Charlotte Street.

The meter man helped Bryson to the step of house a few doors down owned by Felix Duran Jr and asked him to call the police immediately. Frightened of the naked man in the dog collar at his door, he refused to let him in the house but agreed to call the police. Within minutes the Kansas City police were on their way to a situation that would disturb even the most seasoned detective.

It was April 2nd, 1988 – and the Kansas City Butcher’s Reign of Terror was about to come to an end. The people of Kansas City and the world would gasp in horror as they learned about the unspeakable terror and atrocities committed by an unassuming shop keeper who had lived among them for all these years.

Chapter Nine

Pulling Back the Curtain on Evil

When Officer Larry Lewis arrived on scene he had no idea what to expect. The call had come in over the radio of an injured nude male sitting on the front porch of a home on Charlotte Street. When Lewis got out of his car, he spoke to the meter man who told him he had first seen the man jumping naked from the second story window of the home at 4315 and had helped him to the step of Duran Jr's house.

Lewis noted the wounds and cuts on the man's body and face. Bryson told the officer he had been held captive and raped repeatedly as well as drugged and electrocuted. He told Lewis of the photos that Berdella had shown him of other man who appeared to be dead.

Realizing that this wasn't simply a complaint involving a lover's quarrel – Officer Lewis called an ambulance and gave Bryson a blanket to cover up with. A second officer arrived on the scene – Lloyd Harvey, as well as two other officers in the area, John Metzger and Sergeant Cynthia Cherry. Within minutes the Kansas City Police Department's Crimes Against Persons Division was notified of something unusual on Charlotte Street and that Homicide Squad may also need to be called.

Cherry and Metzger knocked at Berdella's front door but there was no answer, and no one appeared to be home besides the barking dogs that could be heard inside. Bryson was already on his way to the hospital when Cherry and Harvey elected to wait out front of the home for the owner to return. Shortly before noon, a Toyota Tercel pulled up in front of the house.

A stout man with thick wire framed glasses and a mustache got out and walked across the street to the cruiser.

“What’s going on here?” the man asked innocently.

“Who are You?” Cherry asked.

“My name is Bob Berdella“

Officer Harvey stepped out of the car and walked around to the man who was now noticeably shaking.

“You’re being arrested for investigation of sexual assault Mr Berdella. You have the right to remain silent...” Harvey handcuffed Berdella’s hands behind his back and put him in the back of the police cruiser.

In the back seat of the car, Berdella quizzed Sergeant Cherry who was in the front seat and had already turned off the radio so that the man in the back couldn’t hear any updates or chatter among the growing police presence on Charlotte Street.

“Mr. Berdella, we are investigating an alleged sexual assault – would you be willing to consent to search of your home?”

“What for“ Berdella asked puzzled.

“To check the victims report“ Cherry answered.

“What’s his name?“ Berdella asked.

Cherry immediately noticed that he had asked what “his“ name was, but knew that he hadn’t been told the victim was a man. “I don’t feel the liberty to go into that right now“ she responded.

“Where is he?“ the man asked.

At this point, Officer Lewis stepped in and told Berdella pointedly “We have him and he’s talking“

Berdella sat silently for a few moments in the back of the squad car before speaking “If you won’t give me any information I will have to respectfully decline letting you into my home“

As the police car pulled away from the curb, and Berdella was on his way to Police Headquarters, he muttered to himself over and over “this isn’t right.“

Chapter Ten

The Investigation

Just after 2 pm, with a search warrant in hand, Officer Metzger knocked on the front door of Berdella's house and waited for an answer. He knocked a second time – this time saying loudly “Police Officers – we have a search warrant“

When no answer came – Metzger used his heavy boot to kick at the door handle and the door burst open. Inside, two large dogs barked angrily and were removed by animal control officers. The ground floor of the home was a mass of papers and boxes with huge piles of dog excrement covering most of the floor which made it difficult to walk without stepping in it. The kitchen was filthy with dirty dishes filling the sink and rotting turkey carcass was in a pot on the stove which smelled something terrible.

The officers moved up to the second floor where they found the bedroom that Bryson had jumped out of and had described in detail in his statement. A power transformer was sitting beside the bed, and the ropes that had tied him down were still attached to the bed frame. On the table next to the bed was a tray of syringes and numerous bottles of prescription drugs.

By now there were a half dozen police in the house and each officer began searching through the many rooms and closets in the musty dark cluttered home. It was Officer Metzger who first found a box full of Polaroid photos of which he recognized as being that of Bryson. Each photo showed different situations – but all involved Bryson looking like he was in a lot of pain and being tortured.

In one room, a stack of books caught the investigators attention. Titles such as “Satanic Interpretation and Lifestyle“ and “How to Create Poisons and the Antidotes to Them“ caused the officers to suspect they were possibly dealing with a Satanic cult.

In a hallway closet, Detective Randall Morris found a human skull beside two small bags of human teeth and another bag of human vertebrae. In a box found under the bed where Bryson had been held captive, police found a large box of photos all of naked men. Another box contained a series of notebooks with dates and times and numerous abbreviations in them. The photos were all held neatly together in organized fashion with elastic bands. In some photos, men who were not Bryson, had carrots or cucumbers protruding from their anus. Another photo showed a man suspended upside down from the ceiling in the basement who appeared to be lifeless and sickly grey color – as if he no blood in his body.

Because the original warrant to search the house was for the sexual assault of Bryson, the Police upon finding more and more bizarre evidence that began to suggest the potential of at least one murder, decided to halt the search until a new warrant could be obtained and would allow them to look with a greater deal of detail in Bob Berdella’s home without fear of key evidence being thrown out of court based on the wrong warrant being used.

By 7pm police had cordoned off the entire property and were now going through the home with a fine tooth comb. In one leather suitcase, police found hundreds of Polaroid photographs depicting men being tortured, some with bags over their heads. In one bag, a wallet was found with a drivers license belonging to a man named “Walter James Ferris“.

On the dining room table there were several brown envelopes with press clippings from the Kansas City Star on a missing man named Jerry Howell.

It was becoming clear that they were likely dealing with something far more sinister than a homosexual kidnapper.

The amount of clutter made the search tedious and difficult. There were huge piles of oddities belonging to the shop Berdella kept at the flea market and the investigators were careful to try and determine what was relevant to the crime scene and was just an odd collectable. In one box, several shrunken skulls, on a turn table an record entitled “Black Mass for Lucifer” Police began to suspect that the owner of the home was some sort of Devil worshipper.

It was 2am when investigators decided to break for the night and get some rest. There was still the pressing issue of officers needing an arrest warrant for Berdella or he would have to be set free Sunday morning, as he could only be held for 24 hours without being charged. Realizing it would be easiest to have Berdella held on the sexual assault charge, a picture album was prepared with 6 photos in it including Berdella who was being kept in a holding cell. At the hospital where Bryson was being tended to, he was easily able to identify Berdella as the man who had taken him prisoner, raped him repeatedly and tortured him for four days.

With a positive identification in hand, a warrant was issued for the arrest and subsequent charging of Robert Berdella of 4315 Charlotte Street of Kanas City for 9 felony counts ranging from sodomy, first degree assault and felonious restraint.

By this point Police realized they had a serious crime scene on their hands and with the various skulls and pictures they had found on the property, the Investigators began to worry they had found another John Wayne Gacy – a Chicago serial killer who had killed 32 young homosexual men and buried them in his basement.

The more evidence police uncovered the more they were convinced that they had a serial killer on their hands and a decision was made to bring in a back hoe to dig up the back yard. The work would be slow and tedious as each scoop of dirt had to be sorted through by detectives. It only took a few minutes before they spotted something white and round and immediately realized it was a skull as it had clumps of flesh and hair still on it. They had found the head of Larry Pearson and there could be no doubt now – Robert Berdella was a cold blooded killer.

By now word had leaked out to the media as well as through the surrounding neighborhood that a major event was taking place on Charlotte Street. News vans and reporters lined the streets trying to get a glimpse of the digging progress in the backyard, while curious onlookers watched the steady stream of detectives and forensic experts that came and went from the home. Traffic out front clogged the streets and more uniformed police were called in to keep the cars moving.

Chapter Eleven

The Caged Killer

Back at the city jail on the 8th floor of the Police Headquarters, Berdella sat silently in his cell. His lawyer had tried to seek bail but had been flatly refused by the ruling judge. There was nothing left to do but wait until his arraignment on Monday morning. Berdella had called his mother back in Ohio who was stunned that her son had been arrested, and both her and her husband travelled to Kansas City to offer their support to him. By now, the sheer scope of what he had done started to sink in and with him being locked in his cell and dozens of police detectives scouring his home for evidence, he began to realize that the chances of him ever being a free man again were becoming nonexistent. He couldn't sleep and would sit silently and tremble at what he knew the police were uncovering in his house of terror. He had trouble himself dealing with what he had done and couldn't believe it had all come down to this.

Six floors below where Berdella was being held – investigators were still sifting through the massive amounts of evidence and trying to make sense of the notebooks and abbreviations they contained. Although they hadn't been able to identify the skull they found in the back yard – they were able to cross reference that Berdella was known to the police and had been questioned twice for the disappearance of both Jerry Howell and James Ferris. At the time there hadn't been enough evidence to continue investigating Berdella and the two missing person cases had gone cold – but now with Walter Ferris's wallet and license in Berdella's house along with

numerous pictures of him being tortured, it was clear that they had solved at least one of the missing person cases.

The media frenzy had increased tenfold outside of police headquarters and in front of Berdella's home. At this point very little was known and what was being reported was mostly speculation. The detectives were leery of releasing any more information than necessary but the demand by the public to know what was going on was reaching a fevered pitch.

Meanwhile, as investigators continued their search of the property, Berdella's basement was tested with Luminol which would show any evidence of blood on surfaces. As they expected, the room lit up like a carnival fun house – there was blood traces on the floor, the walls and even the ceiling. Inside several large garbage cans the chemical glowed brightly and it was clear that at least one murder and dismemberment had taken place in the basement. On a work bench a gas powered chain saw tested positive for human blood and when investigators took it apart, the inner gears were chocked with human hair. A circular power saw also tested positive for human blood and it too had human hair and bone fragments inside the blade guard.

As Police began to piece together the crime scene and make sense of the photographs and diaries, a picture of a depraved, twisted killer began to emerge. From what they could tell from the evidence there were at least 6 men who had been held captive, but they had only the physical evidence from the skull they had found in the back yard. Based on the rate of decay cross referenced with the dates in the diaries, they suspected it was the head of his last victim before Bryson had escaped. Inside the notepads investigators were sickened to see the span of the imprisonment – nearly 8 weeks before he had died at the hand of Berdella.

For neighbors who knew Berdella, they were still in shock to learn that the quiet, unassuming man they knew as “Bob“ was now the center of one of the largest murder investigations in Kansas City history. Many felt betrayed, others refused to believe at first that he could have done what the media was now saying he had. Berdella had made little effort to hide his homosexuality and it wasn’t uncommon to see young men coming and going from his home – but there was certainly nothing to suggest he was capable of such atrocities.

Chapter Twelve

Berdella on Trial

With a small warehouse of evidence, investigators turned the case over to the State prosecution who were now preparing to go to trial against Berdella for the murder of six men. The trial was complicated by the lack of actual bodies and the ability to prove murder in court. What they did have though was a positive identification of Pearson's skull obtained from dental records as well as 60 Polaroid photos of Pearson in Berdella's house in various stages of torture.

They also had extensive hand written notes from Berdella that laid out each of the murders in graphic detail. They had been able to confirm that the hand writing in the notebooks was that of Berdella based on forensic comparison of several complaints he had filed over the years with both police and bylaw officers over petty matters.

Investigators were able to match the cut marks on the vertebrae they found with the blade marks on the circular saw they found, proving that he had used the saw to cut up Pearson's body. Tests on the tissue still present on Pearson's skull tested positive for acepromazine and chlorpromazine, both of which were found in Berdella's house. Investigators could also prove that there was no question that Berdella knew Pearson based on the fact that he had paid his bond and bailed him out of jail shortly before Pearson went missing.

Although they knew they were dealing with multiple homicides – at least 6 – possibly 7 – it was decided that the prosecution would proceed to trial with a first degree murder charge against Robert “Bob“ Berdella for the

death of Larry Pearson. If found guilty, the crime would potentially carry a death sentence, something the public, investigators and the prosecution were now all wanting. Despite the volumes of evidence, authorities were still apprehensive over the amount of circumstantial evidence. They elected to not file an “Intent to seek the death penalty“, reasoning that if Berdella was to be found guilty, that they would file at that time.

It was August 3rd when Berdella appeared before Circuit Court Judge Alvin Randall for the charge of first degree murder in the death of Larry Pearson. Dressed in a dark green jump suit – standard issue clothing for a prisoner being held in the city jail, Berdella showed little emotion on his face and sat quietly as the proceeding progressed. Tension was high in the courtroom as the Prosecutor stood up to begin the preliminary proceeding. The charge was read out loud and the packed court room remained silent waiting for Berdella’s response.

Berdella’s lawyer stood up to respond to the charge...

“Thank you Judge – at this time, it’s the defendant’s intention to enter a plea of guilty, as charged, to murder in the first degree“.

The move was unexpected but shrewd by the defense. By pleading guilty before the State could file to seek the death penalty, Berdella was preventing them from being able to put him to death – or at least complicating the proceedings and adding a layer of legal debate that could take years if not decades to resolve.

There was also still the matter of 5 unidentified men that appeared through the evidence to suggest they had been murdered in Berdella’s house but as to the identities of the men, it was purely circumstantial speculation who they were and it would be difficult to prove in court.

For Berdella, self-preservation had become his primary focus and with already pleading guilty to the first degree murder of Larry Pearson, his most pressing issue was that of preventing the State from successfully seeking the death penalty for the murders of the other five men.

With both sides guided by their motives – it was proposed that if Berdella was to offer a full and complete confession which would include the names of the six men as well as any other men he may have killed, that the State would not seek the death penalty against him. Satisfied that he was safe from the gallows, Berdella sat before the investigators and the Prosecution and laid out in more than 700 pages containing every morbid detail of his crimes including deciphering the abbreviations in his note pads as well as identifying the men in the photos.

He provided detailed descriptions as to how he had met each victim and how he had captured them. In his confession he outlined the way he tortured them, why he did what he did and how each man died. Prosecutors pushed Berdella to learn if there were others that they did not know about – or if he had an accomplice, which he adamantly denied. When pushed to answer if he was involved in satanic rituals or any cults, Berdella said without hesitation no.

On December 19th, with a detailed confession now in the books, Robert Berdella, the Kansas City Butcher stood before Justice Meyers and listened to each charge and acknowledged responsibility. As had been agreed in the plea agreement, Berdella would receive 2 life sentences with no chance of parole and 4 conditional life sentences for 2nd degree murder.

It was a case that would forever change the people of Kansas City, and left a lasting imprint on all those who were part of it. In the end, 6 men had died a

terrible, brutal death, and the man who did it, now sat behind bars for the rest of his natural life.

Epilogue

Although the crimes committed by Robert Berdella were not on the scale of John Wayne Gacy who killed far more young men, the sheer brutality of his crimes cannot be understated. Rarely when investigators and prosecutors work on a case such as this can a full and detailed confession be obtained as in the case of this trial.

For those that were part of the legal proceedings, there was a sense that Berdella enjoyed his part in the confession, being able to relive each vivid moment in full detail. As he sensed the shock of his interrogators, he gained a sense of self-satisfaction – knowing that those that were part of the proceedings had but no choice to listen to every shocking word he spoke. Once again he had found a way to satisfy his deep inner desire to be in total control of others.

Both the prosecution and investigators felt cheated in the plea bargain as they had a front row seat to the atrocities Berdella had committed and wanted him put to death. The reality of the case was that there was a lot of circumstantial evidence and getting a death sentence would have been difficult. The last thing they wanted was for him to be able to find a loop hole in the investigation, and somehow not face up for his crimes. The plea bargain allowed them to ensure he would be in prison for the rest of his life, and it also allowed closure for the families of the men he killed.

Ironically, one of the things that appeared to bother Berdella the most was the way he felt he was viewed by the public. He had always considered himself a decent man and community minded, and the fact that the world now viewed him as an evil monster caused him significant concern even from the confines of his jail cell. It was with this in mind that he set up a

trust fund with what money he had remaining for the families of the men he had killed.

Berdella repeatedly blamed the police for his killing spree and suggested in interviews that if they had done their job properly that he either would have been caught sooner or at least would have been deterred from killing others.

The Kansas City Butcher (a name he despised) was moved to a maximum security prison where he was to spend the rest of his life under protective custody. From his jail cell he filed numerous lawsuits against police and the city as well as media outlets who he felt had hurt his reputation.

On October 8th, 1992, Berdella complained of chest pains and was taken to the hospital where he died of a heart attack at the age of 43 years old.

In a long rambling statement to an interviewer before his death, Berdella gave one last clue as to how his mind worked. *“The papers and media have portrayed me as non-human. Their motivation is not separate in how I treated my victims. I treated them as non-human, nothing more than a play toy or a play object. That is what the media has done to me, it has dehumanized me. So that it can believe, along with the public, that things like human sacrifices, Satanism, demonic practices, are more believable than me being the neighbor next door, who simply reached a point in his life where he could do monstrous acts. That isn’t the same thing as being a monster.”*

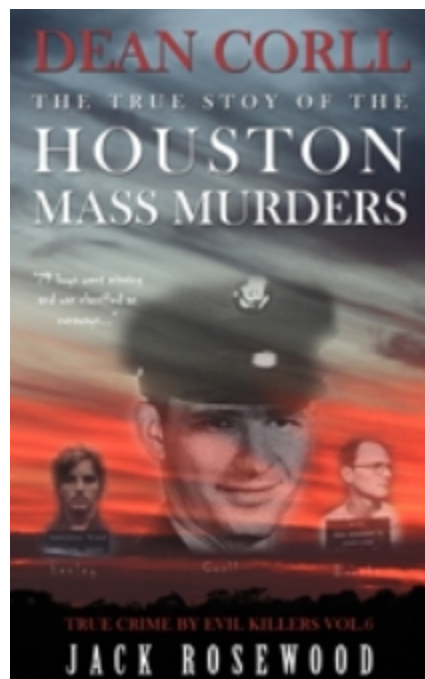
Dean Corll:
The True Story of The Houston Mass
Murders

by Jack Rosewood

Historical Serial Killers and Murderers

True Crime by Evil Killers

Volume 6

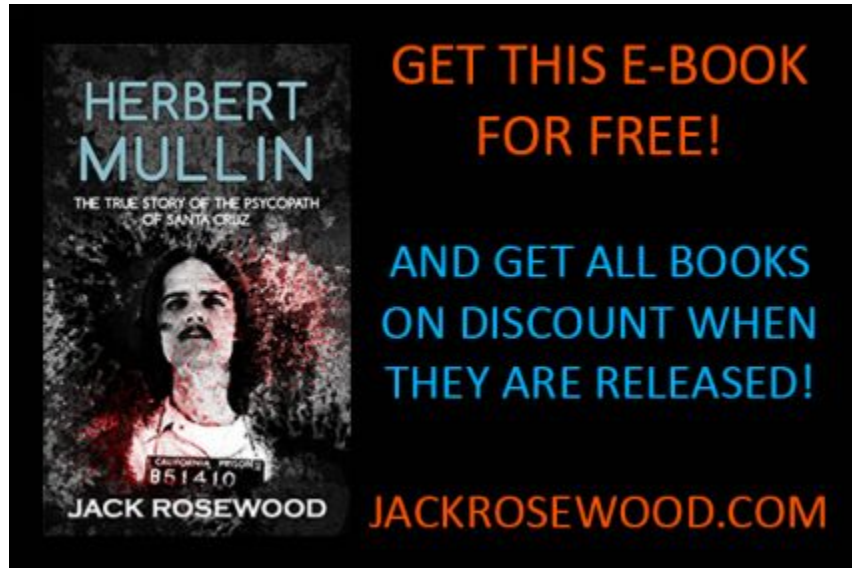


Copyright © 2015 by Wiq Media

ALL RIGHTS RESERVED

No part of this book may be reproduced, stored in a retrieval system, or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic, mechanical, photocopying, recording, scanning, or otherwise, without the prior written permission of the publisher.

GET THE BOOK ABOUT HERBERT MULLIN FOR FREE



Go to www.jackrosewood.com and get this E-Book for free!

[CLICK HERE](http://www.jackrosewood.com)

Table of Contents

[Introduction](#)

[Chapter 1: Corll's simple, sweet childhood](#)

[Military experience revealed homosexuality](#)

[Chapter 2: Corll and his accomplices](#)

[A second accomplice](#)

[Driving class could have netted several victims](#)

[Chapter 3: Yorktown Street apartment becomes Corll's first lair](#)

[Corll's first victim, Jeffrey Konen](#)

[Jimmy Glass and Danny Yates](#)

[Chapter 4: Mangum Road place serves as second death house](#)

[Brothers Donald and Jerry Waldrop](#)

[Randell Harvey](#)

[Unidentified remains](#)

[David Hilligiest and Malley Winkle](#)

[A futile search](#)

[Chapter 5: 6363 San Felipe Street](#)

[Ruben Watson Haney](#)

[Chapter 6: 925 Schuler Street](#)

[Willard Branch, Jr.](#)

[Frank Aguirre](#)

[Mark Scott](#)

Billy Baulch and Johnny Delome

Billy Ridinger

Chapter 7: Westcott Towers

Steven Sickman

Roy Eugene Bunton

Wally Jay Simoneaux and Richard Hembree

Richard Alan Kepner

Chapter 8: The Princessa Apartments, 1855 Wirt Road

Joseph Lyles

Chapter 9: 2020 Lamar Drive, Pasadena

William Ray Lawrence

Raymond Blackburn

Homer Garcia

John Manning Sellars

Michael Anthony Baulch

Charles Cobble and Marty Ray Jones

Jones died slowly

Corll's final victim

Chapter 10: Paint fumes, pot and pandemonium

Williams remembers

Opening up, 40 years later

Flashback to 1973

Chapter 11: Police on the scene

Detective collides with evil

Henley talks

[Iconic confession](#)

[Nightmares for the neighborhood](#)

[Lake San Rayburn's tranquility violated](#)

[High Island Beach](#)

[Pure failure on the part of police](#)

[Gay witch hunts begin](#)

[The million dollar question](#)

[Parents reel](#)

[The list](#)

[Identification nearly impossible](#)

[The wrong sons](#)

[Frenzy targets police](#)

[Chapter 12: The confessions](#)

[First night in prison](#)

[David Brooks confesses](#)

[Wayne Henley confesses, formally](#)

[The mothers of monsters](#)

[Corll's small funeral](#)

[Girlfriend recalls generous man](#)

[Corll was afraid of aging, gay friend said](#)

[Confronting evil](#)

[From the grave](#)

[Close calls](#)

[Chapter 13: Hearing and murder trials](#)

[Henley trial](#)

[Brooks on trial](#)

[A parents' crusade](#)

[Chapter 14: The aftermath](#)

[A budding artist](#)

[Mark Scott's mistaken identity](#)

[Misidentified bones](#)

[Movie in the making](#)

[Photo reveals 29th victim](#)

[One victim remains unidentified](#)

[Old bones](#)

[Chapter 15: Conclusion](#)

Introduction

If you lived in a certain working-class part of Houston in the early 1970s, you likely thought the Pied Piper had swept through the neighborhood known as the Heights, snatching up all the teenage boys.

It seemed as though boys were running away in droves to join the era of peace and love, when kids were hitchhiking across the country in search of bigger dreams, better opportunities and most of all, freedom. In the Heights, however, most of the parents knew their kids, and suspected something more sinister.

They of course were right. This was no hippie movement luring away the boys of Houston Heights.

Instead, a childhood nightmare come to life was living in their neighborhood, using two equally young accomplices to lure their friends and acquaintances to a sordid, twisted death involving rape, sadistic torture and murder, all with the promise of a few beers and maybe a joint.

Instead of partying, however, they ended up in the lair of the Candy Man, better known as murderer Dean Corll. The former candy shop owner was a guy who had a taste for young boys, sadistic sex and blood, as one accomplice put it.

Over the course of three years, at least 29 young men had disappeared behind the closed doors of Corll's nightmarish sex room. According to authorities, it is possible that 42 missing persons' cases could have been linked to Corll and his minions. But before the era of computer tracking, before Amber Alerts, police didn't realize how high the number of

runaways had grown, and only the parents living in a single neighborhood would have talked and made comparisons about their losses.

It wasn't until one of the accomplices killed Corll that the remains of those boys – or most of them, as it was later determined – would be found, buried in a variety of places including the floor of a metal boat shed, the woods surrounding a pristine lake and beneath the sand of a nearby beach.

The case quickly gained national attention, especially when the New York Times called the killings “the largest multiple murder case in United States history,” and reporters including Truman Capote – who had become notorious with the release of the first true crime novel “In Cold Blood” – flooded Houston. Most asked the obvious question. How could so many boys go missing from the same working-class neighborhood, without anyone figuring out there was a problem?

Even Pope Paul VI spoke of the crimes, and offered prayers to the families of the victims.

Devastated family members turned on the police, but Houston Mayor Louie Welch defended the chief of the Houston Police Department, and said, “The police can't be expected to know where a child is if his parents don't.”

But most of those parents did know where their boys had been. They'd been headed to the swimming pool, the bowling alley, their part-time jobs or to get a haircut, and were never seen again. And they could never have imagined the horrors their boys would go through before being by that point mercifully murdered at the hands of Dean Corll.

And like the acts committed by multiple murderers who would soon become known as serial killers, many of those who knew the participants of the Houston Mass Murders would wonder what had happened that would make such a nice guy commit such terrible crimes.

Then, much worse, they would wonder if Corll had killed before he had accomplices, and how many boys would be forever lost and classified as runaways, even though they were really buried somewhere, hidden beneath a layer of dirt, wrapped in a sheet of plastic.

Chapter 1: Corll's simple, sweet childhood

Born in Fort Wayne, Indiana on Christmas Eve, 1939, Dean Arnold Corll was the first child born to Mary Robinson and Arnold Edwin Corll.

Mary doted on her boy, and worked hard to protect her shy son from his strict father – a man who didn't "appreciate" children, he later said. But the tension in the home was thick, and the couple eventually divorced in 1946, four years after the birth of a second son, Stanley.

Dean was a sickly boy after suffering from a bout of rheumatic fever when he was seven. He had a heart murmur that kept him from participating in gym class, and he was an easy target for his other classmates.

His weakness made him a bit of an outcast, and he was sensitive enough to the bullying that he became a loner.

Later, after years of alcohol and candy, his thin frame became a bit pudgy, and he resembled in some photos David Berkowitz, an equally well-known killer better known as the Son of Sam.

Mary still wanted the boys to be close to their father, even if the marriage had ended, so the family relocated to Memphis – where father Arnold had been drafted into the Air Force. Arnold and Mary decided to reconcile, and they eventually remarried, moving to Pasadena, Texas, just outside of Houston.

The second union was short-lived, however, and within three years, they were again divorced, and Mary married a traveling clock salesman named Jake West and added a daughter, Joyce, to the family.

To make a living, the family started a small family candy company called Pecan Prince, which they operated from their garage. The boys made and packaged pralines, divinity and pecan candies after school for their stepfather to take on his sales route.

And although he still was considered a bit of a loner, during his high school years, from 1954 to 1958, Corll got good grades while attending Vidor High School, played trombone in the high school band and even dated a bit, although nothing too seriously.

With the family candy company taking off, the family moved closer to Houston, where the majority of the Pecan Prince products were sold, and now, instead of working from the garage, they were able to open a candy shop to sell their sweet wares.

Shortly after opening the new shop, Corll's mother asked her son to move to Indiana to take care of his widowed grandmother on his father's side, which he did for two years before coming back to Houston to again help with the candy business. He lived in an apartment above the shop.

Corll quickly became known around town as the Candy Man for his habit of giving away candy to young boys in the neighborhood. He also often invited those boys over to the candy factory after work hours, which apparently caused little suspicion in the neighborhood, although inside the family, a few suspicions were raised.

Corll's stepfather didn't think the associations were appropriate, and he told his wife that he thought his stepson might be gay.

Mary, however, who was homophobic and talked openly in front of Dean about how disgusting she thought gay people were, said her son was "loyal, obedient, helpful, loving, and a good normal boy." He was certainly not

gay, he just wasn't interested in being too close to others, because, "he had seen so many broken marriages," she said.

He would soon see another.

Mary divorced the clock salesman – perhaps to silence any talk of Dean's homosexuality - and opened a new business, Corll Candy Company, with Dean as vice president of operations.

Shortly after, a teenage employee told Corll's mother that her son had made sexual advances toward him, giving Mary her second hint that her precious Dean might be gay.

Rather than asking him about it, however, she fired the boy and brushed the incident away like so many pecan shells.

Meanwhile, Corll continued handing out treats to the neighborhood children, and people called him the "pleasant, smiling candy man of the Heights."

Military experience revealed homosexuality

In 1964, Corll was drafted into the United States Army, and he attended basic training in Fort Polk, Louisiana.

He later ended up in Fort Hood, Texas, working as a radio repairman, but he applied for a hardship discharge, saying his mother needed him to work in the family business.

He received an honorable discharge less than a year after entering the military. But those few months offered time enough for Corll to be forever changed.

When he returned home, he told friends that he realized he was gay, and had his first encounters with men while serving in the military, long before don't ask, don't tell, but still at a time when homosexuality was forbidden within military ranks.

In 1778, Lieutenant Gotthold Frederick Enslin was the first soldier to be ousted from the army on charges of sodomy, but he would not be the last.

Throughout history, suspicious of homosexual acts was enough for a soldier to be discharged from the military, and in the 1940s, the military began doing psychiatric screening to weed out those who were gay, not as criminal, but for what they deemed medical reasons, and gays draftees were rejected for not being "normal." Those who admitted to being gay were either involuntarily discharged if they had already been inducted or barred from service.

The military didn't discharge Corll on charges that he was gay, and it's likely that only the men with whom Corll had sex with were aware of his newfound knowledge about his sexuality.

And in the increasingly open era of the 1970s, Corll's sexuality wasn't a problem, at least outside of Texas. What was, however, is how Corll would act on it, once back home in Houston after his stint in Fort Hood.

No one suspected that anything unseemly was going on with the guy, "a quiet, well-mannered, well-groomed, considerate person," according to a police officer who married Corll's cousin.

He even had a girlfriend, Betty, whose kids called him Daddy, and there wasn't a clue that Corll was the worst sexual predator in American history.

Secretly, though, Corll had the mind of a sexual deviant, and required cruelty, sadism and sexual torture to be sexually satisfied. The boys who were unlucky enough to land in his lair soon found that out.

Corll apparently not only loved to kill, he also liked to remember it. According to reports, he usually kept keepsakes from his victims, most often their keys. One witness later said that photographs were also taken of each of Corll's victims, although only one has so far surfaced.

Chapter 2: Corll and his accomplices

Corll's first victim, really, was his first accomplice, David Brooks, whose divorced parents had little time for the skinny kid with glasses.

Brooks had met Corll at the candy factory across the street from Helms Elementary School, where he came to play pool on a table Corll had installed so employees and local youth could hang out.

He made a perfect target.

Brooks was 12 years old and in sixth grade, and Corll was the first man to treat the boy decently.

"He told me Dean was the first adult make who didn't make fun of him," said his attorney, Jim Skelton, who's still practicing in Houston. "Dean didn't call him a sissy. David idolized him."

Over time, Corll became a substitute father of sorts for Brooks, giving him money when he was short on cash and allowing him to crash at his apartment when he needed a place to stay.

Unlike most fathers, however, Corll encouraged the two to begin a sexual relationship, and Corll began giving Brooks money and other gifts in exchange for allowing Corll to perform oral sex on him.

Around the same time, Corll's mother closed the candy store and moved to Colorado. Corll stayed where he was, and got a job as a relay tester at the Houston Lighting and Power Company, where he had access to acrylic paint.

Soon, however, giving blowjobs to the skinny boy with the glasses wasn't enough excitement for Corll, and when David arrived at his older friend

Dean's apartment in Houston one day in 1970, he stepped in on a disturbing little scene.

Corll had two naked teenage boys handcuffed and tied to a plywood board, and was in the process of brutally sexually assaulting them.

In exchange for his silence, Corll offered to buy Brooks a green Chevy Corvette.

"Dean jumped up and said, 'I'm just having some fun,' and he promised me a car if I kept quiet," Brooks later told police. "Later, he admitted he killed them, and he bought me a Corvette."

After accepting the offer of the car for his silence, Brooks was promised \$200 for any boy he could lure to Corll's place. He took that offer, too.

Corll's propensity was raping and torturing the boys.

For his own pleasure, Corll would use a pliers to pull out pubic hairs, one by one, insert glass rods into the penises of his victims before smashing them to bits while still inside or thrust large rubber dildos into their anuses before removing the dildos and raping them.

He would turn up the volume on his radio – one can imagine the 1971 Sammy Davis Jr. hit "The Candy Man" playing as a demented soundtrack – and go to work, sometimes castrating his victims while they were helpless on the board, occasionally using his teeth.

Brooks' girlfriend, Bridget Jones, who would later become his wife and the mother of his only child, had no idea the boy she was seeing was keeping such evil company.

A second accomplice

Elmer Wayne Henley was born May 9, 1956, the oldest of four sons, was born into a home with an alcoholic father who got physical with both his wife and kids when he drank, and a protective, devoutly religious mother who wanted her children to be educated, and perhaps get out of the declining Houston Heights neighborhood.

Despite this, Henley was doing okay until his parents divorced in 1970.

He felt compelled to help keep the family afloat, and began doing odd jobs to help his mother cover household expenses.

By age 15, he had dropped out of school.

Before he did, however, he met David Brooks, and the two became friends, hanging out together and skipping school.

Henley knew that Brooks also spent a lot of time with Corll, and soon enough, Henley joined the duo.

To reel Henley in, Corll told the teen that he and Brooks participated in organized theft, and the three burglarized a few homes, earning Henley a few extra bucks to take home to his mother.

During one particular theft, Corll asked Henley if he would be willing to kill if necessary, and Henley said “yes.”

Around the same time, Henley realized that many of the boys from his neighborhood – eight between the ages of 13 and 17 – had disappeared.

Two of them, David Hilligiest and Malley Winkle, had been headed to the swimming pool on May 29, 1971, when they disappeared, and Henley helped search for the boys.

Soon enough, he would learn exactly what had happened to his friends, and by that time, he was in too deep – too concerned over his own life and the lives of his younger brothers – to do anything but go along with the hunt.

A few months after he put posts of his friends up around town alongside David Hilligiest's mother, Dorothy, he was driving around with Corll and Brooks when they ran into Frank Aguirre as he was leaving his shift from Long John Silvers, with plans to head over to see his girlfriend, Rhonda Williams.

Henley persuaded Aguirre to make a detour to Corll's home to smoke some weed with the three of them, and Aguirre did, only to find himself being raped, tortured and ultimately strangled on Corll's torture board.

Henley later told police he tried to stop the event, and was subsequently told that his friends, David Hilligiest and Malley Winkle, had also died in Corll's bedroom, and were buried in his rented boat shed.

Henley was then offered a deal similar to Brooks, although neither would end up being paid the \$200 offered per boy, at least not after the first time.

The two would cruise the streets, and when they found a likely candidate – a young boy or two fitting Corll's profile - they would invite him to get in Corll's Ford Econoline van or a Plymouth GTX and head to the older man's house.

The victims would be encouraged to drink, smoke marijuana and sniff acrylic paint that Corll stole from his job.

If the boy passed out, when he came back to reality he would be spread-eagled and vulnerable on a sheet of plywood, hands in cuffs, feet restrained with nylon cord.

If not, they would play a game with the victim, and pretend to get out of a pair of handcuffs as if they were trick cuffs, then encourage the boy to try it, too.

“Of course, they never had a key,” Henley said.

Once their victims were subdued, they were strapped to the torture board and forced to submit to unimaginable torture. All had been sodomized, some had been subjected to Corll chewing and gnawing on their genitals, while others were castrated, their genitals placed in plastic bags buried alongside them.

And although Corll turned the music up during his sadistic torture sessions, he also muffled screams with cloth rags stuffed into his victims’ mouths, tape wound around their faces to hold it in place.

Plastic sheeting beneath the board kept the mess contained.

“Dean would screw all of them and sometimes suck them and make them suck him,” Henley said in his confession. “Then he would kill them.”

When they were dead – by torture, strangulation or gunshot – Corll and his accomplices would wrap the victims up in the plastic beneath the torture board and load them into a large wooden box – crafted of plywood with a hinged lid – which Corll kept in his van.

He always made sure to back his van up to the house, so neighbors wouldn’t see the bodies or the box.

Corll took plenty of steps to keep his secrets, including moving every two or three months, so neighbors wouldn’t grow suspicious of his activities.

Driving class could have netted several victims

In early July of 1973, Wayne Henley began attending classes at Coach's Driving School in Bellaire.

According to others, he kept to himself.

"About a week before Dean Corll would die at the hands of his second accomplice, the week before this story broke, I was sitting in Drivers' Ed class in Bellaire at Coach's Driving School," another driver's ed student remembered. "My friend and I sat behind Elmer Wayne Henley. We laughed about his motorcycle drive chain wrapped around his boot. Not a nice chrome chain, but an old greasy chain. Every day he wore a filthy Exxon work shirt with his name, "ELMER," on the front patch. He kept to himself most of the time. Sometimes he drove and sometimes a guy picked him up. Must have been Dean Corll."

It was there that Henley met Homer Luis Garcia, a 15-year-old boy that he invited to a party. Garcia called his mother and said he was spending the night with a friend. He never made it home.

On social media, Rick Daniels recalled going to driver's ed with Henley, said he was able to dodge a date with death when Henley invited him to a party, but he ended up unable to get a ride.

"I went to Coach's Driving School with Elmer Wayne Henley," he said. "While enjoying let's say a smoke during a break with Henley, [I] was invited to a party by him, accepted but couldn't get a ride, thank god. One of the other kids in driving class did go to party."

That boy was Homer Garcia.

Still, as more and more boys disappeared, no one suspected a thing about Henley's double life.

“Wayne was just one of the crowd. When he was on the playground or in the fellowship hall with the other kids he was no different from any other boy,” said the Rev. Matt Chambers, Henley’s minister at Fulbright Methodist Church, five doors down from their house.

Henley shared with Chambers the stress of serving as the breadwinner for his mother and brothers, either after Sunday services or during evening recreation programs hosted by the church.

“You take a boy, a sensitive boy, I would say, and he takes on such responsibility at an early age,” Chambers said, “this would cause an upheaval in a boy’s life.”

Meanwhile, Dean Corll was moving every few months to protect himself from detection, especially so by nosy neighbors, and the two who procured his boys were getting in deeper.

Soon enough, it would all implode in a night of drugs, desperation and murder. Dean Corll would be dead, and his two hunters would be left to pick up the grisly pieces.

Chapter 3: Yorktown Street apartment becomes Corll's first lair

When his mother sold the candy shop and relocated to Colorado, Dean Corll moved into a new apartment, and landed a job at Houston Power and Light.

He worked as a relay tester, and had access to acrylic paint, which apparently was popular for huffing on those days.

It all seemed very innocent, but Corll was building off his practice of buying teen boys with promises of money, cars and drugs, and was about to step over what most of us see as a clear-cut line.

Corll's first victim, Jeffrey Konen

On September 25, 1970, 18-year-old college freshmen Jeffrey Konen was hitchhiking from the University of Texas to his parents' home in Houston along with another student.

"Jeff was in his freshman year at The University of Texas in 1970 when he decided to hitchhike back to Houston one weekend. He never made it home," said one of his friends from high school. "His family reported his disappearance, but I was told the police told them he had 'probably taken off to California' and would eventually show up."

In reality, he had encountered Dean Corll, who offered to give him a ride the rest of the way to his parents' house, but instead drove him straight to hell, where he would become Corll's second-oldest victim.

"It wasn't until they started digging up bodies that they discovered his remains," his friend said. "Apparently, Jeff made it all the way back to Houston before being picked up by Corll. Jeff was older than most of the victims, but I remember him as being small for his age, so perhaps he was mistaken for being younger than he was. Jeff, who was a year younger than me, but in the same Spanish class at St. Thomas.

"He was a very bright guy and it was a real tragedy he was killed at such a young age," his friend added.

Konen was found buried on High Island Beach on August 10, 1973. He had died of asphyxiation from manual strangulation, and was naked, bound at the hands and feet and wrapped in plastic. He had been buried beneath a layer of lime under a large boulder that would serve as his headstone for several years.

Jimmy Glass and Danny Yates

A few months after Jeff Konen disappeared somewhere between his university and childhood home, best friends Jimmy Glass and Danny Yates were attending a youth rally and worship service at the Evangelistic Temple in Houston Heights.

The boys were 14, and had come to the service with Glass's father and the boy's older brother, Willie.

It was Dec. 13, 1970, almost two weeks before Christmas.

"During the middle of the service, I saw them walk up an aisle, as if they were going to the restroom," Willie said. "And that was it. They basically vanished into thin air."

Both boys were considered handsome and hip. Glass wore beaded leather necklaces and had a leather jacket with fringed sleeves.

Yates had "curly brown hair and blue eyes and peach fuzz on his face," remembered his girlfriend at the time, Bettye McCool Johnson. "He was my first love. We were in a laundry room at our apartment complex when he first kissed me – the kind of thing a girl never forgets."

Johnson, although married with a teenage son, keeps photos of Yates in her jewelry box, tucked away as a memento of a first love with a very sad ending.

Sadder still, despite the circumstances surrounding the boys' disappearance – they had been at a youth rally at a church, suggesting they were responsible boys, not the type to run away – police did little to help the families locate their sons.

Although missing persons' reports were filed, the paperwork found its way to the desks of two different cops, and neither connected the two cases.

Glass was immediately labeled a runaway because he had once stayed with friends for a while due to arguments with his father over the length of his hair – a common problem for boys of that era - and Yates was reportedly once seen at a home where runaways allegedly hung out, so no one went looking for him, either.

Investigators said that unless there was evidence of foul play – and they had essentially disappeared off the face of the earth - no official search could, or would, be conducted. The families, police essentially said, were on their own when it came to finding their boys.

Every weekend, the Glass and Yates families made a sad, desperate journey around town, showing flyers featuring their sons' photos. Willie ran an ad in the local newspaper to his brother Jimmy directly, telling him that he would buy him a motorcycle if only he would come home.

Yates's father even drove to Monterrey, Mexico – a 500-mile drive one way – after someone reported seeing his son there.

“Dad began to fall apart right in front of our eyes,” Danny's older sister, Cyndi, told Texas Monthly in an interview. “He was so worried that Danny had left because he had been too hard on him.”

Much later, Cyndi would have a flash of a memory of a story her brother had once told about talking to an older man, probably Corll, who had given them a ride to the movies, stopping to buy the underage boys some beers on the way.

When they encountered him again, they would not be drinking beers, but would instead end up buried in a boat shed Corll had rented a month earlier.

Meanwhile, Jimmy's mother, Ima Glass, struggled to maintain her sanity, which nonetheless slipped through her fingertips.

“Many, many times, she'd see a teenager hitchhiking on another side of the freeway and she'd shout, ‘That's Jimmy! We've got to turn around,’ and to keep the peace, my dad would turn around, every time,” says Willie Glass. “Then one day she got a gun and grabbed my younger sister Pamela and dragged her to a back bedroom. When the SWAT team arrived, she fired a shot into the floor and yelled, ‘They're not going to steal Pamela from me like they did my Jimmy!’ We got the pistol away from her and took her to the Harris County psychiatric unit. She was never the same, and neither were the rest of us. Dean Corll didn't just kill twenty-seven boys. He killed twenty-seven families.”

Chapter 4: Mangum Road place serves as second death house

The killing of the hitchhiker who was picked up so close to his home might have made Corll nervous, because he soon after moved to an apartment on Mangum Road.

Here, he would take the lives of at least five people, two of them brothers, and destroy the futures of several families in the process.

For mass murderers, however, especially those of Dean Corll's caliber, his own sexual satisfaction far outweighed any pain he may have caused anyone else.

Brothers Donald and Jerry Waldrop

Six weeks after the double murder of Glass and Yates, on January 30, 1971, Donald Waldrop, 15, and his younger brother, Jerry, 13, disappeared on the way to the local bowling alley. Perhaps it was Del Mar Lanes, which is located just off Magnum Road.

On their way, they encountered Dean Corll and David Brooks, and instead of bowling a few games, found themselves enticed into Corll's white Econoline van, likely with the promise of marijuana.

Before the evening was over, they would be tied to Corll's torture board – one boy cuffed by one hand and ankle on one side of the board, the other his mirror image on the other - vulnerable to his every demented whim.

As part of the torture, the brothers were told that the one sibling who managed to beat the other to death – still handcuffed by one hand to the board – would be freed. The two spent the day struggling to beat their brother using their one free hand until both were almost dead.

But no one survived the terrible day. When Corll and Brooks returned, the Waldrop brothers were both strangled and buried in the boat shed.

Though the Waldrop boys lived only a half mile from the Evangelistic Temple where Danny Yates and Jimmy Glass were last seen, but police still failed to make a connection.

The brothers' dad, Everett, a construction worker who was divorced from their mother, filled out missing persons' reports at the police department, then spent the next eight months attempting to persuade the police to take his concerns seriously.

"I camped on that police department door for eight months," he later told the Houston Chronicle. "I was there about as much as the chief was. But all

they said was ‘Why are you here? You know your boys are runaways. They treated me like I was some sort of idiot.’”

Randell Harvey

A little over a month after the Waldrop boys were killed, on March 9, 1971, Corll and Brooks ran into 15-year-old Randell Harvey, who had ridden his bike to work and was headed home after finishing his shift at the Fina gas station.

His sister, Lenore McNiel, remembers crying after he left, as though she knew she would never see her brother again.

When he hadn't returned home two days later, his mother filed a missing person's report, and later called police to let them know Brooks – who had a history with Harvey - had threatened to kill the missing boy over a stolen stereo.

As with the other disappearances, however, police didn't follow the leads offered by friends and family, and declared Harvey a runaway, perhaps to get away from Brooks.

The deduction couldn't be further from the truth.

Harvey's bike, likely thrown in the back of Corll's van the night of his disappearance, was never found.

His body, with a gunshot wound to the head, turned up years later in the boat storage shed where Corll buried the majority of his victims.

Unidentified remains

But because a fire at the Harvey home had destroyed all the photographs of the young man, it would be 35 years before his remains were positively identified.

And then, it would be through samples of his hair.

According to newspaper reports, the instant Lenore McNiel saw the lock of curly brown hair in the medical examiner's office in 2008, she knew it belonged to her brother, Randy.

"That's his hair!" she exclaimed, as the sight triggered memories of watching her brother drag a comb through his tangled curls, complaining all the while.

Her brother was a true child of the 1970s, she said, and wore bell-bottom jeans, peace signs and fringed boots. He loved Jimi Hendrix, Janis Joplin and Iron Butterfly.

And he didn't deserve to die.

"He was my big brother, my idol, my friend, everything," said McNiel.

The sisters tried to encourage their mother to provide DNA tests to the medical examiner's office to determine if any of the unidentified remains belonged to their missing brother.

She refused, already convinced that her son would never come home, the sisters said.

"She said, 'I know he's dead, I don't want to know anything else,'" Lovrek said. "She asked, 'What if we go through this and it's not him, then what will we do?'"

Harvey's mother died in 1994, and 14 years later, the sisters did what they had always encouraged their mother to do. They gave samples of their DNA, and that information, along with forensic profiles and evidence surrounding Harvey's disappearance, gave them their answers.

Dr. Sharon Derrick of the Harris County Medical Examiner's Office used DNA samples of Harvey's sisters to identify his remains. He was released to his siblings for burial in November 2008, along with a striped swim suit, corduroy pants, a rope bracelet and cowboy boots.

"We are still going through our grieving stage. It's a little hard to describe how we're feeling right now," his older sister, Donna Lovrek, told the Associated Press.

"At least we know. We can put him to rest," added McNiel, who was 13 when her brother went missing. "I would just lay on my bed crying, praying to God that we could put my brother to rest before we die, and sure enough, we can."

Harvey had been a victim of Corll, and was buried in the boatshed, a .22-caliber bullet through his head.

"We were so glad we finally found him and so grateful to Dr. Derrick for working the case, that there was somebody there who cared enough to try to find us," said Lovrek, now 55. "It gave us peace, too, to finally find out that one of those bodies was his. I just hope and pray that the other two boys get identified and their families can rest too."

The sisters will have their brother cremated, and plan to scatter his ashes on the lake that is his mother's final resting place.

"He needs to be fishing with mama," said McNiel. "He's had a hard enough life."

David Hilligiest and Malley Winkle

David Hilligiest's mother, Dorothy, was another of the parents who knew her son was no runaway.

David Hilligiest was 13 and his friend, Gregory Malley Winkle, was 16, when they disappeared on May 29, 1971, while on the way to the neighborhood swimming pool.

Winkle had once worked at the Corll Candy Factory with his mother, and Hilligiest had spent plenty of time there, playing pool and hanging out.

That night, Winkle's mother, Selma, got a call from her son, saying he'd gone to Freeport and was swimming on the beach with friends, leading police to brush off the disappearance of the two boys as yet another case of runaways.

But Hilligiest's parents, Fred and Dorothy, knew their son was not a runaway when he didn't return home from the pool.

The family was planning a vacation and had been preparing to leave as soon as school let out in a few days. Hilligiest had already packed his clothes and had left behind the \$20 he had waiting on his dresser as spending money for the trip.

"He wouldn't have stayed away on his own. That wasn't David's way or his nature," Dorothy said. "I couldn't get over that they didn't get out and look for him. After all, he was a human being, a child."

But as was the case with so many of the other missing boys, the parents were on their own.

"You fear for the worst and hope for the best," she said.

Dorothy and Fred drove to Freeport to show David's photo to everyone they encountered there, to no avail, and when they returned home, they and the widowed Selma Winkle printed 500 posters offering a \$1,000 reward for information regarding the boys' whereabouts.

Wayne Henley had been friends with David Hilligiest when they were younger, and Dorothy remembered Henley being brought to her home by his grandmother to play with David and Malley.

"It showed that the family cared who he played with," she said. "They cared how he grew up. But something along the line went wrong."

But at the time, when Henley arrived to help distribute the posters, and tried to reassure his friend's mother, she thought nothing of it.

"Mrs. Hilligiest, David could be right under your nose and you wouldn't realize it," he said.

"He always seemed so interested and sincere," she said. "I could tell he had been drinking. He would ask if we had heard anything. And he would look off into the distance. Looking back, I can see he was carrying a burden he was trying to sedate."

She later remembered with horror that Henley then casually mentioned that maybe he would come by and take one of her other four sons, Gregory, then 12, fishing some time. Until her death, the thought would give her chills.

Dorothy's friend and neighbor, Selma Winkle – who also knew her son hadn't been a runaway, and pointed out that "You don't run away with nothing but a bathing suit and 80 cents" – said police were particularly dismissive of her.

"Lady, we just don't have time to chase every runaway," Winkle said an officer told her when she reported her son missing. He then advised her to

call back when she herself had some leads.

A futile search

David's sister Cynthia and her boyfriend – who would later become her husband - spent their date nights driving around Houston searching for David.

The Hilligiests also borrowed money from a neighborhood credit union to hire a private investigator, who turned up a new theory. The boys might have been abducted by a man named Chicken Joe, known for providing male prostitutes for gay clients.

The news led the Hilligiests – along with Cynthia and their son, Stanley – to drive to Houston's Montrose area to sit outside the gay bar the Silver Dollar Saloon, watching the door on hopes of spotting their son and brother.

“We saw men dressed in women's clothes going in and out,” recalled Stanley. “Mama just sat there, shaking her head. She had never seen anything like that before.”

Although they found nothing, Dorothy refused to give up the search for her son.

She and Fred drove to Brenham to the Children of God Church, where she's learned that runaway kids often wound up when they needed a safe haven.

They ran a series of ads in underground newspapers, and Dorothy wrote to the National Enquirer, the National Missing Youth Locator newspaper and psychic Jeane Dixon, among others, in hopes of getting help.

As it was, that dogged determination would lead Mrs. Hilligiest to come closer than police in solving the case of the missing boys.

She learned that Malley had a friend who drove a Plymouth GTX, and she said she's seen one in the neighborhood, license plate TMF 724.

If police had bothered to look into it, they would have learned that the GTX was registered to Dean Corll.

But by this time, Hilligiest had burned out the police with constant phone calls suggesting witnesses and offering tips, so her latest bit of information was dismissed, two years before Corll would be killed and so many teenage boys later.

Later, when Elmer Wayne Henley had killed Corll, Dorothy and Fred Hilligiest were interviewed outside their home, in the shadow of the Henley house just down the street, and were asked about the Henleys.

“I’ve known them for all these years,” Dorothy, who died in 2010, told the reporter. “I have a lot of compassion for them. Even with our grief ... I can feel compassion for them, because I feel like they are in a much tougher place than we are.”

Chapter 5: 6363 San Felipe Street

Corll didn't stay long at his San Felipe Street apartment, but he did not leave the place without leaving his murderous mark.

As far as we know, only one boy died there, but Corll showed no signs of slowing down his murderous rampage.

Ruben Watson Haney

17-year-old Ruben Watson Haney was headed to the movies on August 17, 1971, when he encountered the barbaric trio.

He'd been given movie money by his grandmother, and he couldn't think of a better way to spend Tuesday afternoon in the dog days of a Texas summer than in the air-conditioned comfort of a theater.

He told his mother he would see her when she got home from work, and headed off to the movies, where the sci-fi flick "The Omega Man" starring Charlton Heston topped the box office charts that week.

When she returned home at about 7:30 p.m. that night, however, her son wasn't home.

He later called and said he was spending the night with David Brooks.

And he would, but instead of partying, Watson would find himself tortured, gagged and strangled before being buried at the boat shed.

His overnight plans with Brooks had been a big clue, but again, police would fail to follow up, and Watson was classified a runaway.

Chapter 6: 925 Schuler Street

According to Henley, the first murders he participated in were in early 1972, when his family was in need of money.

They took place at Corll's apartment at 925 Schuler Street, where he had moved after his short-lived time in his San Felipe place.

But according to his partner in crime, it didn't take Henley long to develop his own taste for blood.

In his confession, David Brooks said Henley was "especially sadistic" in his participation in the murders committed at Schuler Street.

Corll, too, was pushing the boundaries at this particular apartment.

At one point while living at the Schuler Street address, Corll attacked Brooks when he arrived at the apartment, knocking him unconscious, then raped him repeatedly.

Brooks continued to procure young men for Corll, despite the brutal assault.

Willard Branch, Jr.

The son of a Houston police officer, Willard “Rusty” Branch Jr. went missing on February 9, 1972.

It was a Wednesday, and in the weeks that followed, Branch’s Houston police officer father would die of a heart attack searching for his son, effectively ending any further efforts to find him.

It would not be until 1985 that Branch’s remains were identified.

In his confession, Henley said that he lured “a boy” – believed to be Rusty Branch – to Corll’s new place on Schuler Street with offers of marijuana.

Once there, they played the handcuff “game,” and Henley easily freed himself using the key tucked in his back pocket.

Branch, however, would not be so lucky.

Henley said he left after the boy was tricked into the handcuffs, leaving Branch alone with a madman.

It would be a terrible night for the police officer’s son.

But at last thanks to his fatal heart attack, the senior Branch was spared the terrible knowledge that his son was castrated before he was shot and buried in the floor of Corll’s boat shed graveyard.

Frank Aguirre

Frank Aguirre called the home of his girlfriend, Rhonda Williams, and said he would be coming over after his shift at Long John Silver's.

"I was the last one to speak to Frank the night Wayne tricked him into going with him," said Rhonda's sister, Lynn Williams Pearson. "He had called our house to say he would be over in about 20 minutes ... but he never showed up."

A student at Waltrip High School, Aguirre usually brought chicken when he came to the house, and he was known for being a good guy.

"He was fun," recalled his younger sister, Deborah Aguirre. "He was fun-loving, had a lot of friends. And Henley was one of them."

In fact, a few months after Aguirre disappeared, Henley came by the house, Deborah remembered.

"Couple months after my brother disappeared, he actually did come back to our house," she said. "Asked my mother, 'Have you heard anything?'"

When he left, he took a handful of flyers that the family had printed, but after he'd left, he dumped them in the ditch.

"A girlfriend of mine told me she found them," Deborah said. "I couldn't bring myself to tell my Mom. I was afraid I'd make her cry even more than she was already crying. He knew where my brother was. He helped bury him."

The day before he disappeared, a classmate at Waltrip, George Leos, saw Aguirre, and later talked about how the boy had gone missing.

"I remember telling my mother, 'Wow, I had a friend I went to school with and he just disappeared and nobody knows what happened to him,'"

remembered Leos.

At least one person, however, did know.

Henley later told Sgt. David Mullican that Frank Aguirre became a victim because of the handcuff trick.

“Of course, he didn’t have a key,” Henley remembered.

Once cuffed, Henley and Corll were able to overpower Aguirre, attaching him to the board. Then, “Dean had his fun with him,” said Henley.

Afterwards, Aguirre was strangled.

Aguirre, according to Houston medical examiner Dr. Joseph A. Jachimczyk, who performed autopsies on five of the victims, died of air hunger.

When his body was found, little more than a skeleton, buried in the sand at High Island Beach, he had a gag in his mouth, his nose was covered with tape and there was a noose around his neck.

He would have been conscious for one or two minutes, “as long as he is capable of holding his breath,” the medical examiner said.

Later, Henley who left before his friend was killed - would say that he had no idea of Corll’s true intentions when he and Brooks saw their friend outside the fast-food restaurant as he was leaving, and invited Aguirre over for a few beers and some marijuana.

Aguirre – who his sister, Deborah, affectionately called Bubba - followed in his 1967 Dodge Rambler, a vehicle Deborah remembered well.

“The year before he disappeared, he taught me to drive,” she said on a website dedicated to victims and their families. “I remember we were going up 31st Street in Garden Oaks off Shepherd Drive. He asked me if I wanted to learn how to drive. Of course I said yes. He pulled over, we traded seats.

Bubba told me to adjust the mirrors so I could see so I put the signal on as instructed and applied pressure on the gas. I thought we were doing great until he said, ‘Are there any cars behind you?’ I said, ‘I don’t know’ and I let go of the wheel and turned around to look. He said, ‘Lesson over.’ Laughing, he told me to pull over and get out. He fussed at me for letting go of the wheel. When we got home and he told our mother, they laughed and laughed, at my expense.”

Deborah now comforts herself, listening to Aguirre’s favorite music from the time, which he would listen to in his room under the glow of neon from posters under black light, including the Beatles, the Doors and Cream.

She doesn’t think about how Henley brought his friend to Dean and David Brooks, abandoning him there and then going home to cry.

She doesn’t think about the “air hunger,” or the cloth stuffed into his mouth and the tape holding it in place. She doesn’t think about the noose found wrapped around his neck.

She might have thought about the wooden finger on the dashboard of Aguirre’s car that ended up becoming part of a box of memorabilia, salvaged after his car was dismantled.

“After Frank disappeared they had dismantled the car but for some reason Wayne kept the wooden finger,” said an anonymous friend of Henley’s, a girl who lived in the Heights. “When he was told about the finger, he flipped out and wanted it destroyed immediately. This piece was not destroyed, but he was told it was.”

(As rumor has it, his then-girlfriend Rhonda Williams – who will figure more into the story as it progresses – now has Frank’s wooden finger, a final memento of their young love.)

Mark Scott

On April 20, 1972, 17-year-old Mark Scott left his home for a weekend trip to Mexico and never came back.

His mother, Mary, father Walter and younger brother Jeff searched everywhere for him, drove up and down neighborhood streets and finally reported him missing at the Houston Police Department, but Mark had recently been arrested for carrying a prohibited knife, so police decided he, too, was a runaway, attempting to escape his problems.

A few days later, a postcard arrived in the mail, allegedly from their missing son, Mark.

“How are you doing?” he wrote. “I am in Austin for a couple of days. I found a good job. I am making \$3 an hour. I’ll be home when I get enough to pay my lawyer.” His parents knew the postcard was a sign of something ominous, since the junior in high school hadn’t taken his Honda C70 motorcycle with him to the city.

The family reported their son missing, but the postcard cemented it for police, who believed Mark was another one of Houston’s many runaways.

“I’m highly disgusted with the Houston police department,” Walter Scott said. “They could have helped, and they didn’t.”

Like so many of the parents, Mrs. Scott remembered both Henley and Brooks, who had both been at her home.

“Wayne came over for a junior high school party. He was quite talkative. He was the first to arrive and the last to leave,” she said. Brooks had stayed overnight once with Mark, an evening that including Brooks shooting Mark with a BB gun.

They waited for more news, for Mark to come home, but it never happened.

“At night, whenever I heard a noise, I’d get out of bed and walk to the front door,” Mary told Texas Monthly nearly 40 years after Mark’s disappearance. “I always prayed he would be there, so I could give him a hug.”

And on August 8, 1973, Mary knew her son was never coming home again.

Later, in his confession, Brooks said Mark attempted to fight back as they were tying his hands, and stabbed at Corll with a knife, tearing the man’s shirt in the process, drawing just a bit of blood.

But when Corll then pointed a gun at Mark, the boy, Brooks said, “just gave up.”

According to some rumors, Scott was a procurer before Henley took his place, so he knew what was coming and fought back.

“They left him cuffed to the board overnight,” said a woman who once lived in the Heights and visits Wayne Henley in prison. “Somehow Mark got the knife and went after Dean, even cutting him on the stomach and the when Wayne came in with the gun, he gave up. That’s when Dean tried to teach Wayne how to strangle people. The whole time, Mark was making the signal with his fingers of a gun to his head as if begging to be shot.”

Billy Baulch and Johnny Delome

Billy Gene Baulch Jr.'s parents were still recovering from the death of their son, Marvin, who was killed in a car accident in 1969, when they got the letter from Billy saying he'd gotten a job in Austin and would be home later in the summer.

He had gone off with his friend, Johnny Delome, 16, on May 21, 1972.

A few days later came the letter: "Dear Mom and Dad, I am sorry to do this, But Johnny and I found a better job working for a trucker loading and unloading from Houston to Washington and we'll be back in three to four weeks. After a week I will send money to help you and Mom out. Love, Billy."

The trouble was, Billy's father was a long-haul trucker, and he knew no such job existed. They also didn't like the look of the handwriting on the letter, and felt as though it was either forged or written under duress.

Johnny's family also received a similar letter, and while they believed it was in Johnny's handwriting, the spelling was far better than Delome's skills.

The police, as on all the other cases, were no help, so the Baulches tried to track down clues on their own.

The remembered that David Brooks had once given Billy marijuana, which they reported to police. They also recalled that Dean Corll's home was a regular handout for neighborhood kids. Billy had once worked for Corll selling candy door to door.

When Mrs. Baulch asked Billy what he and the other boys would do for hours at the home of Dean Corll, Billy said, "We play the stereo and watch TV, and Dean shows us things. Once he showed us his handcuffs. We were there with a couple of other boys, David Brooks and somebody else, and

they got to playing around with the handcuffs and put them on one of the boys, and then Dean couldn't find the key. He like never found the key to take them off."

Billy's father's response was quick.

"It's not normal for a man that old to be playing games with little boys," he said.

Still, when Billy went missing, one of the first people his parents called to keep an eye out for him was Dean Corll. A second call went out to Wayne Henley.

Both said they would do what they could, seemingly concerned.

But they had crueller plans up their sleeves, and had to have known that what would happen in a few weeks would leave a devastated family absolutely destroyed.

On this night at Corll's place, there may have been handcuff tricks, but it definitely wasn't a party.

Billy Baulch and Johnny Delome were both tied to Corll's bed, and after Corll was finished with them, he strangled Baulch.

Delome, meanwhile, was still alive, trapped on the bed next to the corpse of his friend.

Henley yelled, "Hey Johnny," and shot the boy when he turned his head, wounding him.

"I think the bullet wound up in his nose or sinuses, and this kid just looked up and said, 'Wayne, why did you shoot me?'"

In response, Henley pointed the gun at the boy's head again, and over Delome's desperate please – "Wayne, please don't." – he fired again, time

fatally.

Both boys were buried at High Island Beach.

Billy Ridinger

During the time Corll resided at Schuler Street, the trio lured a 19-year-old named Billy Ridinger to the house. Ridinger was tied to the plywood board, tortured and abused by Corll. Brooks later claimed he persuaded Corll to allow Ridinger to be released, and the youth was allowed to leave the residence.

Later, people who wonder why Ridinger never told anyone what had happened to him in Corll's house.

"It is very sad what happened to him but at the same time there is speculation that, in addition to David's pleas, there may have been more to his release than was reported," said one person on social media.

Another said, "I feel absolutely terrible for what happened to him, but Billy could have saved at least 14 lives by going to the police."

One woman, who spoke under a cloak of anonymity to said, "I know that Billy Ridinger was more involved than what he fesses."

Rhonda Williams later said, "Ridinger lives in Texas and does not want to talk or be bothered with the past. I can understand why. David convinced Dean to let him go. This upset Wayne to no end since Dean would not let Frank go previously."

To add fuel to the rumors, however, Williams added, "I can't speak of Ridinger's and Dean's relationship prior to that day for legal and personal reasons."

Chapter 7: Westcott Towers

After vacating the Schuler residence, Corll moved to an apartment at Westcott Towers, where he marked the summer of 1972 by killing two more victims, robbing two more families of a person they loved.

Steven Sickman

Steven Sickman was 17 when he disappeared after leaving a party on the night of July 19, 1972.

On the day he disappeared, he and his younger sister, Sandy, had had a fight. She was three years younger than her brother, and had taken a liking to one of his friends.

“We were a typical brother and sister,” said Sandy Henrichs in a newspaper interview. “We picked on each other and we aggravated each other.”

The family reported him missing, but police thought he was just another runaway.

His mother, Erma, was on her own, and she drove around town for weeks looking for her son, to no avail.

Even Sandy at first thought her brother had left home.

“He always talked about going to Baja, California,” she told the Springfield News-Leader, a Missouri newspaper in the town where their mother later relocated. “He was a typical teenager, trying to find out what he had to do for himself.”

Steven was protective of his younger sister, especially because she suffered burns as a baby that forced her to wear a wig in place of hair.

“He always held up for her,” said his mother. “They did everything together. He was always protecting her.”

And on the night he disappeared, after their fight, he had come to Sandy’s bedroom to apologize to her.

“He apologized to me that day. It was the first time he ever apologized,” said Sandy. He even promised to take her to AstroWorld, a Houston

amusement park that has since closed.

“We took care of each other,” said Sandy. “He was a good kid. I miss him terribly.”

Sickman had an artist’s heart, and he played the guitar and drums. He loved to draw, loved the outdoors, loved hanging out with his friends, loved surfing at the beach.

He earned spending money working part time at the local Dairy Queen, and did much of the cooking at home, while Sandy did the dishes.

The void he left was enormous.

And although Erma contacted police after she learned of the Houston mass murders, asking if any of the bodies found might belong to her son, they ignored her.

“Over time, they would just hang up on her,” Sandy said. “They didn’t do anything. They didn’t talk to anybody,” she said.

It wouldn’t be until 2009, when it was determined that remains that had been identified as Mark Scott’s were actually those of Steven Sickman. He had been cremated and was on the Scott family’s mantle.

The devastating find answered long-held questions for the Sickman family, and finally gave Myra answers about her son’s whereabouts.

“Learning about all this has been traumatic for me,” said Sandy. “I have been in a time warp. I’ve been pushed back to being a 14-year-old girl looking for my brother. I found him, but not the way I wanted to find him. I always thought I’d find a couple nieces and nephews and bring mama home some more grandbabies.”

But still, they recognize the pain the Scott family now suffers.

“It’s reopened a wound because they thought they had closure,” Sandy said. “They are like ‘OK, where is their son now?’ Now they have the wandering eye like we’ve had for 39 years. ‘Where is Steve, where is he?’ Now they are going, ‘Where is Mark, where is he?’”

(At the time Sickman’s body was found in the floor of the boat shed and identified as Mark Scott, Henley was adamant that Scott’s body was buried at High Island Beach, which he described in great detail. Scott’s body has never been found.)

Roy Eugene Bunton

On August 21, 1972, Roy Bunton – a boy with sparkling eyes and a bright, dimpled smile - left home for his job as an assistant at a Houston shoe store located in Northwest Mall.

The shopping center had only been open for three years, and was considered one of the city's largest retail shopping areas.

Traveling on foot, Bunton didn't make it to work and he didn't make it home.

In 2009, Bunton's sister called the forensic anthropologist painstakingly working to identify remains, and described her brother.

Bunton was tall and blonde with a big smile and unusually long legs.

And in 2010, when forensic testing determined that Michael Baulch's body was not buried in his family grave, it was also determined that the remains buried as Michael Baulch actually belonged to Roy Bunton.

The news gave answers to Bunton's sister, who had always wondered if her brother – whose disappearance fit the profile – had been one of Corll's victims.

"I am very pleased to be able to offer this family answers," Dr. Sharon Derrick said in 2010. "Now she won't be looking for him in crowds, she won't be wondering if he came home and no one was home and he left again."

Bunton's family planned a private burial.

Wally Jay Simoneaux and Richard Hembree

The last time his mother saw Wally Jay Simoneaux, he was headed over to spend the night with his friend, Richard Hembree.

The two were later seen in a white van by a friend who tried to talk to them, but was shooed away by another boy.

That night, Simoneaux, 14, called his mother, and shouted, “Mama” into the phone before the connection was broken.

She said, “Darling, where are you, darling?” and heard some shuffling and a click as the phone went dead on the other end.

She called Hembree’s house, and the other boy’s mother told her the two were late and unaccounted for. Mrs. Simoneaux called the police, who said they would keep a lookout for the boys.

But it was too late.

Richard Alan Kepner

Family members initially followed police protocol and thought Richard Alan Kepner had run away.

The 19-year-old carpenter's apprentice had a rebellious streak, despite his sensitive, sweet nature.

But on November 12, 1972, Kepner disappeared from the Heights on the way to call his fiancée from a pay phone.

He was found buried at High Island Beach, but it wouldn't be until September of 1983 that his remains would be identified.

"I had no idea where my son was for 11 years," said Kepner's mother, Jo Anne. "You can't believe they're alive, because a part of you says they're not, and you can't believe they are dead, because a part of you says they're alive. You just kind of live in a state of limbo."

His remains had been unidentified for 11 years at the Harris County Medical Examiner's Office.

She hadn't connected his disappearance to the Corll murders because her son was older than most of the other victims.

Chapter 8: The Princessa Apartments, 1855 Wirt Road

While Joseph Lyles' remains were not found until 1983, and they were the only ones to be located on a sandy beach in Jefferson County, about 75 miles from Houston, he lived on Antoine Drive, one street over from Dean Corll's new Wirt Road apartment.

Henley had temporarily moved to Mount Pleasant – four and a half hours away from Houston – but Corll's appetite would likely not go unsatisfied for long.

According to Brooks, Corll confessed to killing one victim without assistance – “He got one on his own,” Brooks told police. That young man that is now believed to be Joseph Lyles, Corll's 28th victim.

Joseph Lyles

17-year-old Joseph Lyles was a quiet young man with an even temper.

He was an artist, and before he disappeared in early February of 1973 – likely headed to the west Houston skating rink where he liked to hang out – he was painting a Christmas scene on a window.

It would never be finished.

Because of that unfinished art work, Lyles' family knew Lyles would not have just vanished into thin air, and when news of the Houston mass murders hit the airwaves, they also knew their son and brother was likely a victim.

He would not have run away, his sister Cindi Michalk said, without taking any of his possessions.

“There was so much chaos going on,” added another sister, Barbara Vaughn. “We were absolutely certain he had become a victim of the mass murderer. It was always a topic of conversation at our house. It didn't end. It went on and on and on.”

Lyle's body was found on an eroding beach in Jefferson County, a shoreline largely made up of wildlife preserves, although the skeleton was not intact, and the skull was missing teeth, making it impossible to use dental records to identify the victim.

The bones were held at a Harris County morgue along with those of other unidentified Corll victims, until DNA testing made identification a real possibility.

After testing the two sisters' DNA, the Harris County Medical Examiner's Office was able to match those samples to the DNA of the bones, finally

giving the women answers about the whereabouts of their brother on November 11, 2009.

“We pretty well had lost hope,” said Vaughn. “At least this puts an end to it. It’s still sad, imagining what happened.”

Lyles was laid to rest at Harris County Cemetery with a handful of relatives by his side.

“Without DNA testing, we would not have been able to make this identification,” said Dr. Jennifer Love, the medical examiner's director of forensic anthropology. “There had been a significant time lapse before the remains were found.”

Chapter 9: 2020 Lamar Drive, Pasadena

Just over a month after moving into his Wirt Road apartment, Corll moved to his father's former house at 2020 Lamar Drive.

Experts believe that if he had lived longer, giving the escalating nature of the crimes, his growing need for new boys, he probably would have designed a play room – something along the lines of David Parker Ray's Toy Box – given the stability of his new address.

But Corll laid low for a while, and didn't kill anyone the first few months he was in his new home. Reports say he was suffering from an illness during the early part of the year, and he might have been exhausted by yet another move.

When he did begin to kill again, he was particularly brutal. And Brooks and Henley knew exactly when he was ready.

"It was like a blood lust," Henley told police. "Dean would make these short, jerky movements, he'd start smoking a cigarette, which he usually never did, and he'd say he needed to do a new boy."

Perhaps dumb luck for the teenage boys from the neighborhood, in July 1973, David Brooks married his pregnant fiancée, Bridget Jones, leaving Henley to temporarily serve as Corll's sole procurer of victims.

And while three went missing within a week's span of time, had Brooks been on hand, the body count could have been much higher given Corll's escalating break with reality.

William Ray Lawrence

William Ray Lawrence, 15, called his father the night of June 4, 1973, and told him he was going fishing with some friends and would be home in a few days.

Lawrence used to hang around with Wayne Henley, and his dad, James, later told Jack Olsen in “The Man with the Candy,” the first book account of the slayings, that he’d caught his son smoking marijuana in his bedroom, leading to a physical altercation between the two.

“I knocked the shit out of my boy, grabbed Billy by the head – he had long hair, plenty to hold on to – and took him to the bathroom and made him flush that dope down the drain.”

Afterwards, Lawrence settled down a bit, bought a 10-speed bike for \$150, although he was making payments, and found himself a girlfriend who was five years older.

Then came the night his bike was stolen, leaving him with a bill but no ride, and some problems at school that his father tried to solve.

“I went to school to try and help him out once in a while, but it wasn’t much use,” the elder Lawrence said. “I could see he was slipping away.”

That’s why when he learned of the fishing trip, he wasn’t too surprised his son hadn’t come home, even when he got a postcard in the mail a week later saying Billy was in Austin looking for a job, and would be back later in the summer.

He, like the police, thought his son was a runaway, and he would eventually come home.

But James Lawrence would never see his son – a boy he called “a mighty fine son” despite their troubles - again.

By the time the postcard was postmarked on June 8, Lawrence had already been buried after three days of sadistic torture.

Corll apparently was taking his time and savoring the torture after his months-long lull.

It made James glad that their last words to each other were “I love you.”

About a month after Billy supposedly left home for Austin, Henley called the Lawrence home, looking for Billy.

A few days later, the Lawrence home was robbed, and only someone who knew the layout of the house could have known exactly what to steal.

It was a perverse violation, given the situation, and the elder Lawrence almost immediately suspected his son’s friends of the crime.

He never connected the robbery and those same friends to the boy’s disappearance, however.

When Corll finally tired of the slender boy with long, dark hair, he was strangled and buried near Lake Sam Rayburn.

He was found wrapped in plastic sheeting, a cord wrapped around his neck, his body covered with lime, on Aug. 9, 1973.

Raymond Blackburn

Less than two weeks later, a 20-year-old named Raymond Blackburn was abducted, strangled and buried at Lake Sam Rayburn.

Blackburn, a married man from Baton Rouge, Louisiana, was hitching a ride from the Heights back to Baton Rouge to see his newborn baby when he disappeared.

Homer Garcia

Homer Garcia met Wayne Henley at Coach's Driving School in Bellaire, separated from Houston by a six-mile swath of prairie.

Henley had started classes on July 6, 1973, and although other kids said he was a bit of a loner and kept to himself in class, he became friendly with Homer Luis Garcia that first day, and they continued talking on the second.

The evening of July 7, Garcia called his mother and said he was spending the night with friends.

Instead, he would end up shot and left to bleed to death in the bathtub of 2020 Lamar Drive after a night of sadistic torture.

“The Houston Police Department did a terrible job with their lack of investigation and dealing with terrified families who were begging for help to find our missing loved ones,” said Garcia's brother on an online chat, as he spoke about Garcia, “my brother whom I love and miss so deeply.”

Not only do families have to live with the pain that those tasked with keeping them safe failed to do so, they have to relive the experience, every time Henley – who apparently was forced to watch Garcia bleed to death in the tub, then bury him in the woods near Lake Sam Rayburn – or Brooks comes up for parole.

“This case will never be closed or over while the savages still breathe,” he said. “We relive the brutality ever few years for the parole board. It may have been over 40 years, but it still feels like yesterday. Fresh, raw, and very painful.”

John Manning Sellars

John Manning Sellars disappeared on July 12, 1973, two days before his 18th birthday.

The Orange youth was found a month later, shot to death and buried at High Island Beach.

Police questioned whether or not Sellars was a victim of Corll's. He had been shot in the chest three times with a shotgun, and he had been buried fully clothed.

In addition, his burned-out car was discovered a week after his death, a careless move that was unlike Corll and his minions.

But Sellars was bound in the same manner as other Corll victims, and Henley and Brooks showed police where his body was.

Authorities deduced that Sellars stumbled upon Brooks and Henley when they were burying a body, leading to his untimely demise.

Michael Anthony Baulch

Michael Anthony Baulch, called Tony by his friends and family, was a veteran runaway. He had left home three times, but he always came home.

“We were happy about Tony,” said his mother, Janey, in “The Man with Candy,” written by Jack Olson shortly after the murders and subsequent trial. “He’d wander every once in a while, but he’d never be gone long without calling us, so we knew where he was at.”

On July 19, 1973, Janey gave Mike some money for a haircut – the 16-year-old favored the longer style that was popular during that era – and a pack of cigarettes, and he headed out the door.

It would be the last time Janey and Billy Gene Sr. would see their son, the second to become victim to Dean Corll’s depravity.

Billy Gene Sr. dutifully called the police – his son hadn’t taken the new shoes his grandmother had purchased for him or any clothes – and reported his son missing.

The police response was typical – “Well, what do you want us to do?” – so the elder Baulch would drive around the neighborhood, searching for his sons, both Billy who had disappeared in May of the previous year, and Michael, who was missing now.

“I knew all the places kids normally would go, but I never saw nothing nor heard nothing about either one,” he said in “The Man with the Candy.”

“That was something different from the other times Tony ran away, too. Just fading like that. That wasn’t like Tony one bit.”

Tony’s body would be found in Corll’s boat shed, although his remains would be among those unidentified, and his already grieving parents would bury the wrong body in their family plot.

Charles Cobble and Marty Ray Jones

On July 25, 1973, 17-year-old Charles Cobble and 18-year-old Marty Ray Jones were spotted walking away from their apartment building in the company of another boy, according to one of the boys' neighbors.

Cobble was smart, but a nervous boy, riddled with anxiety in part because his mother has been sick much of his childhood with a condition similar to epilepsy.

"There was nothing he wasn't afraid of," his uncle told Jack Olsen. "He was afraid of the water, he was afraid of the dark, he was afraid of people and dogs."

And while most people didn't like the nervous Cobble very much, when he met Marty Ray Jones, the two became best friends, in part because Cobble was sympathetic to Jones' history, which included a distant relationship with his dad and a beating from a stepfather so severe Jones landed in the hospital.

Jones lived with the Cobble family for a time, and after he left, when Cobble was 16, on March 12, 1972, he married his 14-year-old girlfriend, Deborah, who would find herself a widow at age 16.

The two separated just a bit over a year later, and for the last two weeks of his life, Cobble was hanging out with Jones again, living in an apartment together in the same complex their mother's lived.

His disappearance two weeks after their split left Deborah feeling guilty, a big burden for someone so young.

"I blame myself for his death," she told the Houston Argus. "It's worse that we were separated. Maybe if I had been there it wouldn't have happened."

As she sat in court, she hoped that she and the other families would finally learn the answer to one of their biggest questions. Why.

“It is so hard to sit here in court with Wayne just a few rows ahead of me, knowing I can’t say anything to him,” she said. “I can’t even ask him why. All of us at the trial pray that Wayne will be put on the stand so he can explain, give us a reason, tell us why.

“I can’t help it, but I wish Wayne Henley the worst. Those boys and my husband didn’t get a chance, so why should he?” she asked. “It haunts me, is a part of me I will always have to live with. I only hope I can learn to understand why.”

Jones died slowly

Before he died, Marty Jones was forced to watch his best friend be tortured, sexually assaulted and shot to death while he waited his turn.

Instead of being shot, however, Henley attempted to strangle Jones, which he later told detectives, “It ain’t like on TV.”

Henley struggled to kill Jones, and eventually had to call Corll in to finish the job.

Henley, in a role that seemed more than subservient, buried both boys in the boat shed without help from either of the other killers.

Corll's final victim

On August 3, 1973, 13-year-old James Stanton Dreymala, a small-framed blond boy who was abducted by Brooks and Corll while riding his bike in Pasadena, became Corll's last victim.

The teenager, who planned to take his girlfriend to see "Live and Let Die," the latest James Bond flick, had been collecting bottles to pay for the date coming up that Sunday, and wanted to ride down to a convenience store to collect the deposit.

His mother asked him not to go, and said, "I don't want you out riding your bike after dark."

He leapt aboard the white banana seat of his red bicycle and said, "Aw, Mom, I'll be back in just a few minutes. I'm not going to be gone very long."

The Dreymalas – James and Elaine – never saw the son they called Stanton again.

The boy who never missed curfew, mowed lawns to earn extra cash, played Little League ball, played the cornet in the school band and was working on learning the guitar had vanished into thin air.

His sister, Michelle, jokingly remembered him as "a good big brother, sweet and caring and loving - and as mean as he could be to his little sister."

His parents remember him as a boy trapped in that moment in 1973, riding away on his bicycle into a horrifying encounter with death.

Dreymala was riding his bike in Pasadena, not far from where Corll lived in his dad's house, when the trio spotted him with his bottles.

They reeled him in with a story about some empty Coke bottles Corll had found in his van that the boy could have, just to get rid of them.

Dreymala took the bottles into the store, and then walked back to the van to thank Corll.

It was then that Corll “remembered” he had a treasure trove of bottles at his place. Why didn’t Dreymala load up his bike in the back of the van and come over to get them?

Once there, Dreymala was invited to hang out, and he called his dad and asked if he could stay over for a party at a place in Pasadena.

His father told him no, to be home in 20 minutes, and ended the phone call.

It would be the last conversation the two would have.

Soon after making the call, Dreymala was secured to Corll’s torture board, assaulted, tortured and strangled with a cord.

One report said that the Dreymala murder was so gruesome, Corll had to wear an apron to protect his clothing from the blood.

Chapter 10: Paint fumes, pot and pandemonium

August 7, 1973, began like the nights of all the other murders.

Henley invited a friend, 19-year-old Timothy Cordell Kerley, over to Corll's house, and Kerley agreed.

Once there, they drank and sniffed paint fumes until about midnight, before the two boys decided to leave to get something to eat.

In Kerley's Volkswagen, they drove back to Henley's house, where they ran into a Henley's friend, 15-year-old Rhonda Williams, who had been in an altercation with her drunk father, and had decided to leave the house until he sobered up.

Williams had been troubled since one night in March of 1972, when her fiancé, Frank Aguirre, called her up and said he was coming over to visit after his shift at Long John Silver's was finished, but never showed up.

She walked over to the fast food seafood place, then went to Aguirre's home to wait. His car was gone, and by sunrise the next day, he hadn't come home. Days passed, and there was no sign of him.

Her friends said Aguirre had probably gotten a new girlfriend, and she should forget him.

"Wayne would always tell me that I shouldn't keep waiting for Frank to come back, that he had a feeling he was gone, but I never thought that he might actually have any idea why Frank wouldn't come back," Williams told Texas Monthly.

Henley invited her to Corll's place, too, and the three piled into Kerley's car and went back to Pasadena.

They arrived at about 3 a.m. on August 8, and when they got there, they found a furious Corll, enraged that Henley had introduced a girl into the mix.

After Henley explained why Williams was there, Corll gave them beer and marijuana, until the teenage trio passed out.

Williams remembers

In the early morning hours just before dawn, Williams woke up to a foot in her ribs, a voice in her ear saying, “wake up, bitch.”

She opened her eyes to see both Henley and Kerley, handcuffed, duct tape over their mouths, their feet bound together.

She realized that she, too, was tied.

Corll carried Henley, his longtime accomplice, into the kitchen, apparently slipping off his duct tape, because Williams could hear the two talking.

She passed out again, only to wake up to see Henley with a knife, Corll with a gun, and Henley kneeling down to tell her, “Everything’s going to be all right. I am going to get you out of here.”

She relayed this to Kerley when the two men were out of the room, but he had already succumbed to his fear, and Williams heard him screaming a few minutes later after Corll dragged him into the bedroom.

Corll returned for Williams, and carried her to the wooden board where Kerley was already handcuffed, and she noticed the large plastic sheet beneath it.

Corll stripped, and ordered Henley to cut off Williams’ clothes, and put down the gun. When he came back into the room, Henley – whether he knew that Corll no longer needed him and would soon kill him or whether to finally save the lives of his friends – grabbed the gun and pointed it at Corll.

“Dean looked up and he was surprised. So he started getting up and he was like, ‘You’re not going to do anything to me.’ And then Wayne, he had the gun raised already, and he just started shooting,” Williams said.

“He said, ‘I can’t go on any longer. I can’t have you kill all my friends,’”
Williams said. “And he shot him. Whatever evil was in Wayne, there was
still some good in him, and finally the good won. Wayne saved my life, and
he saved Tim’s life too. Wayne killed the devil. He kept his promise that
night. He got me out of there.”

Opening up, 40 years later

In 2013, on the 40th anniversary of the death of Dean Corll and the end to the mystery of the missing Houston Heights, Williams told her story, only to have the internet erupt in venom as people weighed in on whether or not Williams' story was true.

Her sister, Lynn Williams Pearson, quickly accused her of lying about the night when Henley killed Corll – saving her life and the life of Tim Kerley while ending in several life sentences for Henley – lying about her troubled life before she found herself tied to the torture board, lying about the reason why she'd been out that night in the first place.

“Her story changed,” said Pearson on Facebook after ABC 13 Houston ran an interview with Williams, “The Girl on the Torture Board.”

“Ya know, I have had to relive all of this too all these years,” she said.

“Many of the boys were my friends or our neighbors. I have always kept quiet but tonight really hurt me. That's what she wanted.”

Post after post followed, some defending Williams, others filled with as much hate as her sister's multiple posts, including some from the younger sister of Williams' long-ago boyfriend, Frank Aguirre, who never made it to her house after his shift at Long John Silver's, and had also ended up in Corll's lair.

“It may have started way before Rhonda, but she was a part of it when her boyfriend disappeared and she kept yakking about it since then. I think we have caught up on her news week after week year after year,” said Deborah Aguirre. “I'm sure her family couldn't get a muzzle large enough for her pie hole.”

The posts – including one from Cynthia Yates, whose brother, Danny, was an early victim, aimed at the news team (“What are y'all trying to capitalize on? Y'all just followers and abusing and bullying family members who lost our boys. Yeah, y'all are great human beings,” she wrote.) - suggest a demand for privacy, perhaps born from the shame of not pushing the police harder when boy after boy went missing, and boy after boy was said to have run away, if that boy was reported missing at all.

“Rhonda doesn't want to just tell her story. She wants to capitalize on it. My friends disappeared and were killed all around me back then. It leaves a mark on the soul that can never be erased,” added Debra Metting.

When Williams went into much more detail for the Houston Press, posing outside her messy trailer home with her brown and white dog that looks like a boxer-pit bull mix, the response was eerily silent, however, even when she mentioned going to the storage units where 19 of the 27 bodies were uncovered, and encountered what she said was the spirit of one of lost boys of Houston Heights, asking her to tell his mom he was on his way home.

In that story, however, Melanie Mitchum Turner – a girl who had a crush on one of the victims, Johnny Delome, 16 – and was given enough hush puppies to feed an army one night outside Long John Silver's when she'd lost her money – came immediately to Williams's defense.

“She lost,” Turner said. “She lost her fiancé, lost her family, she lost her freedom, she lost her identity for a little while...is she supposed to lose her credibility as a human being for the rest of her life because she almost got murdered?”

One person who also doesn't think so is Henley, who credits Williams with giving him the strength to pull the trigger and take out Dean Corll.

“I would like to think that it was because she trusted me,” he said. “The belief that she trusted me is what gave me the...push I needed to do something.”

And he needed to do something quickly, because he knew that Corll was eying his younger brother, Ronnie.

And that alone, he said, should be enough to keep her from also being regarded with such distain, even if she had been doing drugs on the night she almost died and had the same troubled childhood as most of the other kids living in the Heights in the 1970s.

“Her boyfriend was killed,” Henley told the Houston Press. “Dean tried to kill her. Her friend, whom she trusted implicitly, we know turned out to be a monster. So who's the victim?”

Flashback to 1973

When police arrived at the scene of the Corll shooting, they took all three teens into custody before sorting everything out.

Williams spent weeks at the Harris County Juvenile Probation office, where she was completely unaware of the gruesome hunt for bodies in so many graves, the stories of sex abuse, torture and dead.

It allowed her to maintain a friendship with Henley that has lasted all these years. She still considered him her savior, the man responsible for not only her being there, but also for her being freed.

Kerley, however, did not feel as magnanimous.

He told police that after Henley killed Corll, he turned to the shaken Kerley and said, "If you weren't a friend of mine, I could have gotten fifteen hundred dollars for you."

It was haunting and horrible, and lingered in his mind long after he almost lost his life to the Candy Man.

"I have two choices," Kerley said about that night in August 1973. "Either accept it and move on or kill myself."

But still, he wasn't sure how he felt about Wayne Henley, even though he shot Corll, ensuring his escape.

"I don't know if I would shake his hand and say 'Thank you' or beat the shit out of him," said Kerley, who spent years struggling with depression, alcoholism and post-traumatic stress disorder before anyone really knew what PTSD was.

And while Williams visits Henley in prison, still thinks of him as her hero even though he later told her he had considered shooting her in the head that night, Kerley never thought about contacting him.

He stayed quiet, and waited more than three decades before sharing his story, which he did in honor of the teens who couldn't.

"There was a battle going on between good and evil in that room," said Kerley. "And good won. Maybe the victims' families can find some solace. We got him. You know, he's dead. He's dead and the other one is in the penitentiary forever."

Kerley died, either from heart disease from alcoholism or suicide, depending on which report you read, in 2009.

Chapter 11: Police on the scene

After the shooting, with Corll leaning dead against the wall, Henley helped Williams and Kerley off the board and called the police.

The call came in at about 8 a.m., and Chief Operator Velma Lines took the call.

She heard a young voice, a jumble of nerves, say, “I just shot a man.”

Lines transferred the call to dispatcher Ronnie Cornett, who was punching in as he answered the phone.

On the other end, a voice tinged with hysteria, saying, “I just shot a man and I want you ... I want you...”

Cornett asked who he was speaking to, and spelled out Henley’s last name, then asked for the address, repeating it back a few times as Henley struggled to find his composure.

Patrolman A. B. Jamison was the first to arrive, and when he pulled up to the green and white frame house, the first thing he noticed were the disheveled teens standing in the road, eyes red-rimmed from crying.

Henley immediately went to the porch steps for the .22 caliber pistol, which he handed to Jamison wordlessly.

Detective collides with evil

“I had just come to work and was on my first cup of coffee when the lieutenant pointed his finger at me and says, ‘Go, we have a shooting,’ and he hands me an address,” said Sgt. David Mullican, who was about to begin the biggest case of his career with the Pasadena Police Department. “When I walked in, and saw his naked body on the floor, shot six times, I knew this was no ordinary shooting.”

At 34, Mullican had years of experience under his belt, and had been with the Pasadena Police Department since 1961.

He had worked narcotics and had been a detective since 1973, but the Corll case would vault him into history books as he became more increasingly intertwined with the worst crime in American history.

Police found the torture board, several sets of handcuffs, rope, petroleum jelly and tape. In the garage – bags of lime and Corll’s Ford Econoline van.

Inside the van, they found the vehicle’s rear windows covered with thick blue curtains. It was outfitted with pegboard walls covered with rings and hooks, and throughout, there was a treasure trove of demented evidence including rope, a dirt-covered rug and a wooden crate.

Another crate, this one with several strands of human hair inside, was found in the backyard.

Henley talks

Back at the station, Henley started talking.

“He started telling me that Corll had a warehouse full of bodies,” said Mullican. “I was pretty skeptical at the time.”

But Henley named names – Charles Cobble, Marty Jones, David Hilligiest – and when Mullican checked it out, he learned that each boy had a file with the Houston missing persons division.

And at the boat shed, a metal storage unit at Southeast Boat Storage – No. 11, which Corll had rented for about two years – he changed his mind about the authenticity of the story.

The owner, Mayme E. Meynier, didn’t have a key – she said Corll kept all the copies – so police forced open the doors to the windowless storage unit, which was about 12 feet wide and 34 feet deep and contained the rusted body of a car.

“When we opened the door, Henley turned white as a sheet, and I looked at him, and I knew they boy was telling the truth,” Mullican said.

In addition to the car, inside the police found bicycles, shoes, jackets, sacks of lime and lumps in the dirt floor, some of which appeared freshly dug.

The police had brought with them four inmates from the local jail to do the digging, and after clearing away the surface debris, they got to work. Six inches down - after uncovering a shoe, some money and a watch - under a dusting of white lime, they found the first body, a naked teenage boy wrapped in plastic, a heavy cord around his neck.

It was, Henley told Mullican, 13-year-old James Dreymala, Corll’s final victim.

Meanwhile, news crews started showing up, and Mullican asked one of the reporters if Henley could use his car phone to call his mom.

Iconic confession

When he did, leaning hunched against Jack Cato's orange two-door Ford Torino, he said, "Mama, it's Wayne. I killed Dean. I killed Dean."

As she wept in the background in a clip that was shown nationwide, asking her son if she could come to the storage warehouse to be with him, they found the second body.

"It's my fault," Henley said. "I can't help but feel guilty, like I done killed those boys myself. I caused them to be dead. I led them straight to Dean."

As the night wore on, more bodies were found, each a young man wrapped in plastic, covered in a dusting of lime to keep down the smell. But time had helped speed decomposition, and eventually, they were only finding body parts or bones simmering in gelatinous liquid.

"It was a hot day, and the smell would just knock you over," said Houston Post photographer Jerry Click.

Mullican still remembered the smell, almost 40 years later, he said in an interview over lunch with Texas Monthly.

"I can go back to that first day at the storage unit when we started digging," he says, "and just like that, the smell comes back to me, the smell of all those rotting ..."

Reporter Skip Hollingsworth said Mullican then put down his fork and stopped eating altogether, his chicken-fried steak left unfinished as the awful memory consumed him.

And on the 10 p.m. news that night, the story broke, sending waves of fear through the Houston Heights neighborhood where so many boys had gone missing.

And as the night wore on, more bodies were discovered, dug up under the glare of spotlights put in place after the sun went down.

The tenth one was the missing nephew of one of the detectives, and the discovery changed the tone of the rest of the night, as even the most hardened of detectives began to reel under the weight of the grisly discoveries.

“Christ ... Jesus Christ,” said one detective as they continued the gruesome task, at one point donning gas masks to help stave off the vomiting.

“Every time a new body was found, I would have to run to the nearest phone and call my office,” remembered Associated Press reporter Jim Barlow.

By the time it was over, 17 bodies would be found in the floor of the boat shed, in various stages of decomposition.

“It would take a perverted, sadistic type of clown to pull something like this,” said Pasadena Police Lt. Brock Porter. “But I think there is more involved than just one man here.”

(Ironically, a few years later, John Wayne Gacy – who often dressed as a clown to entertain neighborhood children – would overtake the Corll case when he was convicted of killing 33 boys and young men, most of whom were found buried in the crawlspace under his home. Gacy also used the handcuff trick to subdue his victims, and said that he learned it from Elmer Wayne Henley.)

Those with skin still clearly carried the scars of what had happened to them in Corll’s house of horrors, some revealed their torture with mouths stretched in grimaces as they gasped for air, others were mere skeletons, a bone here, a bit of hair there.

“The whole floor is covered with bodies,” one detective said, standing outside the storage unit in disbelief.

“It’s worse,” said another, “a lot worse than a plane crash.”

As detectives continued to dig, David Brooks was brought into the police station by his father, and the story started coming together, piece by nightmarish piece.

Nightmares for the neighborhood

After the news broke, and people saw clips of Henley crying and saying, “Mama, I shot Dean,” the nightmares started – at least for those who weren’t already living a nightmare of mourning their missing sons. (For those families, the nightmare of not knowing had just become virtually unbearable.)

“I was a seventeen year old kid born and raised in Houston when this all broke loose,” one person remembered online. “It was the world’s top story. We were glued to our television sets as each newscast aired. Many of those old TVs were still black & white. Scared? I was more than scared. This unfolding news rocketed me to a place where a kid of summertime shouldn’t have to go. Even in the ‘big’ city of Houston we lived a simple, safe life, or so I had always thought until August 9th of 1973. A time before somebody named Dean Corll was killed and Elmer Wayne Henley was telling all he chose to tell.”

People watched the police dig, watched the body count rise, and looked on in horror.

By the time they’d found the majority of the bodies, they were standing in a mucky brine of decomposition, and the floor of the shed had become a slippery, noxious and treacherous.

Stanton Dreymala’s bicycle, red with a white banana seat, was in the corner. Investigators asked his father, James, to identify the bicycle, pieced together by his frugal son from spare parts, but the horror was sinking in now, and James Dreymala sent a neighbor to identify it instead.

Even as parents found their world in shambles, their hopes of a runaway son returning home dashed completely, for Henley, it was cathartic to talk, a

release of years of carrying around so much evil.

“I desired that the entire incident be over with and the only way to completely end it was to give up all the information,” he later said. “It took me way too long to figure out how to get out of it, but once I made that step, I wanted to get all the way out.”

His talking might have purged himself of his secrets.

But in telling, he made it very clear for the parents whose boys were wrapped in plastic, then buried in the dirt, that if Henley had spoken up sooner, had stopped taking his friends to Corll’s demented houses of horror, many of their sons would still be alive.

And despite his confession, he never explained how he could have twice offered up brothers from a single family to Corll, a deranged offering that suggests a complete disregard for other people’s pain. Learning where their sons were buried would be little consolation.

Lake San Rayburn's tranquility violated

After the digging had stopped at the boat shed – and 17 bodies had been unearthed – Henley and Brooks led them to a place in the woods near Lake San Rayburn, where Corll's father had rented a vacation cabin.

There, in the heavily wooded area surrounding the cabin, they found six more bodies.

In the cabin, they found plastic bags, rope, gloves and other items they believed belonged to Corll.

“These are just some boys he picked up and I helped him,” said Henley somewhat casually to reporters. “And he wrecked them, hit them, killed them, then brought them down here and buried them.”

One was covered with a board, although police wouldn't learn why until later in the day, when Brooks was giving his confession.

“On the first one at Lake Sam Rayburn, I helped bury it,” Brooks said.

“Then the next one we took to Sam Rayburn, when we got there Dean and Wayne found that the first one had come to the surface and either a hand or foot was above ground. When they buried this one the second time they put some type of sheet on top of him to keep him down.”

Among those found at Lake Sam Rayburn was Billy Lawrence, who had suffered the harshest and longest torture at the hands of Dean Corll and friends.

“Billy Lawrence was kept about three days because Dean Corll particularly liked him,” said Mullican. “Henley said that Lawrence was kept for about three days chained to the board.”

High Island Beach

While it is believed the body count is much higher at High Island Beach, four more bodies were found buried on the sandy beach along the Gulf of Mexico, about 80 miles from Houston Heights and just a few miles less from Corll's home in Pasadena.

Mullican testified that shortly after the first body was found at High Island, Henley started walking down the beach to point out the locations of the others.

"Dig here," he said. "I think there's one here. I can smell it."

By Aug. 14, four more bodies had been uncovered at the beach near Galveston, about an hour and a half from Houston, bringing the total to 27 – the most in U.S. history.

And again, as Henley pointed out bodies and chatted with reporters, he was relaxed and calm, which unsettled some officers on the scene.

"He's not fidgety telling them this story, and I'll wager he wasn't fidgety either when he was helping bury those boys," Chambers County Sheriff Louis Otter said.

It was a challenging day for most of those on the scene, but they struggled to retain some faith in humanity based on the depraved evil they'd seen, as skeletons, one with skin dangling from its feet, were unearthed from the ground.

"We still have more good people than we have people going around taking lives," said an officer on the scene, watching ambulances drive away carrying plastic bags of bones and bits of flesh. "That's my opinion. But I think possibly the law ought to be changed back to where you get an eye for an eye and a tooth for a tooth."

Most on the scene were surprised when officials stopped searching. But they believed they'd found the body of every boy mentioned by Henley and Brooks, and city officials allegedly were sending down orders to stop digging. Apparently, the public relations nightmare of being home to the worse mass murder in U.S. history was becoming too much to bear.

"I wouldn't have been surprised if there were a thousand bodies," said Barlow. "Who knows how long they were doing this?"

Barlow wasn't the only one to believe the body count would be much higher.

"I think it's quite possible, in fact it's probable, that there were others they didn't know about," added Sid Smith.

And as some Houston-area parents went to their graves wondering if their child was buried somewhere where they would never be found, others wrapped their arms just a bit more protectively around their kids.

"I haven't slept for three nights," said one parent. "We always worried about our little girls. Suddenly we find it was our boys we should have been cautioning all along."

Pure failure on the part of police

At the time of the boys' disappearances, about 1 million young people a year went missing.

Many were headed to California or other locations to join communes or become part of the hippie movement, which essentially began on the road.

And while some eventually came back home, stories of their adventures set to tell, others were never heard from again.

"About 99.9 percent of the runaways today turn out to be alive and well and happy wherever they want to be," said Captain R. L. Horton, head of Houston's Missing Persons Detail in the early 1970s.

"But those other few— they're the ones who turn up in shallow graves."

Although not all of the parents whose boys disappeared from Houston during the first years of the 1970s reported the disappearances to police, those who did were horrified that authorities weren't investigating the disappearances of their sons, especially those who had vanished with little more than a swimsuit and a handful of change.

"All parents of children who have been gone longer than twenty-four hours will tell you that their boys were victims of violence," said Horton. "The real reasons are varied— sometimes arguments inside the family. It is extremely difficult for some young people to adjust to today's society. What are they led to believe? Leading a decent, honorable lawful life can seem dull compared to the 'exciting' life of those violating the law."

Because police felt confident they weren't dealing with a crime – or where comfortable dismissing the concerns of parents living in a somewhat shabby part of town - they failed to investigate many of the tips that came

across their desks during the three years when Houston boys were disappearing.

“The area that most of these persons came from is not one of the highest crime incident areas at all. We could have no way of seeing in a period of time of three years or more anything to indicate a pattern,” said Houston Police Chief Herman Short. “We don't have responsibility by law nor the authority to make criminal cases out of runaways.

“We do everything we can in this particular type of situation. But there will never be enough staff to check out constantly and consistently each and every one of these cases,” he added. “That doesn't mean that each case doesn't get an investigation.”

Short then turned much of the blame back to the grieving parents.

“Unfortunately, many times parents will not even tell us the truth about these things. They know why the runaways have left but they won't tell us this information,” he said. “We do know that some of the parents are not exactly discharging their own responsibility as far as runaways are concerned and as far as raising and disciplining their children.”

It was a brutal blow to parents who spent sleepless nights waiting fruitlessly for the door to open and their son to return home again.

“I think the police did something,” said Dorothy Hilligiest, whose son David was among Corll's victims, in an interview with the Associated Press. “But they could have done more. I knew my boy wasn't a runaway. But they class the very young and adults as missing persons. Teenagers are runaways.”

Parents weren't alone in questioning the work police had failed to do, especially as more and more boys with no motive to run away went

missing.

“In my opinion, the officers in the juvenile division who were handed the missing persons reports just didn’t do a good enough job of investigating,” said Skip Hollandsworth, who extensively covered the case in early 2010.

“The way I read the reports, they weren’t all that interested in really finding out what happened to those boys. If they had, they would have realized that all these boys, whom they expected to return after their little bout of experimentation with drugs, sex, and rock and roll, were gone—absolutely gone. And one of the most stunning quotes in the entire story I wrote came from the retired homicide detective who said that his superiors wouldn’t let him and other detectives keep digging for more bodies. Why? Did the top brass really cut off the investigation after 27 bodies were discovered because of pressure from civic leaders? Could that really be the case? So far, I have to say, that’s the only answer I’ve been able to come up with.”

Gay witch hunts begin

While Houston Police Chief Herman Short never focused much energy on the missing boys, after it was determined that Corll's crimes were homosexual in nature, he did send his officers to raid the city's gay bars.

"They thought we were all child molesters and killers," said Ray Hill, a longtime Houston gay activist.

Residents then circulated a petition calling for a nightly curfew for juveniles in hopes of protecting their children from other deviates hiding in plain sight, although nearly all of Corll's victims were lured away during the day.

A California legislator learned that "Human Sexuality," an educational textbook written by University of Houston psychology professor James Leslie McCary, was found in Corll's belongings, he immediately wrote to California's then-governor Ronald Reagan, demanding the book be pulled from California schools.

His reason? The book was among the first to suggest that homosexuality was not abnormal behavior.

"Perhaps you should take a trip to Texas," the legislator wrote Reagan, "and ask the parents of the 27 young boys if the unusual sexual expressions he engaged in should be considered abnormal."

The million dollar question

How did Dean Corll entice at least two teens – of four, if the rumors are to be believed – do bring him their friends, led like sacrificial lambs to the slaughter?

“I think Dean Corll was more of a Svengali to both David Brooks and Wayne Henley,” said Sid Smith of the Pasadena Police Department. “He had a great deal of influence over them. I don’t think either one of them would engage in this kind of activity on their own.”

And as Henley said, he was worried about protecting his brothers, although if he had gone to the police, Corll would have most likely been out of the picture.

As a trio, however, they were dangerous, and based on confessions, interviews and statements, the two boys were beginning to like the control they had over their friends.

“Once Henley started killing these people, he enjoyed it,” said Mullican, who has never been able to forget the days at the boat house, the woods near Corll’s father’s vacation cabin and the beach. “He enjoyed having the power of life and death over another human being.”

Parents reel

As the news spread about the boys, the parents whose children had gone missing were calling the police station around the clock to determine if their children were among those who had wandered into the lair of a madman.

Watching the news, Frank Aguirre's mother knew instantly that her son was no longer missing.

"I remember coming home from my part time job that night," said his sister, Deborah, in an interview with Texas Crime News. "My mother said, 'I think we found your brother.' She was watching TV and I sank to my knees. Kneeling in front of her, I saw Elmer Henley and David Brooks. Men were coming and going like ants on a treat they had found. Everything looked so dark and old. Mom told me, 'Go to bed, tomorrow is a school day.' In the days after, we continued to watch the story unfold. I didn't understand why the police were not making these two creeps dig instead of someone else. They were walking and talking on the beach like they didn't have a care in the world. Henley was shirtless, smoking cigarettes, not even handcuffed. I'll never get that image out of my mind. I saw a bulldozer digging in the background. I couldn't believe what I was seeing. I saw men digging, more men squatting to see what was unearthed. My stomach was in knots. I couldn't eat and felt sick. I kept watching, I just couldn't look away. I caught a glimpse of a skull with longish dark hair. I knew my 'Bubba' was found. I went to my room and cried myself to sleep. Mom tried her best to be as 'normal' as she could. The crying was always behind doors, I could hear her in the hallway that led to my room."

At the funeral home, where the family had been just a few years earlier for Deborah's younger brother, who died in an accident, the funeral director said he would give the family a discount, since Aguirre's body – nothing

more than bones and his hair, parted on the side – did not require embalming.

“Mom never ever forgot what happened to my brother,” said Deborah, whose mother called her oldest son by his middle name, Anthony. “Out of the blue sometimes, she would just sigh and say something like ‘Poor Anthony, poor thing.’ I caught her crying a lot. Every time we would go to the cemetery to visit his grave, Mom would cry like he had just been buried yesterday.”

While a handful of parents had been informed that their children were among those dead at the hands of Dean Corll, others had no idea. They would learn the news when a list of victims was released to the media, and subsequently shared by newspapers and 10 p.m. news stations, with no warning at all.

Only the parents of five boys — Marty Ray Jones, Charles Cary Cobble, Billy Lawrence, David Hilligiest and Malley Winkle — would not be surprised when the list was published.

The list

1970

- James Eugene Glass, 14, son of Mr. and Mrs. William H. Glass of 1706 Wycliffe.

1971

- Donald Edward Waldrop, 15, son of Mr. and Mrs. Everett Waldrop of 9044 Tulane in the Heights.
- Jerry Lynn Waldrop, 13, Donald's brother who disappeared with him January 30, 1971.
- David Hilligiest, 13, son of Mr. and Mrs. Fred Hilligiest of 403 W. 27th Street in the Heights.
- George Malley Winkle, 16, son of Mrs. Selma Winkle of 407 W. 26th Street in the Heights.
- Ruben Haney Watson, 19, son of Mrs. Eugene Haney Watson of the 1100 block of Arlington in the Heights.

1972

- Frank Anthony Aguirre, 19, son of Mr. and Mrs. Joseph R. Aguirre of 932 West Cottage in the Heights.
- Johnny Delome, 16, son of Mr. and Mrs. Gerald Oncale of 1447 Tulane in the Heights.
- Billy Gene Baulch Jr., 17, son of Mr. and Mrs. B. G. Baulch (address withheld) of the Heights.
- Wally Jay Simoneaux, 14, son of Mr. and Mrs. Wallace J. Simoneaux of 1213 W. 24th in the Heights.
- Richard C. Hembree, 13, the adopted son of Mr. and Mrs. William Green of 1426 W. 21st in the Heights.

- Michael Anthony Baulch, 15, who disappeared in early November, 1972, from the Heights.
- Mark S. Scott, 18, son of Mr. and Mrs. W. T. Scott of 927 W. 25th Street in the Heights.

1973

- William Ray Lawrence, 15, son of Horace J. Lawrence of 310 W. 31st Street in the Heights.
- Homer L. Garcia, 15, son of Mr. and Mrs. Louis Garcia of 5474 Darnell. (
- Charles Gary Cobble, 17, son of Mr. and Mrs. V. T. Cobble of 304 W. 27th Street in the Heights.
- Marty Ray Jones, 18, (Cobble's friend), son of Kenneth R. Jones of 1010 Woodland in the Heights.
- James Stanton Dreymala, 13, son of Mr. and Mrs. James D. Dreymala of 541 1 Laurel Creek in South Houston.

Later, police added four more names to the list.

They were:

- Jeffrey Alan Konen, 18, son of Mr. and Mrs. Harry J. Konen of 3118 Underwood.
- Michael Danny Yates, 15, son of Mr. and Mrs. Glenn Yates of 10951 Hazlehurst.
- Raymond Stanley Blackburn, 20, son of the Reverend Robert B. Blackburn of Baton Rouge, Louisiana. He had been living in the Heights in a trailer park at 1504 West 34th Street.
- William Karmon Branch, Jr., son of Mr. and Mrs. W. K. Branch of 5202 Nina Lee.

It was no way to find out such news, and it would jolt the parents into a new normal, a grieving process that would never end.

When Skip Hollingsworth began investigating the story in 2010 for Texas Monthly, he visited some of the parents, and that was perhaps the most horrifying aspects of the story.

“What hit me the hardest was watching these parents still grieve,” he said.

“Their lives have never gotten back to any sort of normal. They are still stuck in 1973, at that very moment when they heard the news that their sons had been found in one of Corll’s private cemeteries.”

Identification nearly impossible

As the bodies began arriving in the medical examiner's office, it was difficult to identify them, given the various stages of decomposition.

The first two boys to be positively identified were Marty Ray Jones and Charles Cary Cobble, through dental charts and X-rays.

In most cases, however, there were very few dental records, no fingerprints, so little to go on for police.

"We had X-rays of the bodies and some were completely disjointed," Jachimczyk said. "We had many bones and we didn't know which went with each body. We are going to get to the end. Everything is being done that can possibly be done."

But parents who called into the station about their missing boys were asked to send in as much information as they could, including dental records and X-rays, to help police with the arduous identification process.

James Stanton Dreymala would end up being identified when forensics matched a fingerprint from his body to a print found on one of his school books.

"In an airplane crash, you have all the bodies contained in one small area, and there are passenger lists available. It is considerably easier to match up identifications. But here, we have many different murders, from various and widely separated locations as to burial. Each body must be considered from such viewpoints as the exact cause of death, the time of death and where killed," said Jachimczyk, who poured over his grim bits of evidence painstakingly in hopes of bringing closure to distraught, anxious parents.

The Baulches identified their sons by a belt buckle and by examining not only photographs of skulls, but also jawbones and teeth.

“I had to do it, and so did my wife,” said Baulch. “Just bones, that's all they were. Just bones. It's going to be pure hell to bury your sons bone by bone.”

Everett Waldrop identified his sons from scraps of clothing – a belt buckle and a shirt with one pocket torn off, a habit of one son that made the identification easier.

But that process – as well as the speed at which the medical examiner's office felt pressured to work in order to bring closure to grieving families, would lead to heartbreaking mistakes.

The wrong sons

The Waldrops had already buried the remains of their sons Jerry and Donald in Atlanta when they learned that Jachimczyk had inadvertently released the wrong bodies to them, and instead of their sons, they'd interred David Hilligiest and Malley Winkle.

"This is just another thing to show you what kind of people you've got down there," said Waldrop, who had spent so many days trying to encourage the Houston police to seriously search for his missing sons.

Even worse, it seemed likely that they were expected to pay the expenses of exhuming the boys, as officials in Harris County claimed no one had authority to release such funds.

It was another devastating blow to the Waldrop family.

And as officials in Harris County debated over whether or not they should pay to have the boys' bodies exhumed, and Mrs. Hilligiest and Mrs. Malley, who had waited for years for news of their boys, waited again, this time anxious to bury their sons in Houston's Woodlawn Cemetery.

Eventually, a funeral home came forward to pay the expenses (Jachimczyk, who had made the mistake, sought out a solution), and all three families finally had closure.

Frenzy targets police

As bits of news started coming in, the police department was overwhelmed not only by the media, but also by frantic calls from parents desperate for news about their missing boys.

Breck Porter was greeted by a stack of 42 tan envelopes when he arrived at his office at 8 a.m. that Thursday, the day after the digging for bodies began. Each was a case file for boys who had gone missing in the area since 1970 and fit the profile of Corll's victims.

He also was greeted by reporters, rabid for answers about the missing boys and the background of the sadistic Dean Corll.

Before diving into the files, he told reporters, "I feel very strongly that more than one person did this sadistic, perverted work. No one man could have done that. In 33 years of police work I've never found anyone capable of doing such a thing."

Chapter 12: The confessions

Despite the intimacy of murder, there was little love between David Brooks and Elmer Wayne Henley.

It's likely that the murder of Corll, which occurred when Brooks was home with his wife, or Henley's chattiness with both authorities and reporters afterwards, did little to change that.

"David Brooks lived off Dean most of his life," Henley told journalists during one scathing interview. "But I worked."

After Henley had confessed, and Brooks had made his first statement, police reunited the two, where Henley said, "David, tell them the truth. I have. Everything. You're in this as much as I am. Tell the truth and it will go better for both of us."

Eventually, Brooks agreed.

First night in prison

His first night behind bars, Henley begged the sheriff to let him call his mother, he berated the distraught woman for not calling a lawyer.

He also demanded a cell without another prisoner before telling officers he felt sick and needed a doctor.

Sheriff John Hoyt acquiesced to all of Henley's demands, and when the doctor was summoned, he gave Henley two pills that he promptly swept to the floor.

"The doctor's just trying to help you, son," said Hoyt, to which Henley replied, "I just wanted to see if you would get me a doctor if I was really sick."

The actions were enough to make Hoyt decide to spend the night at jail, uncertain if what his charge might do, and at 2 a.m. he and Henley – who hadn't taken the pills and was still wide awake – drank coffee in the cell as Henley casually talked about the murders.

"I must say I was surprised at this boy's demeanor, there in the cell," Hoyt told John Gurwell, author of the 1973 book "Mass Murder in Texas."

"He just talked as freely and naturally as we are talking here right now," Hoyt said. "We had a casual, free and easy talk."

Either Henley had yet to process what was happening, it had gone so fast, or he was revealing the behavior of a psychopath, with no regard for the pain he'd inflicted on others.

David Brooks confesses

Despite agreeing to confess, David Brooks refused to take responsibility for any of the murders, and he has been largely silent since he originally wrote his confession after Wayne Henley shot Dean Corll.

But in the police station, before his arrest, he gave his version of what happened. He'd been prompted by his father, who'd brought him down to the jail.

"My name is David Brooks. I am 18 years old and I live at 145 Pech with my wife, Bridget.

"I never actually killed anyone but was in the room when they happened and was supposed to help if something went wrong, The first killing that I remember happened when Dean was living at the Yorktown house. There were two boys there and I left before they were killed, but Dean told me that he had killed them afterwards. I don't know where they were buried or what their names were. The first few that Dean killed were supposed to have been sent off somewhere in California.

"The first killing that I remember being present at was on 6363 San Felipe. That boy was Ruben Haney. Dean and I were the only people involved in that one, but Dean did the killing, and I was just present when it happened. I also remember two boys who were killed at the Place One apartments on Mangum. They were brothers and their father worked next door where they were building some more apartments. I was present when Dean killed them by strangling them, but again I did not participate. I believe that that I was present when they were buried, but I don't remember where they were buried. The youngest of these two boys is the youngest that was killed I think.

“I remember one boy who was killed at Dean's house on Columbia. This was just before Wayne Henley came into the picture. Dean kept this boy around the house for about four days before he killed him. I don't remember his name but we picked him up on Eleventh and Rutland; I think I helped bury this boy also, but I don't remember where it was. This was about two years ago. It really upset Dean to have to kill this boy because he really liked him.

“A boy by the name of Glass was also killed at the Columbia address. I had taken him home one time, but he wouldn't get out because he wanted to go back to Dean's. I took him back and Dean ended up killing him. Now that I think about it I'm not sure whether it was Glass that I took home or another boy, but I believe that it was Glass.

“It was during the time that we were living on Columbia Street that Wayne Henley got involved. Wayne took part in getting the boys at first and later he took an active part in the killings. Wayne seemed to enjoy causing pain and he was especially sadistic at the Schuler address. Most of the killings that occurred after Wayne came into the picture involved all three of us. I still did not take part in the actual killing, but nearly always all three of us were there.

“Mark Scott was killed at the Schuler address. I had told yesterday in my witness statement about Mark Scott being at the Schuler house, but I did not say I was present - which I was. Mark had a knife and he tried to get Dean: he swung at him with a knife and caught Dean's shirt and barely broke the skin. He still had one hand tied: Dean grabbed the hand with the knife. Wayne ran out of the room and got a pistol, and Mark just gave up. Wayne killed Mark Scott and I think that he strangled him. Mark was either buried at the beach or at the boathouse.

“There was another boy killed at Schuler; actually there were two this time. A boy named Billy Baulch and one named Johnny and I think that his last name was Malone. Wayne strangled Billy and he said “Hey, Johnny” and when Johnny looked up, Wayne shot him in the forehead with a .22. The bullet came out of his ear and he raised up and about three minutes later he said, “Wayne, please don’t!” Then Wayne strangled him, and Dean helped. (The boy was Johnny Delome, who was abducted along with Billy Baulch.)

“It was while we were living on Schuler that Wayne and Dean got me down and started to kill me. I begged Dean not to kill me and he finally let me go. I had told about this in my witness statement yesterday and that part of my statement was absolutely true. It was also at this address that they got Billy Ridinger and what I said in my witness statement was true about him. I took care of him while he was there and I believe the only reason he is alive now is because I begged them not to kill him.

“Wayne and Dean got one boy by themselves while we were on Schuler. It was a tall, skinny guy. I just happened to walk in the house and there he was. I left before they killed this one.

“In the first apartment we lived in at Westcott Towers (they had two there) I think that there were two boys killed. These were both young boys from the Heights area, but I don’t know their names. Wayne accidentally shot one of them. This was about seven am. I was in the other room asleep when this happened. Dean told me that Wayne had just come in waving the .22 and accidentally shot one of the boys in the mouth. The bullet went in and you could see it beneath the skin. They didn’t kill the boy right then. They killed these two boys later on that day.

“Dean moved to the Princessa Apartments on Wirt Road and I remember him getting one boy there by himself. He wanted me to help him but I

wouldn't do it. I didn't want to mess with this one because I had someplace I wanted to go, so I tried to get him mad so he would leave, but he wanted to stay. Dean grabbed the boy and within three minutes of when he grabbed him I was gone. At that time I was using Dean's car so I was in and out all the time.

“After the Princessa Apartments, Dean moved to Pasadena. I know of two that were killed there: One was from Baton Rouge and one was a small blond boy from South Houston. I saw the boy from South Houston for about forty-five minutes. I took him a pizza and then I left and he wanted me to come back. I wasn't there when either of these two boys were killed. I did come in just after Dean had killed the boy from Baton Rouge, that one was on a different boy from the blond boy.

“In all, I guess that there were between twenty-five and thirty boys killed and they were buried in three different places. I was present and helped bury many of them, but not all of them. Most of them were buried at the boat stall. There are three or four buried at Sam Rayburn, I think. I am sure that there are two up there. On the first one at Sam Rayburn I helped them bury him, then the next one we took to Sam Rayburn when we got there Dean and Wayne found that the first one had come to the surface and either a foot or a hand was above ground. When they buried this one the second time, they put some type of plastic sheet on top of him to keep him down.

“The third place that they were buried was on the beach at High Island. This was right off the Winnie exit where the road goes to the beach. You turn east on the beach road and drive until the pavement changes, which is about a quarter or a half mile and the bodies are on the right-hand side of the highway about fifteen or twenty yards off the road. I never actually buried one here, but I always drove the car. I know that one of the graves

had a large rock on top of it. I think that there are five or more bodies buried at this location.

“The bodies at the beach are in a row down the beach for perhaps half a mile or so. I am willing to show officers where this location is and will try to locate as many of the graves as possible.

“I regret that this happened and I'm sorry for the kids' families. I am making this statement of my own free will and have not promised anything.”

- David Brooks

Wayne Henley confesses, formally

Henley had already told much of the story when he sat down at the police station to give his official version of events.

“My name is Wayne Henley. I am a white male, 17 years old and I live at 927 North 27th Street with my mother, grandmother and brothers.

“About three years ago I met a guy by the name of Dean Corll. Dean was a lot older than me and a school friend of mine named David Brooks introduced me to him. David was always riding around in Dean's car and everything. I was only 14 back then and I thought this was great.

“David Brooks told me he could get me in on a deal where I could make some money, and he took me to Dean Corll. Dean told me that he belonged to an organization out of Dallas that bought and sold boys, ran whores and stuff like that. Dean told me that he would pay me \$200 for every boy I could get for him and maybe more if they were real good looking boys. I didn't try to find any for him until about a year later, and I decided that I could use the money to get better things for my people so one day I went over to Dean's apartment on Schuler Street and told him I would find a boy for him. Dean had a GTX at the time and we got in it. Dean and me started driving around. We picked up a boy at 11th and Studewood and I talked to him since I had long hair and all and it was easier for me to talk to him. I talked him into going to Dean's Apartment to smoke some marijuana, so we went over to Dean's Apt.

“Dean left some handcuffs laying out where they could be seen, and we had this little deal set up where I would put the handcuffs on and then could get out of them. Then we talked this boy (I don't remember his name) into trying to get out of them. The only thing was we put them on where the locks were

turned in where he couldn't get the key into them. Dean then took the boy down and tied his feet and put tape over his mouth. I thought Dean was going to sell him to the organization that he belonged to, so I left. Then the next day, Dean paid me \$200.

“A day or so later, I found out that Dean had killed the boy; then I found out that Dean had screwed him in the ass before killing him. This was the start of the whole thing and since then, I have helped Dean get 8 or 10 other boys, I don't remember exactly how many. Dean would screw all of them and sometimes suck them and make them suck him - then he would kill them. I killed several of them myself with Dean's gun and helped him choke some others. Then we would take them and bury them in different places, David Brooks was with us on most of them.

“I think the only three David Brooks wasn't with us on were the last ones at the house on Lamar Street in Pasadena. The ones that I can remember by name are: David Hilligiest who Dean told me that he had killed and buried in his boat stall; a boy by the name of Malley Winkle who David and Dean told me they had killed and put in the boat stall; Charles Cobble who I killed and we buried in the boat stall. Then Marty Jones, me and Dean choked him and buried him in the boat stall. We killed a boy by the name of Billy Lawrence: I don't remember how we killed him, but we buried him up at Dean's place on Sam Rayburn Lake. We killed him at the house on Lamar Street, too.

“Dean told me about one named Ruben Haney that he killed and buried on the beach at High Island. I shot and killed Johnny Delome, and we buried him at High Island. Then me and Dean and David Brooks killed two brothers, I think we choked them, anyway, we buried Billy Baulch at High Island and Mike Baulch at Rayburn. We choked Mark Scott and Frank

Aguirre and buried them at High Island. The last one I can remember the name of is Homer Garcia, and I shot him in the head and we buried him at Rayburn. I don't remember the dates on all of these, because there has been too many of them. Some of there were hitch-hikers and I don't remember their names. Dean told me that there was 24 in all, but I wasn't with him on all of them.

“I tried to tell my mother two or three times about this stuff and she just wouldn't believe me. I even wrote a confession one time and hid it, hoping that Dean would kill me because the thing was bothering me so bad. I gave the confession to my mother and told her if I was gone for a certain length of time to turn it in. Me and David talked about killing Dean so that we could get away from this whole thing and several times I have come to within an inch of killing him but I just never got enough nerve to do it until yesterday, because Dean told me that this organization would get me if I ever did anything to him.

“This statement covers all that I can remember about all these killings and all that I know about where they are buried.” - Wayne Henley

At one point, he said that he's been planning to kill Corll because he felt as though he had to protect his three brothers – 16-year-old Paul, 14-year-old Ronnie and 11-year-old Vernon.

But his confession reveals how cold and calculating both he and Brooks had become, never thinking about the pain they had inflicted not only on their victims, but also the victim's families, some of whom lost two children to the madness.

But still, Henley's mother came to his defense.

The mothers of monsters

For the mothers of both Dean Corll and Wayne Henley, disbelief swept over them almost immediately as they learned the gruesome news of what their boys had done.

“Dean treated Wayne like a son. And Wayne loved him like a father,” said Henley’s mother Mary, still trying to process what her son had told her over the phone. “I know Dean must have done something terrible to Wayne to make Wayne shoot him.”

In interviews, she wondered how Corll had managed to appear so nice.

“I don't understand this man,” Mrs. Henley told reporters. “He ate Easter dinner with us and he worked on my car. He loved kids and he would drive over in his white van with a black couch in the back and a dozen kids would pile into the back and he would take them for rides.”

Some said it was because he was clean-cut, without the long hair and beards that were both coveted and contentious at the time, that he was able to hide his sadistic nature so well.

And according to Corll’s mother, who proclaimed her son’s innocence until she died, said that four days before Henley shot him, Corll called his mother and said, “I’m in trouble, I’m going to drop out of sight. I could take an overdose.”

Corll’s mother Mary West believed her son had found out about the murders, which she claimed were committed solely by Brooks and Henley, and that’s why he made the call.

“He was not a sex maniac or sadist,” she said. “The people who knew Dean, who worked with Dean, who raised him, will never believe these terrible accusations.”

She wrote a letter to Houston-area newspapers, sharing her story.

“My heart is heavy with sorrow not only for the loss of my son, but also for the loss of all the boys and people whose lives they touched,” West said.

“To David and Wayne, you may have the best defense lawyers the world can offer but your best defense Is God. You can lie, plan and plant evidence and shift the blame to one who cannot defend himself, but you surely know that your days are numbered, whether it is behind bars or walking the street. We are not concerned with your bodies, but we are concerned with your souls.

“If you know where to find the bodies of these children you also have the list of names. Please set the anxious parents’ hearts at ease and see how much better you feel,” she added. “The truth shall set you free.”

Corll's small funeral

Dean Arnold Corll was laid to rest in a quiet 15-minute service at Pasadena's Grand View Memorial Park, attended by about 40 relatives and friends, including Corll's mother, Mary West, and his grandmother, Gertrude Corll, with whom he'd stayed with in Indiana.

His father received the American flag draped over the casket.

A father of one of the victims questioned the flag, despite Corll's military service, considering the heinous crimes he'd been accused of committing, his story going with him to a marked grave.

Meanwhile, the Reverend Robert D. Joiner of the Sunset United Methodist Church in Pasadena struggled for words to ease the minds of those in attendance.

"The greatest heroism is just going on and remembering that Christ came to the world to love those whom others despise," he said. "We must now deliver this man into God's judgment and also His mercy and grace. And I commend the family to the same mercy and grace because they must now live with the things that will be said."

The service contained no music.

Girlfriend recalls generous man

Betty Hawkins, a divorced mom of two kids, knew Corll since she was 15, and the two dated for five years.

They were so close, her kids “used to call him ‘Daddy,’” she said in an interview after Corll’s death.

“All my friends knew him, and my friends’ folks knew him, and they never thought anything about him,” she said. “They always thought Dean was a good dude. He’d help me, he’d help them, anything.”

Hawkins said she and her children had visited all the apartments where Corll lived during his reign of terror on Houston, and she wondered why she never encountered any of the macabre apparatus that would become part of Corll’s murderous *modus operandi*.

The kids, she said, had the run of the place.

“If he had those things in there, why did he let them wander around?” she wondered.

Hawkins said she often dropped by Corll’s place unannounced, and although she occasionally found Henley or Brooks there, they were never doing anything that would have aroused her suspicions, at least not until a few nights before he died, when Corll called her and said, “I’m driving to Colorado. Whatever you do, don’t tell David I’m leaving.”

The memory – which suggested to her that Henley and Brooks were behind everything – allowed Hawkins, a woman who kissed a mass murderer goodnight, to maintain her belief that Corll was nothing more than a really nice guy.

“Dean was one of the kindest men I ever knew. If he had something and someone needed it, he’d give it to them. So far as I know, he didn’t have any special hobby, unless it was helping other people,” she said. “That guy must have gone through 15 TV’s in the last five years. Every time I turned around, his TV would be gone. Somebody would come up and say they needed one and he’d give it to them.”

Corll was afraid of aging, gay friend said

But no matter what his mother and girlfriend thought, Dean had terrible secrets, and his affinity for teens might have been born from his desperate desire to stay forever young.

“He felt like an outcast, especially age-wise,” said a young man named Guy, who’d become unlikely friends with Corll after rejecting the older man when he made a pass at him in a men’s bathroom. “He was hypersensitive about his age, how he looked, if he was young looking, if he had maybe something a little bit wrong with his hair. He’d always want compliments, or he’d want constructive criticism,” Guy said. “He wanted to be in with the youthful crowd.”

Guy told True Crime Cases that Corll had a bedroom in his house that he was fairly secretive about, and told him, “I’ll never take you in there.”

While the secret bedroom should have been enough to arouse Guy’s suspicions, despite that he became a confidant for Corll, who was unwilling to live an openly gay lifestyle.

“We became extremely close friends, but he was sort of like a cloud of mystique,” Guy said. “Seemed like he had another life he would go to and I was not a part of it, and I never wanted to infiltrate his other domain. He seemed to set up a barrier and wanted me to stay on one side. The other aspects of his life were taboo. I knew he had a friend named Wayne, but every time I’d bring up his friends, he’d more or less just cut them off... he never wanted me to meet them.”

Confronting evil

“I think ol’ Dean tried for years to be a normal person, to have a relationship with a woman, to do everything his mother wanted him to do,” Mullican said in an interview with Texas Monthly.

Unfortunately, Corll snapped, and in doing so became one of the most deviant mass murderers in history.

“How that man was able to go out to that storage shed, time after time, and bury one more dead boy is something I’ll never understand,” Mullican told Texas Monthly. “You get close to evil like that, no matter how long ago it was, and it never leaves you.”

In talking with Henley, Mullican developed a bit of sympathy for the lanky boy, despite the atrocities he had committed.

"Those kids suffered a lot," said Mullican. "Henley was kind of ashamed of what he had done, but he wanted to tell us everything."

From the grave

Corll had dropped some clues over the years about his side activities, his hobby as it were, but no one thought to recognize the clues for what they were.

“I was at work at HL&P and we were discussing how a man in California had killed 18 people and buried them in his orange grove,” said one of Corll’s former co-workers. “Someone made the comment about how could you kill this many people and sleep at night. Dean said that it was not hard after the third or fourth one. It was a few months before he was killed. Stunning to find one of your co-workers is that evil.”

Close calls

“I ran into Dean Corll one day while riding my bicycle to the store,” remembered one boy from the Heights. “He was in his white convertible and pulled up beside me in the parking lot. He asked me where he could find any action in the area. Now remember, I was an elementary school kid. I had no idea where “action” was. I barely knew there were a couple bars down on Yale street. The Heights area was dry and this was before bars were allowed to serve liquor by the drink. He drove off down the street. I took off for home. About a block or so later I saw him turning around and passing by me again. And then again. I had gotten bad vibes from him the first time and was frightened. I made it home and never had another encounter with him again. Looking back I do remember seeing that white convertible parked across the street from the elementary school at his mother’s candy shop several times, but I was a kid and didn’t put those things together. Same as when I found out several of my friends from school had ‘run away.’ Those were at different times, so none of us saw the connection. There were a number of runaways. It seemed like the thing some kids did. Little did we know.”

He was not the only one to have an eerie brush with death.

“I also ran into Dean one day on 19th St. in front of the Church’s Chicken down the street from Weingarten’s,” said Tommy, another boy from the Heights. “I was coming home from baseball practice when he grabbed my bicycle handle bars and wanted to know if I wanted to go have a good time, I threatened him with a baseball bat is all I could think of at the time and escaped. most likely the best move I ever made in life.”

Chapter 13: Hearing and murder trials

Not long before detectives began digging up body after body in a sweltering hot metal storage shed, the U.S. Supreme Court had placed a moratorium on state executions, so neither Henley nor Brooks was eligible for the electric chair when it came time for their trials, despite their roles in one of the most savage and prolific murder sprees in American history.

After confessing to murder, Henley's bond was set at \$100,000, which was an unlikely sum for his divorced mother to raise, especially given that he had been the major breadwinner for the family.

Henley – much to his despair - was put in solitary confinement on the advice of his attorney, because he had been taunted by the other inmates.

Henley's mother and grandmother both attended the hearing.

Mary Henley told reporters afterwards, "I wanted to see him. He hasn't seen a doctor. He's cold and he isn't being fed enough. He hasn't any extra clothes and he hasn't anything to blow his nose in."

She attended the next hearing as well, telling reporters who by now were sucking up every drop of information in the case, "Every time I get a chance to see him I'm going to be here."

Billy Ridinger, who had survived his kidnapping and was released by Dean Corll at the urging of David Brooks, arrived at the hearing with a paper bag over his head, holes cut out for his eyes, to conceal his identity.

Reporters pressed microphones against the place on the bag where his mouth would be in hopes of getting the silent witness to talk.

District Attorney Carol Vance requested a psychiatric evaluation for Henley, which defense attorney Charles Medler immediately opposed.

Ultimately, District Judge William Hatten agreed and denied the request.

Medler, however, was saving the request for himself, and later said, “After visiting Henley yesterday it is clear that he needs medical attention — badly. He doesn't foam at the mouth, but you can look at a person and size him up, and the boy's not all there.”

The Grand Jury handed down six indictments against Henley and four against David Brooks. They also decided to try both boys separately. Henley was up first.

Henley trial

His trial was scheduled to start July 9, 1974, in San Antonio's Bexar County Courthouse, almost 11 months after Henley had killed Dean Corll in what police had ruled an act of self-defense.

Although he would not be held responsible for Corll's death, his confession led to his being named in the murders of Frank Anthony Aguirre, 18; Homer L. Garcia, 15; Charles Gary Cobble, 17; Marty Ray Jones, 18; William Ray Lawrence, 15; and Johnny Delome, 16.

When the courtroom opened, Truman Capote was there, hired by the Washington Post to write a daily diary of the proceedings.

"I see the trial as a jumping off point to really tell about this whole extraordinary culture, in Texas and the Southwest all the way to California," Capote said, "of aimless wandering, this uprooted, mobile life, the seven-mile-long trailer parks, the motorcycles, the campers, the people who don't have addresses or even last names."

Capote left, however, after Henley was brought into the courtroom, and discontinued his work on the trial. He saw nothing more to be said and he left Texas, sweeping out of town and leaving the Washington Post in a lurch.

All of it attracted attention, and people lined up in hopes of snagging a seat at one of the most publicized trials to date.

"I have never been involved in a case of this notoriety, but I don't think it will really affect anything," Vance told the United Press International.

Henley's demeanor, however, likely would have a lasting impact, at least with the jury.

During his trial, Henley was at one point caught playing with one of the handcuffs from the torture board that had been brought out for examination while Mullican gave his testimony.

He suddenly grabbed a handkerchief from his pocket and wiped the cuff clean, before saying “I ain’t going to handle that fucking thing,” and dropping it back on the table.

Parents of the murdered boys provided their testimonies to a hushed courtroom. Homer Garcia’s father, Louis, said that his son had failed to call him for a ride after driver’s ed class on July 19, 1973, which he always did when class was over. Betty Cobble, mother of Charles Cobble, identified shoes, jeans, a belt and a blue knit shirt with a white seagull emblem that belonged to her son, and Betty Joe Shirley identified a pair of brown pants that belonged to her son, Marty Jones, who had gone missing along with Cobble.

During recesses, Henley didn’t sit still, and roamed the courtroom, sometimes talking to news reporters he now considered friends. During one recess, he picked up packages of hair that had been submitted for evidence – including his own – to examine them more closely.

Henley was calm, however, during the court proceedings, even when the mothers of the victims he’d lured to their deaths broke down.

Dressed in a clean shirt, slightly big, and a wide, striped tie, “He looks just like any other kid,” spectators said.

The courthouse was packed, and one young man came every day in hopes of getting a seat inside.

Some days he did, others he didn’t. But he was there because he had almost been one of Corll’s many young victims.

“It was quite a few years ago; Dean Corll tried to pick me up. I knew it was him from the newspaper stories. He was in that candy truck. One of those kids could have been me.”

In closing arguments, DA Vance expressed remorse that Texas did not allow the death penalty for Henley, and urged jurors to make certain Henley was removed from society for acts that he called “disgusting, sickening and repulsive ... the most extreme example of man’s inhumanity to man I’ve ever seen.”

The trial ended after only a week, with all of the evidence offered being presented by the state. District Attorney Carol Vance put 25 witnesses on the stand, and introduced 82 pieces of evidence including Henley’s written confession and the wooden box that had been used to transport bodies.

On the advice from his defense counsel, Henley did not take the stand to testify in his own defense.

After testimony wrapped up, the jury deliberated for just 90 minutes before finding Henley guilty.

He sat, stone-faced, while his mother, Mary, cried in the back of the courtroom, just as she had when Henley called her on the phone as detectives were digging up his victims’ bodies.

Later, because the jury had not been sequestered during his first trial – and some had received phone calls from the press at their homes - Henley was granted a new trial.

The 18-day trial, which his mother and grandmother again both attended, was held in June of 1979.

In closing arguments, defense attorney Ed Pegelow told the jury, “I feel that Wayne is now the scapegoat for the sins of Dean Corll. Should he pay for

the rest of his life for the sins of Dean Corll? Wayne Henley put a stop to the Houston mass murders.”

The jury deliberated two hours before returning with the same six 99-year sentences he had been given at his first trial.

While Henley doesn't cause much trouble in prison, according to one correctional officer on Henley's unit, he hasn't progressed past his teenage years, at least not emotionally.

“I see Henley all the time. He's never caused any problems for me,” the officer said. “As far as Henley goes, however, he's kind of a bitch, and he is kind of whiny and complains about stupid stuff.”

He also seems to be taking less responsibility for his role in the mass killings as the years pass.

In 2001, film maker Teana Schiefen Porras was able to interview Henley from behind bars, and when she asked him if he was a serial killer, he said, “No, ma'am, I'm not a serial killer. I'm an accomplice to a serial killer. I was an ignorant, stupid child.”

Brooks on trial

Before Brooks went on trial, the defense questioned whether he could ever get a fair trial, given the confession he gave to police at the urging of his father, before he had been read his Miranda rights.

“Brooks is doing what his father told him to do, which is to talk, and he doesn’t have to,” defense attorney Percy Foreman said. “Nobody suggests the boy tell a falsehood but the law does not require the defendant to convict himself. He refused to sign a statement until his father told him to do so. In two months or so the father will go to the defense attorney attempting to undo that which he himself has done.”

Nonetheless, in 1975, Brooks went on trial for the murder of 15-year-old William Lawrence. His confession was considered as key evidence.

David Brooks’ wife, Bridget, attended her husband’s trial every day, despite being pregnant with his only daughter.

(Later, that daughter, Rachel – described as an energetic, sweet girl who didn’t learn about her father’s past until she was 17, and visited him once in prison – died when she was injured in a car accident the morning after her high school prom. She wasn’t wearing a seat belt, and her mother was forced to remove her from life support after several months.)

“This defendant was in on the killing, this murderous rampage, from the very beginning,” said the prosecuting attorney, assistant DA Tommy Dunn. “He tells you he was a cheerleader, if nothing else. That’s what he was telling you about his presence. You know he was in on it.”

A jury deliberated only 90 minutes before returning a guilty verdict in the boy’s death.

His wife, Bridget, cried as the judge read the verdict.

He was later sentenced to life in prison.

As of 2015, he has been denied parole 19 times.

A parents' crusade

The Houston Mass Murders remain one of the worst serial killings in American history, and the parents of victims thought the two surviving participants in the houses of horrors would be secure behind bars, given their life sentences – in Henley's case, six of them.

"They'll never get out," James Dreymala remembers thinking at the time. "We're done with them."

It turns out, the Dreymalas would be anything but done, and are instead living a never-ending nightmare, serving their own life sentence reliving the horrors of what happened to their son, over and over.

They tell their story every 18 months to persuade parole boards to keep Brooks, then Henley, behind bars for the rest of their lives.

Brooks became eligible for parole just four years after he was sentenced, while Henley's first was in 1980, a year after his second trial again yielded six concurrent 99-year life sentences.

Their pain is etched on their faces in the form of permanent frown lines furrowed into their skin, a symbol of a life spent in near-constant mourning.

"This is not just for Stanton," said Elaine. "It's for all the others, too."

James and Elaine Dreymala, the only surviving parents of a victim of Dean Corll, could barely believe their eyes when the paperwork arrived in the mail, and continued to arrive, as reliably as the moon phases, every 18 months.

They go, they tell their story, they weep and they again mourn, then they fight the nerves that come as they wait up to six months for the parole board's decision.

“By the time we complete one, we have a very short break before we have to start thinking about the other one,” Elaine Dreymala told the Houston Chronicle. “How many ways can you say don't ever let this man out?”

They did eventually get a break, however.

In the summer of 2015, legislation passed in Texas giving parole boards the option of extending the time between parole hearings for killers and rapists.

The Dreymalas attended the signing ceremony, and hope that it will give them a chance to have a break from the pain, so they finally can remember their son with joy.

“Once we get the 10-year setoff applied to both of these criminals, then we can sit back and relax,” said James Dreymala. “Can't forget, but we can relax for a little bit, until the next time it rolls around. And then, we'll be prepared to fight.”

And fight they will.

“I just cannot bear the thought of these guys being released,” he said, tears welling in his eyes. “I just cannot bear it.”

Chapter 14: The aftermath

While one would think that the discovery of 27 bodies, the trials of two killers and the parole hearings that followed would mean the end of the story, it was not.

In addition to mistaken identities and a continued effort to make sure every victim discovered during those hazy days of August are properly buried, the case continues, in its own way.

A budding artist

In 1994, a Louisiana art dealer urged Henley to try taking up painting as a way to earn money for himself and his mother.

Initially, Henley refused, and told the art dealer he had no interest in pandering to his infamy.

“That was kind of sick,” he told Ray Hill, host of “The Prison Show.”

Eventually, Henley gave in, and he took art lessons from another inmate.

“If he could sell what I considered to be art, or something that was beautiful, or something that I really felt - instead of demons and stuff - if he could sell art, then I would do art for him,” Henley said.

His first art show was held in 1997 at Houston’s Hyde Park Gallery, arranged by a pen pal.

“All I ask is that they look at my artwork first,” Henley said to critics. “It may be the only contribution I can give to society.”

In 1999, when the city of Houston debated building a monument to victims of violent crime – perhaps to squash the guilt and shame of ending the Corll investigation much too soon – Henley said he would help pay for the monument with proceeds from another show.

Mark Scott's mistaken identity

Two decades after the murders, the medical examiner's office gave the Scott family remains they said they believed were Mark's, and the family had the remains cremated and placed them in the family columbarium at a neighborhood chapel. All the while, though, they had doubts, and when DNA tests on a bone saved from the remains determined the body they'd been given was not Mark's, they were back at the beginning, wondering in horror what had become of their son.

Henley had been adamant that Scott had been buried at High Island Beach, although his body was never discovered there.

After authorities shared the news with Scott's parents, Walter Scott took it upon himself to find his son.

Scott drove to the beach every day carrying a shovel, digging in the sand, and as he did, prayed "for something to guide me.

"I been down there a lot," he said. "Walking and digging, walking and digging."

As of 2015, Mart Scott's remains have yet to be found.

Misidentified bones

In 2010, DNA tests determined that Michael Anthony Baulch, believed to be buried with his brother, Billy, was actually still in the morgue, awaiting identification.

That meant that the body buried in the Baulch family plot was someone else's son.

Dr. Sharon Derrick, a forensic anthropologist with the medical examiner's office in Houston, had worked doggedly to identify the last three sets of remains. She was able to determine, based on information she's gotten from Roy Bunton's sister, that the remains that had been buried as Tony were actually those of Roy Bunton.

The find was likely painful for the Baulch family, which had already suffered so much grief, but it ultimately brought closure for two families, who now both finally had their boys.

Movie in the making

In 2013, director Joshua Allan Vargas told the gruesome story of Dean Corll and his many teenage victims in the movie "In a Madman's World," inspired by his friend's casual mention that his uncle had been one of the Candy Man's many victims.

Vargas spent every weekend for a year interviewing Henley, who along with Rhonda Williams is the only person willing to talk about the years-long crime spree. Brooks, after his confession, clammed up, and has refused all interviews.

"I remember it vividly...sitting in that little booth and all of a sudden the door opens and here comes Wayne Henley," said Vargas. "I'd been watching him in news clips and all that stuff. I remember thinking he was a lot shorter than I'd expected. He's a little guy. We sat down, and for the first 15 minutes we talked about politics.

"I asked him the hardest question right off the bat...'How many did you kill?' There's no definitive answer. He looked at me and said, 'Well, Josh, the answer to that's not good.' I said, 'Well, I would imagine.' He said, 'Well, I'll put it to you this way: I'm convicted for six, I know for a fact I remember eight, but I'm pretty sure it's about as high as 13.' That's when I knew he was going to shoot straight with me," Vargas told the Houston Press.

"He did enjoy it...it was a mental gymnastic he did with himself to deal with it," said Vargas. "He told himself these were all dope fiends, people nobody would miss or go looking for. He enjoyed having the power over life and death, and he enjoyed knowing that if anyone fucked with him, he could put

them in the ground. When he noticed that about himself, he began to get really disgusted."

Photo reveals 29th victim

While researching the film, Vargas had access to a treasure trove of items including all of Wayne Henley's belongings, which were stored on a bus after his arrest.

In addition to Frank Aguirre's wooden finger, in one box he found a sealed photo envelope, and inside was a photo of a boy believed to be another victim of Corll, handcuffed with Corll's tool box nearby.

"While rummaging through those pictures, this Polaroid falls out," Vargas told local news crews in 2012. "I take a look at it and, right off the bat, having studied the case and the crime scene photos and everything, I see Dean's toolbox, and I see his implements in that tool box, and I see this kid right here with handcuffs on his arms."

What was stunning to Vargas is that the photo was never found by police.

"My reaction to finding the picture was that of a temporary shock," Vargas told a local newspaper. "Once we obtained Henley's personal belongings, I was dumbfounded when I learned that the police never searched Henley's room. How do you arrest someone for such a crime without going through the room that he lived and slept in? Had they done that, they would have found the picture, rather than my producer and I."

Vargas turned the photo into police, who determined it was not one of the identified victims, raising new questions about how many boys Brooks and Henley actually helped Corll kill, and how many boys are buried in unknown graves, waiting for someone to discover them.

According to Henley's anonymous friend from the Heights, the photograph was just the tip of a sick iceberg of visual mementos.

“All the boys were photographed,” she said. “I want to know, where are the other pictures? There are too many people who are still wondering, hurting, and the not knowing can destroy lives. The police most definitely need to take closer looks.”

Vargas’s movie remained in post-production in 2015, and has yet to be released.

One victim remains unidentified

In 2013, Dr. Angela Williamson of the National Center for Missing & Exploited Children talked to the Pasadena Citizen about the remains of the final victim, who had yet to be identified.

“What is so frustrating about this is that all the other victims have been identified except this one boy,” said Williamson, who released a composite based on bone structure in hopes of capturing a family member’s attention.

“All the other boys were from the one area and there were a lot of police reports from parents who contacted police about their missing children, so that’s kind of why we’re curious about this one. What is different or special about him that he’s still unidentified and who haven’t we reached? Who is that key person who hasn’t seen his picture yet or heard about it that needs to come forward?”

The final victim, number 29, was found wearing a knotted leather ankle bracelet, brown leather cowboy boots, dark blue corduroy pants, striped swim trunks and a long-sleeved shirt emblazoned with a peace sign.

Old bones

For a time, Corll lived in Fort Wayne with his grandparents. In 2015, a man discovered human bones – bones considered to be those of a human child – in the crawl space beneath his home.

He apparently suspected the bones were human, and posted photos on Facebook for confirmation, leading to a visit from police, who confiscated the human femur.

Chapter 15: Conclusion

In the end, there were 29 confirmed victims of Dean Corll's mass murder, which left Houston – especially the area known as the Heights – in a state of terror. Most people, however, believe that Corll killed many more, raising questions about why the case isn't revisited, especially by officers who were there when city officials told them to shut down the hunt.

While thankfully, many of the families have passed away, the blight of the police department's mishandling of the disappearances will live on, even after the last body resting in the Harris County morgue is identified, and should serve as a warning to future departments that making assumptions can be deadly.

Those who survive, however, continue to tell their stories in the hopes of ensuring that Henley and Brooks are never paroled.

And they tell their children stories about their uncles from the 1970s, showing faded photographs while wondering what the boys might have been like as men.

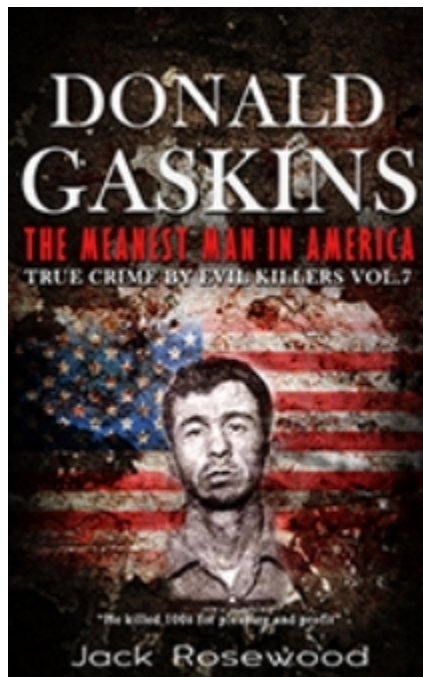
Donald Gaskins: The Meanest Man in America

by Jack Rosewood

Historical Serial Killers and Murderers

True Crime by Evil Killers

Volume 7



Copyright © 2015 by Wiq Media

ALL RIGHTS RESERVED

No part of this book may be reproduced, stored in a retrieval system, or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic, mechanical, photocopying, recording, scanning, or otherwise, without the prior written permission of the publisher.

Introduction

Psychiatrists, psychologists, and social scientists have all struggled with and debated what exactly makes one a serial killer and if in fact one is truly born evil, or born to kill. For the family of the notorious South Carolina serial killer, Donald Henry “Peewee” Gaskins, the answer is simple.

“I think he was born to kill, I really do,” was how Gaskins’ daughter, Shirley, replied in an interview about her father.

But whether Gaskins was “born to kill” or if he was bred that way is for the most part a moot point to family members of the numerous people he killed in South Carolina during the 1960s and ‘70s. In the course of his career as a serial killer Gaskins is known to have murdered thirteen people who were unfortunate enough to cross his path, but he may have been responsible for over 100 murders, which, if true, would make him one of the most prolific serial killers in American history!

No one can doubt that Gaskins was dealt a bad hand in life: he was born to poverty, he never knew his biological father, and he was routinely beaten by his “uncles.” Gaskins was also picked on by other kids as a child due to his diminutive stature. Because of his size, he only reached 5’4 as an adult, he earned the nickname “Peewee”. One would think that with the nickname “Peewee” he was an easy going guy; but that person would be wrong . . . dead wrong!

Gaskins began his criminal career as a pre-teen by becoming involved in a street gang that pulled petty crimes before graduating to rape, burglary, aggravated assault, and eventually murder.

Today, Gaskins may not be as well-known as Jeffery Dahmer or Ted Bundy, but he was every bit just as scary as those two and in many ways more dangerous. Peewee was not a typical serial killer concerning his method of operation, pathology, and victimology: men, women, and children were all counted among his victims and he used a plethora of weapons to dispatch them.

He was also notable because his murders can be divided into two distinct categories – murders for pleasure and murders for profit. Donald Henry Gaskins was a man driven to kill – it was what he did and the one thing in life for which he truly had a talent. Because of his aptitude for murder he was able to make money killing and also use it as a twisted past-time.

Gaskins was also one of the first people to attain fame during his time for being a serial killer. Decades before websites dedicated to serial killers were even conceived, the news of Gaskins' deeds was replayed in newspapers and on television throughout the world. Gaskins became both famous and infamous. Eventually, the internet generation would learn of the Gaskins' deeds and have added him posthumously to many rogues galleries of killers.

The story of Donald Henry Gaskins is a cautionary tale that will bring those who follow it into the darkest recesses of human depravity. Gaskins was in many ways like your neighbor next door; but as will be revealed, nobody was safe when Gaskins was in the neighborhood.

Table of Contents

Chapter 1: A Killer Is Born or Bred?

The Snake and the Rat

Too Cool for School

The Criminal Career Begins

School Is in Session

Peewee the Escape Artist

Back in Florence County

Chapter 2: Peewee Finds His Power

Becoming a “Powerman”

In and Out

The Tables Are Turned

Peewee the Escape Artist: Part II

Chapter 3: A Monster Unleashed

Killing for Pleasure

The Coastal Killings

Killing for Profit

A Hired Gun

Chapter 4: Losing Control

Peewee’s Hearse

Preying on Those Closest

Father and Daughter

Kim Ghelkins and the Capture of Gaskins

Chapter 5: The End of a Nightmare?

Even a Serial Killer Needs Friends

A Monster is Unearthed

Peewee Faces His Sins

A Reprieve

The Mounting Murders

Chapter 6: The Meanest Man in America

The Rudolph Tyner Murder Plot

Going Out with a Bang

Chapter 7: The End of the Road

Final Truth

One Last Kill?

A Familiar Companion

Chapter 8: A Serial Killer Outlier

What is a Serial Killer?

Peewee's Typology.

A Comparative Study.

Chapter 9: The Legacy of Donald Henry "Peewee" Gaskins

Chapter 1: A Killer Is Born or Bred?

In order to determine if Gaskins was born or became a serial killer, or a combination of the two took place, his youth must be considered. Gaskins was born on March 19, 1933 in Florence County, South Carolina to single mother and a life of poverty.

Donald's mother, Parrott, gave him his surname since it was not known who his father was. By all accounts Gaskin's mother gave him little else during his difficult childhood.

Adult supervision, in order to develop a moral compass or even for simple safety measures, was unknown to the young Gaskins. At the age of one, as he played in the family home unattended, Gaskins drank a bottle of kerosene that resulted in him having serious physical maladies for many years.

Gaskin's mother believed that the kerosene was the catalyst for her son's later problems. Richard Harpootlian, the man who successfully prosecuted Gaskins in the early 1980s, remains skeptical but leaves the door open as he said: "His mother thinks the kerosene drinking early on was the cause of his problems – I don't know."

The physical trauma caused by the kerosene was no doubt serious, but experts are not so quick to believe that it was the only, or even major, cause

of Gaskins' depravity. Dr. Helen Morrison believes that it takes much more than serious physical trauma to create a serial killer. "If it were true that brain trauma had something to do with aggression then we would expect that every serial murderer would have some type of brain trauma or brain insult and that doesn't happen."

It will never be known how much, or little, of a role the kerosene drinking played in making Gaskins South Carolina's most prolific serial killer, but the effects lingered with him for several years. He suffered from convulsions until the age of three, was plagued by nightmares throughout his youth, and the chemical may have stunted his growth, which ultimately resulted in his short stature.

But the nightmare of his youth was all too real.

As his mother neglected him, her steady supply of lovers gave Gaskins plenty of attention in the form of regular, brutal beatings. His uncles would also join in for good measure by invoking severe forms of corporal punishment that were no doubt intended to satiate their devious desires more than to elicit positive responses from Gaskins.

"When I was younger there was always one or another of a bunch of different step-daddies around. I called them all sir and never bothered to learn most of their names because I knew my mama wasn't married to them, and they wouldn't likely be around for long," said Gaskins on his mother's lovers.

Eventually, Gaskins mother married one of her lovers, but instead of providing a sense of stability, Peewee's stepfather continued the cycle of physical abuse.

"The one she finally did marry was one mean son-of-a-bitch. He used to back-hand me and knock me clean across the room just for practice," noted Gaskins. "But then everybody knocked me around: my uncles, my other step-daddies."

About the only thing Gaskins got from his family was his nickname, but it was not given in a loving, or even joking manner, in fact, it was not "until I was a teenager and got sentenced to the reformatory" that Peewee learned his real name was "Donald."

The nickname stuck in more ways than one. "I never grewed enough to keep up with others. That's how I got the nickname 'Peewee Peewee Peewee, playing with your Pee pee' they used to say, and when I got mad and hit somebody, that was all the excuse they needed to gang up and beat the hell out of me," said Gaskins on how his peers teased him.

It is interesting that a nickname as innocuous as "Peewee" came to represent one of the worst serial killers in American history. It was a nickname that emanated from hatred for Gaskins and he was more than happy to reciprocate those feelings towards the society as a whole.

But it was not just his tough upbringing or the torment of other children that pushed him in a violent direction. There was always something dark beneath the surface of Donald Henry Gaskins.

The Snake and the Rat

One of the more interesting anecdotes from Gaskins' youth that may indicate the direction he was headed involved a trip to a carnival.

Peewee, along with his mother and stepfather, went into a tent to view a collection of snakes with a large king cobra being the main attraction.

Something stirred in Gaskins.

“Then the barker stopped talking, took a live rat out of a box, and dropped it in the cage with the snake. The rat ran around and around real fast. The cobra stirred and coiled, rose up and flared out its neck, and the rat stopped, froze like it thought if it stayed still, it might turn invisible,” said Peewee. “What took hold of my attention right then was that the cobra’s head was almost exactly as high up as my head. When I looked through the glass I was staring it straight in the eye and my reflection looked like that cobra and me had the same head and face and eyes.”

What happened next probably best encapsulates the life that Gaskins would later live. “ ‘Ladies and gentlemen,’ the Barker started talking again: ‘most animals either kill for food or to defend themselves. A cobra eats twice a week. This one was fed last night. That bulge halfway down its length is the supper it is still digesting. So let me assure you, this snake is not hungry. And as you no doubt noticed when you walked up to its cage the cobra didn’t get upset. It just lays there. That’s because it is used to people and

knew it didn't need to defend itself. But now suddenly it has raised itself up and is about to strike – and that ladies and gentlemen, is what make the cobra the most dangerous of all reptiles – the fact that even as we watch it, it is preparing to kill for no reason other than the fact that it has decided to kill.' The snake struck, then stretched out and went back to sleep," noted Peewee. "The rat didn't move. I looked at my reflection, then at the cobra and I turned and saw my girl cousin holding tight to my mama's leg, and I looked up at my mama's and step-daddy's faces and saw that they seemed pretty scared, too." Gaskins continued, "I had a hard-on. And I knew that what I had just seen was somehow special and important, even though I didn't know why."

Peewee had found his spirit animal!

Too Cool for School

As Gaskins moved through his childhood he found the rigors of formal education to be especially restrictive. Most kids at least pass through a phase where they hate school, but for Peewee it was much more.

For Gaskins school became a place that he truly dreaded.

School was also another place where Peewee was abused. “To me, school was more than just a waste, it was a kind of torture. Everybody picked on me, so I got into fights almost every day, and then I got punished by the teachers and principal for fighting,” noted Peewee. “It’s no wonder I never learned jackshit . . . My step-daddy said if I weren’t going to school I had to work in the fields and do more chores. I said I wanted to work on cars, not on a farm, but he beat my ass so hard every time I slipped off to work for the mechanic that I decided it was best just to do whatever he wanted.”

But Gaskins’ stepfather’s concern was rooted more in a sense of power over his stepson than any real concern for his future. Peewee began to do whatever he wanted, but in order to avoid punishment from his stepfather he learned how to conceal his indiscretions better.

Eventually deception became another tool that Gaskins learned to utilize quite well. Gaskins discovered that if he could hide his truancy from his stepfather then there were also any number of things he could hide from him as well.

The young Gaskins was learning quickly the skills needed to become a criminal, which he would then use years later to become a serial killer.

The Criminal Career Begins

Finding no support at home and searching for acceptance elsewhere, Gaskins entered the criminal underworld at the tender age of eleven when he dropped out of school. Soon after leaving school, Gaskins teamed up with two other dropouts his age and formed a street gang called the “Trouble Trio” that terrorized Florence County with an assortment of petty crimes.

Gaskins and his young cohorts focused most of their criminal energies on burglary and gambling, but this is the period where the future serial killer would get his first taste of sexual sadism.

To Pee wee’s family and the authorities of South Carolina this should have been the first signs that they had a potential serial killer in their midst. As researcher Laurence Miller wrote: “Sexuality necessarily entails vulnerability, and that vulnerability can either be shared for the purposes of enhanced human intimacy, or exploited for the infliction of human cruelty and horror.”

Throughout his life Gaskins chose to use sexuality to exploit and harm others.

The Trouble Trio used some of their ill-gotten gains to procure prostitutes and they also sexually assaulted a number of local boys. After the trio committed their assaults they then threatened to do worse if the boys told

their parents or the authorities. The gang also turned their savage lust towards one of their own member's family.

The trio gang raped one of the member's sisters for which all three boys received beatings from their parents, but no official punishment from the courts. Peewee learned that intimidation works and the more he intimidated people the less likely they were to talk to the authorities. Florence County became his sadistic playground and as former sheriff William Barnes said: "They were all scared of him in the lower county."

Peewee's hatred of women was well documented and can be seen in the number of women he killed throughout his crime spree, but the feelings were manifested at an early age. The lack of support by Gaskins' mother no doubt contributed, but something much more was at work.

The attitude that Gaskins had towards women at an early age is best summarized in his own words. "Even back then, girls pissed me off," said Peewee. "It especially made me mad that them bitches could do anything they wanted – show their asses, make fun of me, even beat me up – and dare me to do anything about it, knowing I couldn't do nothing without being punished by grown-ups."

If Gaskins' family actually cared then perhaps they would have seen the signs of an early serial killer in their midst. Laurence Miller wrote: "A frequent association appears between serial homicide and two other crimes: burglary and rape." Miller continued: "While the reasons for this particular

association are not settled, it seems evident that both of these crimes involve the willful violation of another person's intimate self, either their home or their physical body. Burglaries and rapes are, in essence, both *invasions* of another person who has been dehumanized.”

Since Gaskins' family was unwilling to get him the help he needed then it was up to the authorities of Florence County to deal with the budding criminal.

Putting an end to Peewee's juvenile crime spree would not be easy for the authorities of Florence County, but they were aided by the bravery of one of Gaskins' victims.

After the gang rape incident, the other two members of the Trouble Trio moved out of the area, which left Peewee to continue to ravage the county alone. In 1946, at the age of thirteen, Gaskins met a victim who was willing to fight back!

As Gaskins was burglarizing a home, he was interrupted by a girl he knew who then proceeded to attack him with an axe. Peewee was able to wrest the axe from the girl, which he then used to attack her. Leaving the girl for dead, Gaskins then went about his burglary and left the scene believing that he successfully disposed of the only witness who could finger him. Gaskins failed to consider the strength of his victim.

The young girl, who suffered serious head wounds from the attack, managed to crawl to a nearby stream that kept her alive until she was found. Gaskins daughter, Shirley, stated that “that only thing that kept her alive was a little bit of water trickling through there and it kept her alive until someone found her.”

The young victim recovered from her wounds and was able to identify Gaskins as her attacker.

Gaskins was convicted of attempted murder and sentenced to reform school until his eighteenth birthday. But Pee wee soon learned that the institution he was sent to did little to reform and the education he received was in predatory studies.

School Is in Session

Most thirteen year olds spend their time playing sports, hanging out with their friends, experimenting with love, and for the more ambitious, studying. But Donald Gaskins was not like most thirteen year olds as his time was spent being victimized and in turn learning how to be a better predator.

Almost immediately after Gaskins arrived at the South Carolina Industrial School for Boys he was beaten and gang-raped by several of the other inmates. His small stature was apparently what made him a target as his daughter Shirley said he was “a tiny, tiny person and you know, the bigger boys heaped on him.”

One could argue that Gaskins was finally getting what he deserved and a more introspective, self-aware person may have seen things that way and so determined to travel on a new path; but Gaskins, like most serial killers, lacked self-awareness and empathy.

To survive in the juvenile facility Gaskins sexually serviced the strongest inmate in the cell block who was known as the “boss boy.”

For the most part the boss boys protected Peewee from the sexual advances and violence from the other boys, but he also ended up with one who instigated a gang rape on Gaskins. Peewee said that this particular boy enjoyed to “watch gang-rapes with me on the bottom.” Gaskins learned a

lot in juvenile hall about human behavior and the criminal underworld, but he also learned it was a place he did not want to be.

Peewee also spent much of his four years escaping numerous times from the juvenile facility.

Peewee the Escape Artist

Besides his plethora of murders, Gaskins ability to escape from confinement became another one of the hallmarks of his criminal career. His slippery reputation began while he was in the juvenile facility when he ran to escape the sexual abuse from his fellow inmates and the cruelty of the guards.

After serving about a year in the juvenile hall, Gaskins and four other boys ran from the facility. The other boys were quickly captured, but Peewee managed to make it to one of his many hideouts in Florence County.

A police officer, who knew Gaskins and also knew that he was supposed to be in the juvenile hall, noticed Peewee lurking around an abandoned house. The cop convinced Peewee to return voluntarily to the reformatory.

Although Peewee returned the juvenile hall willingly, he was severely punished by the authorities.

For his efforts Gaskins was given thirty lashes and sentenced to a month of hard labor.

The experience only hardened Peewee's resolve more; but for his second escape attempt he changed his method of operation a bit by only having one partner.

Peewee was a bit more successful in his second attempt as he was able to elude the authorities for a week before they used bloodhounds to catch up with him in a wooded area.

From an early age Gaskins found the woods and swamps of South Carolina to be a sanctuary from the pressures of a world that he felt was constantly against him. Gaskins would continue to hide in these woods and swamps throughout his adult life whenever he either escaped from a correctional facility or was wanted for a crime.

The woods and forests that Peewee ran to as a child were also the same places that later served as the makeshift graveyards for his many victims,

After being captured for his second escape, Gaskins was severely beaten and given four months of hard labor.

Gaskins escaped twice more from juvenile custody. The third escape resulted in one of his family members informing authorities to his whereabouts and after the fourth escape he joined a traveling carnival.

While he was traveling with the carnival he met a thirteen year old girl who he would marry . Wives, like murder victims, were something that Peewee like to collect as he acquired six before his death.

Back in Florence County

When Gaskins was finally released in 1950 the authorities saw what kind of problem he posed to society. His release report stated that Gaskins was “anti-social and there is something in his past development that is praying upon his mind.” The report further read: “We consider him dangerous and also believe that he has the homicidal tendencies peculiar to a paranoid type.”

Peewee left the reformatory and returned to Florence County a better criminal and a more dangerous predator.

Gaskins quickly found work in the tobacco fields of South Carolina and just as quickly devised a couple of ways to profit criminally from his new job. In one scheme Peewee would steal tobacco from his employers and sell it on the open market, while he also later burned down barns in the age-old insurance scam. He would get paid a few dollars by farmers to burn down their barns and they would then collect the insurance money.

It is unknown the extent of the pleasure Gaskins derived from these arsons, but as will be seen later, Peewee mixed business and pleasure in many of his crimes. As a young man committing a string of arsons Gaskins fit the profile of a serial killer in training as Laurence Miller noted in a study that “these children often lie, steal, destroy property, set fires, and are cruel and callous to other kids.” Arson also has a sexual component for many would be serial killers.

The young Gaskins displayed all the hallmarks of a potential serial killer with his lack of empathy, predilection for cruelty, and general anti-social attitude.

After only a year of freedom, Gaskins' inherent violence manifested itself once more towards a young woman. Pee wee's victim was a tobacco farmer's daughter who had the misfortune to ask Gaskins why he was burning her father's barn and by some accounts, also laughed at him.

A combination of fear of arrest for the arsons and his deep seated hatred of women and love of violence drove Gaskins to attack the girl with a hammer. Luckily, the girl survived, which meant that Gaskins soon found himself in the tough adult men's prison in Columbia, South Carolina.

Chapter 2: Peewee Finds His Power

After Gaskins was sentenced for the attempted murder of his boss' daughter, he found himself in a familiar environment – a correctional institution. He also found himself in a familiar situation as a potential victim.

Although Gaskins was a predator, up until this time he was the lowest rung on the criminal underworld totem pole and subject to the whims of stronger, more powerful inmates.

Most American prisons operate on a hierarchy where the bottom is filled with the weakest inmates, often sex offenders, while the most powerful inmates are the ones who display a combination of intelligence, physical strength, and a detached cruelty. Prison gangs are also very powerful organizations in American prisons and the state prison in Columbia, South Carolina during the 1950s was no different.

The state penitentiary in Columbia – today known as Central Correctional Institute in Columbia (CCI) – in 1952 was a depressing, violent, and overcrowded place. From 1930 to 1960 the population of the prison more than tripled from 687 inmates to 2,078, which added to the tension already inherent in such a place.

Peewee had his work cut out for him surviving in Columbia.

Becoming a “Powerman”

The top predator inmates in the Columbia prison during the 1950s were known as the “Powermen.” The Powermen lived relatively easy lives behind bars as they were given the best job details by the authorities and they routinely extorted weaker inmates for commissary items and sexual favors. Peewee knew that if he could become a Powerman then his life behind bars would be one that he could tolerate and possibly excel at; Gaskins had a goal!

Not long after Gaskins arrived at the state prison he was threatened with violence and told that he would have to perform sexual favors to prevent being killed. At this point in his life Gaskins had been both the victim and perpetrator of sexual violence and he had to make a decision: submit to the inmate’s sexual advances and become his “bitch”, or kill an inmate publicly in order to prove that he belongs at the top of the prison hierarchy.

Peewee chose a Powerman with a most unusual name for his victim – Hazel Brazell. By every account Brazell defied his feminine sounding first name as inmates and guards alike never used it. But killing Brazell would not be easy; all things being equal Peewee was no match for the larger Brazell in a fight, so Gaskins would resort to tactics that he employed countless times throughout his serial killer career – he would stalk his prey.

Gaskins would become the snake and Brazell was the rat!

Peewee spent a couple of weeks ingratiating himself to Brazell and gaining his confidence by bringing the Powerman food from the kitchen. Once Peewee saw that Brazell had sufficiently let his guard down he then decided it was time to act.

Gaskins took a paring knife stolen from the kitchen and calmly walked to Brazell's cell past other Powermen who let Peewee pass because his presence was by then a normal occurrence.

Once inside Brazell's cell, Peewee was relieved to find that the kill would be much easier than he originally thought as his mark was on the toilet. Not wasting anytime, Gaskins quickly attacked Brazell, cutting his throat and leaving him to bleed to death on the hard, cold floor of the Columbia penitentiary.

Peewee was quickly apprehended by the guards and subsequently charged with Brazell's murder in county court, but due to the latter's violent reputation and size Gaskins was able to plea bargain the charge down to manslaughter, most of which ran concurrent with the sentence he was already serving.

Peewee achieved his goal because not only did the other inmates leave him alone, but he was also initiated into the Powermen. "I wouldn't never again have to be afraid of anybody in the pen no matter how long I was there," said Gaskins.

The murder of Brazell was Gaskins' first confirmed kill, which seemed to have set the scene for the killing spree that was yet to come. Professor David Wilson believes that Gaskins' first kill was where he found his power as it was "the beginnings of Gaskins overcoming these childhood problems about his size and actually using the fact that he's small, but dangerous, to his advantage."

In the book *Final Truth*, Gaskins related how much better his life behind bars was after he established himself at the top of the prison food chain. "What I mean is that I could get pretty much anything I needed. I had the system working for me . . . I had power and my weapon and all the young meat I wanted."

In and Out

Gaskins spent most of the better part of the '50s and '60s in prison with most of the time he spent on the streets being "self-furloughs" he took in the form of escapes.

Unlike most of his earlier escapes from juvenile facilities, Gaskins' escapes from adult prisons were more successful as his periods of freedom were much longer.

In 1955, after Gaskins learned that his wife planned to divorce him, he escaped from the Columbia penitentiary through a garbage truck.

Peewee then stole a car and drove to Florida where he met up with the carnival he travelled with earlier in his life. Although he never caught up with his wife, he met another woman who he married (while still legally married to his first wife) and subsequently left after only two weeks.

The Tables Are Turned

Throughout Gaskins adult criminal career he was the consummate predator who was also in control, especially when it came to women. His hatred for women is well documented, which makes the events of his time on the lamb in 1955 all that more interesting.

After Peewee left his wife of two weeks, he fled to Tennessee with a side show contortionist name Bettie Gates he met at the carnival. Gaskins was enamored and enthralled with the woman and apparently was also oblivious to her machinations.

After the duo arrived in Tennessee, Gates told Gaskins that she needed money to bail her brother out of jail. Gates gave Peewee a carton of cigarettes and some money to deliver to her brother, but when Gaskins returned to the hotel he was sharing with Gates he discovered that both her and their stolen car were gone.

Peewee had been duped – he was the rat and Gates was the snake!

To make matters worse, local police soon arrived at Gaskins' hotel room with the news that the carton of cigarettes he delivered to the jail concealed a weapon that Gates' brother used to escape.

Also, Gates' brother was actually her husband!

Eventually the police discovered that Peewee was a wanted fugitive and returned him to South Carolina to not only serve the remainder of his current sentence, but also to face new charges that stemmed from his escape.

Peewee the Escape Artist: Part II

Gaskins numerous escapes from correctional facilities, while he was a juvenile and adult, demonstrate that he was tenacious, patient, and had to ability to think in an organized manner. The escapes also show that Gaskins was no dummy. The numerous escapes that Peewee pulled were a chance for him to showcase some of his talents and also to learn some new ones.

While on the lamb Peewee was able to enhance his criminal skills and he also learned how to live off the land.

Like many criminals in a similar situation, Gaskins often returned to his home after some of his escapes, but he had enough sense to avoid populated areas. Because he knew that few law enforcement officials would follow him there, Peewee learned how to live in the forests and swamps of Florence County, South Carolina. According to his daughter he survived by “eating snakes, he’d eat rattlesnake.” For water he would “take water out of the ditches and stuff and boil it and drink it.”

In one particular escape Gaskins leapt from a second story window in a courthouse and then fled to his familiar swampland. The authorities were hot on his heels with bloodhounds, but Peewee managed to outflank the police, circle back around, and wrote “Peewee Was Here” on the windshield of one of their cars.

During his periods of freedom, Gaskins also found plenty of time to perfect his criminal crafts. After he was paroled legitimately in 1961, Gaskins briefly worked as a driver and personal assistant for a traveling minister. But none of the preacher's sermons had a positive effect on Gaskins because he used the job as cover to burglarize homes throughout South Carolina.

Perhaps this is where Gaskins first learned that mobility is the key to avoiding detection. Although most of Peewee's murders took place in South Carolina, his coastal killings took place over a large area of the state and into North Carolina. He always stayed one step ahead of the authorities.

In 1962 Gaskins was convicted of the statutory rape of a twelve year old girl, which landed him in prison until 1968. When Peewee was released from prison he vowed never to return.

South Carolina was about to experience a murderous crime wave.

Chapter 3: A Monster Unleashed

The period in Gaskins' life after his release from prison in 1968 can best be summed up as volatile, violent, and in some ways quintessentially that of a serial killer. Although Gaskins is officially attributed to thirteen murders, he may have killed eighty to ninety people. The high number would make him among the most prolific, if not the most prolific, of American serial killers. But equally disturbing and unique was his pathology and victimology.

Gaskins is a rarity among serial killers because he killed for both personal gain and pleasure. According to many accounts, he was driven by an insatiable urge to make others suffer, but he also supported himself financially through criminal endeavors – sometimes the motives would overlap.

The type of victims Gaskins chose also did not conform to any standard profile of serial killer victimology. Concerning the victims of serial killers, Laurence Miller wrote: “The victims of serial murder are predominantly female, white, and young adults, although same-sex murders are not uncommon, and some serial killers target children.”

What is amazing and perhaps the most frightening aspect of Gaskins victims' profiles is that he killed in every one of the above categories. Peewee killed young and old, male and female, and for pleasure and profit. And although his victims were overwhelming white – interracial killing is

most common among serial killers – in his final tally he counted two black and one mixed race victim.

Killing for Pleasure

US Highway 17 is a major four lane highway that connects the coastal cities of Wilmington, North Carolina near its northern end, to the South Carolina cities of Myrtle Beach and Charleston.

US 17, which runs parallel to the intracoastal waterway, sees thousands of vacationers drive over its asphalt daily as they head to the beach for some sun and fun.

The Carolina coasts were especially popular during the late 1960s and early '70s with young people as countless hitch hikers, hippies, and other assorted "drop outs" came there from all over the country. For the vast majority of those who came to coastal Carolina during the '60s and '70s their intentions were innocent and amounted to a desire to have some fun in the sun and possibly get a tan.

But Peewee did not come to the beach for a tan, he came to kill.

The Coastal Killings

It is believed that Gaskins found his first coastal victim in 1969 near Myrtle Beach, South Carolina. Urged by strong sadist urges, Peewee picked up an attractive female hitchhiker and propositioned her for sex. When the young woman spurned Gaskins' advances he beat her unconscious and then raped and tortured her before ending her life. Gaskins then took the body to the swamps he knew so well and sank it to the bottom.

After Peewee picked up his first coastal victim he was faced with a murderous revelation; he could do whatever he wanted to this person. "And the answer was simple: what I had to do was kill her. I remember smiling to myself and wondering why I hadn't ever thought of that before? If she was dead, she couldn't tell the law or nobody nothing – so once I had made up my mind and decided that she was going to die anyhow, I could do anything I wanted with her," said Gaskins.

And what Peewee did to this poor young woman and his other coastal victims is truly horrifying.

"Some of them I cut. Some I burned. I ran a cable in and out one, and hung her up by it. I pumped another one full of water, which seemed to really hurt, filling her up until it came out of her nose and mouth, but she died quick, which I hadn't expected, so I didn't do that anymore. I preferred for them to last as long as possible," said Gaskins about his coastal killings.

Peewee found inspiration for his torture methods by shopping in hardware stores. As he browsed through the hammers, saws, icepicks, and other tools that most people use for home repair, Gaskins' mind was fixated on torture and murder.

Gaskins claims that he took as many as eighty victims, both female and male, during his string of coastal killings.

In 1974 Peewee picked up two hitchhikers that he thought were women from behind because of their long hair, but as the two got into his car he realized they were long haired young men.

Unfortunately for the two young men Gaskins did not discriminate when it came to murder victims. He raped and tortured both men before cannibalizing parts of their bodies and then disposing of them in a swamp.

The method of killing that Gaskins followed during his coastal killings, which was usually preceded by lengthy torture sessions, fits the profile of a sexually sadistic serial killer. But Gaskins took his sadism a step further.

Peewee claims that as he cannibalized a number of his coastal victims he often forced them to watch as he ate bits of their flesh and even made some of his victims eat parts of their own bodies!

For most people it is a futile attempt to try to understand what drove Gaskins to not only kill, but especially the manner in which he did. Perhaps the deviancy can best be described in the words of Gaskins himself as he once told his daughter that “he would get this urge that he would have to see blood. He called himself a vampire.”

Throughout the ‘60’s and ‘70s Peewee may have killed as many as ten to twelve people a year along the coastal highways of North and South Carolina. As his murder spree continued, the urge to “see blood” that his daughter described grew exponentially. Dr. Helen Morrison relates that increased frequency of killings was an obsession that grew into an addiction. “It’s a little scary to say that a serial murderer is an addict; but if you really look at it in that context, in a way they are an addict, they have to do it.”

As Peewee’s homicidal addiction grew he found new ways to satiate himself and make money at the same time. Gaskins moved into the next phase of his serial killer career.

“By October of seventy, I had picked up and coastal killed ten girls, total, including the three done in sixty-nine. But the most important thing about nineteen-and-seventy was that it was the year I started doing my Serious Murders,” reminisced Gaskins.

Gaskins would claim to continue his coastal killings for weekend recreation, but most of his energies became focused on killing for profit and

those closest to him.

Killing for Profit

To Donald Henry Gaskins killing was a past time, but it was also much more than that – it was his vocation!

Many of Gaskins' victims and most of his thirteen confirmed kills were men and women he killed for some sort of monetary profit. He killed people in the process of robberies, some as part of contract assassinations, and others who he believed would snitch him out to the authorities and send him back to prison. If Peewee thought that he could gain financially from a murder he would most likely do it.

Twenty five year old Dennis Bellamy and his fifteen year old half-brother, Johnny Knight, made the short-sighted decision of becoming involved with Gaskins in an auto theft ring.

Gaskins arranged to meet Bellamy and Knight in a wooded area near his home in order to discuss the future of their criminal alliance. Apparently Peewee was worried that one, or both, of the men were talking to authorities about their activities. When the two arrived at Peewee's home he led them into the woods near his home in rural Florence County, South Carolina. It would be the last walk the two men took.

According to sheriff William Barnes, after walking some distance in the woods Gaskins pointed up to a particularly high tree limb and commented

that they could use it to hoist stolen vehicles. When the men looked at the limb “he shot one of them in the back of the head and then when the other one ran he shot him.”

Gaskins then disposed of the two bodies in a communal burial site he created.

The exact reason why Gaskins killed Bellamy and Knight is unknown but Shirley Gaskins stated that her father would kill any business associates he felt were a threat: “If he thought they were gonna, you know, they were getting tired or they were gonna tell on him then he’d get rid of em.”

A Hired Gun

By 1975 Peewee had killed scores of people, for both pleasure and profit, so he decided to put his homicidal skills on the free market. Gaskins was approached by a woman named Suzanne Kipper to kill her ex-boyfriend, Silas Yates, for \$1,500.

As a local of Florence County, Kipper was well acquainted with Gaskins' reputation for acts of extreme violence and so believed that Peewee was the man for the job.

Kipper was right in her assessment of Gaskins' homicidal abilities, but ultimately Yates was not the only victim in the murder conspiracy.

Gaskins, along with three accomplices named Diane Neely, John Powel and John Owens, plotted and carried out the murder. Because Peewee's violent reputation preceded him in the county, Neely, Powel, and Owens had to lure Yates from the safety of his home. Once outside, where Gaskins was lurking, Yates was helpless as Peewee then pounced on his hapless victim.

After Peewee killed Yates, the other three helped him dispose of the body and all conspirators left happy, until Gaskins received the phone call.

Not long after the Yates murder Diane Neely and her boyfriend, Avery Howard, contacted Gaskins and threatened to turn him in to the authorities unless he paid the two \$5000.

Peewee feigned compliance with the extortion scheme and agreed to pay money.

Apparently Neely and Howard either underestimated Gaskins' killing prowess or they believed he was too dumb to know that they would implicate themselves in the murder, or both, because they agreed to meet Peewee in a neutral location to receive the payoff.

Neely and Howard were never heard from again.

The two criminals were added to Gaskins' growing body count in the woods and swamps of Florence County, South Carolina.

The murders of Neely and Howard were two of the last that Gaskins would commit as a free man, but before he was arrested he committed some of his most heinous murders.

Chapter 4: Losing Control

For most of his serial killer career Gaskins was able to compartmentalize his killings into two categories: “weekend recreation” was what he called the coastal killings, while “serious killings” are what he termed the murders for profit. Serious killings are also what he called the murders he committed on those closest personally to him.

Until the early 1970s Peewee was able to separate the two categories somewhat effectively, which no doubt delayed his capture; but things began to change when friends, acquaintances, and family members of Donald Henry Gaskins began to disappear.

Gaskins could no longer control and compartmentalize his homicidal urges. Anyone who came into contact with him was a potential victim.

Peewee's Hearse

As Gaskins killing spree progressed into the mid '70s Peewee seemed to become more brazen. He began to do things that pointed out not only his eccentricities, but quite possibly his thinly veiled life as a serial killer.

Perhaps he felt that since he had already killed several people and was never even a suspect that he would never get caught, no matter how outlandish his behavior was.

Peewee began driving a hearse that had inscribed on it "I hold dead bodies", as if to throw it in the community's face what he was doing. Despite this, people just saw him as a strange, eccentric character, as Sheriff Barnes noted: "I think you would have to say that he came over as different because how many people do you know that drive a hearse for their vehicle?"

It was around this time that Peewee also became more brazen concerning his victims.

Preying on Those Closest

Most notorious serial killers in history were able to separate their vocation of killing from their personal lives. Some, such as Ted Bundy and Gary Ridgeway, were even able to conduct personal relationships with numerous people who had no idea of their devious and diabolical crimes. Gaskins was also able to maintain a similar façade for a number of years, but eventually everything began to unravel.

Although Pee wee's violent and criminal reputation preceded him in Florence County, most of the residents thought of him more as an oddball and few if any suspected that he was South Carolina's most notorious serial killer, because he was careful.

Gaskins coastal victims were people he had no connection with, while the victims of his profit killings were usually criminals and drifters that few people missed. Despite being two very different victimologies, they were actually well compartmentalized and kept the authorities well off his track.

But all of that would change in 1970 when Pee wee could no longer restrain his murderous impulses. This is when the string of murders he termed "serious murders" began.

Beginning in 1970 Gaskins began killing acquaintances, friends, and even family members who were unfortunate enough to ask him for a favor or even stop by the house for a visit.

In November, 1970 Gaskins saw his fifteen year old niece, Janice Kirby, and her friend Patricia Alsobrook walking home so he did as any family would do and offered them a ride.

But Peewee had evil plans as he brought the two girls to an abandoned house where he raped, tortured, and eventually drowned both to death.

Around this same time Gaskins also preyed on another family friend who fell victim to Peewee's helpful façade.

Twenty three year old Doreen Dempsey planned to leave the state with her two year old child in order to start over. Dempsey was a single mother and her child was racially mixed so she believed that there would be better opportunities for both of them outside of rural South Carolina. After Dempsey packed her and her child's belongings into a couple of suitcases they were ready to catch a bus out of town. Since she did not own a car and the rural area had no cab service, she needed a ride from a friend.

Gaskins offered to drive Dempsey and her child to the bus station, but neither ever arrived.

Gaskins instead drove the two to one of his swampy graveyards where he raped and killed Doreen before turning his unnatural fury on the child. "He

said he could not resist raping the baby,” is what Shirley Gaskins said concerning the murders.

It was also during his string of acquaintance murders that Peewee claimed his first black victim. Martha Dicks was a twenty year old black woman who ran in some of the same circles as Gaskins and could often be seen hanging around his repair shop. Although Peewee was known to be racist, he tolerated Dicks for some reason and even put up with some of her teasing.

But apparently Martha Dicks’ jokes went too far.

For reasons unknown, in early 1971, Dicks began telling people that she was pregnant with Peewee’s child.

Apparently that was too much for Gaskins so he once more laid a trap becoming the snake, while his victim was the rat.

He invited Dicks over to his shop one night for drinks that were laced with a fatal amount of sedatives. After she died, Gaskins dumped her body in a ditch and then went about his business.

In the end Dicks’ murder was not for pleasure or profit, but according to Gaskins was due to her “lying mouth.”

Father and Daughter

Perhaps one of the most bizarre aspects of Gaskins' acquaintance murders is the role that his daughter Shirley played in many of them. A number of Peewee's victims were cousins and playmates of his daughter, which indicates that the serial killer consciously used his daughter for bait.

Ever the consummate predator, Gaskins was always looking for another weapon in his arsenal and apparently his own daughter became an unwitting pawn in his sick game.

According to Shirley he would often bring his victims by the house where she would make their last meal after which "they would leave and never come back."

Kim Ghelkins and the Capture of Gaskins

Perhaps feeling untouchable, Gaskins continued to focus his homicidal urges on people close to him. The last of his unfortunate victims in the string of “serious murders” was thirteen year old Florence County girl Kim Ghelkins.

Ghelkins had the audacity to rebuff one of Peewee’s crude sexual advances. To rectify the insult Gaskins promptly abducted, raped, and murdered the girl and then placed her remains in the swampy graveyard whose vacancy was quickly filling.

But Kim Ghelkins was the wrong victim because there were people who missed her.

As the investigation into Ghelkins’ disappearance commenced Donald Gaskins name kept surfacing. Could the strange ex-convict be responsible for the young girl’s disappearance? Could he be responsible for more?

Evidence began to mount against Peewee and eventually the police obtained a search warrant for Gaskins’ home that revealed clothing that belonged to Ghelkins. Peewee was arrested for contributing to the delinquency of a minor, but the seasoned career criminal would keep his mouth shut.

The evidence that got Peewee arrested initially for Ghelkins' disappearance was an item of clothing that could be definitively identified by her family members. Many serial killers take "trophy" or mementos from their victims, but Gaskins was not particularly fond of nostalgia, which is what makes the situation even more interesting.

In Gaskins own words he "made another mistake and didn't abide by the wise man's rule to never keep anything from a victim because it's evidence."

The clothing was enough to hold him in jail, but alone it was nowhere near enough evidence to get a murder conviction. For that the prosecutors would be fortunate enough to exploit another mistake Gaskins made.

Ultimately, Peewee's legal demise came as the result of something he chose to have that most people take for granted – a close friend and a confidant.

Chapter 5: The End of a Nightmare?

For the people of Florence County, South Carolina the reign of terror imposed on them by Donald Henry Gaskins would end in 1975 when he was arrested in connection with Kim Ghelkins' murder. But Peewee's arrest proved to be just another chapter in the life of South Carolina's most prolific serial killer.

Historically, most serial killers work alone and the ones who operate in pairs, or even groups, do so in a manner that pits the killers against the rest of the world. Serial killers rarely confide their deeds until after they are caught, which is another aspect of Donald Henry Gaskins' serial killer career that makes him unique.

Even a Serial Killer Needs Friends

In tracing Donald Gaskins' criminal career it becomes apparent fairly quickly, due to his body count, that he had no use for friends and even less for "work place" acquaintances. Gaskins was good at keeping his homicidal secrets until he met Walter Neely.

Walter Neely was a criminal acquaintance of Gaskins' from Florence County who shared some of the same anti-social tendencies with the serial killer, although the two were never very close until 1975.

As Gaskins' killing frenzy reached its apex in 1975, Peewee became unhinged and made more and more mistakes. One night as he trolled the highways of South Carolina with nefarious purposes his heart raced as he spotted a possible mark – a van broken down on the side of the road.

Posing as a concerned citizen, Gaskins surveyed the situation and then quickly dispatched of the three victims, two females and a male, who were unfortunate enough to have broken down in Peewee's territory.

But this was not a typical Gaskins murder. It was much more impulsive, disorganized, and involved multiple victims. Peewee tortured and handcuffed the three before drowning them in a swamp. The three pleaded for their lives to no avail as Gaskins sent them all to their slow, watery

doom. “It’s hard to say which one suffered the most. I tried to make it equal,” said Gaskins about the triple homicide.

As Peewee watched his victims sink into their watery graves he felt the familiar combination of thrill and relief that he had felt from his numerous other murders; but it was soon replaced with fear.

Peewee knew he needed help to clean up his mess.

“I had a real serious problem on my hands: the van,” Gaskins said. “It was sure to get found, which was sure to bring the law, who was sure to ask questions all up and down the highway.”

As stated earlier, Gaskins was avoided by most in Florence County and feared by many as his bizarre and sometimes violent reputation preceded him. Despite this, Gaskins was an accomplished criminal, which meant that he was able to collect a number of connections from his decades in the criminal underworld. One of these connections, which proved to be Gaskins’ ultimate demise, was a man named Walter Neely.

Like Gaskins, Walter Neely was a local criminal who lived on the margins of polite society in Florence County, South Carolina. Neely was by no means a criminal mastermind and by most accounts was neither very bright nor particularly violent. But on the night that Peewee killed the three motorists, Neely was the man he called for help.

Neely drove the victim's van to Peewee's garage where the serial killer then used his mechanic skills to repaint and refurbish the vehicle in order to conceal it and profit from the murders. He then began to tell Neely everything.

Peewee's recital of his roster of murders had little to do with the quest for a catharsis and more with a twisted sense of pride. Gaskins had worked alone up to this point and aside from a couple of contract murders, most knew little about his predilection and aptitude for murder.

Gaskins began to let his guard down as he confided in Neely. Peewee showed his friend the dumpsites and Neely in turn even helped him dispose of more victims. One night Neely helped Gaskins kill two people who were dumb enough to steal from Peewee; later Peewee revealed even as he and Neely dumped the two bodies in one of his watery gravesites.

Eventually though Neely's friendship would be Gaskins' legal undoing.

As local, county, and state police began to focus on Gaskins for the Kim Ghelkins disappearance, they attempted to rattle all of the serial killer's friends and associates.

Walter Neely soon broke.

According to William Barnes: “After a lot of talking and everything Walter finally took the investigators out and showed them where he helped Peewee bury someone.”

Neely brought investigators to dump site where Barnes said “they knew someone was buried there but we didn’t know what we’d find until we started digging.”

Admittedly, Gaskins broke his own code by confiding in Neely. Peewee said that if he had followed what he learned in prison from the other Powermen then he never would have been caught. “The time I spent with them was my college education,” he wrote. “Since then, every time I have been faced with a problem or a choice I have thought back to the things that they said to me – and whenever I followed their advice, I always came out okay. It was the times I didn’t do what they advised that I found myself in deep shit.”

A Monster is Unearthed

When Walter Neely led investigators to one of Donald Henry Gaskins' dumpsites in rural South Carolina they did not know what they would find. Most were just hoping to find the body of Kim Ghelkins in order to give her a proper burial and her family closure, but they would be surprised and horrified with the level of depravity they unearthed.

Ira Parnell Jr. – who was a state investigator that worked on the Gaskins case and was there when Neely led authorities to the dumpsite – explained how he and about fifteen other law enforcement officers uncovered the site. “We just lined up and started walking slowly into the woods . . . sometime during that process in moving through the bushes and undergrowth somebody discovered that there were some bushes that had been put there, that weren't growing there,” said Parnell.

It turned out to be the first of six bodies discovered at the site. Even seasoned law enforcement officers like Barnes had a difficult time grasping the scope of their discovery: “Yea it was a pretty gruesome scene . . . I guess I was overwhelmed. I had been in law enforcement for some twelve and a half years prior to this and I'd never seen anything of that magnitude.”

The dumpsite was soon turned into an archaeological excavation as the investigators compiled a team to dig up and identify the bodies. The smell of death permeated the area. “I've never been a smoker, but the smell of decaying flesh was so intense in that area that, ah, the smoke from the

cigars diminished that smell enough to where you could stand it,” said Parnell.

All of the six bodies were buried in pairs. The first pair discovered was that of Bellamy and Knight who were among the victims of Gaskins’ “profit” murders.

Peewee Faces His Sins

With the discovery of one of his dumping sites and his one friend cooperating with the authorities, the case against Donald Henry Gaskins was airtight. Both Gaskins and Neely were charged with eight counts of murder in Florence County, South Carolina on April 27, 1976.

Because the mountain of eye witness, circumstantial, and forensic evidence was uncontestable and insurmountable, Peewee was quickly convicted for the murder of Dennis Bellamy on May 24, 1976.

Appropriately, Gaskins was given the death sentence.

A Reprieve

After Gaskins was convicted of the Bellamy murder and sentenced to death, he quickly set about to manipulate the system. Like many career criminals, Peewee learned how to use laws and legal nuances to his advantage and so confessed to seven more murders under the agreement that he would not face the death penalty.

But Gaskins was sentenced to die for the Bellamy murder. Pleading guilty to avoid the death penalty in other murders seemed like a futile task; but Peewee would do everything in his power to give himself one more chance.

First the state would have to kill Peewee and in November, 1976 fate stepped in and gave Gaskins a reprieve when the U.S. Supreme Court ruled that the death penalty was unconstitutional.

Specifically, the Court ruled under *Woodson v. North Carolina* that states were forbidden to impose a mandatory death penalty as to do so would be a violation of the Eighth Amendment of the U.S. Constitution.

The ruling not only saved Gaskins' life, but it helped make him a celebrity in the South Carolina prison system.

Gaskins seemed to have a new lease on life after his death penalty was commuted to a life sentence. He was the cock of the walk behind bars as other inmates and even the guards were afraid to cross the notorious serial

killer. As bad as life in prison would be for most normal people, Gaskins thrived in such an environment. He was truly at home in prison!

Gaskins reprieve was short lived though as in 1978 the United States Supreme Court overruled its original decision that banned capital punishment. The new ruling allowed for each state to pursue its own death penalty policies with South Carolina being quick to resume the practice.

The new situation put Peewee in a pickle: could Gaskins face the death penalty for the plethora of other murders he committed?

The Mounting Murders

Gaskins knew the clock was ticking so he set out once more to manipulate the system to his favor. His strategy was to confess to as many murders as he could whereby through a number of plea bargains he would avoid the death penalty for helping authorities clear the unsolved murders.

As Gaskins continued to work with authorities to clear unsolved murders, some law enforcement officers became skeptical of the sheer numbers that Peewee claimed to have killed. Despite the doubt, today experts point out that Gaskins had the ability and the means to carry out that many murders. “Could he have killed a hundred people? Sure he could have, um, but he would an outlier, that’s a very high number of victims even for a prolific serial killer,” said Professor David Wilson.

But after all Gaskins was a serial killer outlier in more ways than one!

One of Gaskins’ more notable disputed confessions was of the abduction and murder of thirteen year old Margaret Cuttino in 1970. Peewee’s confession to Cuttino’s murder became particularly newsworthy because her father, James Cuttino Jr., was a state senator. Also, by the time Gaskins confessed to killing Cuttino, another man, William Pierce, had already been convicted and sentenced to life in prison for her murder.

The details of Cuttino’s murder are eerily similar to those of some of Gaskins’ other victims during this same period. Cuttino was abducted in

rural Sumter County, South Carolina on December 18 or 19, 1970 and her mutilated body was discovered on a dirt road nearly two weeks later on December 30.

Peewee was known to be in the area at the time.

After Gaskins' confession to her murder and the revelation of new evidence, many believed that Pierce would be exonerated or given a new trial; but South Carolina authorities remained adamant that Pierce, not Gaskins, was Cuttino's killer. Any chance of testing extant biological evidence from the crime scene for DNA was gone when authorities claimed Hurricane Hugo destroyed in the evidence in 1989.

In the book *Final Truth*, Gaskins expressed his frustration with the Cuttino case: "I admitted I killed Peggy, but I was ignored by the court because they already had Pierce doing life for killing her. I confessed because I knowed Junior Pierce weren't guilty and I didn't want him to end up in South Carolina's CCI for a crime he didn't commit."

But it would not be Gaskins' confession to Cuttino's or any other of his murders from the '60s and '70s that proved to be his final demise. It was behind bars that Peewee's greed and lust for murder finally became his downfall.

Chapter 6: The Meanest Man in America

Although Donald Henry Gaskins may have killed up to 100 people before he landed in prison in the mid '70s, he earned his moniker "The Meanest Man in America" while serving his life sentence for the Bellamy murder.

Gaskins liked to do two things: kill people and commit crimes and he was not about to let the walls of a maximum security prison stop him from doing either one of those!

In 1982 Gaskins carried out the contract killing of a death row inmate that is seen by most people, even those who despise Peewee, as particularly daring and difficult, especially since Gaskins was not on death row!

The Rudolph Tyner Murder Plot

Gaskins' mark was a man named Rudolph Tyner who was described by prosecutor Richard Harpootlian as a "semi-retarded, very low IQ guy."

What placed the dimwitted Tyner in Gaskins' crosshairs was the double murder the former committed that landed him on South Carolina's death row. Tyner was convicted in 1978 for murdering an elderly couple named William and Myrtle Moon. The Moons owned and operated a small convenience store that was robbed by Tyner and according to court records, after the robbery he returned to ruthlessly execute the couple.

Although Tyner's conviction was air-tight and his execution was impending, not everyone was happy that the murderer continued to breathe.

The murdered couple's adopted son, Tony Cimo, became frustrated with the appeals process that kept Tyner alive and safe on death row so he decided to reach out to someone that could solve his problem – Donald Henry Gaskins.

"Tony was friends with someone in prison and they got daddy and Tony together," said Shirley Gaskins.

The intermediary was a career criminal from his home town named Jack Martin. Once Cimo contacted Martin about the plan, Pee wee Gaskins was the first person that he recommended for the job.

Cimo apparently reached out at the right time to Gaskins, who was depressed about being unable to escape and needed something to release his pent up aggression. Tyner ended up being in the right place at the wrong time. “Because all this happened at the time I just described, when I wasn’t making no headway with my own escape plans and was feeling even downer than usual, I took it as a personal challenge. Beside: I figured there weren’t nobody in CCI I couldn’t get to if I wanted, and it seems to me this Tyner truly did deserve to die,” said Gaskins about Tyner.

Perhaps it is a bit of the pot calling or the kettle black when Gaskins said Tyner deserved to die, but once the plan was in motion Tyner’s fate was sealed.

The relationship and situation that developed between Cimo and Gaskins proved to be so bizarre and unbelievable, but sometimes reality is stranger than fiction. In fact, the Tyner murder plot was so strange that it spawned a made for TV movie!

Although Gaskins truly enjoyed killing, his primary interest in the Tyner murder for hire plot was financial. He could care less about the lives of Cimo’s parents or how they were murdered; in another time and under other circumstances Gaskins may have been their killer. This was another murder for profit, but the fact that Tyner was black also gave the openly racist Gaskins another reason to take his life.

Ultimately, the murder of Rudolph Tyner was more of a challenge than anything to the serial killer, as stated in his own words. The challenge was in two parts and involved: committing the murder in the first place and more importantly, getting away with it.

Through the prison contact, Cimo and Gaskins began formulating the plot to murder Tyner via phone calls that Peewee recorded with a tape deck recorder. Perhaps Gaskins feared that Cimo would try to blackmail him, or maybe Peewee planned to blackmail Cimo with the damning phone calls.

“Gerald wanted me to call you, said to tell you this is the doctor calling you,” was what Gaskins said in the coded introductory call to Cimo.

As a doctor Gaskins’ specialty was death and soon after the conversation with Cimo he went to work on Tyner.

Gaskins’ murder of Tyner was not impulsive like many of his murders on the outside; in order to kill Tyner he had to get close and get his victim’s confidence.

Peewee would kill Tyner in a similar fashion as he did to Brazell several years earlier in the same prison.

Peewee would once more become the snake, but this time Tyner was the rat.

One of the privileges that Peewee enjoyed in prison was greater freedom. He was allowed to roam more freely throughout the prison and from cell block to cell block, which is how he was able to befriend Tyner who was housed in the solitary confinement block of death row.

Gaskins would bring Tyner extra food and drugs such as marijuana from time to time. But Peewee was not being friendly or helpful, he was preparing his kill.

Peewee decided that this time he would use poison to dispatch his victim.

“We gave that son of a bitch all of it but one dose and all its doing is making that son of a bitch sick,” said Gaskins to Cimo in a recorded status report about the murder plot. Unfazed, Gaskins attempted to poison Tyner again, this time with potential collateral damage present. “We’d put it in some damn buck for him to drink the other night and he drank and two more drank and all it was made all three of them sick as hell,” said Gaskins to Cimo.

Poison was not working so Gaskins had to step up his game!

Going Out with a Bang

Gaskins knew that any more poison attempts on Tyner may reveal the murder plot so he formulated a new plan that became the stuff of legends.

One of the perks that Gaskins enjoyed in prison was being an inmate maintenance man. The job allowed him to roam freely throughout the prison, but more importantly, he was given a large supply of tools that he was allowed to keep in his cell. The tool set became the arsenal Peewee needed to carry out his final murder.

Gaskins was also allowed to move into the cell next to Tyner, which allowed him put the final part of his plan into action.

Peewee devised a jailhouse telephone that ran between his and Tyner's cell, which was intended to not only allow the two men to communicate with each other while they were locked in their cells, but also for Gaskins to finally kill his mark.

"I came up with something, he can't be no dam making sick on it. I need one electric cap and as much of a stick of damned dynamite as you can get," said Peewee to Cimo.

Yes, Peewee planned to blow up Tyner!

Although Cimo was not able to get dynamite to Gaskins, he was able to get the serial killer a small amount of C-4 plastic explosives. Once Peewee received the C-4 he transported it through the prison in secret compartment he cut into the heel of one of his work boots.

Gaskins then took a state issued drinking cup and sealed the blasting cap, explosives, and wires into it and gave it to Tyner with the explanation that it was his receiver for their jailhouse phone. Gaskins explained the process to Cimo: "I'll take a damned radio and rig it into a bomb and when he plugs that son of a bitch up, it will blow him into hell."

Peewee's technical expertise proved fatal because when Tyner put his receiver up to his ear the bomb went off killing him instantly.

"Pieces of him were blown all over the prison, fingers were everywhere," commented Harpootlian on the prison bombing.

The snake had struck, the rat was dead!

The tapes that Gaskins planned to possibly use against Cimo were discovered by prison authorities and used against both men in subsequent criminal proceedings.

Tony Cimo served six months of an eight year prison sentence for his role in the murder plot. The convoluted conspiracy eventually caught the eye of

Hollywood as it provided the plot for a 1986 made for TV movie,
Vengeance: The Story of Tony Cimo.

But for Gaskins the Tyner murder proved to be his final demise.

Chapter 7: The End of the Road

After prison authorities learned of the complexity of Tyner's murder they turned the case over to the county prosecutor's office who promptly charged Gaskins with capital murder.

"The only good thing about that was, was that, you know, that was a crime that he could get the death penalty for," said William Barnes on the Tyner murder.

While awaiting trial Peewee began to finally get the attention that he so desperately sought. People from around the world were intrigued by the amazing murder he pulled off behind bars and they were equally horrified by the string of murders he committed before it.

Since it was a capital case, South Carolina law required that Gaskins be given two attorneys and since Peewee was indigent, he was given two court appointed lawyers – John Young and Jack Swerling.

A court appointed attorney does not imply that the lawyer, or in this case lawyers, are inferior, but just that the state will pay the lawyers' salaries for the duration of the case. Gaskins was lucky enough to get two of the best, high-profile criminal defense lawyers from the state of South Carolina because he would need all the help he could get.

But Peewee proved to be a difficult client as he tried to run the defense his own way.

Young said that when he first met Peewee in the prison visiting room he “told them to take the handcuffs off,” which garnered the response, “You’s aint afraid of Peewee?” from Gaskins.

Eventually, Young earned a certain level of respect from Peewee who told him: “I hate all lawyers except you.”

But sometimes respect is a one way street. The more that Young worked with Gaskins the more he realized how utterly depraved and evil the man was. “He was the most evil human being – if you could call him human – that I’ve ever known,” said Young.

While Gaskins’ lawyers were working arduously on the lost cause of his defense, Peewee tried to generate his own alibi.

Gaskins wrote a couple letters to a friend named J.B. Brown asking him to admit to Tyner’s murder to a priest named Frankie San. Peewee believed that once Brown “admitted” the murder to San, then the priest would have to tell the authorities, while not revealing his source due to priest privilege.

Peewee’s plan was foiled when Brown went to the authorities and subsequently became one of the prosecution’s star witnesses against

Gaskins. There was nothing else Peewee could do but rely on his lawyers.

Young and Swerling did more than an admirable job, but the mountain of evidence against their client proved to be insurmountable.

In 1983 a South Carolina jury agreed that the evidence was overwhelming and so voted to convict Gaskins of capital murder. Shortly after his conviction the jury then came to another decision – that no one else should be the next victim of Donald Henry Gaskins, in prison or out, and so sentenced Peewee to death in the electric chair.

Final Truth

When Gaskins was sentenced to death he knew that it would be quite a few years before the state carried out the sentence. But with his freedoms severely curtailed Gaskins was forced to find new ways to kill time.

Gaskins would become famous!

While on death row Gaskins began to work with author Wilton Earl on the book *Final Truth: The Autobiography of Mass Murderer/Serial Killer Donald "Pee Wee" Gaskins*, which tells the story of Pee wee's multi decade killing spree.

Earl communicated with Gaskins, through phone calls and visits, for over fifteen years to compile the book and give it a professional polish; but the gory details were all provided by Gaskins, quite willingly.

Pee wee indicated that he was comfortable telling Earl his story, but that it would only be published *after* South Carolina executed him. "I never let anybody know what I've told her mainly because I couldn't let these things get knowed while I was alive and still fighting in court to keep out of the chair," Gaskins said. "And I never trusted no writer before not to publish until after I was dead."

When Gaskins was not working with Earl on the book he spent most of his time heavily medicated on death row. The isolation did not appeal to

Peewee's freedom loving nature, but the drugs he received did: "The onliest good thing that come out of me being in isolated solitary was that the prison doctors started giving me heavier does of tranquilizers and sleeping pills, which they have kept on giving me, and which I have appreciated."

As the 1990s approached all of Gaskins' appeals were exhausted and no matter how famous he had become, he would never become a *cause celeb*. His date with destiny was fast approaching.

But Peewee would try to carry out one last major crime.

One Last Kill?

If the state of South Carolina thought that tranquilizers and the solitary confinement on death row would be enough to stop Gaskins from attempting to carry out another serious crime and possible murder they were dead wrong.

Weeks before Peewee was executed, a bizarre kidnapping plot was revealed that originated in prison with Gaskins once more being the mastermind.

In this plot Gaskins enlisted the help of some of his criminal colleagues to kidnap the daughter of prosecuting attorney Richard Harpootlian and hold her for ransom. Peewee's potential co-conspirators realized the gravity of the situation and quickly went to the authorities who then revoked most of the remaining privileges Peewee still had.

Peewee's last attempt at retribution and/or escape was thwarted. It was time for him to pay the piper.

A Familiar Companion

As Gaskins' execution date approached he was faced with the gravity of what he had done. Death was always something that followed Gaskins, it was a familiar friend; he was the grim reaper's right hand man for decades, but now the reaper was calling him.

Peewee's final words concerning death were somewhat defiant, but also megalomaniacal. "I am one of the few that truly understands what death and pain are all about," said Gaskins. "I have walked the same path as god. By taking lives and making others afraid of me, I become god's equal. Through killing others, I become my own master. Through my own power I come to my own redemption. Once I seen the miracle light, I didn't never again have to fear or obey the rule of no man or god."

For his execution, Gaskins was brought to the newly built Broad River Correctional Institute (BRCI), also known as the Capital Punishment Facility (CPF), outside Columbia, South Carolina.

Peewee's would be the second execution at BRCI and the only one in 1991.

On the day of his execution, September 6, 1991 Gaskins decided to take destiny into his own hands by cutting his wrists. The suicide attempt was unsuccessful as the prison authorities were able to quickly stitch him up and get him back to death row in time for his one a.m. execution.

The reason for Gaskins' suicide attempt remains unknown, but it probably had to do with one of the essential factors that drive most serial killers – control. By Gaskins own words he was not afraid of death as he stated: “I truly don't mind dying. I've lived a damned full and good life, and I don't believe there's much to death anyhow except peaceful darkness.”

Gaskins did not fear death, he just wanted to have control over one more death!

After Gaskins was strapped into the electric chair he only said, “I'll let my lawyers talk for me, I'm ready to go.”

And with that an electrical surge went through Gaskins body that ended the life of a monster.

South Carolina could breathe easier.

Chapter 8: A Serial Killer Outlier

Earlier in this book, Professor David Wilson was quoted as saying that Donald Henry Gaskins would be a serial killer outlier if he killed as many people as he claimed. The reality is that the number of people Gaskins killed is not what made him an outlier, but it was the way he killed and the victims he chose – pathology and victimology – that made him a serial killer outlier.

A brief examination of Donald Gaskins' serial killer career compared to those of some other notable serial killers along with evidence compiled by experts in the field reveals that Peewee was a true outlier, which ultimately contributed to him possibly being the most dangerous and prolific serial killer in American history.

What is a Serial Killer?

The term *serial murderer* entered the mainstream lexicon in the late 1970s when FBI special agent Robert Ressler first used it to describe the perpetrator, David Berkowitz, in the “Son of Sam” killings. The FBI defines a serial killer as a person who, either alone or with an accomplice, kills at least three people over a period of time with a “cooling off” period between murders.

World history has been plagued with serial killers for centuries as accounts of their depraved deeds can be culled from ancient and medieval sources; but serial killers seem to have found their stride in modern times. Although serial killers have been found on every continent (aside from Antarctica) and nearly every country, they apparently feel particularly at home in the United States.

Beyond the basic definition, serial killers are actually quite diverse in terms of their pathologies and victimologies, although most tend not to deviate from a set pattern.

Numerous academic studies have been conducted over the last few decades in order to better understand the phenomenon of serial killers with one of the results being different systems of classification. Three of the most commonly used classification systems are the Deitz, Holmes, and Rappaport typologies, but several others also exist.

Peewee's Typology

Identifying Donald Henry Gaskins serial killer typology in order to determine if he was an outlier is not a simple task. In order to do this Peewee's, murders should be divided into three categories: the coastal killings, the murder of friends and family, and the murders for hire and profit.

Gaskins' string of coastal killings, although disputed by many law enforcement officials, were clearly murders for pleasure and in Peewee's own words "weekend recreation." According to all of the major typologies Gaskins' coastal killings were indicative of a sexual sadist as he killed "for the sheer pleasure of torturing and murdering . . . in a sexual way," according to Laurence Miller.

By Gaskins' own words many of his coastal murders were spur of the moment events where he was taken over by the combination of his homicidal impulses and the convenience of a victim. These traits are more in line with a disorganized killer, although his often careful disposal of his victim's bodies indicates more forethought and organization.

The murders of Tyner, Bellamy, and others are defined by professionals as "utilitarian" killings and point towards, unlike the coastal killings, a fair amount of planning and organization. The Tyner murder especially was well organized and would have been difficult for someone with a low IQ to commit as Miller notes: "The best of them must possess keen intelligence and the ability to think quickly and flexibly and to restrain impulsive

action.” Despite being driven primarily by financial incentives, Miller points out that “some degree of narcissistic power thrill underlies these assassins’ motivation for continuing in this line of work.”

Finally, the “serious murders” that Gaskins committed on his friends and family falls into the sexual sadist typology. By all accounts Peewee raped and tortured his victims – such as Janice Kirby, Kim Ghelkins, and Doreen Dempsey – for sheer enjoyment and then disposed of their bodies in a partially organized manner.

Also, although Gaskins worked alone for the most part, he worked with others to carry out some of his profit killings, which in some ways sets him apart from other known serial killers.

A Comparative Study

Since Donald Henry Gaskins fits more than one type of serial killer typology it is difficult to compare him to other known serial killers. In terms of his coastal and “serious” killings he was clearly driven by an unnatural lust that culminated in necrophilia and cannibalism, which coincides with the pathology of Jeffery Dahmer, Ted Bundy and John Wayne Gacy.

Peewee differed from those three in his victimology. Although Peewee preferred women, he admitted that some of his coastal victims were boys and young men whom he sexually defiled in a manner similar to his female victims.

Gaskins’ murders for profit also present an interesting case study when compared to other notable serial killers. Although most people usually do not think of contract killers as serial killers, they fit the FBI definition. One of the most prolific contract killers in American history was Richard Kuklinski, who may have killed over 200 men during his career.

Interviews with Kuklinski, nicknamed the “Iceman,” revealed that he felt nothing – remorse or satisfaction – after his murders.

Kuklinski was driven purely by profit, while Gaskins had the twin urges of profit and sadism driving him.

Peewee also killed with partners from time to time, which is not unusual for serial killers. Perhaps one of the most famous serial killer tandems was the duo of Kenneth Bianchi and Angelo Buono, often known as the “Hillside Stranglers,” who raped and murdered ten women in southern California during the late 1970s.

The difference between the Hillside Stranglers and Gaskins was that Gaskins never used partners for his sadistic killings, only for his profit murders.

Of all the best known serial killers, Gaskins’ career most closely mirrored was that of Henry Lee Lucas. Lucas was convicted of murdering eleven people during the 1970s and ‘80s, but he confessed to hundreds more.

Lucas, like Gaskins, killed for both pleasure and profit and also used a partner for many of his murders. Also, Lucas killed men, women, and children like Gaskins.

A notable difference between the two serial killers though was that Gaskins kept most of his killings local, while Lucas travelled throughout the United States leaving a pile of bodies in his wake.

Ultimately it can be seen the Donald Henry Gaskins was a true serial killer outlier. His murders followed similar pathologies and victimologies to previous and later killers, but his killings spread throughout different

categories and typologies, which would have made it difficult for law enforcement to capture him because they would not have known how many killers they were chasing.

That is what makes Donald Henry Gaskins one of the scariest serial killers in American history. In some ways he fit all of the stereotypes of what we think of as a serial killer, but in other ways he defied definition.

Experts believe that at any time there are approximately 200 to 500 serial killers operating at one time in the United States that account for 2000 to 3500 murders a year.

Those are scary numbers! Which one will be the next Donald Henry Gaskins?

Chapter 9: The Legacy of Donald Henry

“Peewee” Gaskins

Today, in the age of the internet it is interesting to put Donald Henry Gaskins’ life into perspective. Gaskins hunted on the highways, backroads, and woods of South Carolina long before the internet existed and even before the FBI first coined the term “serial killer”, but still his legacy persists.

Although Gaskins may not get top billing on most true crime television shows as one of America’s top serial killers, the aura of his evil persists throughout South Carolina. Nearly every South Carolinian over the age of forty knows the name Donald Henry Gaskins and many have tales of how someone they know narrowly avoided the serial killer’s murderous grip.

Peewee himself once said, “I think I been cheated because I’m not truly famous as I deserve to be.”

In the highly connected internet age of today everyone has a chance to get their fifteen minutes of fame and for a lesser known serial killer like Donald Henry Gaskins it has been what he hoped for.

Gaskins now has a legion of fans and followers who can read about his deeds on his Facebook page or go to the conspiracy orientated website

called “The Manifesto of Forbidden Truth” that touts him as a hero.

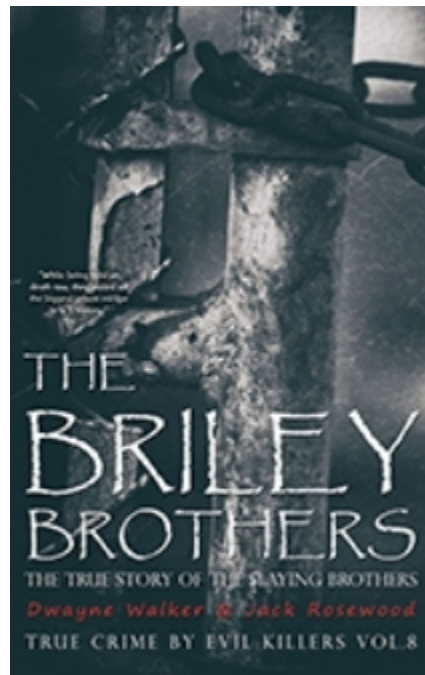
On the “Manifesto’s” website Gaskins is described as one of many “underrated and unjustly obscure philosophers of truth” and “a tortured victim-creation of 20th century Amerikkkan society.” The website displays many quotes by Gaskins and how they relate to some sort of esoteric knowledge.

The irony is obviously lost on the website’s creator. Although Peewee would be delighted that his words and deeds live on through this website, he would be the last person to claim victimhood status.

Donald Henry Gaskins quit being a victim when he killed Hazel Brazell. After that he was a predator; possibly the worst predator in American history.

The Briley Brothers:
The True Story of the Slaying Brothers

Written by
Jack Rosewood
&
Dwayne Walker
Historical Serial Killers and Murderers
True Crime by Evil Killers
Volume 8

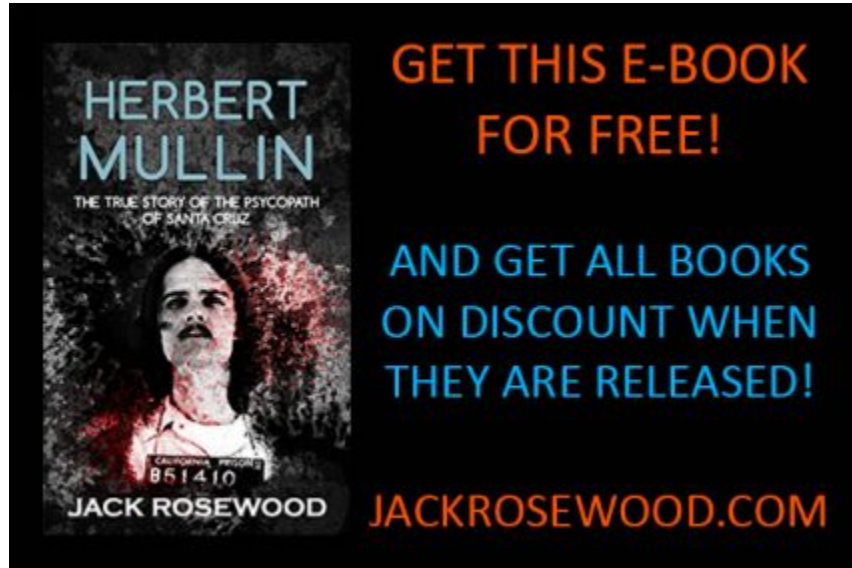


Copyright © 2015 by Wiq Media

ALL RIGHTS RESERVED

No part of this book may be reproduced, stored in a retrieval system, or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic, mechanical, photocopying, recording, scanning, or otherwise, without the prior written permission of the publisher.

GET THE BOOK ABOUT HERBERT MULLIN FOR FREE



Go to www.jackrosewood.com and get this E-Book for free!

Contents

[CHAPTER ONE: Mayhem Discovered](#)

[CHAPTER TWO: Early Crimes](#)

[CHAPTER THREE: Two Survive](#)

[CHAPTER FOUR: More March Madness](#)

[CHAPTER FIVE: Heightened Brutality](#)

[CHAPTER SIX: Casual Killing](#)

[CHAPTER SEVEN: Ring of Truth](#)

[CHAPTER EIGHT: Prime Evil](#)

[CHAPTER NINE: Double Doom](#)

[CHAPTER TEN: Escape from “Space E”](#)

[CHAPTER ELEVEN: Aftermath—Sins of the Fathers](#)

[EPILOGUE: For Sale—Haunted House with No Ghosts](#)

CHAPTER ONE:

Mayhem Discovered

The anonymous-looking apartment house on Barton Avenue hadn't been opened for three baking-hot days. Opening the door, the investigators were blasted with a wave of heat and rot—overwhelming. They had experienced this before—everything but the snakes writhing across the bloody floor.

The investigators got out fast, and called for animal-control officers to subdue and remove the snakes. Later, after this was done, it had to be admitted the killers knew something, however minimal, about psychological warfare. Releasing from their confinement Harvey Wilkerson's pet snakes had been nothing short of successfully annoying, and potentially dangerous to anyone entering the crime scene, as well as capable of damaging and/or obscuring crucial evidence. Two puppies had also been running loose through the house.

Prosecutor Warren Von Schuch moved through the putrid oven the house had become, his shoes sticking to the blood-gummed floors. Later at home, breathing cool clean air, he would find his clothes so saturated with the reek of blood and decomposition they must be stuffed into the trash.

All three residents of the Barton Avenue home, among them a pregnant young woman and her five-year-old son, were dead.

The next day, Sheriff C.T. Woody Jr., at the time an investigator with Richmond, Virginia police, chased a car driven by Linwood Briley. Radio chatter was constant, and no one involved could figure out how the fleeing car stayed one step ahead, as though its driver were a mind-reader.

Exasperated, and worried about the safety of other drivers and pedestrians, Robert Rice made a tough decision: “Just put him into a pole!” Linwood bailed out—abandoning his father and a younger man as the vehicle smashed into a utility pole. Both survived.

Processing the wrecked car, police discovered Linwood (considered the most intelligent of the brothers) had been monitoring their communications with a scanner.

In custody the young man, Duncan Meekins, volunteered chilling information about his friends the Briley brothers, which earned a plea agreement and spared him from the electric chair. No one could comprehend why this good-looking young man with high academic standing would participate in such catastrophically horrible activities. Then again, many people would soon be saying roughly the same about the Brileys.

Meekins himself was sentenced to life-plus-80 years in prison, and was sent under an assumed name to a facility away from the Brileys. In May 2009, Briley gang prosecutors Robert J. Rice and Warren Von Schuch told a news journalist they were “miffed” that Meekins had not been released, since his plea bargain and sentence were designed to make him eligible for parole as early as 1991.

Of the gang, Meekins was the “luckiest.” Even though he was the sole “witness” able to provide first-hand evidence at the trial that Linwood Briley had pulled the trigger causing the murder in question, Linwood tried to discredit everything said by his former accomplice.

Meekins' testimony, claimed Linwood, was total nonsense because the youngest member of the gang had been bribed by his plea bargain, which would save him from a death penalty in the Wilkerson murders. Soon the

counsel asked about this plea bargain, and it developed for all present to hear that the details were already documented with Linwood's attorneys, as well as with the trial court—before Meekins even stood in the room.

From 742 F. 2d 155—Briley v. L. Bass: “The terms of such plea bargain were that the Commonwealth would (1) in one of the Barton Avenue murders, in which the group was involved and in which Meekins had been the 'triggerman' not ask for the death penalty against Meekins, and (2) in all the others in which Meekins had participated with the Briley brothers, including the one under review here, Meekins was not to receive more than any other defendants received and (3) finally, Meekins was to testify 'truthfully' in all the cases in which the group had been involved. When asked about the plea bargain in this case, Meekins responded that 'for this case' the agreement provided that he was to receive no more time on conviction than any other defendant involved in the prosecution.”

Especially disturbing was Meekins's telling police that James Briley, eager to outdo his brothers, had returned to the crime scene and carried off the TV, on his way to the door maneuvering around the bodies.

James Briley had nearly demonic strength and endurance, as police officer Cecil L. Glunt witnessed after exchanging gun fire with him in 1973. Glunt was chasing Briley after a convenience store robbery, jumped a fence, and had a close-quarters gun fight—shooting Briley in the side and knocking him to the ground. Incredibly, the wounded man quickly got to his feet, ran 12 blocks and was taken away by friends in a car.

This vitality must have been of great use the night of October 19, 1979.

Hours before on that very day, James Briley had declared to a judge that he would keep a low profile. After all, James was on parole from a conviction in 1973 for malicious wounding and robbery. Later, he and Linwood stood

outside the family home, Linwood wondering whether the green Chevy van parked at the curb might be a police surveillance post. James argued against this, so the two stepped up and tried peering through the tinted windows—even rocked the van. When that got no results, James produced his gun, aimed at the sky and fired. A second shot punched into the lawn. Still nothing. Feeling vindicated, James headed them toward their car and they left. No way would any cop sit still for shots fired.

Unknown to the two Brileys, Henrico police investigator Shirley Englehart was on duty in the van, and had a front-row seat to the whole exchange. Surveillance continued, even from helicopter, but the gang somehow slipped through. That night, fueled by pot-smoking and drinking, James, his two brothers and Meekins discussed robbing Harvey Wilkerson. Mission planned, they headed out, but once at the Barton Avenue target had to hide in a shed to avoid nearby people. Finally these left the front of the home, but Wilkerson, 26 (a supposed friend), bolted his door on sight of the gang. The Brileys and their accomplice walked toward the house, and stood at the door.

Inexplicably, though likely due to fright, Wilkerson unlocked the entrance and let them in.

What happened next didn't take long.

James, Linwood, Anthony, and their 16-year-old neighbor Duncan Meekins overpowered the three occupants, subdued and silenced them with electrical tape. In the kitchen, Linwood raped 23-year-old Judy Barton—5 months pregnant—as did Duncan Meekins, then pulled her into the living room with the others. Following a haphazard search for anything worth stealing, Linwood walked out of the house.

James shot Judy Barton in the head four times, and ordered Meekins: “You got to get one.”

A pillow was mashed against Harvey Wilkerson's head, and Meekins fired a shot.

James then shot 5-year-old Harvey Wayne Barton, who was on the couch, in the head at point-blank range.

Law officers actively surveilling the neighborhood heard the gunshots, could even see the gang hurry back to their car. Unfortunately, police could not determine the gun-fire's location. Linwood drove for a while and, listening to the scanner, heard of the pursuit. Stopping on Hazelhurst Avenue, the gang climbed out. Linwood tossed the shotgun brought from home over a fence, and Meekins looked for somewhere to hide the .22 rifle taken from Wilkerson. Not long after, hearing that police were watching with a scope, the gang ditched the car. Locals eventually found the guns and a holster, and gave these to the police.

Meekins told authorities that Linwood and James held the money stolen from the murdered family. When this was divided at the Briley's house, Meekins walked away with less than \$100.

Given the mix of disorganization, randomness, and occasional cunning, it should come as no surprise that authorities spent months—after the arrests—connecting the bloody dots that trailed between the scattered victims (11 known; possibly 20, including those injured, and the undiscovered dead).

Twenty-six-year-old Harvey Wilkerson himself had more than flirted with criminal activity. A conviction in 1973, for possession of marijuana, earned him a three-month sentence that was later suspended, but he had to pay a \$250 fine. In 1974, however, he did not fare so well. A conviction for LSD possession resulted in a 12-month jailing. Also that same year, Wilkerson

was arrested and charged with armed robbery but—again—the charges eventually were dropped. Oddly, Wilkerson had trained to be a barber, and records state this is how he was employed, beginning in summer 1976, after a period of probation.

It seems reasonable to wonder what sort of life Judy Barton and five-year-old Harvey might have had if Wilkerson had moved the family far from Richmond.



The actual stakeout planning began around 2:00 Sunday afternoon, following the Wilkerson killings on Friday night. Richmond Detective Sgt. Norman A. Harding met with fellow detectives, Henrico County's special-action police force, and a few top-tier Richmond police officials. All present agreed that an arrest warrant for Linwood Briley should be acquired. Four hours later, the team were out watching for a purplish Chevy Nova.

Inexplicably, even though arrest warrants had been obtained, James and Anthony entered Richmond police headquarters and turned themselves in.

All told, within 24 hours of locating and investigating the Wilkerson crime scene, police arrested Linwood, James, younger brother Anthony, and Duncan Meekins. Middle-sibling James received the death sentence after being charged with three counts of capital murder, four of discharging a firearm during commission of a felony, and one count of robbery.

At that point, Linwood, Anthony, and Meekins' charges mirrored those of James, excepting those for murder were not capital. Beyond this, the Brileys were held in the city jail and scheduled for hearings in Richmond General District Court, bond for each set at \$319,000—by 2015 standards, nearly \$1,000,000. Duncan Meekins, who had agreed to turn state's

evidence, was taken to the Juvenile Detention Home until his hearing before the Richmond Juvenile and Domestic Relations District Court.

“All three men appeared calm and spoke in sure voices,” reported journalists Andrew Petkofsky and Alan Cooper on October 23, 1979.

“James Briley was dressed in a print shirt and dark trousers. He had a neatly trimmed large Afro haircut. His two brothers were dressed in jeans and pullover shirts. Both looked tired and wore their hair in cornrow styles.”

The terrified regional populace locked away personal firearms and unbolted most of their doors, if not the haunting sense of outrage and horror.

“There are homicides, and there are homicides . . .” commented V. Stuart Cook, who oversaw the 1979 investigation, and witnessed the execution of Linwood Briley. “What a brutal bunch of sons of bitches they were.”

Other sources have reported that the murder of the Wilkersons is without doubt the most vicious and gruesome of the Briley gang's spree, and testament to the range of their soulless insanity. No right-thinking person can disagree with that. This book opened with accounts of the final case, and will now explore in chronological order the 7-month rampage of murder, rape, robbery, arson, and its aftermath. For not only did the Brileys commit the worst atrocities in the history of Richmond, Virginia; Linwood and James planned and carried out, in 1984, the largest death-row escape on U.S. Record.

CLICK HERE
TO CONTINUE

CHAPTER TWO:

Early Crimes

James Briley Sr., described as the only person of whom James Jr., Linwood, and Anthony were afraid, padlocked himself into his bedroom at night.

The Briley brothers, by all reports, were raised in a conventional two-parent home in the 3100 block of Fourth Avenue in Richmond, Virginia's Highland Park (only several blocks from the Wilkerson apartment house). They performed occasional chores for neighbors such as lawn-care and auto maintenance, and were considered polite (defense attorney Deborah Wyatt said of Linwood: “[He was] not an unenjoyable person to be around.”). Opposed to this notion, Christopher Morgan, long-time friend of Briley victim John Gallaher, said acquaintances who attended school with the brothers described them as bullies.

The Brileys' lives certainly didn't start that way. James Sr. was a hard worker, employed by the School Street Concrete Block Factory. Bertha, their mother, had a solid job with Virginia Union University at The Grill.

Mayor of Richmond, Dwight Jones, said of her: “Mrs. Briley is one of the sweetest ladies you'd ever want to meet.”

Mr. Briley once said he believed that his oldest son, Linwood, was nearly a genius. He draws a complete blank trying to comprehend the monstrous acts of his sons. Bertha couldn't endure their lifestyle and the craziness surrounding it, which is why she eventually parted ways with the family.

For pets the boys kept tarantulas, piranhas, and boa constrictors, and might have indulged in animal torture—a common element in profiles of many serial murderers. Another aspect is their collection of newspaper articles that reported the gang's crime spree. The brothers' choice in pets might strike some as strange, but plenty of boys and young men are fascinated by exotic and/or dangerous creatures. This predilection comes into play only when taken in context with the bigger picture: how the Brileys spent leisure time, and what they most enjoyed.

“If they hadn't enjoyed it,” said forensic psychologist and author Dr. Katherine Ramsland, “they wouldn't have kept doing it.”

This statement might very well answer the question of *why* the Briley gang killed, with no deep psychological insight required. A chilling truth in a field of study where so many so-called serial killers are portrayed as victims of monstrous childhood abuse. Of course, many are; but the Brileys stand out, if accounts of their childhood are trustworthy. (Mrs. Briley did separate from her husband when the brothers were in their teens, but there is no overt evidence of this serving as a “trigger” event). It must be noted that several of the mental health professionals who have studied the case conjecture that Linwood, who at 16 shot and killed elderly neighbor Orline Christian with a .22 rifle, probably developed into a clinical psychopath in early adolescence. Younger brothers James and Anthony—and Duncan Meekins—made their own decisions to cause suffering and worse, but it remains an open question whether they would have become killers without Linwood's example.

Joe Jackson, author of *Life on Death Row in America*, noted that “Linwood had a kind of magnetism to him . . . people were scared of James.” And

when the Brileys reached their teenaged years, “[S]omething changed . . . there certainly seemed to be a lack of empathy.”



In 1971, sixteen-year-old Linwood Briley had loving parents, a comfortable home and—from a high dormer window—clear sight-line to a particular house and alley across the street.

Alone upstairs, he raised a .22-caliber rifle to the window, aimed, and fired a single shot at elderly neighbor (and recent widow) Orlene Christian as she hung laundry on a clothesline.

Her relatives and friends presumed the combination of age, grief, and dwindling health were the culprits, until an anomalous wound was spotted in Mrs. Christian's armpit.

A shrewd detective reviewed the autopsy report, made notes, and visited the alley. He sawed a 2-by-4 into a length matching that of the victim's height, bored a hole at the kill-shot's entry angle, and determined the shooter had fired from the Briley residence.

Linwood's future self might have been proud of the unerring accuracy responsible for the killing. In reality, upon the murder weapon's discovery, he remarked: “I heard she had heart problems, she would have died soon anyway.”

For this unthinkable crime, Linwood received a wrist-slap sentence of one year in reform school.

As Dr. Katherine Ramsland observed, there seems little doubt that 16-year-old Linwood was “. . . a fledgling psychopath.”

Two years later, in 1973, middle-brother James shot at a policeman during a chase following a convenience store robbery cited in Chapter One of this

book. Again, as with Linwood, lenient sentencing put 16-year-old James in juvenile hall.

One wonders what sort of message this tolerance of extreme violence and obvious psychological disorder sent to the youngest Briley, Anthony.

Sadly, the murderous response to that message would explode six years later. . . .

CHAPTER THREE:

Two Survive

There are only two known survivors of a Briley brothers (in this case, Linwood and Anthony) attack: William and Virginia Bucher, both now deceased.

Unless heretofore unknown survivors and/or witnesses materialize, the crimes committed on the night of March 12, 1979 mark the beginning of a seven-month rampage. In what would become practically the only signature of the killers—random selection of victims—Linwood walked up to the front door of the Bucher's compact Lafayette Avenue home and knocked. William Bucher later stated he thought the newspaper delivery boy might be collecting, so wasn't hesitant to open his door. He did this, and could see a stranger standing there.

The young man said his car had broken down. Would Bucher be kind enough to let him call Triple-A for assistance?

Mr. Bucher decided to help, and asked for the man's club card. Linwood pushed rushed in and grabbed Bucher—Virginia saw her husband had a gun to his head and a knife at his throat. He would lose an ear, Virginia was warned, if she cried out.

Linwood signaled, and younger brother Anthony entered the house. One of them held a gun on the Buchers, who were taken to separate rooms and shoved face down to the floor, hands roped behind their backs. Years later, William Bucher said his asking whichever man restrained him not to do so overly tight—and the man obeying—is what saved he and Virginia's lives.

Accounts differ as to whether this gang member was Anthony Briley or Duncan Meekins.

The attackers tore through the house, taking jewelry, a CB radio, a .32-caliber handgun, police scanner (possibly the same used to evade police in October), the couple's two televisions and more. In an attempt to silence the two witnesses, lighter fluid was sprayed in the rooms, on furniture, some clothing under a table, and onto William Bucher himself. The gang marched out, loaded their car, and drove away. One of them took the Bucher's car, later found abandoned.

Fire blazed, and the smoke alarm shrieked. William Bucher slipped out a hand from his bonds, ran to the kitchen for a knife, and freed Virginia. Had William's wrists been soundly secured he and his wife would have suffered an agonizing death.

Interviewed at age 88, William Bucher said, "I felt doggone lucky."



A little-known report of a harrowing brush with the Brileys comes from "KW," who shared the following account with author Lee Lofland (veteran police investigator and former officer with the state of Virginia's prison system), on Lofland's *The Graveyard Shift* blog. Since this is such an obscure report, the text is presented with minimal editing:

"Lee, I just read your incredible description of the Brileys, the escape, and the executions.

"In 1979 I was working for the VA Medical Center Richmond as a Pulmonary Biochemical Research Technician. Our job was to anesthetize dogs, and recreate an old veteran vomiting and aspirating, and to develop some timeline when the membranes of the alveoli broke and flooded the lungs with blood, lymph and vomitus.

"Unfortunately, I was also working on a serious drug habit. Cocaine and sedatives combined with liquor, pot, stupidity and testosterone are more powerful than Long Island Ice Tea. Trust me.

“I was apprehended by VA Security and Chesterfield County Police with 20cc’s of Phenobarbital, 10 Placidyl capsules and a bunch of the VA’s Insulin Syringes. Needless to say, I’ve never been rehired at the VA. I was hired at a glue factory on the Southside of Richmond. We made the resin and polymer adhesive that sealed cigarette packs and cartons for Phillip Morris.

“The plant I worked at was two blocks from the Log Cabin Dance hall where the Brileys abducted Johnny G, who was such a favorite DJ of mine that his death affected me like having lost a family member. 'Johnny G from Tennessee, WXGI, Richmond.'

“My best friend in that plant was a guy about my age who had spent most of his life incarcerated. Everybody in the 'Glue Pot' had done time for various misunderstandings with local law enforcement.

“My 'Friend,' I am sure, had spent time at Beaumont Youth Correctional Center with one or more of the Brileys. His most recent bit was served at Powhatan Correctional Center. He did 3 years for assisting in the armed robbery of a grocery store. I know that he was the one who conspired with Linwood and James to rob the apartment that was occupied by 5 adults and one child. I went there with the promise of Preludin, or 'Bam' on the street, and reefer with 151 rum.

“His girlfriend was the dealer. Big girl about a cool 350. Went from Petite to Junior-Plenty overnight. I ran out of cigarettes which we bought at the plant every Thursday morning when a guy from Phillip Morris showed up with grocery bags full of untaxed Marlboro and Merit (\$2.50 a carton).

“As I approached the back door to the apartment, the boys (Brileys) were coming in with the most bizarre disguise I had ever seen. They had taken 1/2-inch white adhesive tape and marked their faces like Indians wearing warpaint. It was so striking and scary that, at first, I didn’t see the pistol grip 12-gauge that Linwood was carrying. I soon took care to keep an eye on it. James and either Anthony or Meekins had two .38 revolvers pointed at my face and chest. Linwood had the 12 at the back of my head.

“I assured them that I 'wasn’t gonna act a fool.' They wanted me to get them into that apartment. I told them I would do anything they wanted, but there was a 4-year-old in there. Ol’ Linny hit me in the back of the skull on that roundish bone at the base at the neck, and said, 'Fk dat kid.'**

“They ordered everybody on the floor and Ol’ Big Girl couldn’t manage. She kept screaming, 'Oh Lawd Jesus!!!!' I told her to tell him where the dope was. He had her baby by one arm up in the air with the 12 pointed at his chest. The Preludin was in a baggie rolled up like a tight joint and had transparent fishing line wrapped around and suspended in the toilet just under where the lid went on. If you didn’t look hard, you

wouldn't see it. The other two robbed everybody of cash and jewelry while Linny went to the bathroom for the pills.

"They were in and out in 60 seconds. One of the other jackasses jumped up screaming at me, 'Why didn't you say something?' I replied, 'What? Like goodbye?' 'I ain't dying for your no-good ass.' I made sure that they understood that I saved their f**kin' lives by keeping the boys calm.

"Two months later, I go out to get the morning paper, and all over the front page are Linwood and James. I stood in my boots, trembling. My body was actually convulsing when I realized who I had met. The angels were with me that night at Dove and Barton Streets. It was my last visit.

"Everything I have told you is 100% true. I wouldn't bother to write, if it weren't. I am really taken by your work, and will follow from now on. Thank you for your contribution to society. Now, if we can only get the idiots off the phone or TV and have 'em read a book.

"God bless you.

KW"

Given what is now documented about the Briley gang, their affection for causing fright and penchant for robbery, KW's anonymous statement rings with shocking authenticity—and displays the brothers' and Meekins' frozen empathic void.

If dated with accuracy, KW's encounter took place sometime in mid-to-late August of 1979, putting it after Linwood's July 4th killing (by dropping a cinderblock on his head) of 17-year-old Christopher Phillips, and before the September 14th abduction and shooting of disk jockey John "Johnny G" Gallaher. KW couldn't have known that the vicious baby-dangling crazies with their shotguns, revolvers, and bizarre adhesive-tape warpaint had by that date already murdered four people. Probably this ignorance worked in his favor. Otherwise, at sight of the Briley gang, he might have panicked and flipped their collective kill-switch.

Beyond Duncan Meekins' ultimately turning state's evidence, and despite the good reports on his character, school achievements, and public behavior before the arrests, this incident alone reveals those aspects as little more than masks of civility, behind which lurked the same empty rage that compelled the Brileys to murder on a whim . . . simply because they could.

If today we are to accept the shameless theorizing of media pundits who claim mass shootings are on the rise, than we can only wonder what, exactly, might have been absent from Duncan Meekins' seemingly conventional life that so charged his fascination with Linwood, James Jr., and Anthony Briley.

CHAPTER FOUR:

More March Madness

March proved an active month for the Briley gang, resulting in William and Virginia Bucher's near-death experience, the murder of Michael McDuffie, and the dates of 12 and 21 assuming an eerie mirror-image aspect.

There is also a very obscure report from March 31, 1979, reporting that Linwood Briley shot a 28-year-old man, Edric Alvin Clark, in his home during a drug-related argument. Duncan Meekins purportedly was an accomplice. This account is mentioned only in a single newspaper article listing the murders.

Also from this article is report of yet another killing: that of 32-year-old Thomas Saunders, this time with Meekins pulling the trigger in the middle of a “scuffle” also involving James and Linwood Briley.

Michael W. McDuffie, who lived in a Richmond suburb, probably was enjoying some downtime on March 21, 1979 from his stressful job servicing vending machines for Canteen of Virginia Inc. Long before the term “home invasion” was coined, McDuffie was introduced to the concept when the uninvited Brileys assaulted and shot him, robbed the house, and dumped McDuffie's body into his car.

CHAPTER FIVE:
Heightened Brutality

On April 9, 1979, the Brileys and Duncan Meekins were cruising around north Richmond, when they noticed 76-year-old Mary Gowen walking out of her daughter's residence where she'd been baby-sitting.

The gang followed Mary all the way across town to her home, a three-storey redbrick complex in an upscale neighborhood. Mary parked in the street, climbed out of her car, and stepped along the sidewalk toward her corner apartment. She must have been worn out from baby-sitting, and didn't notice the four young men moving behind her.

They rushed forward and shoved Mary into a stairwell—one of them beat her and she fell. Each gang member raped her. She was shot in the head at close range, robbed, and left to die.

Sadly, fate dealt a brutal hand, but Mary somehow managed to crawl up two flights of stairs. Nancy Gowen, Mary's daughter, recalled: “[M]y [14-year-old] daughter is hearing this noise and opens the door on the chain and finds her grandmother, who says three words: ‘I’ve been raped.’ She went into a coma, remained in a coma for 90 days, died on July 2, buried her on the fourth of July.”

Nancy Gowen, a social worker, planned on being present for the October 12, 1979 execution of Linwood Briley. When the day arrived, though, something troubled her conscience. “After my mother was murdered, the impending execution of one of the men responsible for her death only added to my pain.”

Approximately 500 people (representing both sides of the capital-punishment issue) arrived at the State Penitentiary that evening. The abolitionists kept a candle-light vigil and, inside, a scattering of inmates

donned black armbands. So profound was Nancy's unease, she attended an ecumenical service before the execution, still unsure whether she favored the death penalty.

Following the ceremony, she approached the group of death-penalty opponents protesting outside the prison, and raised one of their placards. “Killing is wrong,” she said. “Taking life does not send the message that it's wrong to kill . . . [t]he execution would only feed the culture of violence in this country—a country that has already taken so many lives. I think it's something wrong with our system. It took me many years, but my journey has led me to know that all life matters, and that violence in any form is unacceptable.”

Unfortunately, the traumatizing horror of losing her mother would not be Nancy's final experience with serial murder. Ten years after the execution of Linwood Briley, Nancy Gowen would not only meet another of Richmond, Virginia's worst serial killers, but would share a piano bench with him.

At that time homeless men, and elderly women, were being found murdered. A few of the deaths actually were written off as by natural causes, until the flat confessions of a homeless schizophrenic named Leslie Leon Burchart. Some of the female victims had been discovered at home in the bathtub, cleaning solutions poured over their towel-strangled forms. Some callous wit called these the Golden Years murders.

Nancy Gowen spent the 1980s and 1990s doing social work, dedicating her life to meeting the downtrodden and mentally ill on their own terms—the street—and provide them relief no others could—or would. One of these was off-his-medication Leslie Burchart, of whom Gowen remarked: “He played beautifully, soft and smooth. He was like Mr. Meek . . . I couldn't believe such a gentle soul was accused of all those horrific murders.”

Burchart died in prison.

As if by a genuine miracle, Nancy Gowen was spared the fate of her mother.

Gowen apparently has related her experiences to audiences eager for both catharsis and possible solutions for dealing humanely with monstrous realities. She says people want to hear her story, no matter the personal pain involved in its telling.

“When my mother was murdered, I tried holding my feelings in at first. People kept telling me, 'You have to let it go and get on with your life,' and so I did.”

Despite this vow, suppressed anger roiled within, the thought that any human could commit such evil. “I was angry, of course, that someone could do something like this. My mother and I had been estranged at the time, so guilt mixed in with the anger. I could never make things right with my mother, because this person had taken her away.”

CHAPTER SIX:
Casual Killing

On July 4, 1979, the Briley gang noticed someone looking into the windows of Linwood's car, and made to check out the situation.

Suspecting the young man standing there might have ambitions of acquiring a free-of-charge vehicle, the members confronted 17-year-old Christopher Phillips, and didn't allow much time for him to answer questions. To date, it is unknown whether any even were asked.

The Brileys rushed Phillips and a struggle ensued. Quickly the stranger was shoved down, and manhandled into a conveniently empty backyard. Phillips cried out for help, which angered the gang—especially Linwood. Uncharacteristically, the eldest Briley did not draw a firearm and shoot Phillips. Instead, a cinderblock was found and dropped onto his head, instantly killing him.

CHAPTER SEVEN:
Ring of Truth

Mayo Island, less than half-a-mile long, is currently a privately owned property holding a parking lot and recycling center. In September 1979 an abandoned paper mill stood there, unsecured and easily accessed by taking the Mayo Bridge (U.S. Highway 360) across the James River. The rusting ruin, like others scattered throughout America, was exactly the sort of structure that attracts those looking for privacy and/or adventure. Anything could happen there, and no one the wiser.

The Log Cabin was a popular South Richmond nightclub and restaurant. John “Johnny G” Gallaher, well-known country music DJ for WXGI, spent weekends playing bass guitar with local bands. On one of those usually fun nights, September 14, the band stopped for a break. As noted by long-time friend Christopher Morgan (son of retired detective Leroy Morgan who interrogated Linwood Briley), and acquaintance of a few of the Briley's high school classmates, Gallaher was not a smoker, and on that night stepped outside behind the establishment for a few minutes of fresh air and quiet.

Earlier that evening, the Briley brothers and Duncan Meekins decided they wanted to venture out into the Richmond night and find someone to rob. Their months of predatory experience infused the gang with a sense of invulnerability and, as noted by investigators, robbery had become incidental to the crime spree—an “excuse” to cover for the real thrill of murdering vulnerable people unlikely to be much of a threat.

Gathering a sawed-off shotgun and high-caliber rifle, the Brileys and Meekins climbed into Linwood's purple Chevy Nova and drove toward South Richmond. On Jefferson Davis Highway, not far from the James

River, they noticed the Log Cabin, slowed, and parked nearby. Concealing themselves in bushes and rough growth behind the nightclub, the gang waited for an appropriate (intoxicated) victim to emerge from the rear door. The door opened, and John Gallaher stepped into the darkness. Linwood burst from hiding and raised his rifle—forced Gallaher onto the ground and took his wallet and car keys.

Linwood tossed the stolen keys to Meekins and ordered the teen to locate Gallaher's Lincoln Continental, get inside, and drive it up to the scene. Linwood got his victim standing and, with Meekins' help, shoved him into the Lincoln's trunk and closed it. The two climbed into the front seat and drove away south from the Log Cabin. James and Anthony Briley followed in their brother's vehicle.

Linwood and Meekins took U.S. Highway 360 to the 14th Street Bridge, where it crosses the James River, and turned onto the property then dominated by the looming paper mill. The others nosed in behind them. The Lincoln's trunk was opened, and Gallaher made to climb out. He fell, and (according to Meekins' testimony) as he struggled to his feet Linwood took the opportunity to shoot him point-blank in the head.

Back at the Log Cabin, Johnny G's fellow musicians and friends wondered why he had yet to return from break, and went out to look for him. This behavior, they agreed, was out of character for “Johnny G from Tennessee”—wholly reliable and consistent in his words and actions. Many people (as attested by family friends Christopher and Lynn Morgan) loved the gentle man, his musicianship, and radio show, and the selfless habit he had of caring for others, be it helping with home-work, trimming a Christmas tree, or simply bringing more light into hanging out and watching Sunday afternoon football on TV.

The Briley gang dragged Gallaher to the river, and rolled him into the black churning waters. Fewer than 20 minutes had gone by since the initial attack.

The group got into Gallaher's Lincoln, headed back into Richmond and drove aimlessly until the gas gauge neared empty. Back on Mayo Island, they stripped the car of items deemed valuable, and there abandoned it.

On Saturday, September 15th, Gallaher's car was found. Detective Jim Gaudet suspected that the DJ would be found in the trunk, and forced it open. By this time, investigators were close to certain that Gallaher had gone missing due to some violent crime, yet had no evidence backing this. Processing the Lincoln, the team discovered a fingerprint behind one door panel, probably left during the stripping and burglary—which netted the criminals six dollars in cash, a CB radio, antenna, and who knew what else. The interior panel must have been pried open in a reckless exploration for stereo speakers.

After a three-day search, Gallaher still had yet to be found. Several days later, though, some men fishing discovered the body, which likely had been caught in submerged tree branches and river debris. Sam Marks, at the time part-owner of the Log Cabin, remarked: “It was rough. I never felt the same about the place after that. Somehow, I felt responsible—the fact that [Gallaher] was playing at my place.”

The city of Richmond, after six months of the as-yet unknown killers' rampage, was living in constant fear. Worse, no pattern connected the assaults, rapes, robberies and murders. Young, old, white, black male, female—anyone might be selected for slaughter. With the Barton Avenue Wilkerson murders a month in the future, police investigators still had not connected John Gallaher's abduction and murder to the equally gruesome and sadistic killings dating back to March.

The Briley brothers and Duncan Meekins remained deadly ciphers to the city, until Sheriff C.T. Woody Jr. began the car chase that ended in the arrests. As late as May 2009, retired detective Leroy Morgan still was haunted by the murder of his good friend John Gallaher. Morgan was called in to interrogate Linwood Briley, and happened to notice he wore a strangely familiar watch and ring. Morgan felt sudden nausea when he recognized the turquoise ring—and watch—that once were worn by Gallaher. In fact, the detective had accompanied him the day of the ring purchase!

Linwood spouted insulting words, and Morgan nearly exploded. “I’m not a violent person, but I sure could have . . . well, it wouldn’t have taken much for me to have jumped him.”

Morgan admits he was told by a comrade to reel in his rage. But the discovery of ring and watch was crucial to solving the Gallaher case. “I got some satisfaction out of that. Yes, I did.”

Upon Linwood and James Briley’s 1984 escape from death row, Morgan was offered police protection—and gave a steely rejection. For home defense he kept a .357 Magnum. If the Brileys paid a visit, it would be their last.

CHAPTER EIGHT:
Prime Evil

Another example of the Briley gang's random brutality is their treatment of 62-year-old nurse Mary Wilfong.

On September 30, 1979 (two weeks after the John Gallaher abduction and murder), the gang decided to follow Wilfong to her small Henrico County home in suburban Richmond. Details on this case are scant, but it is known that the devoted nurse was accosted as she strode along the sidewalk leading to her front door. Linwood carried a baseball bat, and used it to beat the woman to death.

Entering the residence, the gang scoured it for valuables. As was done with Mary Gowen (excepting rape), Mary Wilfong was left to die at the entrance of her home.

Inexplicably, at the Wilfong murder trial, Linwood's girlfriend “testified that they were together elsewhere during the time that the murder occurred.” This same source mentions that none of the gang's girlfriends “sold them out,” and indeed thought highly of them. The Briley's neighbors too had a hard time believing the brothers were capable of the despicable acts for which they were arrested.

CHAPTER NINE:

Double Doom

During the first week of October, 1979, neighbors concerned about the well-being of two elderly Fifth Avenue residents, 79-year-old Blanche Page and her boarder Charles Garner, 59, telephoned Richmond police for a safety check. Page was known to be partially paralyzed, and rarely left the house.

Police drove out to 3109 Fifth Avenue, not expecting anything out of the ordinary. Older people often quite voluntarily chose to not venture outdoors for days at a time. What they found was beyond imagination.

“The thing that struck me as soon as I walked in the door,” recalled Stuart Cook, former Head of Homicide, “[was seeing] up the stairwell . . . the whole wall and steps were just covered in blood—all the way up.”

Charles Garner was found in the kitchen. “You never forget the smell of death,” reported then prosecutor Robert Rice. “When I walked into that kitchen, it was just rampant. You could just smell it. You knew it. I’ll never forget. . . .”

The horrendous damage to Garner seemed to indicate he had been singled out for a particularly vicious and agonizing death. Some major trauma appeared to have been caused by a baseball bat. Additional insult, though, was carried out with five knives, a fork, and scissors. The last two items had been left protruding from Garner's body. Pages from a telephone book had been dropped onto his back and ignited.

Upstairs, in Blanche Page's bedroom, yet another horrific scene was discovered. “Every wall in that room was covered with blood,” said Stuart Cook. “It looked like a slaughterhouse . . .”

In the bed lay Blanche Page, as if sleeping; except she had been bludgeoned to death with the baseball bat used against Garner. “They didn't just hit her,” recalled former detective Jim Gaudet. “They kept beating on her. I don’t care how long you've been a policeman . . . that's hard to see and take. Because what somebody can do to a human body is just unbelievable.”

Rice concurred. “This was not just murder. This was overkill.”

Later it was obscurely reported that Charles Garner was suspected of having been involved in some unspecified “vice-related” activity. Perhaps this explains the extreme brutality of his end; perhaps not. The Briley home was located only two blocks from 5109 Fifth Avenue. When authorities finally arrested the Briley gang later in October, and learned how they consistently snuffed robbery witnesses, apparently the Garner speculations were dropped, or became part of another investigation separate from the murders.

A little-known element about the Briley case is that one of their final victims, Harvey Wilkerson, was a known dealer of the narcotic Preludin—a heroin substitute. Whether Charles Garner had engaged in selling drugs is not publicly known. Since the later Wilkerson killings began with a motive of robbery and ended in murder, perhaps the Briley gang was after Harvey's Preludin profits. Given the unthinkable violence unleashed in the Wilkerson residence, the assumed “special treatment” of Garner might have been incidental, merely another display of the serial killers' psychopathy.

CHAPTER TEN:
Escape from “Space E”

“You can't take nothing for granted,” said Prince A. Thomas Jr., Mecklenburg prison guard, in a July 1994 interview. “The only reason you walk out of here every day is because the inmates let you walk out. . . . I'm very aware of that.”

Walking perimeter outside the 20-foot fence, Thomas spoke with the dead-pan gravity of all trauma victims. He was one of the 14 employees—stripped naked, restrained, and locked in a cell—taken prisoner during the May 31, 1984 death-row escape of the so-called Mecklenburg Six, the masterminds of which were Linwood and James Briley. The rest of the group were Lem D. Tuggle, 32, and convicted murderer; Earl Clanton Jr., 29, strangler of a librarian; Willie Leroy Jones, 26, convicted of robbery and the murder of two senior citizens; Derick L. Peterson, 22, who had killed a grocery store employee.

With four-and-a-half years of little else to do or think, Linwood and James were able to hatch a near-perfect plan. In truth, their plan *was* a success. Getting away with it, though, proved too much even for two minds so cunning and surprisingly organized. In May 1984 there were 24 men jailed on death row (or “Space E,” its official designation). Of these, roughly 12 were aware of the brothers' crazy plan, and only six stuck it out to the bitter end.

How did six locked-down men, with no access to tools, and surrounded 24 hours per day by guards, manage to break out of what was then touted as an “escape-proof” facility?

Observation; memorization; manipulation; luck—and human error on the part of prison employees. Months, if not years, were spent watching and recording guard assignments, names, shift changes, eavesdropping, and

monitoring conversations heard on an intercom. Makeshift knives were fashioned from available materials, inserted into wall cracks, and painted over during routine maintenance. Even though the inmates who determined to break out had—when the day came—shaved and trimmed their hair in obvious preparation, not a single guard took notice of this very coincidental grooming.

One of the inmates who didn't go along with the escape plan was an ex-moonshiner named Stockton, who kept a journal. He documented a 6 p.m. recreation yard encounter with fellow white inmate Lem D. Tuggle Jr.

“We’re gonna leave tonight,” said Tuggle, “and I need to know how to get away from here. Can you tell me which roads run into North Carolina and where they are?”

Tuggle was sweating over the possibility of being forced into driving the getaway vehicle, and expressed his understandable anxiety. “I wish you were going. I'll stick out like a bad penny.”

Sometime between 8 p.m. and 8:30, most of the inmates stepped from twilight and gathered before the threshold of “C” pod, a section of death row. The guards didn't make a head-count, nor notice when Earl Clanton Jr. lingered behind the other prisoners and snuck into the control booth's bathroom. The group filed into their cells. Until a nurse tried to enter the bathroom to obtain water for dispensing various inmate medications, the locked door had gone unheeded. Frustrated, she complained.

Stockton's journal noted that James Briley snapped into action—improvised a rationale. Hours ago, Briley said to the control room guards, he overheard someone say the plumbing wasn't working. Incredibly, they shrugged off the problem and sent the nurse to another water source.

Whether Briley's next move was also on the fly isn't known, but around 9 p.m. he feigned wanting something to read. Books were kept in a day room beside the control room, and James politely requested the guard step out and get one. The control room door was opened, and Briley shouted a signal to Clanton who rushed from the bathroom and overpowered the guard. There could be no turning back now. Hesitation meant violent death. Clanton took over the control panel and opened every cell.

Chaos ruled, and in minutes the entire pod was under prisoner control.

Guards (among them the aforementioned Prince Thomas Jr.), unarmed, had their uniforms taken, mouths silenced with tape, and hands restrained behind their backs.

In a controlled burst of energy, the six outward-bound inmates tore through uniforms looking for those closest to their sizes. They had to be convincing to hostile eyes.

Suspicious of the mysterious delays and lack of communication from their peers, other guards entered the block. But the Brileys were well prepared, and these men were subdued by newly costumed inmates. The fresh hostages had to be locked behind bars.

Here is where Linwood and James' cold cunning dissolved, and they surged with vicious impulses even the other prisoners couldn't abide. Harkening back to what had been done to William and Virginia Bucher, James wanted to spill rubbing alcohol onto some of the guards and light them up. Inmate Willie Lloyd Turner stepped in and stopped him. Linwood had designs on a nurse, and was going to rape her. This time cop-killer Wilbert Lee Evans intervened. If anything could have derailed the escape, it was these two incidents. Had no one gotten between the Brileys and their worst instincts,

the break-out might have been prevented—but probably at the cost of at least several guards and the nurse.

This scenario continued for an amazing 90 minutes. One of the prisoners managed to overcome a lieutenant, and the plan moved on to the next stage. A ready knife against his throat, the official was forced to call for a van. “We have a situation here!” he cried.

The lieutenant told the guard on the other end of the radio that the death-row prisoners had a bomb. A van was needed immediately to take it away. The frenzied guard acted quickly, and—in true bureaucratic form—arrived with an older-model van in case of premature detonation. As chronicled by a state police reporter named Lettner: “So you had this man willing to spare a new van, but not seeing anything wrong with six men he thought were officers possibly getting blown up.”

Clad in helmets and gas masks from a purloined closet and bearing shields, the six dominated C-pod. Still, no other guards or prisoners elsewhere in the facility were aware of the riotous events unfolding under the same roof.

In order to get out of the facility, the Briley-led group had to make it out of Building 1, where stood the main control room. A female guard was on duty, and received a staged message telling her there was an outside call. The lieutenant then informed her that someone was on the way to cover the room while she took her call.

Unsecuring and opening the door, the guard could see whomever had been sent striding toward her post. Was this some new employee? Before she could fully react, inmate Derick L. Peterson—one of the six—overpowered her and called James Briley, who shouted “He's in!”

Prisons use “sally ports”—caged structures at entrances that require both incoming and outgoing vehicles to stop for identification and search. One

gate opens, and then closes behind the parked vehicle, cutting it off from the outside. Once personnel and/or passengers are safely identified, the second gate is opened.

It is nothing short of astonishing that the six disguised prisoners got away with the next stage of their plan, an almost laughable ruse straight out of some cheap late-night movie.

Erupting from Building 1, and pushing a rattling gurney, the inmates shouted warnings that—under a blanket—was an unstable explosive device. Two of the helmeted men doused the bulky shape with repeated bursts from fire extinguishers, giving the effect of cooling some dangerous chemical reaction. Known only to them, the “bomb” was in fact a television lifted from inside.

Both darkness and disguise concealing their faces, the prisoners halted the gurney beside the van. Carefully lifting the bomb, they guided it into the van and gave abrupt orders to the guard: open both doors. Negative, she said. That would not be legal.

Some inexplicable mix of (perhaps) poor training, and the “bomb squad's” urgent cries, convinced the guard to open up. The van drove off into the vast blackness.

The Brileys, Peterson, Jones, Tuggle and Clanton headed south toward North Carolina. Not a shot had been fired, nor had any guard or prison employee been seriously injured. The six purportedly had robbed the guards of \$758, and also were in possession of a large quantity of rolled marijuana. They had accomplished this in under three hours. News of the escape was still another half-hour in the future.

“It was a freak happening,” said Jerry Davis, records manager in 1994 and at the time a rarity, as most of the upper-level officials were transferred in

the wake of the escape. “They walked out; they did not break out. You have to remember that. It took human error for them to escape.”

“My God,” thought Harold Catron, prison security chief, “I’m going to lose my job.” The late wake-up call couldn’t be real. It could not happen at Mecklenburg. “They told me death-row inmates had escaped.” After a few curses, horrifying visions flashed through his mind. “I thought of the murders that would happen, the rapes that could follow, as they tried to get away.”

Once the break-out became public knowledge, locals and prison employees alike lived in terror. Inmate counselor when the escape occurred, Joanne Royster later became a prison operations officer. “I was afraid to even go out of my house,” she recalled. “I would park my car right next to the door so I could run right out of the house. Everyone was scared.”

• • •

During investigations, it emerged that serious—perhaps unforgivable—lapses in prison officials reporting the escape had definitely abetted the Mecklenburg Six.

As noted by state police reporter Lettner, prison command present at the time knew nothing of the escape until 11:15 p.m. Even the state police themselves had—after 11:30 p.m.—to be notified by the Mecklenburg County sheriff’s office! Certainly no one at the prison was calling.

Further examples exist of the very slow response from prison officials. The police chief of South Hills claimed he did not receive physical descriptions of the six escaped inmates until 16 hours after the break-out. Also, the prison’s first message mentioned *five* escapees.

Even Governor Robb had been “overlooked.” “It was 1:30 or 2 a.m. In the morning,” he recalled, “and I can remember being pretty upset that all this time had apparently gone by before the word went up the chain of command or whatever and got to me. I particularly remember feeling concern for the inmates who had helped keep harm from coming to the guards.”

Richmond and the surrounding region, dwelling once more on the atrocities for which Linwood and James had been locked up, was saturated with dread. The people knew the only thing worse than a psychopathic killer was an *escaped* psychopathic killer with nothing to lose. “I think what concerned me the most,” said former detective Woody, “was that I had seen firsthand what they were capable of doing. I knew their determination to seek revenge. You never forget the smell of death and the smell of blood from what they did.”

The Richmond Commonwealth's attorney, Warren Von Schuch, did not reduce the tension by stating: “These people are in a class by themselves. They are incredibly, inhumanly mean. They are killing machines.”

The atmosphere of dread hovered over everyone like a dark cloud, and more than a few became gun-owners. Woody wore his sidearm everywhere he went—even at home. Driving to his job, he varied his approach in hopes of confusing any potential attackers, and went so far as to relocate his family. No one blamed him.

Detective Woody was not the only one taking precautions. Protection was offered to anyone associated with the prosecutions and trials, including judges, witnesses, and relatives and friends of the Briley gang's victims. Star witness Duncan Meekins' family was advised to be vigilant of those around them.

Satiric playing cards embossed with drawings of the break-out and recapture circulated around Richmond after the events. The laconic creator of these, F.T. Rea, wrote in a November, 2007 blog: “When I noticed kids in the Carytown area were pretending to be the Brileys, and playing chasing games accordingly, well, that was just too much.”

Rea already was sensing a twisted thread in the American mass psyche: “My sense of it then was the depraved were being transformed into celebrities so newspapers and television stations could sell lots of ads. Once they were on the lam, if it came to making a buck it didn’t seem to matter anymore what the Brileys had done to be on death row.

“‘OK,’ I said to a Power Corner group in the Texas-Wisconsin Border Cafe on a mid-June evening, ‘if the Brileys can be made into heroes to sell tires and sofas on TV, how long will it be before they’re on collectable cards, like baseball cards? (or words to that effect).’ To illustrate my point I grabbed a couple of those Border logo-imprinted cardboard coasters from the bar and drew quick examples on the backs, which got laughs.

“Later at home, I sat down at the drawing table and designed the series of cards. To avoid race humor entirely I used a simple drawing style that assigned no race to the characters. The sense of humor was sardonic and droll. I elected to run off a hundred sets of eight cards each, which were put into small ziplock plastic bags, with a piece of bubble gum included for audacity’s sake. I figured to sell them for \$1.50 a set and see what would happen.”

“Sales were boosted when the local press began doing stories on them. For about a week I was much-interviewed by local reporters. *The Washington Post* ran a feature on the phenomenon and orders to buy card sets began coming in the mail from Europe.”

Rea soon found out that not everyone shared his warped humor.

While visiting a T-shirt silk-screening factory, Rea was surrounded by four or five young black men. Each held a box-cutter. One asked whether Rea was the artist responsible for creating the cards. Terrified, Rea asked if any of the menacing group had actually seen the series—none had. Luckily for him, the artist had a set in a pocket and brandished them for all to inspect. No one laughed at the irreverent cartoons, but they grudgingly allowed Rea to leave the plant intact.

Some reactions were outright hostile and dangerous. Prosecutor Warren Von Schuch's neighbors posted a large sign that was meant to direct the gang to his home on the other side of the street. Now carrying a gun at all times, the prosecutor remarked: “Actually, I'd moved out of the neighborhood by then.”



Though the Briley's original plan had been to flee north to Canada, they ended up running in a different direction.

Friday morning, Derick Peterson and Earl Clanton used either poor judgment or simply gave up, and were caught in a North Carolina border town as they shared a bottle of wine in a coin-operated Laundromat. Even though they had found civilian clothing, their prison-issue shoes flagged them as escapees.

After the recaptures authorities found the prison van, and presumed Linwood and James Briley, along with Lem Tuggle and Willie Jones, had perhaps fallen out with the two back in custody and were hiding in the vicinity of Warrenton, N.C. The town was besieged with hundreds of law officers, and the attendant news teams. Local residents might not have been taken to task over who they most wanted to shoot—the four remaining

escapees or the buzzing media pundits. Warrenton resident Frank Talley sat with a shotgun across his lap. “I’m going to blow the man’s head off,” he vowed to a journalist, “and then ask questions.”

It didn’t take long for police to barricade the community. If the gang was spotted, a small war very probably would explode, and would have to be contained.

False clues came flashing in—underwear gone from someone’s backyard clothesline; “sightings” spread out over nearly 125 miles across North Carolina and Virginia. Time-wasting as they were, each report had to be taken seriously.

Outside of this element of the manhunt, investigators sifted from the morass of stress and confusion a gold nugget: solid intelligence passed to the Virginia State Police indicated that the four fugitives had been sighted in the predawn of June 1—near Richmond, of all places. Not wishing to spook either the escapees or local residents, authorities immediately designated this information Top Secret. Even Richmond’s head of the major crimes unit, Stuart Cook, was kept in the dark.

Here is where authorities very probably (and rightly) began feeding disinformation (not *misinformation*, which defines incorrect data) to the media.

Robert Pence, agent-in-charge of the North Carolina FBI, told a news journalist: “We possibly have some information there,” in reference to interrogations of just-captured Lem Tuggle and Willie Jones. “But I’m certainly not going to reveal that information till we have had a chance to look it over.”

A statement that says everything—and nothing.

At the same time, Virginia State Police Major Charles Robinson was telling reporters a similar story, and that he was “not at liberty to say at this time” what the new intelligence might mean. “We're giving attention to all localities [where] we feel there is a chance the Brileys might be.”

Had that been true, tens of thousands of law-enforcement officers would have been required. Fortunately, the new lead panned out.

While the teeming police and media exhausted themselves tracking spurious leads south of Virginia, the covert agents focused on their single item of evidence: a blue pickup truck reported as stolen on the night of May 31, close to Warrenton.

State police were able to meet with and interview the truck's owner, and wisely asked how far his vehicle could travel on one tank of gas. With this data, investigators set out to determine the number—if any—of 24-hour service stations operating north of Richmond on Interstate 95.

“It turned out that there was a sighting,” reported former state police investigator Larry Mitchell, “at a station in Thornburg.” This was approximately 50 minutes north of Richmond, and descriptions of both the vehicle and those traveling in it were matches to the evidentiary profile. “The white guy [Tuggle] was in the bed of the truck facing backwards.”

Lem Tuggle and Willie Jones would eventually make it much farther east. Tuggle had been driving the stolen truck out of Warrenton. His penultimate moment came on June 8 in Woodford, Vermont, after pulling a knife on a gift-store clerk during a robbery then attempting to evade a local policeman, who caught Tuggle and became a law-enforcement hero. When queried whether the fugitive had been disruptive when retaken into custody, a state trooper remarked, “He popped like a grape.”

With hopes of freedom squashed, Tuggle rolled over on the Brileys and confessed that they had gotten out of the stolen truck somewhere in Philadelphia. Moreover, Tuggle had witnessed Linwood and James stuff their prison uniforms and a badge into a tree's hollow.

Mere hours later, Willie Jones was apprehended in Vermont only several miles from the Canadian border. But the Briley brothers were still on the lam. Tuggle also admitted it was he who had driven Jones up to the border. Tuggle then was taken to St. Albans for holding; Jones went to St. Johnsbury.

Meanwhile, vital intelligence had been obtained regarding Philadelphia: a Briley uncle, Johnnie Lee Council, was a resident of a risky north side neighborhood. Wisely, soon after the escape, surveillance had been undertaken of the Brileys' relatives, friends, and prison cronies, leading to Council's name. State police in conjunction with FBI agents located the stolen uniforms Tuggle had witnessed the brothers stuffing into a tree. The uncle proved more difficult to trace.

Though phone lines were tapped, the extent of this never was made public and likely never will. But it was this particular spycraft that sealed the Brileys' fate. An unknown individual in New York was under surveillance, and received a telephone call traced after two days to an automobile repair garage in North Philadelphia. An FBI informant was dispatched to carry out reconnaissance on the garage and whoever occupied it.

The agent observed, on June 19, two men bearing close resemblance to Linwood and James—because they happened to *be* them.

The Brileys were using the garage as an apartment, and had gone around the neighborhood helping with menial tasks, and simply hanging out in the

open. The brothers even had been given nicknames: Slim for James, and Lucky for Linwood. A chilling demonstration of charisma-on-call.

It took only a few hours for heavily armed federal agents to reach the target and take complete control. Their two vicious serial killers were in an alley, grilling chicken in the near dark. The time was several minutes past 9 p.m. The long hunt was over. . . .

Recalling that Governor Robb had been left out of the information loop during the classified tracking of the stolen pickup truck, State Police head of Criminal Investigation Jay Cochran phoned the Executive Mansion and shared the good news.

The garage owner, Dan Latham, said: "All I could see was barrels of shotguns." He and the Brileys had listened media coverage of the escapes, with Latham oblivious to Slim and Lucky's real identities. Uncle Johnnie Lee Council was not charged with aiding and abetting, though it's unclear why.

On June 21 around 9:15 p.m., Linwood and James Briley, having been transported by a substantial police escort, were once more in Richmond's State Penitentiary on Belvidere Street. News of their return inspired the other 900 prisoners into a collective racket. An official from the U.S. Marshals Service was heard to say, "I don't know if it was cheers or jeers."

On Dec 12, 1996, sole-surviving Mecklenburg Six member Lem Tuggle was put to death by lethal injection. Perhaps eager to depart a world he had failed, and had failed him, Tuggle displayed in his final moments what could have been taken for joy, in spite of the *Born to Die* tattoo inked on his arm. Strapped to the death-chamber slab, he cried to witnesses: "*Merry Christmas!*"

• • •

Routines and even infrastructure at Mecklenburg changed. “[The escape] was terribly embarrassing. We have done all we could,” reported assistant warden Carl K. Hester, “to ensure nothing like that ever

happened again.”

Many prison employees and officials were transferred to other assignments and replaced by new hires. Cell windows in “Space E” were checked each day. The evening time in the recreation yard, so beloved by all inmates, was discontinued. Death row was fortified by the addition of a new wall and security door. The overall facility security was considerably strengthened by not allowing individual guards to have control over each lock, and giving them the capability to lock themselves into a station if necessary—a potential life-saver.

CHAPTER ELEVEN:
Aftermath—Sins of the Fathers

In the aftermath of their 1984 death-row escape and subsequent capture, Linwood (then 30) and James (28) told Sister Eileen Heaps—a prison chaplain with the Catholic diocese of Richmond—that each had children born out of wedlock. Linwood disclosed his 10-year-old son was named Norman; James had a young daughter, but did not give her name. Later accounts state he had three daughters.

Unsettled, Sister Heaps stood before the Governor's office. “Neither [Briley brother] was ever married. I feel bad about this. They wanted that part of their lives [kept] very private.”

This heretofore non-disclosed information was revealed by the Sister during a report on Linwood Briley's August 2 baptism, which he had desired to take place on his son's birthday. So many of those incarcerated claim to “find” faith, previously lacking or even sneeringly dismissed, that one is compelled to question whether these are sincere (although in Linwood Briley's case there was no chance for earthly redemption).

“Perhaps [Linwood] has been more reflective,” said Sister Heaps. “He was always very pleasant. He just said he felt he wanted to do it.”

Asked whether she requested to meet with Governor Robb in order to convince him to rethink Linwood's and James's pending executions, the Sister responded ambiguously, offered that she is against “the death penalty, abortion, nuclear war—anything that takes human life.” Her rationale for the meeting was to discuss the environment of, and living conditions inside, the Virginia prison system. “I want to ask the governor,” she added, “to talk to the men; the prisoners, the guards, the administrators. He can then make decisions on a more human basis, rather than just a political basis.”

Linwood's execution had been set for August 17, and his appeal resulted in a stay issued by the 4th U.S. Circuit Court of Appeals. At the time, no execution date had yet been scheduled for his brother James. Youngest of the gang Anthony, then 26, had been sentenced to another facility for life + 139 years.

Sister Heaps was able either to ignore or compartmentalize the Briley gang's atrocities. "I've gotten very involved with those men on death row over the past year. They're close to God . . ."

That same Wednesday, Linwood's attorney Deborah Wyatt also met with the governor. After the meetings, though, both women would not give any overt response to questions addressing whether their discussions with Governor Robb involved pleas for clemency.

• • •

Norman Ampy, who passed away on April 3, 2015, was Linwood Briley's son, and 10-years-old at the time of his father's execution. Though Norman had visited his father at the former State Penitentiary in downtown Richmond, he did not know why Linwood was on death row.

Buffered by family from the truth, Norman was unaware his father was scheduled for execution—until the very day: October 12, 1984. After that, his life unraveled; he never restored whatever balance it may once have had.

Arrests for robbery and drug offenses, a barely avoided capital-murder charge, and surviving 24 bullet wounds (from a single incident) resulted in a two-year recovery and addiction to pain medication. Matters did not improve, and Norman lost a leg to infection, attempted suicide and—from a wheelchair—robbed a Chesterfield County Bank. It could be argued that this series of events approached nearly Biblical proportions, save that Ampy induced most of them. "I loved my dad," he said in autumn 2007. "I didn't know that my dad was going to die, and that's what really got to me. I never knew that day was coming."

In a pre-sentencing report covering his background, Ampy stated he felt haunted by his father's crimes, and added: "I had no respect for the law. All I know was my dad was dead and the police killed him, so that's what I grew up thinking until I got old enough to understand what really happened. That's what I think led me to get into trouble."

It is clear that Ampy was not exaggerating in his pre-sentencing report. “Put it this way, man. It seems like I didn't have a shot like a normal kid, with this happening to my father. I've been in trouble since thirteen, fourteen years old, man. I didn't never have a shot at a regular life, you know?”

Regarding the classic “Nature-versus-Nurture” debate, forensic clinical psychologist Dr. Evan Nelson speculated that Ampy's decision-making probably was influenced by genetics and uncontrollable environmental conditions. Young people seem more prone to submit to the darker aspects of this combination.

When he was 5, Norman's mother, Patricia Lee Ampy, moved he and (from separate fathers) his younger brothers to a risky area of south Richmond. Patricia, according to Norman, put strong emphasis on the necessity for education, but the school's administration deemed the seventh-grader “emotionally disturbed.” Norman's drug-use soon followed, as well as dealing. In ninth grade, he gave up altogether on school.

At 14, Norman violated probation terms, and also faced a charge for trespassing. This introduced him to the Virginia Department of Youth and Family Services. Despite these tribulations, at 15 he was caught with cocaine and a gun, and again was committed.

Norman moved in to his girlfriend's place—he was 16, and in the near future would become father to a daughter.

Two years later, Norman was arrested and charged with “distributing heroin as an accommodation,” meaning he had done this with no profit in mind. His lawyer noted at a hearing that most of Norman's legal problems had their source in drug abuse, yet no treatment program had ever been sought or recommended. But the prosecutor and judge were not sympathetic: the 18-year-old needed time in prison.

Another opinion—from a state counselor—seemingly terminated even the possibility of any rehabilitation, because Norman was considered “not amenable . . . [and] consistently demonstrated noncompliance.” In rebuttal, he wrote: “They never gave me a program or a second chance like they did my peers. They all got boot camp. Maybe that could of turn [sic] me around. Who knows?”

Norman went to prison, serving two years and four months instead of the five recommended during sentencing. One bright point in all this is that he came out with his GED and also earned certification in welding. Sadly, though, Norman's propensity to follow the path of least

resistance won out. "I've never worked a day in my life. It ain't nothing to be proud of now, you know?"

In April 1996 Norman was charged with capital murder for shooting and robbing George Alexander Ross on November 7, 1995. The charges ended up being rescinded, and Norman avoided his father's death-row fate. Then came the incident most likely responsible for shortening Ampy's life.

Roughly eight weeks after the capital-murder charges were dropped, two men blitzed Norman outside a service station. In front of his daughter, her mother, and stepson the men shot Norman 24 times. "Every part of my body [was hit] except my head." In the wake of the shooting, he was put into a drug-induced coma for six months of a two-year recovery.

Norman felt the attack was a vengeance hit for the murder of George Ross, but never admitted to actually killing him. "I didn't say that I did, I didn't say that I didn't. You know what I mean?"

• • •

Linwood Briley, whose appeals had been put before roughly 40 judges, had his last rejected on October 11, 1984 by the U.S. Supreme Court.

The Commonwealth's Attorney gave a passionate yet concise closing argument: "Where Linwood Briley made his mistake is that he ran with a 16-year-old boy, because if anybody is going to break with a case like this, it is going to be a juvenile. That was the fatal mistake. Mr. Gallaher's fatal mistake was going outside. Mr. Briley's fatal mistake was running with a boy nine years younger than he was, because that is who talked. That is who gave the information that led to his own arrest, Duncan Meekins. He is the one who told the detective that he was involved in it. And at that point in time, there was no reason on this earth for him to do that because Linwood Briley was arrested and his statement to the police was that A.C. [Appeals Case, i.e. Meekins] did it. Duncan Meekins was not incriminated at all. And yet, they want you to believe that he told the detective division of his involvement in this case so he could testify against Linwood Briley and get no more time than anybody else. Now that is a heck of a deal."

The woman who told the Brileys' mother, Bertha, about Linwood's forthcoming execution 24 hours before the scheduled time, was Marie Deans, 43. Deans had created the civilian group Virginians Against the Death Penalty. "The Supreme Court had rejected Briley's fourth plea for a stay."

No more hope for any legal appeals.

Tragically, and understandably, Mrs. Briley did not receive the news with grace. After all, her son James also was on death row, and her youngest—Anthony—had been hit with a life sentence. Deans emphasized: "It has been really hurtful to the family. The parents and Edward, an older brother, have been made to live with this as if *they* were the murderers."

Even though Mrs. Briley had separated from James Sr. years earlier, she found it nearly impossible to shake the media attention and cheap sensationalism it generated.

On the 12th, Linwood's mother, Bertha, was escorted into the State Penitentiary, and they hugged. This 90-minute visit was the first without the inmate and guest separated by a Plexiglas barrier. Norman, Linwood's 10-year-old son, also visited but was not permitted a final embrace with his father. Younger brother James had to be twice shocked with a stun gun before he could be taken away. "I told them I wouldn't leave my brother. I wouldn't walk out."

In a last-ditch effort to display solidarity with his fellow inmates, Linwood's final-meal selection was exactly what all the others were served: fried chicken. This request was turned down, and the condemned man instead was served a tenderloin steak.

As the 11:00 execution time neared, hundreds gathered on Belvidere Street. Those in favor of the death penalty raised and waved placards, their

common message being FRY and BURN BRILEY, BURN. On the other side, opponents held candles and gave determined chants—some even wept. Nineteen of Mecklenburg's death-row inmates had signed a petition, and vowed to protest by staging a hunger strike. Eleven of these quickly broke their vow by eating.

An understandable fact was that the America of 1984 had come literally to hate the Linwood, James, and Anthony Briley. It is a fact of human psychology that *fear* breeds hatred.

Deborah Wyatt had come out of law school six years earlier, and was quite late in representing Linwood. He had already been convicted. Wyatt did manage to stay the execution, and fought for a new trial. “You want to talk about hate? People hated me for that.”

Linwood finally was walked 40 steps to the heavy oak and metal electric chair, was strapped down, and a cloak placed over his shaved head. At 11:00 eight witnesses, including Mayor Roy West, watched Warden E.L. Booker turn the power key. For 55 seconds, Linwood's body surged with 2,300 volts of electricity. There followed another shock of the same duration. At 11:07, a doctor bearing the macabre name of Fry pronounced Briley dead.

One witness, Richmond attorney B. Randolph Wellford, noted:

“[Linwood's] fingers . . . kind of tightened up almost in a fist, but in a deranged manner. I thought I'd probably get a queasy feeling in my stomach, but I didn't. It didn't bother me at all. I don't think it bothered anybody at all. I didn't hear any groans, moans or gasps. I've gotten funnier feelings in my stomach when I've represented guilty defendants who've gotten off.”

Smoke rising from Briley's right leg did surprise Wellford, and the odor of singed flesh.

“He made it a little easier on everyone,” commented attorney Deborah Wyatt, present at the execution of her client, “by being exceedingly brave, and he maintained his innocence. Those were his last words.”

Decades later in Neil Edwards' documentary, *Born to Kill: the Briley Brothers*, former Head of Homicide Stuart Cook had a different perspective. “Linwood had to be sedated and physically taken to the chair.” At the time of the execution, however, he was quoted as saying “[it was] quick and uneventful.”

Police had earlier blocked off the street, and had to arrest a man for disorderly conduct and for carrying a concealed weapon. One wonders at his intent. The city itself, from all accounts, had looked forward to this day. James Futrell had attended a picnic featuring boiled crab and roasted oysters. “In the eyes of the regular old Joes, justice has been done.”

Among those outside the prison, and echoing Mr. Futrell's sentiment, Richmond prosecutor Aubrey Davis said: “I am satisfied that in this particular case, the punishment fits the crime . . . I visited the scenes, most of which were very heinous . . . [and] the evidence in the case was overwhelming.”

Linwood Briley's execution had the dubious distinction of being the 26th in America after the Supreme Court's 1976 repeal of its capital punishment ban, the second in Virginia, and 15th in 1984.

• • •

The public's reaction preceding James Briley's execution was quite different than that evoked by Linwood's.

At trial, James had made incredible—even ludicrous—demands.

As documented in the following text, the middle Briley brother was using the infamous murder scrapbook, in which he and the gang stored news articles about the killings, as a reference to support a retrial: “Defendant claims that the lower court erred in denying his motion for a change of venue or, in the alternative, a change of venire. In support of his motion the defendant filed a notebook containing over seventy articles from three Richmond newspapers, which he says unduly emphasized his criminal record and his connection with other crimes allegedly committed by him, his brothers, and Meekins. This same notebook had been introduced in evidence at the trial of Linwood Briley growing out of the Barton Avenue murders. Also filed were sixteen affidavits in which the affiant stated that they did not believe the defendant could get a fair trial in Richmond or in an adjacent county. A transcript of a change of venue hearing held in Linwood Briley's prosecution was also filed. Eight witnesses representing three Richmond newspapers and three area television stations testified and described the local coverage of the crimes involved.”

Governor Robb's assistants reported 216 letters had come in calling for executive clemency. Over 1,000 had been received on Linwood's behalf. In both cases, very few people wrote *supporting* the executions. Robb's press secretary stated that the governor's intervention was unlikely. “His position is that clemency is an extraordinary power of the governor and he would only exercise it under extraordinary circumstances, such as compelling new evidence or something he discovered in his own review of the case file.”

Extraordinary circumstances soon arose: James wedded 44-year old Evangeline Grant Redding, a former Chapel Hill, North Carolina broadcast journalist with 10 years in Public Television, and freelance since 1976. As one might expect, legions of the curious wondered exactly what the hell could be wrong with this divorced mother of four. Redding gave three

reasons for marrying James Briley: 1). A strong opposition to capital punishment. 2). Belief in her new husband's innocence. 3). Genuine love for the man.

The ceremony took place before James death-row cell. The bride wore a “white linen suit, and hat of marabou feathers with a hip-length veil of illusion.” The groom had no choice but prison blues. The couple kissed, but nothing more. State prisons don't allow conjugal visits. Redding gifted Briley with some self-taken boudoir photographs. In a *Jet* interview, Redding said she first heard about James while following the Briley brothers' case, and contacted the prison administration hoping to meet with him. They rejected her request, and she began a series of letters to James, reasoning that the only way possible she could fight for his (and other death-row inmates) freedom and visit him, was through marriage.

“It's too much like a lottery,” Redding said when queried about her death-penalty opposition, “like drawing names from a hat. And if you're poor, if you're Black, if you're male, the odds are always against you.”

James asked himself: “Is this woman for real? I wanted to make sure she knew what she was getting herself into.” Father-in-law James Sr. welcomed Evangeline into the family.

No one brought up the stark reality that James' lawyers had abandoned all hope for appeals. The final one had been issued from attorney Gerald T. Zerkin, who requested a delay of the execution. Apparently wanting nothing more than to wash their hands of the Briley gang, the Supreme Court of Virginia denied Zerkin's appeal.

Shortly after breakfast on James' last day, inmates became rowdy. A bloody riot ensued, and prisoners again used improvised knives and other items to

blitz security officers who were escorting another group back to their cells after the morning meal.

Nine guards and an inmate were hurt; four guards required emergency surgery for sustaining wounds in the abdomen and torso. Department of Corrections spokesman Wayne Farrar reported that riot was planned to derail the Briley's execution. Farrar added that the administration had anticipated—even been warned of—some imminent uprising.

Despite the frenzied violence, guards were able to control the situation within 15 minutes. None of the staged chaos had any effect on the impending execution.

James had little to say during his final hours, save for proclaiming his innocence, expressing love for his brother who had been executed in the very chair awaiting James, and that a gang member (Meekins?) had framed him. The Richmond police, alarmed they might be faced with hundreds of protestors like they had for Linwood's execution, gathered outside the prison.

James' new wife, Evangeline, was permitted to sit with him while he ate fried shrimp for his last earthly meal. After his execution, she said she planned to write a book about James and his late brother Linwood. When Shirley Barton Hayes, mother of Briley murder victim Judy Barton (who had been pregnant at the time) got wind of this, she vowed to “sue for any money gained from the planned book.”

At the hour of death, James made the 40-foot walk to the chamber, and was strapped down. Before his head could be cloaked, he said to the few witnesses: “Are you happy?” Unlike the well-covered Linwood Briley execution, no news media were present for the penitentiary's third execution.



James Briley died (in)famous for two events: brutal murder, and planning and carrying out with his older brother the biggest death-row escape in U.S. History. He was the United States' 42nd executed convict after the 1976 reinstatement of capital punishment.

EPILOGUE:

For Sale—Haunted House with No Ghosts

The concept of home, and its every aspect, is sacred. One need not practice religion or profess faith in a higher divine order to “believe” this—it's an undeniable fact. Even agnostics and atheists need a space from which they take comfort, and feel safe from all the outside world's tribulations.

In late autumn of 2014, the vacant two-storey home in Richmond, Virginia's Highland Park was for sale. At \$29,500, anyone might wonder whether a sink-hole had opened beneath the foundation, or termites had moved in and shredded the frame.

In reality, the logic behind the inexplicably low price was twofold: though valued at \$80,000, the stucco house was condemned the previous August due to many local code violations—and the Briley brothers once lived there.

Nearby resident Daniel Henderson remarked, “It's a nice house. As long as people don't know what went down there, I don't think [the developer] will have a problem.”

The unidentified developer claimed he didn't know the Fourth Avenue property once housed the serial-killing brothers, but clearly was frustrated over the long-lingering memories still haunting Richmond. All he could hope—beyond getting the place back in line with building codes—was that potential buyers either come to future showings ignorant of its pedigree or, failing that, find the wherewithal to not be disturbed.

Helen Armstead, who lived but a few doors down the street, recalled: “It was just ridiculous. When it came on the news, the 12:00 news, and they said they had picked him up I just jumped straight up in the bed because I just couldn't believe that.”

The developer at the time was in need of a reliable contractor to handle the house's many faults. He said he usually takes care of such matters personally, but had other projects siphoning his time.

Cynthia King's mother lives near the former Briley home. “It really shouldn't affect the sale of the house itself,” said King. “It shouldn't matter

because the crimes didn't actually happen in the house.”

One wonders whether King remembered that, in 1971, a 16-year-old Linwood Briley aimed a .22-caliber rifle from a dormer window and fatally shot elderly Orline Christian, who had only recently become widowed.

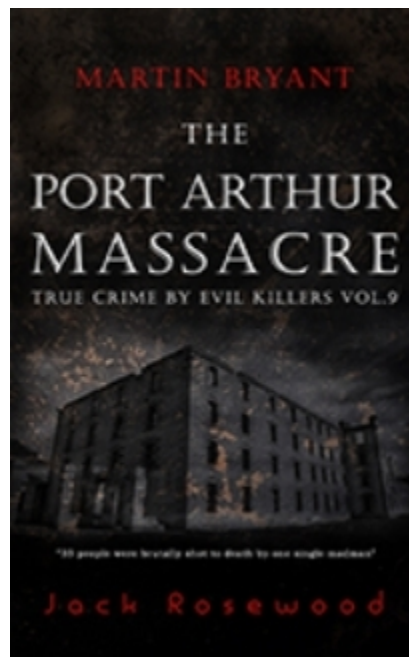
Martin Bryant: The Port Arthur Massacre

by Jack Rosewood

Historical Serial Killers and Murderers

True Crime by Evil Killers

Volume 9

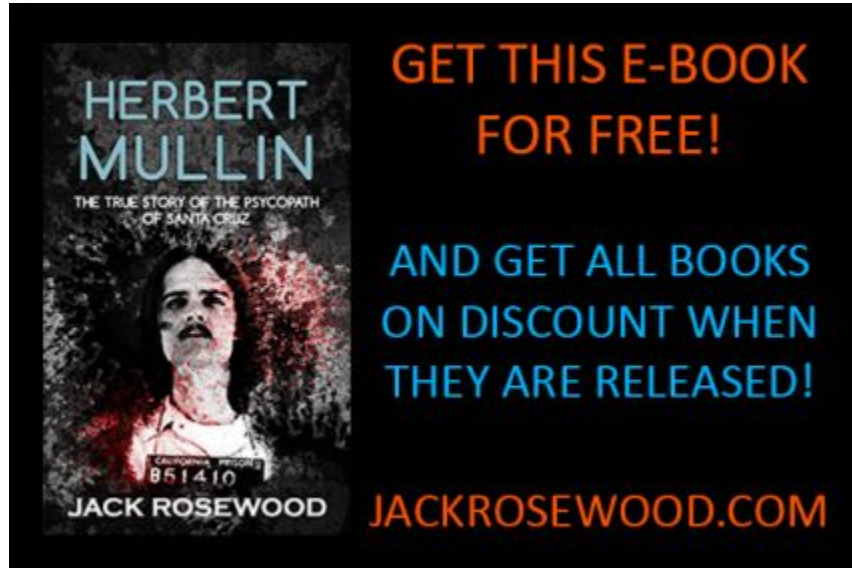


Copyright © 2015 by Wiq Media

ALL RIGHTS RESERVED

No part of this book may be reproduced, stored in a retrieval system, or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic, mechanical, photocopying, recording, scanning, or otherwise, without the prior written permission of the publisher.

GET THE BOOK ABOUT HERBERT MULLIN FOR FREE



Go to www.jackrosewood.com and get this E-Book for free!

Contents

[Prologue](#)

[Chapter One: The Odd Nature of Martin Bryant](#)

[Chapter Two: The Odd Couple](#)

[Chapter Three: The Café Massacre](#)

[Chapter Four: The Parking Lot](#)

[Chapter Five: Fleeing the Scene](#)

[Chapter Six: Road Rage](#)

[Chapter Seven: A Scene of Total Devastation](#)

[Chapter Eight: The Cornered Madman](#)

[Chapter Nine: The Aftermath](#)

[Chapter Ten: Understanding the Mind of a Killer](#)

[Epilogue](#)

Prologue

There are few spots on the earth that have the brutal and equally fascinating history of Port Arthur, located in the Australian province of Tasmania. First settled by the British in 1830, it served from 1833 to 1877 as an “escape proof prison“ for England’s most notorious and dangerous criminals. With these Penal Colonies, the logic was simple - by sending convicted prisoners far across the ocean to the British controlled territory of Australia, there would be no risk of these criminals ever committing crimes at home again and was considered a fitting punishment for their acts.

For more than four decades, Port Arthur served as a high security prison that many of those who entered, would never leave alive. Officially, 1646 men lost their lives in Port Arthur including 180 guards who had the unfortunate luck to be stationed there. Conditions were deplorable and hunger was both a weapon and a lethal deterrent.

In modern times, the prison has been maintained by the Australian Government and is considered an important historical landmark representing the heritage of the country. The majority of main prison itself stills stands as a haunting reminder of those that were imprisoned there and subjected to harsh and brutal treatment - with no hope of escape.

For prisoners that were lucky enough to make it over the walls of the penitentiary, there was nowhere to go. The waters surrounding the area were swarming with sharks including great whites, and the inhospitable Tasmanian countryside was more dangerous than any threat one would face inside the prison. There were no cities or towns to run to – just hundreds of

square miles of unhospitable wilderness. For many prisoners, their only way out was death and it was not uncommon to murder another prisoner in order to receive a death sentence from the warden which was preferable to living out your life within the walls of Port Arthur.

Nearly 150 years later Port Arthur has become a popular tourist attraction that has drawn people from all over the world. Surrounded by ocean and jagged rocks, the area is stunningly beautiful and many of the surviving buildings have been restored and maintained. Tourists can explore the prison and the rugged coastline or take a trip out to the Isle of the Dead where many of the prisoners were buried after dying from starvation or horrid work conditions imposed by sadistic prison guards and wardens.

In 1996, the parking lots would fill daily with hundreds of cars and tour busses from around Tasmania, bringing in curious tourists anxious to see this hauntingly stunning piece of history. A popular café and gift shop called the Broad Arrow Cafe offered both a place to get something to eat and to purchase a souvenir for visitors to take home.

There was no reason for anyone to suspect on April 28, 1996, was going to be a day any different from any other at the site. The sky was clear and the air still crisp as the multitude of tourists arrived as they did every day to explore the area. No one would suspect that shortly after 1:30 p.m., a lone crazed gunman, angry at society as a whole - would pull out a semi-automatic rifle and begin shooting every living person he would see. The event was made even more shocking in that it had taken place just a few weeks after 27 people were killed in Dunblane, Scotland, where a crazed gunman had also shocked the world. It was suggested the Port Arthur event was the act of a copycat shooter – but as police and investigators would

later learn, the Australian gunman was completely unpredictable and had a long, bizarre past.

For those outside of Australia, few remember the brutal attack in which 35 people were gunned down in cold blood by 28 year old Martin John Bryant. Without warning or indication, the disturbed wayward young man woke up that April Sunday morning, loaded a duffle bag with several semi-automatic rifles and proceeded to the historic tourist destination. Upon his arrival, he systematically executed men, woman and children with a level of cold blooded callousness that had rarely been seen before; which is part of what makes this tale so shocking. To this day, it represents one of the largest mass shootings in world history committed by a lone gunman.

For those that have tried to make sense of what is now known as the “Port Arthur Massacre“ there is still relatively little known about what caused Martin Bryant to commit such mass murder. There are those that insist that Bryant didn’t do the shootings at all - and was set up by a government plot to regulate gun ownership in Australia.

For those though that survived the massacre, they are forever haunted by the vision of those around them being gunned down without reason or mercy. The lives that were lost added to the long history of where so many had died more than a century before them.

The murderous rampage that took place at Port Arthur defied reason and shocked even the most seasoned investigators. This is the story as told by the survivors as well as the investigators who were given the task of trying to understand one simple question – why did Martin Bryant wake up one morning and kill 35 people he didn’t know?

This is the story of the Port Arthur Massacre, Australia’s worst mass murder in history.

Chapter One:

The Odd Nature of Martin Bryant

Reaching over to turn off his alarm clock, Martin Bryant opened his eyes, rolled over in his bed and looked briefly at his girlfriend Petra who was still sleeping beside him. He sat up and gained his bearings, then stretching, he stood up and walked to his dresser where he pulled a shirt on. It was Sunday, April 28, 1996 and the sun was already shining brightly outside.

For everyone else it was just another April weekend – but for him - today was special - today was the day he would make things right.

The idea of committing mass murder had occurred to him nearly three months prior during an alcohol fueled period when he was drinking an entire bottle of Bailey's Irish Crème and Sambuca on a daily basis. The anti-depressants his doctor had prescribed had little effect on his state of mind and he felt a growing anger do to the way people shunned him when he tried to talk to them. More and more the thought of shooting people not only fascinated him – but gave him comfort and a sense of calmness.

For years he felt as though life was against him. Everything that seemed so right and important in his simple mind was now gone. His close and eccentric friend, Helen Harvey had died after their car swerved into on-coming traffic. He would survive the crash – one that many would blame him for causing.

Ten months later, his father, Maurice Bryant would commit suicide after suffering from a long bout of depression brought on by his son's growingly

bizarre behavior. Upon his father's death, Martin Bryant lost his only real anchor and the one person able to control him that he had in his life. It had become a full time job for his father to keep him out of trouble and now no one was there to stop him from doing as he pleased.

As the months passed, he felt a growing anger inside him towards not just life but people in general. His mother struggled to understand him - she didn't have the same control that her husband did when it came to her son. Growing up he had been labelled as "annoying and difficult" and as an adult had a great deal of difficulty keeping any sort of employment; as he had very little ability to get along with others.

Martin Bryant was only 6 years old when he first caught the attention of a school psychologist who was concerned over reports that he had been torturing animals. As a child he was continually bullied by other children for being so different and he had no ability to interact with other kids. It was not uncommon for him to spend an entire school day with his face contorted, for no apparent reason, like he had eaten something sour. As he began to grow older, he began to take his aggression out on those younger than him and was soon transferred to New Town High School where they had a special needs program more adept at handling his difficult personality and behavior patterns.

At age 14, his father bought the young teen an air rifle which he later would claim was the worst decision of his life. Bryant became fascinated with the weapon and was caught several times hiding in the bushes along the highway where he would shoot at passing motorists. In on particularly alarming incident involving the gun, he shot a parrot out of a tree and while it lay incapacitated on the ground – he walked up and shot it point blank in the head several times until it was dead.

By the time he left school, psychiatrists had noted that his IQ tested at 68 - which classified him as mentally retarded. Because he could neither read or write as an adult, the Australian Government issued him a long term disability pension. In his early 20's, he took odd jobs around New Town and the City of Hobart as a gardener and handyman.

Months before his murderous rampage he told a startled neighbor that one day "I'll do something that will make everyone remember me." For months he had been planning his attack - and now he was determined today was going to be the day when that came true. A few weeks earlier, he purchased a green duffle bag large enough to carry several boxes of ammunition, as well as, two semi-automatic rifles and an assault shotgun. With the bag loaded, he slung it over his shoulder, turned on the alarm system to his house and headed to his yellow Volvo parked out front.

It was 9:47 am.

In 1993, Martin Bryant had bought his first real gun – an AR-10 semi-automatic rifle from a local gun store and over the next three years would purchase numerous other rifles – including a 12 gauge Daewoo shot gun, as well as, a Colt AR-15 carbine assault rifle. The AR-15 is the same rifle as the M16 used by the United States Marines. The only distinguishing difference is that it is not automatic but is still capable of firing 30 consecutive rounds before needing to reload.

During this period, he also purchased a L1A1 SLR-308 caliber battle rifle that was popular with ground troops in the British, Canadian and Australian armies. The rifle held 30, 51 mm steal jacket armor piercing bullets that could be fired in rapid succession and was capable of piercing through brick, wood and steel. The shells were based on the famous 308 Winchester bullet.

With hundreds of rounds of ammunition loaded in his bag and three deadly assault rifles – Bryant began his 45 minute journey down the Arthur highway, through Forcett Village and then to a bed and breakfast called Seascape, which was less than 15 minutes from the famous Port Arthur historical site.

Seascape had bitter sweet meaning to Martin Bryant. His father Maurice had tried to purchase the property, but before he could finalize financing, the property was bought by David Martin and his wife Noelene. The elder Bryant was furious and bitterly complained that they had only bought the bed and breakfast out of spite and to hurt his family. His son listened intently and harbored the same resentment towards the couple – and who years later he would blame for his father's suicide.

Arriving at Sea Scape shortly before noon he opened the trunk of his car, took out the loaded AR-15 rifle and walked into the front entrance of the Inn; where seeing Noelene Martin, he shot the woman several times, killing her. As David Martin came running to see what had happened, Bryant shot the man knocking him to the ground. Gagging him with a wash cloth, he took a large knife from the kitchen counter and stabbed the man several times until he was dead.

A score had been settled and yet, this was only the beginning.

As he wiped the blood from his hands, he headed out of the building towards his car when a couple approached wanting to know if there were any accommodations available. He immediately told them that this would be completely impossible as his parents were away and his girlfriend was inside. The couple, shocked by his demeanor and odd behavior left the property quickly – unaware of just how close they had come to being his next victims.

Despite his simple nature, Martin Bryant's plan had gone as he expected; except for the meddling tourists who had nearly caught him killing the Martins. Undeterred, he backed his car up to the house and unloaded several boxes of ammunition. It was here that he planned to make his last stand after he had become the most famous man in Australia – for when he was done - no one would ever forget the name Martin Bryant.

Locking the doors to the building with the keys he had taken from the pocket of the dead owner, he walked purposefully to his car, started it and continued his journey to the busiest place he could think of – Port Arthur - where he knew hundreds of people would be already gathered on a busy Sunday afternoon.

Chapter Two:

The Odd Couple

Hobart is the capital of Tasmania and was home to the eccentric Helen Harvey. At 54 years old, she was heir to the Tattersall's Lottery fortune – a for profit lottery business that had been operating in Australia since 1895 and was set up to share the substantial profits with the families of those that worked for the company.

She lived in a large mansion that was in significant need of repair, and with no one caring for the tall grass around the property, the 19 year old Martin Bryant approached her to see if she was interested in hiring him to mow the grass. Helen was happy to have the help and the two struck up an immediate friendship that would last until her death several years later. Bryant became a fixture at her home, helping feed the 14 dogs she kept inside and the 40 plus cats that lived in the garage.

The match was an odd one – but a close relationship bloomed and the young Bryant moved into the mansion. The couple would spend their days shopping and having dinner in some of Hobart's nicest restaurants all while buying more than 30 new cars as well as numerous other luxury purchases over the next 3 years.

City bylaw officers had received dozens of complaints from neighbors regarding the state of the property and the amount of animals being kept by the owners - and a cleanup order was issued for the mansion. When officials discovered the large amount of dogs and cats on the property, Hobart authorities issued an injunction preventing the couple from keeping any animals. This led to the purchase of a 72 acre farm called Taurusville in

1991, which was located in a community of Copping – approximately half way between where the mansion was located and the Port Arthur historic site.

Those in Copping quickly noticed the odd couple that was now part of their community. It wasn't uncommon to see one of their many cars parked outside local restaurants filled with animals including dogs, cats and even miniature ponies.

There were also growing concerns about the mental state of Bryant who had shot at several tourists with his pellet gun while they were buying apples from a nearby roadside stand. When police responded, they learned that he had often been spotted at night roaming the area with the gun shooting at dogs and passing cars. Upon their request, psychiatrists examined the trouble man who told them he often fantasized about shooting people. It was determined though that as long as he was under his father's watch, he did not present more than a nuisance danger to the public. Needless to say - those in the area avoided him because his nature was too unpredictable.

Two years had now passed since Helen and Martin had moved to the farm, and in late October, while driving into town, the car the couple was in suddenly swerved into oncoming traffic and struck a vehicle head on; killing Helen instantly. Martin was taken by ambulance with serious head and back injuries spent the next 7 months recovering in the hospital in Hobart.

During the investigation, police learned that Helen Harvey had already had three accidents caused by Martin lunging at the steering wheel while she was driving. She also told friends that she was careful never to drive too fast when he was in the car as she never knew when he would try and grab the wheel. With Helen Harvey now deceased, there was no witness or

evidence to prove that Bryant had in fact purposely caused the crash. Thus, it was ruled an accident. What was clear to those around Bryant was that he had no ability to either restrain himself from sudden impulsive and dangerous acts – or the ability to understand the consequences of his actions.

As her closest friend, the eccentric Harvey had left her entire estate to Bryant, who now found himself worth over a half million dollars as the owner of both the farm in Copping and the Mansion back in Hobart. Since he had no financial sense or capacity to understand math, Martin Bryant's mother applied to have his affairs legally transferred to her as a guardian; knowing full well that her simple and troubled son would squander the money on who knew what.

While Bryant was still recovering from the accident nearly a year earlier, his father had to quit his job to take care of the farm full time. In June of 1993, Martin was released from the hospital and two months later, Maurice Bryant was discovered dead in a dam reservoir. Police had been searching the property after a neighbor found a note pinned to the door saying to call the police. No one had seen Maurice Bryant for days.

Officer Phil Pyke was one of the constables involved in the search. He would later recall that Bryant showed little interest in looking for his missing father. Police had determined that a shotgun was missing from the property and had begun to suspect that the clinically depressed man may have used the weapon to cause harm to himself. The initial search began up the hill of the property and through the bushes that lead up to the Tasmania back country. With no sign of the missing man, the search focused on the house and outbuildings around the property where police hoped to find a clue as to where the missing man might be.

Police began to make note of the young man with long blond hair that stood along the fence line and watched the female officers intently. They knew that the strange young man lived on the property and was the son of the man they were looking for, but he seemed far more interested in asking the women constables out to dinner than he did about the whereabouts of his missing father. During their investigation, Police had found Maurice Bryant's car parked in a shed and large sums of money lay strewn about the kitchen in the house. This only served to make the situation even more bizarre.

A search of the property turned up nothing and it was only after police divers were called in did they find Maurice Bryant at the bottom of the reservoir with several weights tied around his body. These weights helped drag his body to the bottom of the pond, making it more difficult for searchers to find. In addition to the dead man, divers also found several sheep carcasses who had apparently also drowned – a finding that puzzled police as sheep were not known to drink from bodies of water like the one they found Maurice Bryant in, and rarely, if ever would fall in.

Martin Bryant showed little emotion when divers found his drowned father and he was called upon to identify his body. He stood motionless for a moment looking at the corpse before nodding to Constable Garry Whittle that it was in fact his dad. He then walked away laughing to himself and seemed completely disconnected from the situation or the death of his father. As Martin returned to the house, the local water truck arrived and he proceeded to talk jovially with the driver, laughing loudly and telling him a new joke he had heard a few days prior – all while completely ignoring the police activity down at the dam.

Police had once again found themselves investigating yet another odd situation where Martin Bryant's name came up. Investigators were suspicious of Bryant's involvement in the death, but the coroner declared the death a suicide after the investigation revealed numerous indications that Maurice Bryant had suffered from depression, and had in fact taken his own life. Many suspected that the sheer weight of trying to deal with his irrational and bizarre son was too much to bare and suicide was his only way out.

Upon Maurice Bryant's death, the younger Bryant inherited another \$250,000.

With both his father and close friend now dead, there was no one to keep Martin Bryant from becoming even more and more odd - and his behavior became increasingly bizarre and unpredictable.

Town residents would recall that he would walk about town in a straw Panama hat and shiny lizard skinned shoes, dressed in grey linen suit and carrying a leather brief case telling anyone who would listen about his success as a business man. At night, he would go to dinner by himself wearing an electric blue suit and bothering those that sat around him.

With Helen and his father dead - his despair continued to grow and he became suicidal. He travelled extensively after his father's death, often hoping to find a country where people would be friendlier to him. In total he took 14 such trips but finally gave up looking for a better place to be – telling his doctor that the only thing he enjoyed about travelling abroad was the conversations he would have with those forced to sit beside him on the long plane rides. In late 1995, he told his mother that he had “had enough of how people treated him and he was tired of feeling like everyone was against him“

But then an idea occurred to him.

An unforgettable way to get even with those that had so often dismissed him and treated him badly – and despite his meager intellect, a plan began to form. One thing was for certain, he would need more ammunition than he had on hand.

Chapter Three:

The Café Massacre

With the Martin's barely dead a half hour, Bryant headed past Port Arthur and up to an area called Palmer's Lookout Road where the couple had a home overlooking the ocean. Along the way he approached a tourist's car that had over heated along the road and slowed down to talk to the two people beside the vehicle. "You should come up to the café at Port Arthur" he told them "and have a coffee."

Upon arriving at the driveway of the Martin's home, Roger Lerner, a neighbor of the Martin's greeted him and the two men engaged in small talk. Bryant told the man he was thinking about buying the Martin's home and asked whether he thought they would mind if he was to take a closer at the house. Lerner had met Bryant several years prior and knew him to be unpredictable and odd – so he said he would come along with Bryant up to the property while he looked at it. The young man suddenly changed his mind and said he would be back later that afternoon after he took care of a few things. He then got into his car and began heading back to Port Arthur.



When Bryant arrived at Port Arthur there was little outside of his long wavy blonde hair to distinguish him from the hundreds of other people that were arriving in the parking lot. It was lunch time and the clear skies and the warm sun had brought out the tourists which made parking difficult.

As the security manager at Port Arthur, Ian Kingston was in charge that day of directing traffic as it arrived into the site. He paused to talk with Bryant as he arrived. The driver asked if he could park down close to the café, but Kingston told him that he should go over to the main parking lot. Bryant then countered if it would be alright if he parked in front of the information center rather than farther away from the cafe. Again he was told to go to the main parking lot. He did for a few minutes before driving back up and parking on the other side of the busses, close to the Broad Arrow café – a popular restaurant and gift shop enjoying a brisk afternoon of business thanks to the nice weather.

Kingston noticed that he had moved his car despite what he had been told, but decided not to bother confronting the man who seemed rather odd. He watched Bryant open the trunk of his car and take out a greenduffle bag of which he slung over his shoulder and walked into the café. With cars still pouring in from the highway, he returned his attention to directing traffic.

Bryant found himself hungry and he ordered lunch from the pretty girl behind the counter. His habit of talking in a near whimsical voice like he was out of a sixties surfing movie was barely noticed in the rush of customers ordering their meals. Taking his food outside, he sat by himself at a table and ate his lunch, talking to those around him in a mumbling, often incoherent voice. To one couple, he mentioned the lack of Japanese tourists and with another man he struck up a short conversation about the amount of yellow jacket wasps in the area.

Standing up, he picked up his tray and walked back into the café with his duffle bag. Putting his dishes down on an empty table, he calmly reached into his bag and took out a video camera which he set up towards the crowd – wanting to ensure that what he was about to do was captured forever on

video tape. He then took out the still bloody knife he had used to stab David Martin to death and placed it on the table.

The café was small and crowded and many of the tables were close together. More than 60 people were in the building when Bryant reached into his bag and took out the loaded Colt AR 15 semi-automatic assault rifle. He then pointed at two tourists from Malaysia - Moh Yee Ng and Sou Leng Chung. Pulling the trigger, the bullets ripped into couple and they died instantly.

Turning to the man standing to his left, he fired again, grazing the head of Mike Sargent who immediately fell to the floor dazed but still alive. Bryant continued to shoot, this time striking a fatal blow to the back of the head of Sargent's girlfriend, Kate Elizabeth Scott, who was killed instantly.

Panic swept across the café as people tried to dive for cover or get out of the crowded area. In a desperate attempt to distract Bryant, 28-year-old Jason Winter threw his tray at the gunman as his wife Joanne dove for cover with the couple's 15 month old child.

Outside the café, Security Manager Ian Kingston - who had directed Bryant as to where to park only twenty minutes earlier - could hear the sharp pops of what at first he thought was an electrical fire. As he walked quickly towards the café he could see clouds of dust and smoke coming from the door and the continual sound of what he began to realize was likely gun fire. As he began to run towards the front entrance of the cafe, he could now hear the terrified screams of those inside.

Inside, the carnage continued and Anthony Nightingale barely had time to yell "No – not here" before Bryant aimed his rifle at him and shot him through the neck, killing him on the spot. Bryant reached into his pocket and loaded another magazine of bullets into the gun.

Across the room, a group of elderly tourists had pulled their tables together to accommodate the ten of them for lunch; including Peter Croswell who had just finished eating when the shooting began. Instinctively, he tried to shield his friends from the gunfire, pulling Thelma Walker and Pamela Law to the ground and out of direct fire of Bryant's deadly onslaught. His instinctive efforts were unable to protect 68 year old Kevin Sharp who was killed instantly after being shot close range.

Another member of their group, Walter Bennett was shot in the back, and the bullet ripped through him, striking Raymond Sharp and killing both men. Others in the group including John and Gaye Fidler, as well as, Gerald Broome and Patricia Barker were all struck by bullet fragments. The four would survive the massacre but be forever scarred by the terrifying memory of the look on the face of the crazed cold blooded killer who was shooting at anyone in his path.

As Kingston approached the Broad Arrow Café from the outside, he had no idea what to expect as he neared the door. The first thing he saw was a man bleeding profusely at the entrance who appeared to be dead. The scene inside was absolute carnage, and Bryant was still firing on the crowd with his back to Kingston who was unarmed and unable to fight back. Kingston arrived just as Tony Kistan stood up from his seat and was hit in the head with a bullet causing his face to nearly disintegrate - but not before he was able to push his wife Sarah to the ground and to safety. His friend Andrew Mills was struck from less than 6 feet away with a deadly shot to the head and he also died instantly.

Ian Kingston turned from the door and ran back across the parking lot yelling for tourists to follow him to cover. Many outside the cafe originally thought the gunfire was part of a reenactment being put on by museum staff

– by the time they realized that the gunfire was real it would be too late for many of them.

As the sound of gun fire continued inside the café, those within ear shot began to move back from the building and towards Kingston's yelling; while others moved closer, wanting to see what was going on and what all the noise was about.

There was not obvious escape from the building as Bryant blocked the main entrance and was shooting at whoever moved. Graham Colver was struck in the jaw by a bullet from Bryant's rifle, and would barely survive choking on his own blood from the wound. Colver's wife Carolyn was shot in the back but would survive the attack – her daughter Sarah Loughton was killed instantly after she was struck in the head by a bullet from the AR-15 Rifle.

Mervyn Howard barely had time to move before Bryant killed him with a fatal blast that travelled through his body and out the window of the café shattering the glass – the first real sign to those outside that something truly terrible was happening inside.

The gunman then turned to Howard's wife Mary who he shot in the neck. As she lay dying on the floor, Bryant stood above her, paused and then shot her point blank in the head – much like he had to the parrot when he was 14 years old.

With most everyone in the café either dead or lying injured, Bryant then moved towards the attached gift shop where he would continue to shoot at unsuspecting tourists who had no escape. A door at the back of the building was locked and there was nowhere to run.

Barely 45 seconds had passed and 12 people were now dead with another 10 laying wounded on the floor of the cafe including Robert Elliott who was shot in the arm and head but was still alive near the fireplace.

Two employees behind the front counter were shot and killed as Bryant started to move into the attached gift shop adjacent to the dining area in the café. Nicole Burgess, who was just 17 and working part time at the café counter was killed instantly after she was struck in the head with a direct shot from Bryant's gun. Elizabeth Howard, 26, was hit twice, once in the arm and a second shot in the chest which killed her.

By now, a complete sense of terror and panic swept over the entire building as the gunman continued to fire indiscriminately at anyone or anything that moved. Tourists dove for cover behind whatever they could find – but the wooden tables were no match for the steel tipped armor piercing bullets being fired from Bryant's rifle. Corallee Lever hid, terrified to move and unable to help her husband Dennis who lay dying on the floor after being shot in the head.

By the rear locked exit, Peter Nash lay on top of his wife Carolyn in an attempt to shield her from the gun fire. Close by, Pauline Masters and Ron Jary had been unable to get the door open and now crouched in the corner terrified that the gunman would see them.

Gwen Neander was still trying desperately to open the locked door and was immediately shot from behind by Bryant, striking her in the head and killing her on the spot. Bryant then began to move into the gift shop and shot at an overturned table, striking Peter Crosswell in the buttock – the table offering little defense against the bullets which ripped through the wood as if it wasn't there. The gunman then stopped to reload his rifle giving a brief pause in the carnage as the shooting briefly paused.

Tourist Jason Winter mistakenly assumed the attack was over after he heard no more shooting and stood up just as Bryant had finished putting a fresh clip into his AR-15. Winter was shot as he held his hands up to protect

himself - the bullet passed through his hand striking him in the chest and neck. A second shot hit him in the face and he collapsed to the floor dead. On the floor behind Winter, Dennis Olson and his wife Mary, who had been vacationing in Australia from the United States were wounded by bullet fragments but both would survive.

With next to no movement in the gift shop, Bryant turned and started to walk to the front entrance of the café. As he made his way through the maze of dead bodies, overturned tables and chairs, he saw Ronald Jary, Peter Nash and Pauline Masters who were hiding and had been able to avoid being shot in the first wave of the attack. He coldly shot all three, killing the trio in a hail of gun fire. To the left, Bryant spotted an Asian tourist who had nowhere to hide or escape to – but Bryant's rifle was empty and he had no more clips in his coat pockets.

The crazed gunman moved back towards the table where his bag had been left, reloaded his rifle, and put the strap of the duffle bag over his shoulder before walking out onto the deck of the café.

Less than three minutes had passed and 20 people were now dead, with another 12 laying severely wounded by the attack.

Chapter Four:

The Parking Lot

Although the sound of gun fire had been echoing across the grounds and was originating from the café, most outside had very little idea of what was happening. In the front of the café, Ian Kingston was yelling for those in the parking lot to follow him to cover. Behind the building, several employees had escaped out through the back kitchen exit and were motioning for those they could see to take cover. For those in the vicinity, the entire situation was very surreal and no one seemed quite sure what the commotion was about - or whether it was part of a reenactment taking place for tourists. The popping noise from inside the building had stopped and barely five minutes had passed since the sound had begun.

As Bryant stepped out into the sunlight on onto the deck of the café where only a few minutes ago, he had been eating his lunch – he pointed his gun and squeezed off several shots at Ashley John Law who was attempting to move tourists to safety across the parking lot some 100 yards away. The bullets narrowly missed them as zipped by and struck the trees. The sound of gun fire echoed across the lot, and for the first time, both tourists and employees began to truly realize the severity of the situation.

Since the parking lot was full of large tour buses, those who were still on the pavement saw the gunman standing on the deck of the café and heard the shots. One of the coach drivers, Royce Thompson was the first to come into the direct line of Bryant's fire and was shot in the back as he tried to run between two buses to safety. Bleeding, he fell to the ground and rolled

under the bus. He would later die of his injuries and would be murder victim number 21 of the massacre.

As Bryant moved towards the other buses he shot Brigid Cook in the thigh as she was attempting to tell people to run for safety. The bullet shattered her femur bone so severely that fragments of the bone wounded coach driver Ian McElwee. Both would recover from their injuries and survive the assault.

As the crowd of people still in the open moved to the rear of the buses for some form of cover - Bryant shot at them indiscriminately before turning his attention to another coach where tourists were screaming as they scrambled to get out of his line of fire. Just as Winifred Aplin was about to get around the back corner of the bus, she was struck by a bullet in her side. She collapsed and died before rescuers could reach her. Yvonne Lockley was more fortunate – a bullet grazed her face and despite being terrified and in pain, she was able to get into one of the open buses and take cover where Bryant was unable to see her.

Confusion reigned supreme as Bryant continued to systematically shoot at anything he saw moving. A group of tourists made the mistake of turning back towards the bus area after they were misinformed that they were fleeing in the wrong direction - they nearly ran right into Bryant who opened fire on them. Janet Quin, a Wildlife Park owner, was shot in the back and lay helpless on the tarmac. Doug Hutchinson was wounded in the arm but continued to run for cover until he found a place to hide and was able to avoid being injured any further.

As Bryant moved along the coast line of the cove, he approached his car and opened up the hatchback where he changed rifles. Dropping the AR 15 into car, he took out a FN FAL – a semi-automatic rifle capable of firing up

to 700 rounds a minute. The weapon was popular with most NATO military forces and was readily available to gun collectors thanks to the more than 2 million rifles in circulation. The clip held 30, 308 rounds and was known for its reliability in combat and its accuracy at long distances.

Now re-armed, he fired at the tourists who stood across the main field between the bus parking and the main wall of the penitentiary ruins – but did not strike anyone.

Seemingly content that there were no more victims to be killed – Bryant climbed into his car only to reemerge and head directly back towards the cluster of parked buses where he spotted more tourists frantically trying to hide from him. When they realized he was coming for them, they ran frantically towards the buses as he open fired on them.

As Bryant drew closer to the first bus in his path, he came upon the wounded Janet Quin. Laying helpless and face down on the tarmac, he shot her from close range in the back and killed her.

He then walked around the coach, stepping into the open door and up the steps of the bus where he spotted Elva Gaylard trying to hide a few rows back in the bus. Calmly pointing his assault rifle at her, he shot her in the chest and killed her instantly. Still standing in the aisle of the bus, Bryant could see Gordon Francis attempting to close the door of the adjacent coach and he shot him through the glass. Although seriously wounded, Francis would survive his injuries.

Bryant then stepped of the bus where he encountered Neville Quin - the husband of Janet Quin. He chased the man around the coach and fired two rounds in his pursuit before catching up to him and pointing the rifle directly in his face.

“No one gets away from me“ Bryant said in his almost comical surfer voice. Realizing the gunman was about to pull the trigger, Quin jolted his body away from the rifle barrel but was struck in the neck rendering him momentarily paralyzed. Bryant assumed the man was dead and didn't fire again allowing Quin to crawl over to his wounded wife where she died a few minutes later in his arms. Although bleeding from his neck, Neville Quin would survive and recover from his wounds.

Bryant continued to fire at anyone he saw moving. For those in the area, there seemed to be no escape and the echoes of the shots being fired made it difficult to determine where they were coming from. Barely 10 minutes had passed and 24 people were now dead with another 18 severely wounded.

Walking back over to his car, Bryant climbed into the driver's seat, closed the door and started the vehicle. However, his murderous spree wasn't over yet.

Chapter Five:

Fleeing the Scene

911 emergency phone lines were now jammed as frantic callers reported the events in progress at Port Arthur. The closest main Police detachment was in the city of Hobart almost an hour away from the historical site. Operators could barely make out the panicked callers voices as they reported a gunman shooting at tourists – all while in the background the sounds of gun fire could be heard. Only two officers were in the area and were attending a false alarm at Saltwater River – about 14 miles from Port Arthur. It was 1:36 pm.

As word of the attack spread, doctors at the Royal Hobart Hospital began to try and interpret the fragmented reports of mass casualties and multiple gunshot victims from Port Arthur. Nothing had been confirmed yet but across the city the sound of police and ambulance sirens dominated the sleepy afternoon as first responders raced to reach Port Arthur.

Now leaving the parking lot, Martin Bryant drove his car along the tree lined road where he approached Nanette Mikac and her two young children, 3 year old Madeline and 6 year old Alannah. The Mikac's had been hiding with Museum Security Manager Ian Kingston – but had decided it would be safer to try and run from the area rather than hide with the large group of tourists Kingston had rounded up. Despite the man's pleas for her to stay, she began running down the road and now was face to face with the crazed gunman who she originally assumed was someone stopping to offer her help.

Bryant stepped out of the car just as someone yelled “It’s him“ and Nanette Mikac realized who she now faced. Putting his hand on the woman’s shoulder, he told her to get on her knees of which she did. She begged the man not to harm her children. Ignoring her request – he put the rifle to her temple and fired – killing her instantly. He then turned towards 3 year old Madeline and shot her in the shoulder before shooting her a second time in the chest and killing the young girl. Alannah instinctively tried to run for safety and hid behind a tree where Bryant found her – pushed the barrel of the rifle to her neck and pulled the trigger – killing the 6 year old.

Being a Sunday, the site was crowded with tourists and there were plenty of witnesses to the murder of the young family. Those close by began to run away from the scene and Bryant fired shots towards them but failed to hit anyone.

Hearing the gun shots in the direction of the road that the Mikac family had headed down, Ian Hamilton called up to the toll booth at the end of the road Bryant was on in an effort to try and warn others that the gunman was making his way towards them. When the attendant answered, he told her to get down on the floor and not to get up for any reason. The woman protested that she couldn’t leave the money unattended and he told her “Don’t worry about the bloody money, just get down on the floor“.

As Nanette Mikac and her two daughters lay dead on the road, Bryant climbed into his car and headed back towards the toll booth of the park. As confusion compounded, others up towards the booth told drivers that they needed to leave the area as there was a crazed man shooting tourists down the road. The cars began to try and back up the winding tree lined road towards the toll booth – not knowing that Bryant was coming directly

towards them. Others hid in the bushes and prayed that they wouldn't be seen. No one knew where Bryant was or what his next move would be.

In the panic, the narrow road and toll booth area had become blocked with confused drivers. One vehicle, a yellow BMW driven by Russell Pollard sat waiting for a way to turn around and get away from the area when Bryant approached them in his own car and got out – pointing the rifle at them.

Pollard and Mary Nixon sat frozen in the front seat while passengers Helene and Robert Salzmänn were in the back seat. Bryant was walking towards the car when Robert Salzmänn stepped out of the car and confronted the gunman. The two men exchanged angry words before Bryant pointed his rifle at him and shot him at point blank range – killing him on the spot. Russell Pollard stepped from the driver's seat and was shot in the chest from close range, a wound that would also prove to be fatal.

The two women, still inside the car, were heard as Bryant executed them at close range. He then pulled their bodies from the car left them on the road as horrified tourist watched in disbelief – many trapped in their own cars. Cars backed up frantically from the toll booth terrified they would be next. The gunman then calmly walked over to his own car, took out several boxes of ammunition, a set of handcuffs, his AR 15 rifle and a container of gasoline and put it into the BMW.

As he was about to get into the car, Graham Sutherland approached in his vehicle and Bryant opened fired – shattering the glass of the door, with another bullet puncturing the metal. Sutherland was able to put the car into reverse and escape the scene, before he was hit again.

Bryant climbed into the tourist's BMW, closed the door and sped off down the road towards the highway that lead back to the Bed and Breakfast in

Seacape. His death toll now was at 31 men, women and children – and another 19 wounded.

Chapter Six:

Road Rage

As Bryant drove the stolen BMW back towards Seascope, emergency response vehicles were racing towards Port Arthur. There was no way to tell how many people had been involved, or who the gunman was – or even if there was more than one shooter. Back at the main museum area there had been no sound of gunshots for several minutes and people cautiously started to come out of hiding although still terrified at the prospect of more shots being fired.

Back in Hobart, medical staff were told to start preparing for multiple casualties and several trauma teams were being formed. Nurses cleared out an entire ward to deal with the wounded that were expected to be arriving via ambulance and helicopter. They had no idea how many to expect or what had actually happened – just to be ready for the worst.

Senior negotiator Terry McCarthy was on shift at the Hobart Police Station when the call came in. The call was from the tactical response team. The switchboard operator passed on a brief message to McCarthy - “20 dead at Port Arthur – get here now“

Having no idea what was going on, he immediately headed to his car and began the drive up to historical site along with every available police officer in the area.

The people mulling about the Mobil gas station on the main highway to Port Arthur had little idea of what had happened down at the museum site and were unprepared when Graham Sutherland approached with the glass missing from the side of his car and the bullet hole in the door. Sutherland yelled for people to take cover and told anyone who would listen of the crazed gunman who had murdered several people at the Port Arthur toll booth. People were unsure whether to believe the driver or dismiss him as some sort of lunatic.

Shortly behind Sutherland, a yellow BMW pulled in front of the driveway and blocked the path of white Toyota Corolla trying to leave. Bryant jumped out of his car and pointed the gun at the driver – demanding he get out of the car. The driver, Glenn Pears, held his hands up and begged the gunman not to hurt his girlfriend, Zoe Hall who was in the passenger seat of the car. Bryant grabbed Pears and dragged him towards the stolen car and forced him into the trunk where he shut the lid and locked him in. Walking back towards the Corolla, he looked at the pretty woman in the bright red blouse and black sweater as she tried to climb over to the driver's seat and away from him - Bryant fired three shots and killed her before she could escape.

Witnesses to the murder and abduction ran to hide in the trees that lined the back of the gas station. Inside, the clerk on duty at the station locked the front doors and told everyone inside to hide in the back of the store. Reaching under the counter, the clerk grabbed his own rifle and loaded the gun, but Bryant had already driven off in the BMW with Glenn Pears still locked in the trunk.

Within a few minutes, a police car pulled up in front of the gas station and the attendant told the officer about the gunman with long blond hair who

took one man hostage and had killed the woman in the front seat of the car still parked in the entrance to the parking lot. The officer ran back to his squad car and began down the highway at full speed to try and catch up with the attacker.

Bryant was already well ahead of the police and was now parked in front of the tudor style Fox and Hounds resort hotel. Standing along the road, Bryant opened fire on several people standing outside the building as they ran for cover; having no idea what was going on or why a man was shooting at them. As a car approached from the other direction, Bryant turned and shot out the front windshield but failed to injure the occupants inside the vehicle.

A second vehicle driven by Michael Wanders was approaching the scene and slowed as they passed him thinking the man holding the rifle was hunting rabbits. The couple was shocked when the man pointed his rifle and began to shoot at them. As they tried to speed away to safety, a bullet cut through the throttle cable causing the car to lose power. Fortunately for the car's occupants, it was moving downhill and its forward momentum kept it rolling away as Bryant continued to fire at them - shattering the back windshield and hitting passenger Linda White in the arm.

As a third car approached oblivious as to what was happening, Bryant shattered the windshield of the car with his first shot, wounding Douglas Horner with broken glass. Instinctively, Horner stepped on the gas and tried to get away from the gunman. As they raced down the hill, they passed Michael Wanders and Linda White who were frantically waving at them in an effort to get them to stop. Their own car was stranded at the bottom of the hill barely out of the line of fire from where Bryant was standing. They sped past the couple before changing their mind at the last moment and

quickly backed up, allowing the couple to get into the back seat before fleeing the bizarre situation to safety.

As traffic continued to drive past the gunman - most were completely unaware there was any danger until Bryant would shoot at them. Susan Williams was hit in the hand by a bullet as her husband Simon Williams drove past where the gunman was standing. The car behind them jammed on their brakes and immediately put the vehicle in reverse while Bryant fired at them but missed his target.

With no other targets in site, Bryant put his rifle on the seat beside him in the BMW and began driving towards Seascap and the house where he had killed his first two victims earlier in the day.

Chapter Seven:

A Scene of Total Devastation

By the time Bryant reached Seascap it was just before 3 pm.

Approximately 90 minutes had passed since he began his murderous rampage and police from Hobart had started to arrive at Port Arthur. The death count to this point was 34 people with another 23 suffering from serious injuries either caused by bullets or debris and shrapnel from the gun shots.

Bryant had arrived at the Seascap Inn and opened the trunk where Glen Pears was still being held. At gunpoint he directed the man into the building and handcuffed him to the staircase railing inside the hotel. He then calmly walked back out to the car and poured a jerry can of gas on it before lighting it on fire. Within seconds, the car was fully engulfed in flames. A few moments later, two patrolmen arrived on the scene after spotting the burning car.

Seeing the officers arrive, Bryant began to shoot at them from the front window of the B&B and in a matter of seconds, had both officers pinned down in a ditch unable to get to safer cover. Radioing in for help, they gave their location to the dispatch operator who immediately directed a large response team to the Inn; where it appeared the Port Arthur gunman was now holed up.

A half hour away In Port Arthur, tourists and staff remained cautiously hidden for fear that the gunman could still be outside and waited for the police to arrive from Hobart. As the sirens approached a sense of relief washed over the area; but there was still the apprehension of not knowing if

the shooter was still in range. The entire country side was now on alert and awash in sirens and the sounds of helicopters arriving to the area. More than 200 police were dispatched to Port Arthur and ambulances began to pour into historical site.

To this point, police had very little information on who the gunman was – just that he had long blond hair and was in his mid to late twenties. The assault had happened so fast, that there were dozens of conflicting reports as to how tall the man was and what he looked like, as well as which direction he had headed. With Bryant now confirmed as the primary suspect in the shooting and now holed up in the Seascope house, police tactical response teams were able to focus on the specific area – although dozens of police remained in Port Arthur to ensure that there wasn't a second shooter or further threat to civilians.

As emergency responders arrived on scene of the museum bus parking lot and the Broad Arrow Café – little could have prepared them for what they would encounter. The scenic area had been turned into a war zone and there were more dead and wounded than was initially count reported. As police surrounded the area with guns drawn, first aid providers and paramedics raced to assess the dead from the living and to set up a make shift triage system to get the most severely wounded airlifted via helicopter back to the hospital in Hobart where they were preparing to receive for those that survived the attack.

Inside the café, dozens of people lay dead and blood covered the walls and floor. Bryant had been using metal jacket bullets that not only are capable of piercing through armored vehicles, but upon impact, the metal tipped head of the bullet explodes like a mushroom and does significant damage to whatever it hits. When struck by a bullet of this caliber and type, the result

is mass tissue damage and fragmented bone which can splinter into deadly sharp shards. These bullets are unlike standard ammunition where loses velocity quickly when it strikes and the wound is often clean. Most that were shot by Bryant were either killed instantly or bled to death before rescuers could reach them.

At the Royal Hobart Hospital, Steve Wilkinson, head of special surgery was on shift and had received word that a major disaster had happened at Port Arthur and he was preparing for the wounded to start arriving momentarily. Information was scattered and there was no way to know how many injured people they would be dealing with. As the casualties started arriving, wounds ranged from shrapnel punctures to severely wounded individuals who had lost dangerous amounts of blood. Because of the massive amount of damaged or missing tissue – surgical teams worked frantically to save those that were already close to death.

Chapter Eight:

The Cornered Madman

As police converged on Seascap and tightened their noose around Bryant inside the house, there was no way to know if the gunman had hostages inside the inn or if he was alone. As investigators had worked frantically to try and piece together information on the shooter's identity; was and word began to trickle in that the name of the shooter was likely a man named Martin Bryant. Bryant, was known to Tasmania police for his erratic behavior, including the incident where he was shooting his pellet gun at tourists near his farm in Copping.

By now the entire region was beginning to learn about the attack as word spread across Australia and the globe about the deadly shooting spree at one of the country's most famous historical sites – and the resulting standoff that was taking place between the shooter and Hobart police.

Lead negotiator Terry MacCarthy arrived at Seascap just before 3 pm to witness Bryant still shooting randomly at the officers who had begun to surround the property. However, they were careful to not expose themselves to the gun fire coming from inside the Inn.

To this point all MacCarthy knew was the likely name of the shooter and that conflicting reports had come in already from family members who suggested Bryant was suffering from schizophrenia. As the police set up a command post, MacCarthy dialed the phone number of the Inn several times in succession until the man inside picked up the phone.

“Hello“ the voice on the other end of the phone answered with no sense of panic or fear. MacCarthy was taken back by the almost cheerful nature of

the man's voice and disposition.

"Is this Martin?" MacCarthy asked.

"It's me Jamie" the man called himself as he responded with no hesitation. Jamie was a name Bryant had often referred to himself as.

"Jamie - How are things going in there"

"Oh couldn't be better – just like on a Hawaiian Holiday..." Bryant responded.

"A Hawaiian holiday?"

"Yes that's correct sir" Bryant's voice continued to be cheery and seemingly oblivious to the situation.

"I'm sorry I don't understand what you mean by that."

"I don't know myself... no?" Bryant sounded confused like he didn't understand his own words.

Although MacCarthy was the senior negotiator with decades of experience in dealing with hostile hostage situations, he was taken back by the whimsical disposition and words that were being said by Martin Bryant. It was clear they were not dealing with a typical hostage situation and that Bryant had no obvious or immediate demands - or even an apparent reason for what he had done.

With Bryant surrounded now at Seascope, the primary focus of the negotiations was to try and determine if there was any hostages inside the building. This would have a direct effect on how police tactical units handled the situation. If they could establish that no one else was inside the building, then they could focus on talking down the gunman without fear of him killing or hurting anyone else. If there were hostages, then an entirely

different tactic would be required, including ensuring that nothing was done to aggravate the gunman any worse than he apparently already was.

No one had seen the Martins who owned and operated the Seascope Inn since early that morning, and there was an unconfirmed report of a man being taken hostage by Bryant in the trunk of the stolen BMW; which was still burning close by. Police had managed to check the vehicle and there was no sign of any one in the car. This meant that either Bryant had already dumped his hostage before arriving at the Inn – or the man was inside the building and being held captive. With the Martins and the kidnapped man unaccounted for, there were potentially three civilians inside that were trapped with their attacker - and this didn't take into account any potential guests or staff in the building that may be being held inside.

MacCarthy continued to talk with Bryant in an effort to gather information as well as the important task of keeping him distracted from shooting at the police outside. Careful attention was also being paid while talking with the gunman to any sounds of people in the background – of which there were none.

It was approaching seven o'clock and although Bryant had stopped shooting at police outside, he showed no apparent willingness to end the standoff. When negotiators quizzed him on how things were inside, he told police he was preparing dinner for his hostages; there was no way to be sure whether he was bluffing or telling the truth. As the conversation progressed, Bryant told MacCarthy he had been out surfing that afternoon and made no reference to the attack at Port Arthur.

As the sun gave way to night fall – Bryant became concerned by the police presence around the Inn and wanted to know why a police sniper had a rifle pointed at the house.

“What I’ve actually found out mannnn” he drawled out the word man “is that one of your boys is right outside – North East I’d say with an infrared scope – can you just ask him to move on?”

“We will do that” MacCarthy answered.

“He’s gonna shoot your main man” Bryant answered with a hint of fear in his voice.

“Martin we have a real situation here – there was a terrible shooting at Port Arthur”

“Was anyone hurt?” Bryant quizzed.

“There were a number of people hurt”

“They weren’t killed?” He asked – sounding almost disappointed that the negotiator said there were only injured people and no one dead.

“I don’t know the full details.”

As the verbal exchange continued, Bryant started to become more agitated and police suspected he had either run out of ammunition or was down to his last few rounds, especially since there hadn’t been any shots fired in several hours.

“Martin, what do you say we end this and you put down your weapon and come outside” MacCarthy asked calmly.

“No I think I want a heli – you need to get me a heli here.” Bryant demanded a helicopter be made available to him. “You can buy a heli.” his voice was becoming more agitated. “I’ve got the money – don’t you understand – I’ve got the money. I’ve got all the wealth I want”

“Alright”

“I want the heli now” he demanded.

It was then that negotiators ran into an unanticipated problem – the cordless phone they had been talking with Bryant on inside Seascope had lost its charge and the line went dead. There was no means now to continue to communicate with the agitated man and a decision needed to be made about what the next step was to be. A potential option was to storm the house and take Bryant by force, but they couldn't be sure that they could protect any hostages inside the building; despite their suspicions that there was no one else alive other than Bryant.

The other option was to simply wait him out until he came out on his own. There was no way of communicating with the police outside the Inn – but with no signs of anyone still alive in the building besides Bryant, police elected to wait until sunrise when they could better determine the next course of action.

As daylight broke on Monday, April 29th, Bryant had been in Seascope for 18 hours. The night had been quite and despite several attempts, no further communication took place with Bryant. Police had no idea as to what to expect next from a man who had become one of the most deadly killers in the world the previous day.

A tight perimeter had been established around the guest house and a constant watch ensured there was no chance or possibility he could escape.

Shortly before 8 am, smoke suddenly started to pour out of the main building. Authorities were shocked to realize that Bryant had apparently set the house on fire as flames began to become evident.

Within 10 minutes the house was becoming completely engulfed by fire. The front door burst open and Bryant - his clothes partially on fire - ran out and began to roll around on the front lawn of the Inn. Police immediately

moved in and used a blanket to put the flames out on Bryant's body – and despite being badly burned, he was handcuffed and taken into custody.

Rescuers raced into the burning building, searching for any hostages that may be still alive. It was there they found the Martin's dead, as well as, the lone hostage Bryant had taken from the Mobil gas station, Glen Pierce – still handcuffed to the stair case railing of the house.

Martin Bryant's deadly rampage was finally at an end – and the gunman was now on his way to the same hospital where many of his victims were being treated. With severe burns to several parts of his body, the Burn Unit at the Royal Hobart Hospital now had to treat the injuries of the man who had killed 35 people less than 24 hours ago.

Chapter Nine:

The Aftermath

Bryant had been seriously burned from the fire he had started at Seascapes, but was now in stable condition and recovering in the hospital under tight security. Assigned to keep close watch on Martin Bryant was Officer Phil Pyke, who had first met the gunman several years earlier while assisting in the search for the missing Maurice Bryant.

Tensions ran high in the ward as several armed policemen stood guard outside the doors of the room the gunman was being held in. Bryant's long blond hair was a tangled melted mess and the smell of burnt skin hung heavily in the air. Hospital staff were told to use extreme caution when dealing with their now infamous patient who had already made several verbal threats towards nurses and had made shooting motions with his restrained hands as they walked by his bed.

The extent of the burns were severe enough to require netted bandages to try and keep the skin from falling off his body while it healed. Despite the injuries, he remained securely handcuffed at all times to the bed.

Bryant had been formally charged with the murders at Port Arthur and was in the official custody of the Australian Justice Department. Authorities had become concerned over the potential of vigilantes storming the hospital as several reports had come in to police headquarters of people flying in from around the country to even the score. Guards were told to remain vigilant for any individual that may try to attack the burn ward in an effort to get to Bryant. Officer Pyke had already decided in his own mind that if they were

to try and attack the hospital – they could have Bryant and that his only job was to protect the nurses and doctors of the hospital.

No one was to have closer contact to the recovering gunman than Pyke. In his memoirs, he would later recall the way Bryant would flip from almost childlike behavior to that of an evil killer numerous times throughout the day. He would stare at the medical staff or guards with an lifeless, cold fixation and then just as quickly return to an almost helpless state of an injured 10 year old wanting to be comforted by the adults in the room.

As the investigation continued into the timeline and events of what had happened, word of the cold blooded execution of the young Mikac girls began to spread and Pyke stood over the bed of Bryant looking down on the man who had taken so many lives without a hint of remorse. Bryant opened his eyes and stared coldly up at him – Pyke tapped at his gun in his holster and said through gritted teeth “If you get out of those cuffs Martin – this is for you – as I can fight back unlike your other victims.”

Throughout the week investigators continued to gather evidence as forensic teams examined the crime scenes in an attempt to determine what had happened. Bryant had fired more than 250 rounds of .308 steel tipped ammunition. Police recovered the AR 15 Assault Rifle in the back of his yellow Volvo and the FAL semi-automatic rifle in the burned out Seascape Inn. They also found a self-loading Korean made Daewoo combat shotgun with a large clear garbage bag full of hundreds of live shells.

Martin Bryant offered little assistance in understanding why he went on his rampage and denied that he remembered anything about what had taken place. This fit in with the suggestion from relatives that he was a suffering schizophrenic who had no recollection of what he had done.

By the time the investigation would be completed more than 1000 witnesses would have their statements taken as Crown Prosecutors prepared their case against Bryant. 35 people lay dead and 23 were injured in a case that shook the nation and shocked the world.

When Bryant was brought to trial, prosecutors laid out a detailed and shocking case that painstakingly examined how a lone gunman was able to murder so many people so quickly. It was no surprise when Bryant entered a plea of not guilty when the initial charges were read aloud. Day after day before the Australian Supreme Court, evidence was examined and were given that showed Bryant as a crazed killer with little remorse for his actions.

As the case wound down – Martin Bryant would once again shock the entire country when he changed his plea from not guilty to guilty which was accepted by the court.

There were few in Australia that didn't now wait for the sentence that would be handed down to what many saw as an unremorseful cold blooded killer – and the discussion over the death penalty being a fitting penalty gained traction. Australia did not have laws that supported capital punishment.

On the day of sentencing, Martin Bryant showed little emotion and there were those that questioned if he even understood what was happening. As he rose before the court the sentencing verdict was read out loud.

“Taking account of the medical evidence and of his lack of insight into the magnitude and effects of his conduct, apparent in all his appearances before this Court, I have no reason to hope and every reason to fear that he (the defendant) will remain indefinitely as disturbed and insensitive as he was

when planning and executing the crimes of which he now stands convicted.”

“Martin Bryant, on each of the 35 counts of murder in this indictment, you are sentenced to imprisonment for the term of your natural life. I order that you not be eligible for parole in respect of any such a sentence.”

“On each of the remaining counts in the indictment, you are sentenced to imprisonment for 21 years, to be served concurrently with each other, and with the concurrent sentence of life imprisonment already imposed.”

“In respect of each sentence of 21 years, I order that you likewise not be eligible for parole.”

In total, Bryant was sentenced to 35 Life sentences for the people he killed - plus the penalties handed down for those he injured for a grand total of 1035 years.

He was remanded in Risdon Prison in Tasmania where he was to spend the rest of his life.

Chapter Ten:

Understanding the Mind of a Killer

One of things so terrifying about rampage killers like Martin Bryant is the nature of their crime. Unlike a methodical serial killer who may kill dozens of people over an extended period – rampage killers attack without warning and within minutes can kill dozens of people, as in the case of Bryant or other shocking attacks, such as, the shootings at Columbine High School in Littleton, Colorado.

In a more recent attack, 12 people were killed and another 70 wounded when James Eagan Holmes opened fire in a crowded movie theater in Aurora, Colorado. By the time police could respond to the scene of the attack – the damage had already been done. For the families of those that were killed or those that were wounded in these types of attacks – there is no rhyme or reason – just a case of being in the right place at the wrong time.

In the case of Martin Bryant – there had been several tell-tale warning signs that he was a potentially violent offender, but in the 1990's, rampage killers were not as common as they are now and police were less likely to track or act on a potentially violent member of the community.

In the first 8 months of Bryant's confinement in the psychiatric ward of Risdon Penitentiary, doctors determined that there was little hope of ever rehabilitating the inmate. It was determined that he had the IQ of an 11 year old with very little interest, if any, in anyone but himself. Never the less,

doctors and authorities wanted to learn more about what makes a killer like Martin Bryant tick.

Killers like Bryant are rarely safe from other inmates in a prison like Risdon and must be kept separated from those in general population. All of Australia – including some of the most violent imprisoned murderers in the entire country had heard of the execution of the two small children, and Bryant's likelihood of surviving more than a few days among other general population was very remote. To compound matters, Bryant was continually trying to commit suicide. A special cell was constructed from two previous cells to hold the inmate and protect him from both outside threats as well as himself.

Dr. Wilf Lopez was one of the doctors assigned to assess Bryant and knew within a few weeks of observing his behavior that there would be no expectation that Bryant was anything but a unremorseful, cold blooded killer who given the chance would kill again. The gunman showed no signs of regrets and would remind both medical staff and guards on a daily basis what he had done, wearing the title of the Nation's worst mass murderer as a badge of honor.

In one particularly alarming incident, Bryant asked a female nurse if she had children and then suggested it would be nice if she brought them by for a visit – followed by where he held his hand like a loaded gun and pointed at her making a “click click” noise as if to shoot them. In another incident, he offered a female guard his sperm so she could have his baby.

Such was the attitude in Australia that authorities had to take special precautions of ensure the safety of Bryant from guards, medical staff and support workers who were in contact with him in prison. There was a heightened fear that he would be poisoned by someone with access to his

food and subsequently steps were taken to ensure that no one could attempt to kill him in this manner. The irony was lost on no one that special precautions needed to be considered to protect a man who had killed so many and now seemed to tremendously enjoy his own notoriety.

Ever since the sentence was handed down, there had been pressure from the public as well as government officials that Bryant should receive no special protection while in prison – or as much protection as his victims did when he attacked them.

Then serving Attorney General Ray Groom promised the public that Bryant would not be protected from other inmates his whole life in prison and one day “would pay the price of what he had done and that is what will occur“.

In studying and observing Bryant there is little evidence to suggest he has any remorse or empathy for those he hurt or what he had done. The court had already ruled that he was not insane, although his behavior often indicated otherwise. In a country with no death penalty, the ruling of the Supreme Court had the final say and prison authorities were now charged with managing the imprisonment of the killer.

There have been many who have attempted to understand why Martin Bryant became a brutal, cold blooded rampage killer. Psychologists have spent nearly two decades studying him with the hope of determining a pattern and warning signs to identify future potential killers.

Even as a young child Bryant showed signs of being a violent individual with a fascination of death and harming others. Ever since he was in his earliest years of development he had little ability to fit in with others and his erratic and odd behavior made it difficult for others to relate to him. Through his childhood years he was prone to playing odd pranks on others,

but as he grew older, the pranks became darker and more disconcerting to those around him, including local authorities.

As an adult, Bryant's behavior reached new levels of oddity. His father was forced to take on the role of full time restrainer in order to protect Bryant from harming himself or others. It was clear that his son's behavior was becoming worse and his social skills were diminishing. When Maurice Bryant died, there was no one left to keep him from sinking deeper into depravity.

In retrospect it seemed obvious that the adult Bryant was always a threat to the public. In the years leading up to the attack on Port Arthur, he was rarely seen not carrying his air rifle and there were repeated complaints about him shooting at people, animals and cars.

The loss of his best friend Helen Harvey was a severe blow to the already mental wellbeing of Bryant. After the car accident that had killed the woman, his own recovery was slow and painful from the injuries he sustained, including two shattered vertebrae in his neck. His behavior began to become more abusive and he started to become a problem to the local neighborhood children whom he would pester and bully during their playtime.

By his own admission Martin Bryant sought help for his increasingly deep sense of despair following the death of Helen Harvey. He complained of a growing sense of anxiety and constant sadness. He was prescribed a tricyclic antidepressant.

When Bryant's father was found dead, despite the concerns of those around him that he may have played a role in his death, police found enough evidence to indicate that Maurice Bryant did take his own life. Martin Bryant's bizarre and jovial behavior at the farm where the body of his father

was found was attributed to his inability to understand consequences and was a poignant example of his limited comprehension of even the most basic social behaviors.

Outside of proving the basic necessities of life – there is no policy on what comforts and privileges must be provided to a prisoner like Bryant, and thus, his existence is sparse. He is allowed a radio that is out of his reach in his cell, but is allowed no access to the outside world or news media and in particular any knowledge of how the country has reacted to his crimes.

As the years have passed since Martin Bryant was imprisoned, there has been little change in his daily routine. He exercises twice a day with a program he created for himself which resembles a form of dancing and jumping jacks. He occasionally builds puzzles but is allowed no access to anything he could use to harm himself or others. In the nearly two decades behind bars, he has attempted to commit suicide 6 times and is now watched by three cameras 24 hours a day. His suicide attempts include once trying to hang himself with his bed sheet on the end of his bed, as well as, trying to swallow a tube of toothpaste that then became lodged in his throat.

Because of his limited intelligence and mental state, there is very little in the line of traditional activities that can be offered to him as an inmate. There is no education he can participate in that is at his diminished level of learning ability, and there is no usual function he can provide in a work related environment.

An entire generation of medical staff and prison employees has come and gone since Martin Bryant was locked up. Today, there are few in the prison that remember when he first arrived. He now keeps his head shaved and refuses to receive any visitors including his mother who has campaigned for

years that the government should look into the conspiracy theories that her son was not the killer that day in Port Arthur.

Bryant still has little to discuss with anyone, other than wanting to talk about his murderous rampage and how famous of a man he had become.

Over the years he has had more privileges added to his schedule, including limited access to social situations with other inmates, such as playing table tennis. He is allowed to exercise and go outside in a caged area of the court yard but is still protected from the general population.

Martin John Bryant is eligible for release in the year 3032.

Epilogue

Following that fatal warm April day in 1996 when Martin John Bryant left so many people dead in such a short time, the Australian government was quick to move on what it saw as a situation that made it far too easy for a man like Martin Bryant to purchase powerful weapons capable of causing such damage to innocent people. Here was a man with the IQ and mentality of a child able to purchase, at will, military issue weapons capable of inflicting incredible pain and carnage. There was no checks and balances or a system to prevent a man like Bryant from stocking up on large quantities of ammunition.

In what would become a text book model solution to the issue of assault rifles being held by the general public, the Australian authorities created a program called the National Fire Arms Agreement; where a ban was placed on all automation and semi-automatic weapons despite the protests of the gun lobby movement who accused authorities of using the Port Arthur tragedy to legislate gun control laws in order to evoke martial law across the nation. To encourage gun owners to turn in their banned weapons, it was decided that the government would buy back these weapons, leading to more than 750,000 guns were turned in.

It wasn't long after the guilty plea by Bryant that rumors began to circulate that a conspiracy had taken place in order to bring in the new, stricter gun laws. Conspiracy theories abounded that there was more than one gunman and that Bryant was just a patsy; who was an agent of the government or the fall guy for the Prime Minister's desire to outlaw assault rifles.

Those that survived the massacre tell a much more pointed story. Survivor Peter Crosswell scoffs at those that suggest Bryant didn't kill the 20 people

in the Broad Arrow Café and those that suggest he was innocent are wrong - stating that he saw with his own eyes Bryant shoot the patrons in the café.

Security manager Ian Kingston has stronger words for those that suggest Bryant was innocent or not the shooter.

“I don’t know where all this crap came from that was put out – it’s all a lot of bull shit“ He says with total conviction. “I was there in the middle of it and I know exactly what happened. I don’t know where these stories originate you know – but it’s a load of rubbish“

There are those that point to the accuracy of which the shooter was able to hit his targets and the questions as to whether a man of Bryant’s mental capacity could have achieved the same results – Bryant had carried a rifle in his hands since he was 14 years old and had shot at targets his whole life with various weapons. Outside of a real guns recoil – the nature of aiming any weapon remains the same and he was a proficient marksman.

There is little doubt or evidence to suggest that he was anything but the lone killer at Port Arthur and Seascope, despite the numerous blogs and articles suggesting that a mass conspiracy took place on behalf of the Australian Government, the court system, law enforcement officials and the more than 1000 statements taken by eye witnesses including those that clearly identified him as the lone shooter. It seems rather improbable that so many people would willingly go along with such a conspiracy – all content to serve the will of authorities and their pursuit of new gun control laws rather than find and prosecute the true killer(s) at Port Arthur.

Conspiracy theories aside, with what is now known about Martin Bryant and his troubled childhood, as well as, his inability to cope in society as an adult, the complex question of his ability to understand his crimes and his subsequent punishment come into question. At the time of his trial, there

was immense political pressure to refuse the notion that he was not fit to stand trial on the grounds of insanity. The entire nation demanded that Bryant pay for his crimes and with emotions so high, there would have been absolute outrage if he had been found not guilty of the murders he committed. What is clear however, is that although he was an adult – his mentality was that of a child in grade 5, he suffered from severe bouts of anger, an inability to deal with his actions – or to understand the consequences of them.

It is part of the lack of ability to understand the consequences of his actions that has made Bryant impossible to rehabilitate. Those that have observed him have noted that his only recollection of the events at Port Arthur are those that he has either been told about or read about. Subsequently, he has assumed, and relished in the role of being the crazed gunman and the notoriety he gained from it – despite not being able to recall doing it.

This brings into question the logic of treating Bryant as an individual capable of grasping what he has done and the punishment that he has been sentenced to. Without doubt he is an unremorseful, dangerous killer as he proved at Port Arthur and that he remains a threat to those around him to this day. The man in prison has assumed the role of a mass murderer and gunman, and that is part of what makes him so dangerous; besides the evidence, that he at any moment is capable of horrible atrocities against his fellow man – despite his inability to understand his actions.



The Broad Arrow Café was demolished and a memorial garden was created on the site as a means to remember those that lost their lives on the 28th of April, 1996.

Martin John Bryant remains in solitary confinement in Tasmania's maximum security Brisbane Penitentiary.

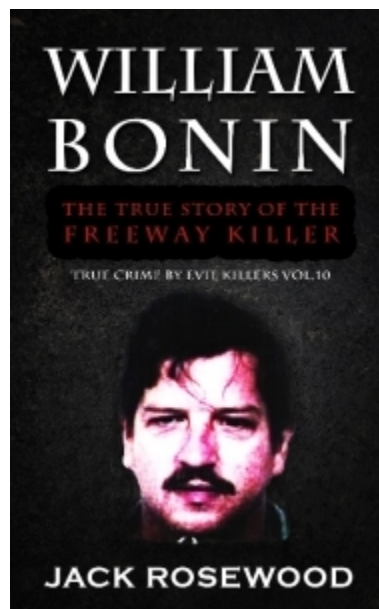
William Bonin: The True Story of The Freeway Killer

by Jack Rosewood

Historical Serial Killers and Murderers

True Crime by Evil Killers

Volume 10

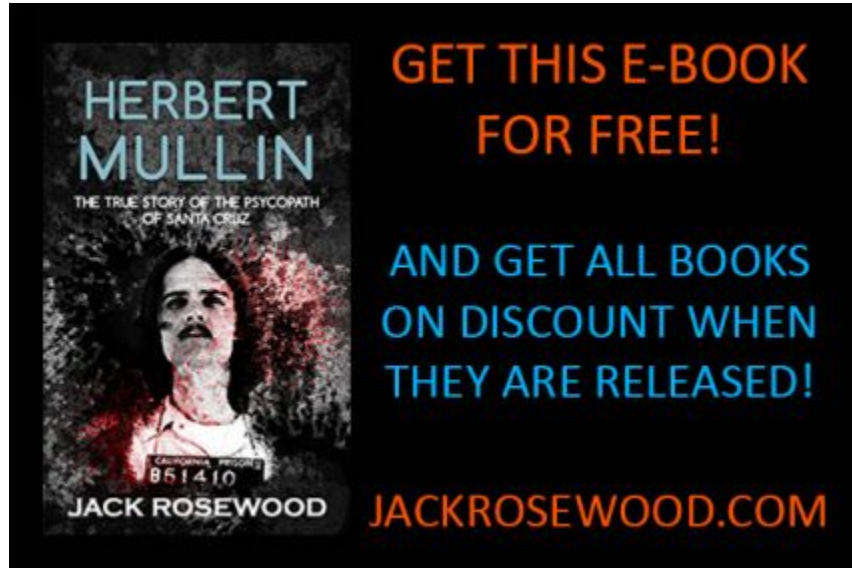


Copyright © 2015 by Wiq Media

ALL RIGHTS RESERVED

No part of this book may be reproduced, stored in a retrieval system, or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic, mechanical, photocopying, recording, scanning, or otherwise, without the prior written permission of the publisher.

GET THE BOOK ABOUT HERBERT MULLIN FOR FREE



Go to www.jackrosewood.com and get this E-Book for free!

Table of Contents

[Introduction](#)

[Chapter 1: Setting murderous future in stone](#)

[Chapter 2: William Bonin was hungry](#)

[Chapter 3: Orange County Register unearths Bonin's secrets](#)

[Chapter 4: Bonin's trail of death, torture continues](#)

[Chapter 5: A consummate serial killer](#)

[Chapter 6: The trials of William Bonin](#)

[Chapter 7: The execution of William Bonin](#)

[Chapter 8: Bonin's terror lives on](#)

[The making of a serial killer](#)

Introduction

“Most people are overconfident of their value on this planet. Most people can be done without,” said William George Bonin.

Overconfident of their value? William Bonin sure was.

He must have felt absolutely certain that police would never connect him to the string of dead bodies turning up along California’s most picturesque highways, the blood-soaked and battered discoveries horribly juxtaposed against bright blue skies and roads with rock-lined ocean views.

But good eventually catches up with evil, if given enough time. And Bonin’s obsession with brutal sex and murder was consuming him much too fast for him not to make a few mistakes.

Bonin was eventually caught and executed in 1996 for the callous, brutal killing at least 21 boys and young men during a fast-paced murder spree that ran from 1979 to 1980.

Human life didn’t matter to Bonin. People could be thrown away like so much trash, completely forgotten in the hunt for a new victim.

And while most parents worry about their daughters, and warn them to take precautions, they usually forget that one third of all murder victims are male.

In the 1970s, it was boys who were dying with increased regularity along the highways and byways of southern California.

That’s where Bonin trolled for his victims along the freeways, earning the nickname the Freeway Killer. It is one he shares with two other serial killers, Patrick Kearney and Randy Steven Kraft, who also took advantage

of the busy and often anonymous California freeway system to procure their human playthings.

Bonin drove a camo green Ford Econoline camper van, and often used accomplices to either help entice his victims into the van and drive while he raped, tortured and killed them in the back or to assist him in the actual killing.

Bonin - despite being divorced - liked boys, and he liked them young. He targeted hitchhikers – most often thin and lanky types, although some of his younger victims were quite small - and sometimes lured kids to their deaths with the promise of sex and drugs. Sometimes he just overpowered them, forcing them into the back of the van where they would find door handles removed so they could not escape.

Once he had them, though, they were little more than toys to him, and he brutally raped and tortured them before killing them and discarding them with all the emotion of disposing of garbage.

He drove he “death van” around the streets of Los Angeles and Orange counties looking for victims, a prosecutor later said, adding that once a hitchhiker had entered Bonin’s van “he was dead.”

According to one accomplice, Bonin liked to hear them scream – and later, after everything came to light in horrible detail, neighbors would report having heard “blood-curdling screams” coming from the 1950s tract house in Downey where Bonin had spent his high school years and now shared with his mother.

At the time, they thought it was kids playing, so no 911 calls were made, even though neighbors had seen young boys with Bonin, which made them suspicious, and had heard rumors that Bonin was buying beer and showing porn to neighborhood teens.

But for a few mistakes, including choosing his accomplices based on lust, Bonin was on his way to becoming the most prolific serial killer of all time.

And to the families of those he sadistically murdered after torturing and raping them, Bonin was the one the world could have done without.

He was a monster from childhood.

Chapter 1: Setting murderous future in stone

Born January 8, 1947 – the same day as futuristic musician David Bowie – William George Bonin’s birthday came with a touch of irony. Victor Hugo’s “Les Miserables” starring Frederic March and Charles Laughton was playing that day, and Bonin would later hunt down young boys with the same fervor that pushed the detective Javert to chase Jean Valjean in that classic story.

The second of three brothers, Bonin’s Connecticut childhood was not full of Cape Cod charm. In truth, his parents were both drunks and his father had a pretty serious gambling problem that often consumed the family’s grocery money, and eventually led to the foreclosure of their house. Neighbors who noticed the boys’ hunger often came to the rescue.

The children gobbled, those Good Samaritan neighbors said, and were seemingly so hungry that they couldn’t get the food into their mouths fast enough.

When things became particularly desperate for the parents, they left the boys with their maternal grandfather, a convicted child molester who had abused his daughter and most certainly abused his grandsons as well.

Sexual assaults erase a childhood

By the age of six, Bonin was in an orphanage, and although he later said he had no memories of the place, others who spent time there said that cruel punishments doled out by the facility's workers included having their heads shoved into toilet bowls and being forced to climb stairs until their legs wobbled and shook.

Bonin was just 10 when he was placed in a Connecticut juvenile detention center for stealing license plates. He was sexually assaulted that same year, apparently more than once and by more than one person, which likely led at least in part to his later obsession with sex and violence.

After he was sexually assaulted while housed in the detention center, he in turn molested his brothers and neighborhood boys, although his gruesome, bloody trek through southern California was still more than a decade in the future.

He was following a common pattern, experts say.

An estimated 35 percent of those who molest or sexually assault others were victims of some form of abuse themselves.

The cycle of shifting roles from victim to abuser – sometimes known as vampire syndrome - is especially common in pedophiles whose preferred targets are boys.

Once, when an older boy asked Bonin for sex, he was agreeable, as long as he were restrained with his wrists behind his back, a submissive position that he said made him feel more secure.

When psychologists heard the story, they said it suggested that Bonin had most certainly been a victim of sexual abuse by adults who had restrained the boy long before his stint in the detention center. His mother pointed her

finger at grandpa, but given that Bonin had been essentially passed around among many of the older boys in the detention center, it would be hard to pinpoint what particularly incident triggered his own perverse desires.

According to a study appearing in the British Journal of Psychology, there are several factors that point to why people become perpetrators of sexual abuse.

Not only are boys who are victims of childhood sexual abuse more likely to become perpetrators themselves, but so are children who suffer abandonment from their parents during critical periods of development.

“Having been a victim was a strong predictor of becoming a perpetrator, as was an index of parental loss in childhood,” researchers said.

William Bonin had both things working against him, and at least 21 young men and boys would be the ones who would pay for it, in the worst possible way.

California dreamin'

When Bonin was in 8th grade - their house foreclosed on and the future in Connecticut looking quite bleak - the family moved to California, hoping that the Golden State and all its promise would be the catalyst to transform their lives.

And while it may have been a good move for Bonin's parents and two brothers, the change in scenery did nothing to erase Bonin's increasingly dark thoughts.

Bonin had a lack of self-control, and his urges always got the best of him.

"Sometimes... I'd get tense and think I was gonna go crazy if I couldn't get some release, like my head would explode. So I'd go out hunting. Killing helped me... It was like ... needing to go gambling or getting drunk. I had to do it," Bonin said in Dr. Vonda Peltó's book "Without Remorse." (Peltó was a young clinical psychologist when she was given the job of preventing inmates from committing suicide before trial. One of her charges was Bonin.)

His victims dumped like garbage in the ditches alongside the freeways of southern California, Bonin was like so many other serial killers – habitual and unable to control his actions. The desire to kill was all-encompassing, and like a heroin addict in need of a fix, it was all he really thought about.

But we're getting a little ahead of ourselves.

There was a time when the paunchy, morose, dark-haired Bonin had a shot at living a normal life. If only those pesky little obsessions hadn't taken hold.

1965 was actually a good year for Bonin. He graduated from high school, got engaged to a girl and joined the U.S. Air Force.

He ended up in Vietnam, serving his time as an aerial gunner and logging more than 700 hours of combat and patrol time. He earned a Good Conduct Medal, and put his own life at risk to save a fellow airman.

On the surface, everything looked great, but despite his alleged “Good Conduct,” he made the Vietnam War even more of a hell for two fellow soldiers when he sexually assaulted them at gunpoint. As if the humid, dense jungle, tricky Vietnamese booby traps and watching fellow squadron members being blown to pieces in plain sight weren’t hell enough.

Later, at his Los Angeles County trial, the prosecutor would say, “the closest the defendant got to combat in Vietnam was when he held a gun to two soldiers’ heads and sodomized them.”

He was honorably discharged in 1968 – it wasn’t until much later that he admitted the assaults, and his victims were unlikely to report such a thing during that era – and returned to California to live with his mother in Downey, located in Los Angeles County, about 13 miles southeast of downtown L.A.

Here, he married that girl he had given an engagement ring, but the two soon divorced. The split did not come before his ex-wife learned about Bonin’s recurring dream, which would eventually set the stage for someone else’s nightmares.

“He told me he had the dream a lot of times,” said Susan Bonin. “He would be in a bar alone and he would walk up to a girl who had no face. He would buy her a drink and take her to a deserted place. There, he’d rape her, kill her and bury her in a shallow grave.”

He would wake up in tears, she said.

Something triggers string of assaults

Whether it was post-traumatic stress disorder from serving in Vietnam – “You learn that life is cheap over there,” he later told a radio station shortly before his scheduled execution - the end of his marriage or the subsequent return to his mother’s home, Bonin could no longer contain his urges.

Playing a big role were likely the memories of how much he enjoyed having complete control over another person – as he did when he assaulted his fellow soldiers in Vietnam at gunpoint, having them completely at his mercy.

Shortly after moving back in with his mother, Bonin abducted and sexually assaulted four teenage boys – 14-year-old William, 17-year-old John, 12-year-old Larry and 18-year-old Jesus - forcing them to perform oral sex on him before sodomizing them and performing excruciating methods of torture that included squeezing their testicles.

When Bonin was finally apprehended in 1969, he was driving with a 16-year-old male passenger, and he told police officers that they were lucky that they had caught him because he felt that he might have killed the boy.

During evaluations before his trial, Bonin was diagnosed as a “mentally disordered sex offender amenable to treatment,” and was placed under observation at Atascadero State Hospital in San Luis Obispo County.

Doctors then were able to determine through physical evidence including scars on his head and buttocks the levels of abuse Bonin had suffered as a child, despite his lack of memory regarding any incident. They also reported signs of manic depression, as well as damage to the area of the brain that restrains violent impulses.

Professionals worked with him for two years, but Bonin was unable to shake his lust for young men, and he ended up being discharged from the hospital in 1971 and sent to jail in to finish out his sentence after officials at the hospital ultimately found him untreatable.

“He wanted to straighten himself out, but doesn’t know how to go about it,” one expert wrote in a report that should have led to a lengthy sentence.

Still, his stint behind bars was horrifying in its brevity, and he was released in May of 1974 after doctors determined he was “no longer a danger to others.”

It would be a terrible mistake, and it didn’t take long before Bonin was back to his old sadistic tricks.

A wrong-way ride

About 16 months after his release from jail, Bonin ran into 14-year-old hitchhiker David McVicker, who was hitching a ride to his home in Huntington Beach.

It was the last day of summer in 1975.

“I was actually hitchhiking home from Garden Grove to Huntington Beach and he got me,” said McVicker, who at first noticed nothing strange about the man in the blue Opel Cadet. “He was totally cool. There was nothing in the least bit strange about him.”

At least not until Bonin asked McVicker if he was gay, and the young hitchhiker asked Bonin to stop the car. The driver then pulled out a gun.

“That’s when I knew I was in trouble,” McVicker said.

Bonin drove to a deserted field and brutally raped the teenager, then attempted to strangle him with his own T-shirt. When McVicker screamed, Bonin apologized and drove him home, where he ominously said, “We’ll meet again.”

As many rape victims will attest, McVicker’s ordeal was hardly over.

His mother was reticent to talk about the details of the horrors her son had faced at the hands of a madman, so he had no one to talk to about his sorrow, rage and terror except for his best friend, who was too young to provide the support McVicker needed. For a boy who had been forced to grow up much too fast, the normalcy of school was nearly impossible to bear.

He eventually dropped out, but painful memories still followed. He endured listening to acquaintances make jokes at his expense, and lost a job after a

boss read an article which suggested that McVicker had survived because he, too, was an accomplice, and fired him.

“It’s like being raped again,” he said.

Decades after the incident, he lives on disability because of the debilitating effects his rape and its aftermath had on his life.

He still has nightmares.

Back to prison

The assault on McVicker – along with another attempted abduction of a teen - led to another prison sentence for Bonin, although the one to 15 years sentence he received at the California Men's Facility in San Luis Obispo seems woefully inadequate for attempted murder, considering his string of previous sex crimes.

Authorities had promised McVicker that Bonin's sentence would be 15 years to life, which had given the teen peace of mind knowing that his rapist would be doing hard time for his crime.

But instead of doing serious time, Bonin was released on October 11, 1978 – after serving just three years - and was given 18 months of supervised probation.

“Our society surely has its priorities misplaced when someone with Bonin's record of contempt for the personal integrity of others is released in the blink of an eye, while dealers of controlled substances - even in relatively small quantities - are given 10-year, 20-year and life terms,” Circuit Judge Alex Kozinski later wrote when denying one of Bonin's appeals.

He moved in with his mother in the old family home and landed a job as a truck driver with Dependable Driveaway in Montebello. He also began dating a girl. Friends said that he liked to take her roller skating every Sunday in nearby Anaheim.

Still, there was something evil hovering around in William Bonin, and it would take no time at all for it to come out.

His neighbor, Everett Fraser, regularly hosted parties at his house, and it was there that Bonin met 22-year-old factory worker Vernon Butts – an amateur magician who also dabbled in the occult - and 19-year-old Texas

transplant Gregory Miley, who eventually became both a lover and an accomplice to murder.

“I had all kinds of people coming to my house all the time,” Fraser said.

“That’s why he liked coming over to my place, because he knew he would meet a lot of young people through me.”

According to experts, between 10 to 25 percent of all serial killers like to hunt in pairs, and Bonin apparently wanted someone else to enjoy the fun of the freeways of California. It was a landscape tailor made to suit his lust for young men, especially during the period when so many disenfranchised kids were looking for something more meaningful in their lives, and almost always expected to find it in sun-drenched California.

Within a short time, Bonin’s olive-green van became an instrument of death, and his accomplices became witnesses to one man’s descent into madness.

First murder reveals degree of depravity

While some serial killers begin with simple murders, then become desensitized to it all and escalate into more depraved behavior, William Bonin was depraved from the start.

And his first victim would show that Bonin liked them young and he found significant satisfaction in sadistic torture.

One accomplice later said that Bonin loved to hear them scream, that his victims' expressions of pain gave him the most sexual and visceral pleasure.

Thomas Glen Lundgren was 13 years old when he left his parents' home in Reseda on May 28, 1979. It was early, and he hitched a ride, unfortunately ending up in the back of Bonin's outfitted van, where he would become a temporary plaything for both Bonin and Butts.

The handles on the doors in the back of the van had been removed, so once inside, prisoners weren't going anywhere. A variety of different ligatures, knives and odds and ends were stashed within reach. Bonin had figured out everything.

The dark-haired boy was found later that day, his penis and testicles removed, his throat slashed, his body covered in stab wounds and showing signs of strangulation.

The vicious stabbing, one expert would later say, is common in murders committed by gay men who feel some sense of shame about their sexuality, and each new blow with a blade is seen as a futile attempt by the murderer to silence his own homosexual urges.

Bonin later said that Thomas was not one of his victims - "I don't cut the dicks off little boys," he told one reporter in a sharp, angry tone – and

ultimately he wasn't tried for Lundgren's murder. Officially, authorities still link Bonin to Thomas Lundgren's murder.

A careless slip puts 20 boys in danger

That summer, Bonin was arrested for molesting a 17-year-old boy, and because he was on probation, he should have been immediately returned to prison to serve out the rest of his sentence. An administrative error led him to be released before his court date, and as for that, he just decided not to show.

His neighbor, Everett Fraser, picked Bonin up from the Orange County jail.

On the way home, Bonin told Fraser, “No one’s going to testify again. This is never going to happen to me again.”

It was late summer before Bonin and Butts struck again, this time picking up 17-year-old Mark Shelton, who was walking to a movie theater near Beach Boulevard.

As part of his torture, Mark was raped with various objects found in the back of the van, including a stick. The torture was apparently so brutal that his body went into shock and he died.

His killers tossed him in San Bernardino County, but because their victim had died before they had had enough fun, they were anything but satisfied with the kill.

They had destroyed Mark’s family – his father, Don, was desperate for revenge when police told him his son was dead – but it wasn’t enough for the two villains.

The next day, they again went hunting, while Mark’s father’s anger simmered and festered.

“I was consumed with rage,” Shelton said. “One day I walked out into my garden, saw my scarecrow perched there, and demolished it with a shovel. I

just bashed it to pieces. If that hadn't happened I might have done something worse later on."

Vacation becomes date with death

German exchange student Marcus Grabs was celebrating his 17th year with a backpacking tour of the United States, one last free-spirited adventure before adulthood officially set in. He was on his own, but met a wide variety of different people as he traveled, and enjoyed that as much as seeing the many diverse sights a different country had to offer.

Marcus was last spotted hitchhiking along the Pacific Coast Highway.

At some time during the evening of August 5, 1979, the 17-year-old was picked up by Bonin and Butts, and the back of Bonin's van – and later Bonin's house when his mother was not at home - became a nightmare of sodomy, beating and death.

After they were done with him, they tossed Marcus's naked, battered body into the Malibu Canyon. When his body was discovered the next day, he had suffered more than 70 stab wounds – again an attempt by Bonin to “kill” his homosexuality, experts said - had a yellow nylon rope around his neck and an electrical cord around one of his ankles.

His killer “was like a rabid dog that has gone insane and doesn't know when to stop biting,” a homicide detective later said.

Brutality doesn't quell hunger

It didn't take long for Bonin's urges to kick in again.

On August 29, 1979, 15-year-old Donald Hyden Jr. – a blond boy with a toothy grin – was hanging out in Hollywood, walking around the busiest part of Los Angeles, where so many dreams are made, and so many dreams completely fail.

Born in Cincinnati, Donald found himself in California after his parents Donald and Mary divorced and Mary decided the move to the West Coast would be good for her, Donald and his younger brother and sister.

The divorce hit him hard, and without his father around for guidance, Donald got into some trouble. He ended up living with his grandparents for a while, where he played baseball and voraciously followed the career of his idol, Pete Rose.

Still, Donald wanted to be with his mother and siblings, so he moved to their apartment in Hollywood in 1977.

When he was picked up during the early hours of August 27, 1979, walking along the Santa Monica Boulevard, he likely never imagined that he would end up strangled and tossed into a trash bin near the Ventura Freeway, discarded like so much garbage.

Bonin and Butts had abducted the young man and tortured him throughout the night. His body was discovered at around 11 a.m., about 10 hours after he was last seen.

He had been stabbed in both the neck and genitals, he had burn marks and bruising and he, like Marcus, had been violated with a fist or something similar in size, as shown by the distention of his anus. Donald had also been hit in the head before being strangled and tossed away.

If Butts had any qualms about following Bonin's descent into hell, he didn't show it. In fact, he seemed to like the "good little nightmare" that he and his friend were inflicting on southern California.

"After the first one, I couldn't do anything about it," Butts later said about following Bonin's murderous lead. "He had a hypnotic way about him."

Chapter 2: William Bonin was hungry

Less than two weeks after Donald Hyden Jr. found himself in the back of Bonin's van, on September 9, 1979, 17-year-old David Murillo was riding his bike near his home in La Mirada, on his way to the movie theater where he planned to bring the weekend to a close with a Sunday night movie. ("Apocalypse Now" was tops at the box office that weekend, alongside Monty Python's "Life of Brian.")

Bonin and Butts spotted him and lured him into the van, where he was bound, raped repeatedly and strangled. His head was bashed in with a tire iron for good measure.

His body was found three days later, lying alongside Highway 101.

Eight days later, 18-year-old Newport Beach resident Robert Wirostek was riding his bike to his job as a clerk at a grocery store.

He never made it to work, but his body was found on September 19, dumped alongside I-10.

There was a period of a few months when Bonin and his accomplice Butts laid low, but by November, they had a hunger that needed to be satisfied.

On the 29th of the month, just after Thanksgiving, Bonin and Butts abducted an unidentified teen, beating him, raping him and strangling him to death before dumping him in Kern County.

The next day, still on a high from the previous day's kill, Bonin and Butts struck again.

This time, it would be 17-year-old Frank Dennis Fox, 17, of Bellflower, who found himself in the back of the green van on November 30.

“He’d been home a few days earlier and I gave him some stuff for his apartment,” said his mother, Jerri. “He wanted me to cut his hair.”

He had been dumped on Ortega Highway, just five miles east of Interstate I-5.

His body showed signs of beating, and there were ligature marks on his ankles, wrists and neck. There were avocado green carpet fibers tangled in his pubic hair, and there were signs of sexual activity.

Later, at trial, those carpet fibers would prove to be an important bit of evidence.

The carpet in the back of Bonin’s van featured the same swirled pattern featured on the fibers found clinging to Fox’s hair. It was also avocado green.

Fox might not have survived his encounter with Bonin and Butts, but he would certainly do his part in death to see his killers brought to justice, even if it was from the grave.

A sick Christmas gift

As the Christmas holiday grew closer, Bonin again headed out on the weekend to hunt for a new victim. He trolled the freeways on Fridays and Saturdays, reserving Sundays for his girlfriend.

This time the unlucky teen would be 15-year-old John Kilpatrick, who left his mother's house to visit some friends and never returned. He had been wearing sandals and blue nylon shorts on the night he was last seen by those who loved him.

Because John often went away for days at a time – he was having trouble dealing with the divorce of his parents, and missed his father, who lived in Cincinnati – and friends had mistakenly reported seeing him at the mall, he wasn't reported missing until February.

"I didn't think he had run away," said his mother, Pricilla Kilpatrick. "We just thought he was thinking things out and we didn't want to scare him off."

She found out how wrong the reports of sightings were when a friend called her to say that her son – whose tattoos of a skull wearing a hat on his right bicep and an F on his right hand were the identifying marks she and authorities needed – was likely a victim of the Freeway killer.

"I knew it was him before the police even came out," she said. "I didn't want to believe it, but I knew it was him because of the tattoos. His brother had put them on him."

Kilpatrick – who was the sixth of seven children - was identified in August of 1980.

A grisly New Year's celebration

On January 1, 1980, Bonin rang in the new decade with a solo murder.

On this day, he brutalized and strangled a 16-year-old Rialto youth named Michael Francis McDonald.

His body was found fully clothed, disposed of in San Bernardino County, but he wasn't identified until March 24, a day that would play a critical role in the capture of Bonin.

For a while, Bonin was satiated, but a month later, he again felt the need to kill.

This time, 15-year-old Charles Miranda disappeared while looking for a little fun in a busy section of Hollywood.

Bonin had with him a new assistant, Gregory Matthews Miley, on Feb. 3, 1980, when they ran across Charles, who was hitchhiking along the Santa Monica Boulevard.

At first, the young man with thick brown hair only had to give up the \$6 he had stashed in his wallet, but soon enough the two had overpowered him and tied him up so Bonin could have his way with him.

Miley attempted to rape Miranda as well, but was unable to sustain an erection, so he used sharp objects he found in the back of the van instead, brutally assaulting Charles to hide his embarrassment.

Bonin said to Miley, "Kid's going to die. Kid's going to - this kid's going to die," to which Miley replied, "Why don't you just let the kid go?"

Bonin refused, and said, "No, because he'll know us and he'll know the van."

He then demonstrated his preferred method of murder for Miley.

“Can you do it?” Bonin asked Miley as he began choking the boy. “Let me show you how to do this.”

Bonin then strangled Charles, using a tire iron to twist the shirt like a tourniquet, while Miley, apparently enjoying his first kill a bit too much, jumped repeatedly on Charles’ chest.

They dumped his naked body in an alleyway in downtown Los Angeles, then disposed of his clothing and other items. Bonin then turned to Miley and said, “I’m horny, let’s go and do another one.”

Miley at first protested, and said, “Oh, man, no way. I don't want to do it no more. I just want to go home,” but eventually helped find Bonin’s next victim.

The unluckiest boy on earth

The unlucky victim would be 12-year-old James Macabe, who was waiting at a Huntington Beach bus stop for a ride to Disneyland.

He'd been staying with his older brother while his parents were away for the weekend, and he'd been dropped off at the bus stop by his brother, who had also given him money for admission.

According to Miley, James got into the van willingly, likely too distracted with the idea of roller coasters and Mickey Mouse to recognize the danger of taking a ride with strangers.

And instead of heading to the happiest place on earth, James had entered hell, and Bonin parked in a grocery store parking lot and got in the back of the van, where he repeatedly raped and beat the 12-year-old boy as he cried.

Miley listened in for a while, then joined Bonin in the abuse because he "felt like it." Bonin then strangled James with his T-shirt, again using the tire iron for leverage.

James' body was found three days later, on February 6, 1980, alongside a dumpster.

Bonin later told reporter David Lopez of KNXT-TV that of the 21 boys and young men that he is believed to have killed, "that little kid was the easiest one to kill."

His mother never recovered, and 16 years after her son's death, she was still looking for ways to keep the loss of her son off her mind.

"You know that country song "No Future in the Past?" said Anna Macabe, in reference to the Vince Gill title. "There isn't."

About a month later, on March 14, 1980, 18-year-old Ronald Gatlin disappeared from North Hollywood. His body was found the next day, dead from strangulation, with ligature marks on his ankle, wrist and neck, evidence of sexual activity before his death along with evidence of beating. The body count was starting to pile up in southern California.

Close call leads to new ‘friend’

On one particular night, Bonin was hanging out at his neighbor Everett Fraser’s place, and decided to leave about the same time as 17-year-old William Pugh. Bonin offered the teen a ride, and on the way to Pugh’s house, he asked the young man who was still wearing braces if he wanted to have sex.

The question caused the teen to want more than anything a way out of the vehicle, and he attempted to escape when Bonin slowed for a stoplight.

The killer responded by grabbing Pugh by the collar and dragging him back into the passenger seat. He then told Pugh about his favorite weekend activities, and talked about how much he enjoyed “picking up” young male hitchhikers for sex, torture and murder.

Bonin then said, “If you want to kill somebody, you should make a plan and find a place to dump the body before you even pick a victim,” before dropping him Pugh off at his house unharmed.

Pugh becomes Bonin's latest accomplice

After having survived a night with William Bonin, Pugh was apparently intrigued by the idea of rape and murder, and instead of going to police, on March 20, the teen with a long rap sheet filled with various petty crimes joined Bonin in the abduction of Harry Todd Turner, a 15-year-old runaway who had escaped a boys' group home and was working on getting as far away from the place as possible.

According to Pugh, he and Bonin lured Harry into the van by offering him \$20 for sex.

The boy was agreeable, but it wouldn't be the kind of sex he was expecting.

After Bonin tied up the teen, he brutally raped him, then bit him on the genitals hard enough to draw blood and ordered Pugh to "beat him up."

Pugh did as he was told, and bludgeoned the boy into submission.

Bonin then strangled Harry with his T-shirt using the tire iron as a tool before they tossed his body into a Los Angeles alleyway. Bite marks were clearly evident on his penis, as were signs of a savage sexual assault.

An autopsy later determined that his skull had been fractured in eight places.

Kills become big, big thrills

On March 22, 1980, police found the bodies of two boys alongside Ortega Highway in the Cleveland National Forest, 14-year-old Glen Norman Barker, who was spotted hitchhiking after telling his mother he had plans to stay with a friend, and 15-year-old Russell Duane Rugh, a student at Westminster High School who was last seen at a bus stop waiting to catch a ride to his job at a nearby fast food joint.

Both boys were naked and their bodies had bruises from being beaten. Both had ligature marks on their wrists and ankles as well as around their necks.

Both had been raped, but again, there were carpet fibers clinging to their pubic hair, allowing them to speak from the grave.

In a vicious new twist, Glen had a series of cigarette burns looping around his neck.

Glen's mother, Sharon Barker, had been diagnosed with cervical cancer that had been treated into remission when she found out that her son was dead.

Making the news so much worse was the knowledge that she had warned her son about taking rides from strangers, and had given him bus money to visit his friend so he wouldn't have to put himself in danger.

But Glen had spent his bus money, and was forced to hitch a ride.

"He was not supposed to get in the van with anyone," said his grandfather, Elza Rodgers. "But you know how these boys are."

The news devastated his mother, Rodgers said, and significantly impacted her already fragile health.

"It didn't help her very much with the cancer," said Rodgers. "It really was a strain on her."

Still, the divorced mom did what she could to manage her job at Kmart, which she later juggled as best she could during Bonin's murder trial, which she attended religiously to both represent and remember her son.

Unfortunately, she was unable to see the boy's killer brought to justice.

Barker died three years after Bonin's conviction, while he was still sitting on death row, and where he would sit for 14 more years.

"She told me she would like to have lived to see Bonin die. It was the only regret she had," said Rodgers. "She really hated him."

Bodies of boys pile up

Despite the distinct, unwavering similarities in many of the murder victims, police were still unwilling to make an official call regarding a serial killer hunting down young boys throughout Los Angeles and Orange counties.

It was just as well, because there were two other killers making the rounds in southern California, and eventually, all of them would become known as the Freeway Killer.

Chapter 3: Orange County Register unearths Bonin's secrets

Reporter J.J. Maloney remembers covering the story of the Freeway Killer for the Orange County Register.

The paper had run a story in 1979 about the bodies of boys turning up, strangled and violated, but no other media picked up on it, and the police were still unsure about a connection.

The story idled until Maloney ran across an envelope of clippings labeled “Dead Gay Boys,” and felt compelled to follow the leads in that envelope, including the story of 12-year-old James McCabe, snatched on his way to Disneyland – “a little boy who’d wanted to see Donald Duck and Mickey Mouse, and instead ended up in an envelope labeled ‘Dead Gay Boys,’” Maloney recalled.

Given the details in the folder, Maloney felt sure that it was the work of a serial killer, and he encouraged his editor to assign him to the story.

He played upon the man’s emotions as a father in order to get the gig.

“It appeared certain that a psychopathic killer was on the loose, and that kind of killer, once he starts, repeats and repeats and repeats,” Maloney wrote, years afterward. “One killer, one spree. If the police wouldn’t say it publicly, someone had to.”

The police weren’t interested in serial killer theories, and told Maloney that it wasn’t such a rarity to find so many strangled young men in the area, given the large gay population.

“The police naturally do not want the massive public pressure a serial killer brings to bear on them. And there are differences of opinion among policemen on the wisdom of giving out information to the public,” Maloney wrote. “At the Register we felt the public had a right to know - that, more importantly, hitchhikers had a right to know that the next time they stuck their thumb out they might end up strangled and abused.”

A profile of murder

Dr. Albert Rosenstein, a forensic psychologist whose opinion was enlisted by the Orange County Register, profiled the killer before Bonin was zeroed in on by police. He was chillingly accurate.

“The guy who’s doing these murders is crazy,” Rosenstein said. “The chance that he’s been a mental patient at one time or another is very high. And the only place in Southern California where mentally disturbed sex offenders are sent is Patton State Hospital.” (The hospital where Bonin was housed was a bit north, so it was off of Rosenstein’s radar.)

“The killer is a strong, clever white man in his late 20s or early 30s. If he were not strong, he could not handle the bodies. If he were not clever, he would have been caught already. If he were not white, he could not have picked up so many white youths. If he were not in his 20s or 30s, he would not be this kind of murdering sex offender, past studies have shown,” Rosenstein said, also zeroing in on Bonin’s sexual trauma as a child.

“As a result of some traumatic sexual experience as a child, the killer has developed into a bisexual, but he never has become comfortable with the homosexual side of his personality,” he said. “He cruises the streets in a van, looking for young, white hitchhikers. He picks them up and offers them a drink, an alcoholic beverage laced with a drug. Once his victims are drugged, he assaults them sexually in the back of the van. After he’s done that, he finds what he’s done so repugnant that he feels he has to commit acts of sexual mutilation on their bodies after he has killed them.”

The only thing Rosenstein got wrong was the sheer pleasure Bonin took in killing his victims. Rather than revulsion, he enjoyed the screams, the

begging for mercy, the pain he inflicted, and reveled in his control over the boys who were unfortunate enough to get into his van.

“Bonin loved the killing,” said Orange County prosecutor Sterling E. Norris. “He delighted in talking about it.”

The story breaks

And on March 24, 1980, “We broke the story that a serial killer was at work in Southern California. We called him the ‘Freeway Killer,’” Maloney said.

Even then, with so many similar murders, so many details linking the crimes, many officers believed that the Freeway Killer was little more than a story crafted by journalists to sell papers.

“I believe it was The Orange County Register that started all this,” said Captain Walt Ownbey of the Los Angeles County Sheriff’s Department.

“This has built up and created a lot of fear about a killer or group of killers, and there is no evidence substantiating any of that.”

It was, he said, “a total figment in the minds of journalists.”

Still, police did have a team investigating potential links between a handful of cases.

“We’re monitoring five cases since May of 1979 for any link among the five as well as 18 we’ve heard about in the multijurisdictional (southern California) area,” Ownbey said. “But I must emphasize we don’t have any evidence linking them. In this county alone, we have 35 to 40 dumps alone.

“It’s not unusual to find similarities in five dumps a year, young boys, old men or young women,” said the captain, who clearly had become jaded by the number of murder cases his office handled each year. “And you have to remember that 90 percent of all murders are done in only four ways: you shoot them, stab them, strangle them or blunt-force them.”

He blamed the desire to pin the murders on a single killer to a growing exposure to serial killers.

“People are more inclined – due to the recent history of multiple murderers like Son of Sam, Hillside Strangler and the Trash Bag Murders – to read things into them. Maybe it’s a sign of the times.”

Still, the Orange County Register stuck to the story like glue, and soon enough, television stations also picked up the Freeway Killer story and ran with it.

“The freeway plays such an important part because it’s so easy to get away,” said CBS reporter David Lopez. “You could drive forever on those freeway exchanges.”

With so much media attention – along with a reward for information about the killer – schools began warning students about the dangers of hitchhiking and tips began coming in, both to the newspaper and the Orange and Los Angeles County police departments.

“There were more bodies and more bodies,” Lopez said. “Then in late 1979, you realized there was a mass murderer out there.”

So many bodies were found, said Earle Robitaille, who was then police chief of Huntington Beach, that “it was no longer ‘Is it going to happen again?’ but ‘who’s going to be the next victim, and where will he be abducted and where will he be picked up?’”

“He was so systematic and predictable,” Robitaille said. “That was the scary part.”

Chapter 4: Bonin's trail of death, torture continues

On April 11, 1980, the nude body of 16-year-old Steven Wood was found in an alley in Long Beach near the Pacific Coast Highway.

He had been on his way to school after a trip to the dentist when he encountered Bonin.

The last thing he had said to his mother was, "See you later, alligator." Of course she responded, "After a while, crocodile."

When he was found, his body showed signs of beating about the face and elsewhere and there were ligature marks on at least one ankle and wrist as well as on his neck.

Steven's murder devastated the entire family, which virtually imploded after his death.

"I live in a different world now," said Steven's mother, Barbara Biehn, in an interview with the Los Angeles Times. "There's just too much to remember."

Her son Carl, 20 when his brother's body was found on April 11, had a particularly hard time accepting his brother's murder.

"He just went off the deep end," said Biehn, adding that on Bonin's birthday, January 8, 1989, he rode his bike to a local discount store to purchase a shotgun and ammunition. He then pedaled to a friend's house, and shot himself to death in the garage.

“He was hurting for nine years,” she said of Carl, who tried to suppress his pain with drugs, then sank deep into an addiction that brought signs of mental illness into the light. “It was an absolute nightmare at the end.”

Their family blown apart, Biehn and her husband moved to Arizona to escape the daily reminders of their sons – their schools, their friends, their favorite hangouts - but they still carry with them the demons that are memories, and they stick to themselves now, avoiding making any new friends.

“They’re happy. They have good things going on,” she said of the people she doesn’t want to know. “And I don’t think we do.”

Torture methods escalate

On April 29, 1980, Darin Lee Kendrick, 19, was collecting carts in the parking lot at the grocery store where he worked when Bonin and Butts enticed him into the van with the promise of drugs.

When his naked body was found the next day, it revealed the nightmare Kendrick had suffered during his time with Bonin and Butts.

He had been brutally sodomized and beaten, and had also been restrained, as shown by the ligature marks on one ankle and wrist as well as around his neck.

He had a stab wound to the top of his spinal cord thanks to the ice pick that had been lodged in his ear and he had chemical burns on his mouth, chin, chest and stomach from being forced to drink hydrochloric acid.

Earl Hanson, an attorney who represented Bonin during his confession, said the need for more violence was similar to the escalating need of a drug addict.

“He had to constantly increase the dosage to get the same euphoria,” Hanson said.

Chapter 5: A consummate serial killer

In the same way that William Bonin's actions fit the pattern of most serial killers – he waited until his need to kill was overwhelming, then he acted on those desired and was satiated – his past also helped set the course for future events.

And many said that William Bonin never really had a chance.

“He was faced with so many significant hurdles when he was young that made it virtually impossible for him to be a successful human being,” said one of his public defenders just hours before his execution.

According to Heather Mitchell and Michael G. Aamodt of Virginia's Radford University, Radford University, the majority of serial killers suffered physical abuse, sexual abuse, psychological abuse or neglect as children.

One expert, Robert K. Ressler, considered the foremost authority on serial killers – he coined the term – went so far as to say “100 percent had been abused as children, either with violence, neglect or humiliation.”

For Bonin, his parents were drunks who ended up abandoning him at his grandfather's house, knowing that the man was a pedophile. After staring down that nightmare, Bonin acted out, only to find himself in a detention center at age 8, surrounded by much older, equally troubled kids who continued the sexual abuse.

With those unexplained scars, it was clear that he'd suffered significant physical abuse as well.

In terms of what makes a serial killer, Bonin's past was a horrible trifecta of abuse, neglect and brain damage that impacted his ability to exact rational control.

"Normal parents? Normal brains? I think not," said Dr. Jonathan Pincus, a neurologist and author of the book "Base Instincts: What Makes Killers Kill."

"Abusive experiences, mental illnesses and neurological deficits interplayed to produce the tragedies reported in the newspapers. The most vicious criminals have also been, overwhelmingly, people who have been grotesquely abused as children and have paranoid patterns of thinking," said Pincus in his book, adding that childhood traumas can impact the developmental anatomy and functioning of the brain.

And although Bonin suppressed his memories of his abuse, doctors pointed to the scars and the damage to the frontal lobe of his brain as unimpeachable evidence.

"There is much data to indicate that Bonin was severely and recurrently sexually abused as a child," said one psychiatrist.

Bonin knows no boundaries

During Bonin's year of living dangerously, he sometimes was perfectly capable of living a semi-normal life during the hours when he was not hunting for boys.

While his girlfriend was long gone, he did have a new lover, Lawrence Eugene Sharp, an 18-year-old from Long Beach that Bonin once took to Knott's Berry Farm, a California theme park, for a date.

Unfortunately for Lawrence, Bonin grew tired of his lovers as quickly as he did with his victims, and at some point between April 10 and May 18 of 1980, Bonin killed him, stuffing his body in a trash bin behind a gas station.

"I just got up one morning and decided I was tired of him," Bonin said when asked why he chose to kill his teenage lover. "I just got tired of having him around and so I decided that I should kill him."

Bonin later told the TV reporter David Lopez that if he had not been arrested, "I'd still be killing. I couldn't stop killing. It got easier with each victim I did."

A solo killing leaves victim's family in turmoil

On May 19, Bonin wanted Vernon Butts to go with him on a hunting trip, but Butts said no. In a rare murder on his own, Bonin abducted 14-year-old Sean King, who was hanging around a Downey bus stop, tortured him, raped him, strangled him and discarded his body. He then went back to brag about it to Butts.

Initially, King's body wasn't found, and the boy's mother Lavada Gifford, allegedly wrote Bonin an impassioned plea to tell police where her son's body was so she could bury him by Christmas. But it wasn't her letter that caused the heartless Bonin to give up the information. It was a craving for a burger.

"I was dying for a hamburger and I knew if I went out with the cops they would buy me a hamburger," Bonin told reporter David Lopez.

In exchange, he would not be tried for Sean King's murder at trial.

Later, with Bonin behind bars awaiting his date with the executioner, Gifford wrote a flurry of letters to her son's killer in hopes of hearing from him some element of remorse.

"I saw on TV in 1989 that Bonin had become a born-again Christian, and I needed to know if he had made any real peace with his Lord and had any remorse," she said. "He wrote me back more than 13 times, but did he ever say he was sorry? Not one word. It was all about him and his favorite TV shows. He never acknowledged that he did anything wrong. So I stopped."

Homeless man becomes Bonin's new roommate – and accomplice

Nine days after Bonin dumped Sean King's body, he invited a 19-year-old drifter named James Munro to move into the 1950s tract house he shared with his mother.

The Michigan native happily accepted, and later said his initial impression of Bonin was that he was "a good guy, really normal."

That reputation continued after Bonin also helped Munro land a job at Dependable Driveaway in Montebello, the same place Bonin himself worked.

Story doesn't bypass Bonin's attention

In an effort to keep an eye on whether or not police were honing in on him and his van of death, Bonin drove daily to Orange County to purchase the Register, and it was the March 24, 1980, story – the one that broke the news of a serial killer targeting southern California's boys – that sealed his fate.

To those who weren't his accomplices, Bonin seemed obsessed with the story, and collected clippings on the Freeway Killer that he stored in a scrapbook he kept in his van.

"Bill'd bring in the newspaper, and say, 'This guy got another one.' And I'd say, 'Damn it Bill, I wish they'd catch this guy. It's guys like this that give other good gay guys a bad name,'" said Everett Fraser, his longtime friend and neighbor.

The Register had included a photo of a suspicious van linked to the dead bodies – it was a drawing, but included every detail but Bonin's "C.B. Trucker" sticker in the back window - and their disappearances.

For that first story, the Register had also included photos of many of the strangling victims, and Bonin pointed them out to one of his accomplices, and told him that he was the madman rounding up the young men.

"He said, 'Well, this is No. 7, or 14, or 12,'" the accomplice later said in court.

The police finally recognized the pattern associated with many of Bonin's victims, and departments throughout the region began working together in hopes of capturing the Freeway Killer.

"There was total paranoia in the community, particularly there near the end," said Earle Robitaille, whose Huntington Beach paradise was one of Bonin's favorite hunting grounds. "It was a very tough time."

Orange County investigator Bernie Esposito was also on edge.

“You went home at the end of the day and held your breath that the damned phone didn’t ring with another one,” Esposito said, adding that the string of murders was unforgettable.

“Some of them were stabbed, most of them were strangled, but the thing that stands out in my mind is the pain he inflicted on these boys and the callous disregard he had for them,” the detective said. “He treated them as a sex object that was just there for his gratification. I looked across the breakfast table at my 14-year-old son and I just imagined how I would feel if police came knocking at my door in the middle of the night and told me that my son had been brutally murdered and left in some field like a bag of trash.”

Esposito and his partner formed a task force with four other officers – two from LAPD and two from Los Angeles County - and they made it their mission to track down the person responsible for the body count, which was quickly escalating.

“At the start of 1980, there were bodies coming in every two weeks,” recalled investigator Jim Sidebotham. “Long Beach was getting them, L.A. was getting them like crazy. San Bernardino was getting them. Riverside was getting them.”

Then rape victim David McVicker – who was almost strangled with a T-shirt and a tire iron in Bonin’s signature method - recognized something in the assaults of the dead men that looked familiar, and called cops to tell them he was fairly sure he knew who the Freeway Killer was.

“I kept reading the newspapers, and every time I would read these stories about these kids coming up dead, it was like just in my stomach. I could just feel this,” McVicker told Nancy Grace. “I knew what they went through.

And then after a year of that, it was just kind of overwhelming to me. I finally called the sheriff's department and said, 'He's supposed to be locked up, but he's not.' I didn't know. They needed to find out where he was. And as it was, he was killing everybody."

He ended up talking to Esposito, who recalled vividly the story he heard.

"McVicker tells me that after Bonin had done everything he wanted to do with him, he said, 'you know what, you're an alright guy. I was going to kill you but I want to come back for you and use you again,'" Esposito recalled.

It sent chills down his spine.

A second tip came when 17-year-old William Pugh was arrested for car theft.

Pugh, who had been along for the ride the night Bonin killed Harry Todd Turner, told police he had some information he would share about the Freeway Killer if they would make a deal in the car theft. He failed to mention his role in the murder of Henry Todd Turner, but he did tell police that a guy he knew, William Bonin, had a glove box full of newspaper clippings about the case.

An investigation into Bonin's background revealed a string of convictions for assaulting teenage boys, including David McVicker.

Detectives made a stop at Everett Fraser's house for some background, although it wasn't until they showed him a map that detailed his house, Bonin's house, the place where one victim had disappeared and the location of Bonin's favorite liquor store as well as its proximity to the site of the disappearance that Fraser was convinced his friend was the killer.

"It just clicked. Something just clicked," Fraser said. "I said, 'Okay, get out your pencils, you guys. Get out your pads of paper.' They just looked at

each other.”

“The hair on his arm actually stood up,” said detective Kirk Mellecker.

“You could just see the entire switch in his viewpoint, once it dawned on him.”

Now, with 33-year-old Bonin in their sights, police began trailing the serial killer, waiting for him to make a move.

The last victim

It was early on June 2, 1980, when Bonin and a drifter names James Munro spotted Steven Wells along the freeway.

The 19-year-old agreed to accompany the two back to their house for sex. They took Wells back to the house the devilish duo shared with Bonin's mother.

After an initial round of sex, Bonin offered Steven \$200 if he could tie him up, and Steven – thinking little about the missing boys and men before him who had ended up as only a handful of paragraphs in a newspaper – agreed. Almost immediately, Bonin began to assault him, raping him ruthlessly as he struggled, helplessly bound.

Munro said he watched TV in another room until Bonin called for him.

“At that point I knew it was real. Bonin went to get a glass of water and I told him, ‘No, don't do this.’ But Bonin said, ‘It's too late. There is nothing that you or I can do to stop it.’”

Later, Bonin showed little emotion as he described the murder.

“Both me and Jim beat him up prior to killing him,” Bonin told police. “He said he wouldn't tell anyone, just to let him go. When we finally got around to killing him, we put a shirt around his neck. I twisted it, and he was strangled.”

And while Bonin might have been calm in describing the murder, as it was happening, he was anything but.

Munro later recounted the events of that day to police, and recalled Bonin screaming at the equally hysterical Steven, “Shut up! You're going to die. It was like he was a monster.”

Later, Bonin and Munro loaded the body into the van and went to visit Vernon Butts.

“As we went up to the door we knocked, and Butts came out dressed in a Darth Vader uniform like the ‘Star Wars’ movie,” Munro recalled. “We went inside, and Bonin told Butts, ‘This is Jim Munro and he is my new partner.’ Butts said, ‘Hi,’ and showed me all the people he killed. He showed me a closet containing 21 ID cards of all the victims that he killed. Bonin then told Butts to come look at what we did. So we all went out to the van. Bonin uncovered the body, and Butts replied, ‘Oh how nice. You got another one.’ Then Bonin asked Butts, ‘Hey do you want to come with us, or do you want to stay here and watch the news?’ Butts told Bonin that he would stay at the house. Bonin told Butts if he saw anything on the news to call him.”

After leaving Butts’ home, Munro helped Bonin dispose of Wells’ body behind an abandoned gas station in Huntington Beach.

“We pulled into a closed Mobil gas station, dumped the body behind the gas station, and then took off,” Munro said. “Then we went on our way home. As we were driving home - we stopped off at McDonald’s, went to the drive thru window, and got some hamburgers. When we got home, we sat down. Bonin was eating a burger, looked up in the sky and said, ‘Thanks Steve,’ then looked down and said, ‘Thanks Steve,’ then looked at me and said, ‘Where ever you are at,’ and started to laugh.”

‘I’ll kill you if you run’

Later that night, Bonin told Munro he’d better keep his mouth shut about the murder.

“Bonin told me that he was the ‘Freeway Killer,’ that he had other partners out there who helped him kill, and that he killed 45 people. I got scared, and started to cry again. He came up to me and told me to stop crying because he was not going to hurt me unless I ran, or called the police.

“Then he told me he was getting tired and wanted to go to bed. We went into his bedroom and he got into his bed, and I got into mine. Then he turned off the lights. I got up and turned the lights back on, and he asked me what was the matter. I told him I did not trust him, and I did not want him to kill me. He got up, came over to me, and told me, ‘I know a way you can trust me.’ I asked him, ‘How?’ He said, ‘Let me tie you up. So you will know that I will not kill you.’ I let him tie me up the same way that he tied up Wells. Then he told me that he could kill me, and that there was nothing I could do. I started to cry, and I pleaded for my life like Wells did.

“He started to laugh, and told me that he was not going to kill me. But if I ever ran from him he would kill me, and that if he could not get me - his partners would. I told him okay, and that I would not run. So he untied me. I was so scared. I did not want Bonin, or his partners, to get me. I could not believe what I had gotten myself into. It was like a murder movie. Like ‘Friday the 13th,’ and this time it was for real. I could not get it out of my mind. I wanted it to all end, but I did not know how. I stayed low for a while until June 13, 1980, when I heard that Bonin was arrested for murder.”

Munro has since asked Wells' parents – who have made it their mission to keep Munro behind bars at every parole hearing – for forgiveness, and says he lives with many regrets.

“I was just a stupid kid. If I'd known that 15 years to life meant I was never going to get out of prison, I would never have pleaded guilty,” Munro said in an interview with the Los Angeles Times. “Hooking up with Bonin was a huge mistake.”

An unfortunate miss

If Bonin had spent a little more time savoring his time with Steven Wells, who would ultimately be his last murder victim, the man might have survived his nightmarish ordeal.

Police surveillance of William Bonin began June 2, 1980, the same night that Steven was killed.

But Steven was already dead, and just before police arrived to set up round-the-clock surveillance on Bonin, his tortured body had been carried out of the house in a cardboard box and callously dumped behind a service station.

“If it had gone down just a little bit earlier, we might have stopped” them, Sterling Norris said.

As it was, they finally had their eye on their suspect, and they were ready for him to make a move.

For about a week, William Bonin behaved just like any other single guy living in California.

He went to work as a truck driver each day, then hung out with friends including Fraser in the evenings before heading home for the night.

“I saw him about three times a week. I knew he was going out about every night, just like any other young guy, cruising,” Fraser said. “He was always trying to get me to go out with him at night, but I never would. I always had to be at home.”

Capture and confession

Laying low was smart, but nine days after Stephen Wells was killed, Bonin's demons were again hungry, and he began hunting for a new victim, completely oblivious to the police in his rear view because he was so focused on his mission.

He tried to pick up five different young men, police on his van's tail the entire time, until he finally succeeded with a 15-year-old boy.

Bonin drove his new prey to a deserted beach parking lot, and by the time police reached the van, they could hear disturbing sounds coming from inside.

Bonin was already in the process of raping and strangling his victim.

"The police almost waited too long, this kid was in the throes of being strangled in the back of that van," Lopez said.

Evidence connected to a slew of murders including tape and rope were found in the back of the van. Police also found Bonin's scrapbook of Freeway Killer stories, which made it even easier to determine which victims had been the work of William Bonin.

It was the night of June 11, 1980, and Bonin was booked on suspicion of murder and various sex charges.

He was held in lieu of \$250,000 bond, and confessed to police that he had killed 21 boys and young men, who he then essentially "threw away like garbage."

Tricked into talking

He didn't confess willingly, however.

It wasn't until he read that letter from a woman whose son was still missing but presumed to be a victim of Bonin's that the man cracked.

He led authorities to the body of Sean King – although he later said he did it not to ease the mother's pain, but for the hamburger he knew officers would buy him for lunch – then told them everything about the 21 murders.

Later, "Jigsaw John" St. John, one of the officers whose work helped put not only Bonin but also his accomplices behind bars, pulled Los Angeles Deputy District Norris aside.

"I've got to tell you something," the detective said. "It wasn't Mrs. King who wrote the letter. It was me."

An encounter with the devil

As he confessed over the course of several evenings, Bonin casually told police the increasingly more grisly details of his murder spree.

“I tied him up with nylon - this electrician type of wire. I pulled a knife on him and he got scared. I stabbed him in the left arm. It surprised me that I did it,” Bonin told police, recounting the murder of one of his victims. “I stabbed him again and then again, and again and again until he was helpless.”

There were so many stab wounds because Bonin wasn’t methodical or ritualistic about the stabbing, despite the intimacy of the torture.

“They would try to stop me from stabbing them and I would stab just to stab,” Bonin said. “I stuck them in different places with the knife because I didn’t know where to stab, you know I didn’t know where any vital organs are or anything like that.”

Those who heard his confession were horrified not only by the details of each of the murders, but also the casual way in which Bonin told them.

“The thing that struck me was he was sitting there telling us in graphic detail about how he brutalized, sexually abused and murdered these young boys like he’s talking about yesterday’s news,” Esposito.

Bonin’s lack of emotion or compassion “was just incredible,” he recalled.

“There was not a policeman in that room who did not want to kill Bonin - to hear him talk about those kids,” added Esposito’s partner, Orange County investigator Jim Sidebotham. “You’re in there trying to hold in your puke and to do your job.”

It didn't help that the more Bonin talked, the more excited he became as he recalled victim after victim.

“This guy was impassioned about what he did. He loved it,” said Norris, the district attorney who would eventually prosecute Bonin for his Los Angeles County crimes. “Listening to his confession was like sitting in a room of horrors. Here we are talking about killing kids, killing one and throwing him out like a piece of trash, and then going back to get another. It made me sick.”

After police hear his confession, Bonin was formally charged with 14 counts of murder, eleven counts of robbery, plus one count each of sodomy and mayhem between July 26 and 29.

He also gave up his accomplices, who were by now scattered across the country.

Bonin's victims

The victim list is believed to be as follows:

1. Thomas Lundgren, 13 – May 28, 1979
2. Mark Shelton, 17 – August 4, 1979
3. Markus Grabs, 17 – August 5, 1979
4. Donald Hyden, 15 – August 27, 1979
5. David Murillo, 17 – September 9, 1979
6. Robert Wirostek, 18 – September 17, 1979
7. John Doe, believed to be 19-25 – November 29, 1979
8. Frank Dennis Fox, 17 – November 30, 1979
9. John Kilpatrick, 15 – December 10, 1979

10. Michael McDonald, 16 – January 1, 1980
11. Charles Miranda, 15 – February 3, 1980
12. James Macabe, 12 – February 3, 1980
13. Ronald Gatlin, 18 – March 14, 1980
14. Glenn Barker, 14 – March 21, 1980
15. Russell Rugh, 15 – March 21, 1980
16. Harry Todd Turner, 15 – March 24, 1980
17. Steven Wood, 16 – April 10, 1980
18. Lawrence Sharp, 18 – April 10, 1980
19. Darin Lee Kendrick, 19 – April 29, 1980
20. Sean King, 14 – May 19, 1980
21. Steven Wells, 18 – June 2, 1980

While these are the young men and boys that Bonin initially confessed to killing – he later disputed the murder of Thomas Lundgren, and told a reporter with a degree of indignation, “I do not cut the dicks off little boys.” While the other boys were significantly tortured, Lundgren was the only one to be emasculated.

There are believed to be at least 20 other victims linked to Bonin, maybe more.

Of course, that’s not to mention the families forced to live on knowing the horror of what happened to their child at the hands of William Bonin.

Losing a child sparks a degree of emotional pain that trumps the death of a parent or spouse – this is a person they raised and nurtured, and all the

hopes and dreams they had for them have now been buried. Losing that child to homicide only accentuates that grief.

Experts say that depression, anxiety, rage, survivor guilt, blame, post-traumatic stress disorder and a desire for revenge are common for the parents who are forced to survive a life without their child because someone else deemed them not worthy to life.

The grief can be so overwhelming, some experts say, that it can reduce a parent's lifespan due to the damaging physical effects of stress and depression.

Taking them into consideration, Bonin's victim list rises considerably.

Butts lands behind bars

Police picked up 22-year-old Vernon Butts on July 25 after executing a search warrant and finding evidence of at least one of the killings in his Downey home.

Butts told police that he had had a limited role in the killings, and only held victims down for Bonin to rape and torture, although he admitted that he once used a coat hanger to torture one of their victims.

“We took him out the middle of nowhere and had sex with him, and then he killed him,” Butts said.

He went along, Butts said, because Bonin was a Svengali of sorts and had a “hypnotic” effect on him, something that many other accomplices to serial killers have said about the men who have led them to commit heinous crimes.

“After the first one, I couldn’t do anything about it,” Butts said, adding that his murder spree with Bonin was “a good little nightmare.”

He told police that Bonin bound his victims, leaving them completely defenseless. He would then beat them and have anal and oral sex with them before taking their lives.

When one of the boys resisted, Bonin “beat him up real bad,” Butts said.

And while witnesses for the defense would later say that Bonin was ashamed of what he had done, the demented killer in fact took immense pleasure in snuffing the lives out of his victims, Butts said.

“He loved every minute of it, I guess,” he added. “He loved to hear them scream, basically.”

In his confession, Butts described the knives, ice picks and acid used in six of the murders.

He was charged as an accomplice in nine of the murders linked to Bonin.

Second accomplice arrested

About a month after Butts was behind bars, James Munro – who stole Bonin's car after he was arrested and fled the state - was tracked to Michigan, where state police arrested him as well.

“It was June 13, 1980, when Bonin was arrested. I was shocked, and it made me panic because I did not want to also be arrested. I waited until June 17 to talk to the cops - to see if I was also wanted for this crime. I came in the morning and talked to a cop. He asked me if I went around cruising with Bonin picking up hitchhikers,” Munro said. “I told him, ‘No! I don't know anything.’ He told me that I could go for now. That night I took off, and I headed for Michigan.

“I stalled the cops for as long as I could - until I got busted for the murder of Steven Wells. That is when my nightmare began, and I would never wake up,” he said.

“I was eating a sandwich when I heard a knock on the door,” Munro said. “My cousin, Cindy, opened the door and the police came in. There were cops everywhere. It looked like the president of the United States was here. The cop that had a clipboard asked Cindy her name. Then he asked Jeff his name. Then he asked me my name. Then as he was leaving he looked at the report, and I matched the description that Bonin gave to the cops. So they got me, and took me outside. As I went outside there were reporters, TV cameras, and cops everywhere. They had taped off the entire area, and hundreds of people were watching - as I was being led off by the Michigan State Police and the Detectives of Michigan. When I got in the car my cousin asked me in shock, ‘What the hell did you do?’ I looked at her and I told her, ‘I didn't do anything.’ She just shook her head in disbelief, and in shock.”

Munro's parents learned about his arrest on the evening news.

One of the arresting officers, Michigan State Police Trooper James Dowling, was already familiar with Munro, and called him "a regular, run of the mill pain in the neck."

In an August 14, 1980, hearing, Munro pleaded innocent to the charges.

Another accomplice lands in jail

On August 22, 1980, Gregory Matthew Miley was arrested in Houston, Texas, on two counts of murder, two counts of robbery and one count of sodomy.

He'd fled to the Lone Star State as soon as he'd learned of Bonin's arrest, and was targeted after he admitted during a recorded phone conversation with a friend that he'd participated in the rapes and murders of two of Bonin's victims.

In his confession, Miley told homicide detective David Kusher that their first victim, Charles Miranda, was a young gay teen they'd picked up in Hollywood.

Miley said Bonin raped Miranda and he tried but failed to maintain his erection, so he then held the boy down while Bonin "tied his hands, tied his feet, then tied his feet to his hands," the detective later said in court during a preliminary hearing prior to Miley's murder trial.

According to Kusher, Miley described how Bonin pulled Miranda's shirt over his head, twisting it "like a towel" before asking Miley to hold the shirt in place while he got the tire iron.

"Bonin took the iron bar, stuck it in the shirt, and began twisting it in a corkscrew-type effect until the boy was dead," Kusher testified.

They then dumped Miranda's body and drove to Huntington Beach, where they spotted James Macabe, waiting for the bus to Disneyland.

According to Miley's confession, David voluntarily got in the van and got in back with Bonin, but soon was making "crying noises" that Miley could hear from the front driver's seat.

Miley drove “a very, very long distance, and the next thing he realized was that Bonin had this young boy down and he was strangling him, again with his shirt.”

“Miley admitted that he again helped hold this boy down, but there wasn’t much to holding him down because he was so small, and that he helped by twisting the shirt ‘around the boy’s neck a little bit’ until he was dead,” the detective said.

Miley then told Kusher that they disposed of the body “next to a dumpster.”

Fourth accomplice catches a break

Initially, police thought that 20-year-old Eric Marten Wijnaendts, who met Bonin in prison in March of 1979 and later established a sexual relationship with him, was the fourth accomplice.

Wijnaendts was believed to have helped in the murder of Harry Todd Turner – “Bonin didn’t act alone in any of these murders,” one of the lead prosecutors said – but he was released when police learned that it was actually their informant, William Ray Pugh, who had assisted in that murder.

“There is now insufficient evidence to believe the defendant is guilty of the crimes charged,” said Sterling Norris.

They then sought to have Pugh – who had a lengthy criminal history that included arrests for burglary, robbery and assault - tried in adult court.

Bonin enters innocent plea

During a preliminary hearing on January 1, 1981, Bonin pleaded innocent to the Freeway Killer murders.

Prosecutors – including Aaron Stovitz, who was part of the team that prosecuted Charles Manson for the notorious Tate-La Bianca murders, and up until Bonin thought that those murders “would be the most horrible thing we would see” – zeroed in on the manipulation Bonin used to control his accomplices, which ultimately ensured that his victims wouldn’t get away.

Stovitz called Bonin “the most arch-evil person who ever existed.”

Likely very few people in the courtroom disagreed with the prosecutor, given the heinous methods of torture Bonin delighted in before killing his victims.

“We know that Bonin had his group, and that they did not act independently of him,” said one official. “In the cases of Butts, Munro and Miley, all came from broken homes with no strong father identification. Bonin became the father. He gave them love.”

He also helped stoke their own perverse urges, said Los Angeles prosecutor Sterling Norris, who had listened to Bonin brag to police while sharing details of their debauchery.

“He was the leader, and he chose weak people he could use,” Norris said. “Bonin was the torch who lit the fire.”

“He has this leadership ability to get them to follow,” added Orange County Deputy District Atty. Bryan Brown, who would prosecute Bonin for his Orange County crimes. “And they do what he wants them to do.”

Stovitz, whose nightmares would now include Bonin and his inescapable van of death, had some advice for the people of southern California, especially those who still believed that life in the shadow of the Hollywood sign was safe.

“Is there a lesson to be learned from this case?” asked Stovitz. “Yes. I would tell children, don’t accept rides from strangers, either hitchhiking or gratuitous offers, be they from girls, boys or in between. And I would tell parents, let your sons and daughters see the pictures of these murdered children.”

A remorseless killer

Bonin expressed no remorse for what he had done although he did demonstrate embarrassment and regret at being apprehended. Once confronted with the evidence, he freely confessed to police.

He also offered a confession to CBS television reporter David Lopez, in hopes of snagging a life sentence rather than the death penalty.

Still, he refused to accept responsibility for what he had done.

“It was like someone threw cold water on my face listening to a guy sitting there describing to you how he killed people and why he killed people,” Lopez said. “‘He was an easy target, it was a game.’ I asked him what happens if you don’t get caught, and he said, ‘I couldn’t stop. I’d still be killing. I couldn’t stop killing. It got easier each time.’”

Lopez also asked Bonin why he killed so many victims, and he couldn’t really say. All he said was, he “liked the sound of kids dying.”

What he didn’t like was the idea of death, even though he so nonchalantly brought it for so many of his victims.

“He said he was terrified of the death penalty,” Lopez said. “He said, ‘I don’t want to die.’”

Butts chooses suicide over facing the music

The testimony of Vernon Butts was one of the building blocks of the case against Bonin, but unfortunately, it would never be admitted into evidence.

By early January, Butts was dead, a towel twisted around his neck in a method of death that was eerily reminiscent of the way most of Bonin's victims died.

Police said they "were certain" Butts' death was a suicide.

"There were no other inmates in the area at that time of night. All of the inmates are on lock down, and only three people have keys to that room," said Los Angeles County Sheriff's Deputy Jerry Minnus.

Still, Butts' attorney, Joe Ingber, doubted the suicide theory, and said Butts had faced numerous threats from other inmates.

"They'd say things like, 'You don't look so tough,' or 'You like to kill young boys, but you can't stand up to a man,' or something like, 'We'll punk you pretty good.' He was afraid of those people," Ingber said, adding that Butts had spoken with his girlfriend the night before his death, and she said he didn't sound depressed.

"I think the sheriff's version is a bunch of malarkey," Ingber said. "I'm not accusing the sheriff's department of anything, but what happened doesn't make much sense."

Minnus had a different story about Butts and his supposed state of mind, however.

"He was apparently very upset about the release of the transcript from the preliminary hearing, which had been held behind closed doors last months.

He seemed particularly concerned that it would shock his friends and relatives.”

Butts said most of the victims were strangled with their own T-shirts, but some were attacked with a variety of butcher, buck, and steak knives and one was killed with an ice pick through his ear.

Butts was scheduled to be tried July 27 on six counts of murder.

His death erased at least some of the evidence against Bonin, said Bonin’s attorney, Earl Hanson.

“Now we have an entirely new ballgame,” he said. “It does remove some of the obstacles that had me very, very concerned. It doesn’t hurt him as much as it would if [Butts] had testified.”

Still, Aaron Stovitz said Butts’ death would have no impact on their case against Bonin, set to go to trial May 4 in Los Angeles County on 14 counts of murder.

Chapter 6: The trials of William Bonin

Bonin faced two trials, the first in Los Angeles County, the second in Orange County. At first the two counties battled over which would try him, until finally settling on back-to-back trials.

Two of his accomplices, Miley and Munro, had already agreed to testify against him at both.

Los Angeles trial

In Los Angeles County, he was initially charged with 14 counts of murder along with other offenses including robbery and sodomy.

Bonin was cleared of Thomas Lundgren's murder because he chose to deny it, and was not charged in the murder of Sean King because he had shown police where King's body was with the agreement that it could not be used against him in court.

Two other murder charges – those of Mark Shelton and Robert Wirostek – were dropped because he had been charged along with Vernon Butts in the deaths, and with Butts dead, his testimony was deemed inadmissible, and prosecutors felt that there was not enough evidence to convict Bonin alone.

In the end, Bonin faced 10 murder charges in Los Angeles County. His trial began on Nov. 5, 1981.

“We will prove he is the Freeway Killer, as he has bragged to a number of witnesses,” said prosecutor Sterling Norris to the jury. “We will show you that he enjoyed the killings. Not only did he enjoy it, and plan to enjoy it, he had an insatiable demand – an insatiable appetite – not only for sodomy, but for killing.”

The evidence was overwhelming. Not only did officials have blood, semen and hair linking Bonin to the dead boys, but also avocado-colored carpet fibers that were an exact match to the carpet on the floor of his van.

“He had an insatiable appetite for this type of killing,” Norris said. “He fully enjoys the whole episode.”

Too, in six of the murders, the victims had been strangled using a “windlass” method that was, Norris said, “a signature, a trademark.” (Bonin's signature strangulation method involved using a tire iron to twist

fabric – usually clothing belonging to the victim – tighter and tighter around his victim’s neck.)

“It’s a nightmare,” said Barbara Beihn, the mother of Stephen Wood outside the courtroom. “I can’t believe it really happened, except when I go to the cemetery I know it happened.”

Miley and Munro both testified at the trial, and vividly described the details of the murders in which they had participated.

Munro spoke of buying burgers with the money they’d found in Stephen Wells’ pockets.

For his part, Miley described hearing “a bunch of bones cracking” as Bonin strangled one of his victims.

And although the defense made an attempt to pin things on the late Vernon Butts, Norris handily shot down that theory.

“He was the leader, and he chose weak people he could use,” said Norris.

“Bonin was the torch who lit the fire.”

David McVicker also testified, sharing the similarities between his brutal attack and those of Bonin’s victims while revealing the depravity that Bonin exhibited each time he raped and killed.

Reporter goes against tradition

Norris had closed his case and was preparing to make his closing arguments when reporter David Lopez – who had won a court ruling that shielded him from having to testify for the prosecution - finally agreed to testify after learning that Bonin had been attacked in prison by other inmates, which delayed the rest of the trial. (It was originally reported that Bonin had been injured in a fall.)

Lopez set a precedent by doing something that had never been done before – testifying at the trial about the off-the-record confession Bonin had made to him in hopes of preventing the death penalty.

“I am not a deeply religious person,” Lopez said. “But I prayed a lot.”

As part of his confession, Bonin admitted to Lopez that if he were to go free, he would certainly kill again, and Lopez realized that he had to make sure the serial killer who prowled the streets for young boys ended up behind bars for life or dead.

After Bonin’s trial was suspended over Bonin’s broken nose and black eyes, “it made me realize that someone greater than me was trying to tell me something,” Lopez said, and he chose to testify, sharing what many reporters would consider off the record conversations to which others were not to be privy.

“In some way, I’m personally ashamed of the way I behaved in this thing,” Lopez said of his initial reticence to testify.

Even after facing an angry Bonin when he finally took the stand, Lopez said, “I feel good about it now.”

Initially, Lopez’s station held the information they had about Bonin, but when Lopez learned the suspected Freeway Killer had talked to other

journalists, “I had very strong feelings I was going to be scooped on the story I was sitting on, and I knew I was sitting on perhaps the biggest story of my life. He told me he wanted to plead guilty and wanted me to go on the air with a story that he was going to plead guilty.”

The station ran the story in June, and afterwards, police urged Lopez to tell them what he knew.

Lopez told the court about Bonin’s account of Stephen Wells’ death, which began with Bonin having sex with him on his mother’s bed before dragging Wells out of the room to be killed elsewhere in the home, where Butts was waiting.

“Vern got real weird that night and stuck ice picks in his head,” Lopez said Bonin had told him.

The newsman testified that Bonin described killing one youth by punching him in the throat. Other victims were strangled, killed with ice picks and sexually mutilated.

“Several officers said that I would seal the case shut, but they've been saying that since back in January,” Lopez said. “I never knew I was so popular with the police. I thought it would be enough to name 21 names. But what they were asking me was to open my notebook my notebook is in my head and delve into everything he told me.”

Bonin’s defense attempted to discredit Lopez’s testimony by suggesting he had paid \$50,000 to police for information.

“Are you kidding?” Lopez asked in response.

Defending a madman

Bonin's defense attorneys called a wide range of witnesses to the stand, including his mother, who talked about the beatings Bonin suffered as a child at the hands of his father, the molestation that occurred while Bonin was in a detention home and her disappointment over her middle son being gay.

His older brother, Robert, also testified about their abusive father, the drinking that consumed both parents and the changes that came over William after his tour of duty in Vietnam.

His younger brother, Paul, talked about picking up hitchhikers with the middle Bonin brother, but asserted that they'd never injured their passengers.

Everett Fraser, Bonin's neighbor who had introduced him to his accomplices, said he had been shocked to learn that Bonin, a "respectful" friend who had been a guest in his home at least 50 times, was facing such charges.

Experts weigh in

The defense, which targeted the credibility of numerous witnesses, also offered testimony regarding the issues that might have contributed to Bonin's murder spree, including a lack of nurturing and abandonment as a child, which "led to confusion about the differences between violence and love," according to Dr. David Foster.

Because he had suffered from physical, sexual and emotional abuse – memories of which he blocked, but evidence of which was present, including scars for which Bonin had no explanation – that forced "a

detachment and the use of fantasy and denial and more primitive defenses to protect himself.”

Closing arguments

In closing arguments, Norris asked the jury to consider how Bonin treated his victims, “tying them like pigs and throwing them out like garbage,” he said.

“These dump sites are part of Mr. Bonin’s habits – to use those freeways to put a body some distance from where it was killed,” he added. “These ligatures are a trademark, it’s like signing Bonin on each and every one of these murders.”

He also asked jurors to stand in the shoes of the victims while they considered the facts in the case.

“If just one of these victims could take the stand and tell you about the humiliation, the degradation of ending his life this way, there would be no question what the result ought to be,” Norris continued. “Just as Mr. Bonin drove the van of death, picking up these young kids, I ask you, ladies and gentlemen of the jury, to drive the van of justice and tell him, ‘Get in Mr. Bonin. Your days of killing are done.’”

On Jan. 5, 1982, the jury was handed the case. Members deliberated for six days before returning with convictions in 10 killings.

Bonin was found guilty in the killing of Donald Hyden, Steven Wells, Steven Wood, Charles Miranda, James Macabe, Harry Todd Turner, David Murillo, Marcus Grabs, Darin Kendrick and Ronald Gatlin.

“I think it’s a very good verdict, a very just verdict that was fully earned by Mr. Bonin,” said Sterling Norris. “We will ask for the death penalty.”

“Even though there was not a guilty verdict on Sean, we know William Bonin killed Sean,” said King’s mother, Lavada Gifford. “There are 10 first-degree murder convictions, and that’s a victory.”

Bonin expects death penalty

After he was convicted on 10 counts of murder in Los Angeles County, Bonin said he expected a death sentence from the jury.

“I’d be stupid not to expect it,” he said. “If it comes down that way it might be easier to handle.”

And while he was anxious over what decision the jury might make, Bonin said he was relieved that his first trial had come to an end.

“It’s finally over,” he said.

Bonin's first death sentence

The jury in Bonin's Los Angeles County trial only had to take one vote before determining that the killer should die for his sadistic spree.

"Nobody likes to take another man's life," said jury foreman John Lang. "But we did what had to be done."

Prosecutor Norris was grateful for the jury's swift yet fair decision.

"The crimes were so horrible, so repeated, there was no other just verdict," he said. "After listing to this evidence, I think you reach a moral judgement."

Judge maintains death sentence

Superior Court Judge William B. Keene imposed the recommended death sentence, calling the crimes "unbelievably cruel" and the disposal of bodies a "revolting affront to human dignity."

"He had a total disregard for the sanctity of human life and the dignity of civilized society," Keene said. "Sadistic, unbelievably cruel, senseless and deliberately premediated ... guilty by any measure of possible or imaginary doubt."

Bonin cradled his chin in his hand as he listened.

"I'm happy with the sentence and I'll be happy when it's carried out," said Jim Wells, whose son, Steven, was Bonin's final victim. "That guy's a monster, totally devoid of human feeling, as could be noted that he sat there without even flinching."

Jurors as well were pleased with the judge's decision to hand down a death sentence. He had the option of handing down a sentence of life without the possibility of parole, but chose to impose the death penalty. He also ordered

that if Bonin's death sentence was commuted to life, that each of the counts run consecutively, ensuring that he would spend his life behind bars.

"I was very happy because Judge Keene didn't let us down, for all we went through," said alternative juror Olivia Alarcon.

"I was very impressed with the judge and his statements," added Lang. "I think justice is continuing, and I would like to see it come to a conclusion relatively quickly."

Orange County trial

In Orange County, Bonin was charged with the murders of Dennis Frank Fox, Glenn Barker, Russell Rugh and Lawrence Sharp.

He was held in isolation while he waited to go on trial, which was much different than his circumstances in Los Angeles County.

“They have me in a room by myself, which is a bummer,” Bonin wrote to psychologist Dr. Vonda Pelto from his cell in Orange County, where he awaited his second trial. “No one to talk to or play chess with. I hope my attorney is successful in getting a roommate for me. Ten months is too long to be cooped up in a medical isolation room all by myself.”

Bonin’s defense team attempted to get a change of venue because of the publicity surrounding the case.

The court answered the request as follows:

“Bearing in mind the criteria which the court must take into consideration in evaluating the pending motion, the court has made the following determinations. First of all, with reference to the nature and gravity of the offense, certainly the court can think of no offense or offenses which would be more grave than those which are pending in this particular case.

“Secondly, with reference to the size of the community, the evidence is clear that we have a community that is approximately two million people - consists of approximately two million people. Additionally, the voter registration is in excess of one million.

“The court ... also notes that the panels now drawn also consist of both people who have registered to vote, and, in addition thereto, we also draw from people who have obtained driver's licenses that may not be registered. Consequently, it is the court's determination from those facts that the pool

which would be available is in excess of the number of people who are registered to vote.

“...Obviously this is a case that has commanded a great deal of media coverage both by television and newspaper ... [but] I don’t have any evidence as to who watched what on television, what channels they watched, if in fact they do watch, what newspapers they take, if in fact they take any newspapers, and what effect, if in fact they do take newspapers, anything that they might have read has had upon them.

“In this case, the court does note that there has been a minimum amount of publicity regarding this case, at least since the imposition of the sentence in Los Angeles County.

“The court, in taking the totality of the evidence that has been presented, makes a determination at this time that there has been an inadequate showing that the defendant is likely not to receive a fair trial in Orange County.

“I think based upon the size of the community, that there is undoubtedly a large group of individuals who either have not heard about the case or if they have heard of it, heard so little that in no way is the defendant not going to be able to get a fair trial in Orange County.

“The motion for change of venue is denied.”

Bonin’s second trial began in March of 1983.

The trial was especially hard on Rugh’s mother, Sandra Miller, who attended every day.

She had started drinking the day Orange County detectives knocked on her door to tell her that her son was dead, and had trouble stopping afterwards.

During the trial, her alcohol intake escalated, especially since her family members didn't want to talk about Rusty, and she needed desperately to remember him. So after the trial ended for the day, she would stop off at a local bar.

"I would get drunk and all I'd talk about was Rusty. It was the only time I dared to. I had so much pain," she said.

It was made worse by the empty bedroom that was Rusty's that she saw each morning after she woke up. The family had purchased a new home about a month before his murder, and he had picked out the bedroom he wanted for his own. It was a room in which he never had a chance to sleep.

"Bonin created most of our problems," said Miller. "He created a real havoc in our world."

Bonin's mom Alice Benton again testified, and said her son was nothing but kind.

"If he had a bag of candy, he gave it away," she said. (Clearly, Alice Benton had never heard the one about kids not taking candy from strangers in vans.)

Prosecutor Bryan Brown got right to the point in closing arguments.

"Bonin is a very intelligent individual who goes to great lengths to avoid leaving any evidence," said Brown. "One could truly say from the evidence found in the van it's a virtual death wagon."

"Bonin would suggest they have sex with the hitchhikers then kill them by binding them and strangling them" Brown said. "Killing to this man is less than stepping on an ant. He truly is a mass murderer."

Bonin's attorney, William Charvet, called two witnesses, one of them James Munro, who said that Bonin had contacted him through the air vents in jail,

and offered him “a lot” of money to lie on the stand.

On August 26, 1983, after a six-week trial, a jury convicted Bonin on all four counts of murder.

They deliberated for two and a half hours, then determined that Bonin should die for his crimes.

Superior Court Judge Kenneth Lae upheld the death sentence.

“We’re grateful,” said Jerri Fox, whose son Dennis was one of Bonin’s Orange County victims.

Bonin later protested what the judge said when handing down his death sentence after two days of deliberation on the part of Bonin’s jury.

“He told me I was sadistic and guilty of monstrous criminal conduct,” Bonin told Peltó. “I don’t think he had any right to say that to me. I couldn’t help myself. It’s not my fault I killed those boys.”

Bonin uses up all his appeals

After his trials were over and he was convicted, Bonin used every tactic available to him to appeal his death sentence.

In his appeals, he hired new lawyers who would say that trial attorney William Charvet was incompetent for failing to put more focus on Bonin's mental illness as well as the sexual abuse Bonin himself suffered as a child.

"Petitioner maintains that if Charvet had conducted a proper investigation, he would have learned that petitioner was physically abused as a child, was sexually assaulted by a number of adult males, and suffered from a bipolar mental disorder. Petitioner speculates that the presentation of this information would have humanized him in the eyes of the jury and would have made it reasonably probable that the jury would have opted for a life sentence rather than death," according to court records.

The court did not agree, and used transcripts of the trial to prove that Charvet did in fact address Bonin's childhood traumas.

"The Court finds that Charvet presented a constitutionally adequate portrayal of Bonin's childhood. During the penalty phase, Charvet presented evidence that petitioner's father had a history of abusing alcohol, gambling, and physically assaulting his wife and children. Charvet also presented evidence that petitioner was sexually molested while at a detention center when he was only ten years old. Moreover, after focusing primarily on Bonin's ability to function productively in prison, Charvet stated in his penalty phase closing argument, 'I'm not going to go into trying to blame — about the beating of the mother or losing the home — because that's not really part of it. We are talking about what happens. If Mr. Bonin lives, what happens? And why should he die?'"

Bonin also said Charvet should have called more experts to testify, especially based on the determination by Dr. Jonathan Pincus, a neurologist at Georgetown University Hospital, that he suffered frontal lobe brain damage which generally causes people to be impulse driven, suggesting that Bonin couldn't control himself when he got in the van with a mission to kill.

Pincus described Bonin's excitement in the hours prior to a kill, which the serial killer viewed with the same anticipation as a child sees Christmas.

"Bonin had no insight into his reasons for doing this and he was obviously embarrassed by the details and ashamed," Pincus said. "He described feeling excited by the prospect of killing someone, of being barely able to wait for sundown so he could begin to cruise to pick up someone for this purpose and obtain some sense of release."

But he also was a bit confused by his obsessive desire to kill.

He was, Pincus said, "a fairly open, honest, reasonably intelligent person who seemed legitimately puzzled by his predilection for sexual encounters which culminated in murder."

Later, his money gone, public defenders attempted to block the execution by suggesting Vernon Butts was the mastermind, and Bonin only went along for the ride.

"They needed to have someone made the devil, and that person was Bonin," said James Ramos. "We acknowledge legal responsibility as being an accomplice, but it is our position that he did not do these murders."

For Sterling Norris, there was no question that Bonin was the devil.

"His almost universal way of killing was to put a T-shirt around their throat, use some kind of device like a jack handle to tighten it and then to

squeeze,” he said. “He would let them fade in and out of consciousness. These were kids. And they were not just killed, they were killed in such a gross way.”

Bonin also used his knowledge of unsolved murders as a bargaining chip, but authorities weren’t in the mood to play.

Still, it would take 17 years for the U.S. Supreme Court to determine that there would be no more stays, no more appeals, and during that time, Bonin played cards, wrote letters to some of his victims’ family members – in one, taunting a mother by telling her he loved killing her son the most, “because he was such a screamer” – and dabbled in art, producing a book of short stories (“Doing Time: Stories from the Mind of a Death Row Prisoner”) and paintings that went on display in a Seattle gallery.

“That much extra life is more than they deserve,” said Bryan Brown.

“We’ve done everything in our power to guarantee their rights. It’s time to pay up.”

Accomplices also pay

Bonin's primary accomplice, Vernon Butts, was dead from suicide, but his other minions – James Munro, William Pugh and Greg Miley - were facing potential sentences of life behind bars.

Munro pleads for second chance

At Munro's trial, held March 15, 1982, his attorney, James Goldstein, suggested that Munro only participated in the murder of Stephen Wells because he was afraid of William Bonin.

"I would indicate to the court that I do feel that Mr. Munro, although not being guilt free, has also been a victim of Bonin, as well as others, in Bonin's crimes. By way of emphasis, I remind the court that Mr. Munro also, at one point in time, came very close to being a victim - in the sense that he too was tied up, and that his life was almost taken by Bonin," Goldstein said. "Mr. Munro has stated this to the probation officer, and he has also maintained with some consistency, that the only reason he participated in the acts that he did was out of fear of Bonin."

The judge responded quickly and tersely.

"The court understands that, but the court finds no excuse at all for the type of conduct that this defendant has participated in. I think he should, every few seconds, say a prayer that he is not going to the gas chamber with Bonin. For what he has done - I would have no problem sending him there. So I think he is very fortunate. "

The Michigan native was sentenced on April 6, 1982, to 15 years to life for the second-degree murder of Steven Wells. He has appealed his sentence repeatedly, and is currently incarcerated at Mule Creek State Prison. Wells' parents attend his parole hearings to ensure he isn't released.

Still, he tries to plead a case for release.

“Since 1980, I have sat in prison wondering if someday I will get out, or would I spend the rest of my life in prison. I do understand, after years in prison, what I did was wrong. But do you all out there honestly say - he is guilty of murder, or was I in the wrong place at the wrong time. Yeah, I was, and I for some reason got caught up in this case. There is not a day that goes by that I don't think about what has happened, and how sorry I am for my actions. All I want is my life back.”

It's a wish the families of Bonin's victims – so many of them forever unknown – likely wish every single day of their lives, but it is one that can never come true.

Munro also has written several online accounts about the events leading up to his arrest, each one a little bit different than the others, but each essentially suggesting he was a victim, even when he could have taken action to save the life of Steven Wells.

In one, written in third person, he credited himself for the ultimate arrest of William Bonin, despite the eyes police already had on the killer.

“He said that if it wasn't for Munro running away Bonin would be still on the streets killing people. When Munro got away Bonin was mad and got so mad he took his anger out on another victim, but he got caught because he tried to kill by himself. Bonin stated to reporters, ‘If Munro would have stayed with me, they would have never got me,’ and ‘Yes, I would have killed Munro, but in my time.’ Bonin was finally executed in 1996 in San Quentin, and Munro sits in prison hoping someone out in the free world will understand him and share their concern.”

Miley also gets life sentence

As part of a plea deal, Miley – whose family members said was mentally disabled – was sentenced in Los Angeles County in February of 1982 to 25 years to life for his role in the murder of Charles Miranda.

His Orange County sentence for the murder of James Macabe was the same, although it was to run concurrently with his previous sentence.

He could have received the death penalty, but he agreed to give up Bonin, resulting in the life sentence that included the possibility of parole.

He was initially up for parole after serving 16 years and eight months, but that parole date came and went.

He is currently incarcerated at the California Substance Abuse Treatment Facility and State Prison in Corcoran, where he regularly breaks prison rules.

According to officials at the facility, Miley has racked up 26 violations of prison rules, including making threats against an inmate, attempting to engage in non-consensual sodomy, refusing to attend classes, possession of unauthorized drugs, failure to comply with grooming standards and others.

Because of his inability to follow rules in the controlled environment of prison, Miley is unlikely to be paroled.

The last time Miley was up for parole, Orange County District Attorney Tony Rackauckas called him a “significant threat to public safety,” which was especially apparent based on the number of violations of prison rules Miley has racked up in recent years.

Accomplice who gave up Bonin goes to trial

On May 9, 1981, William Pugh – whose story helped cement the theory that William Bonin was the Freeway Killer - pleaded innocent to charges related to the murder of Harry Todd Turner.

A year later, on May 17, 1982, Pugh was sentenced to a six-year sentence for voluntary manslaughter in the case of Harry Todd Turner.

Charges of sodomy and robbery were dropped.

He could have received a life sentence if convicted of murder, but the jury took into account his role in the capture of Bonin, which effectively ended at least one serial killer's reign of terror in California.

Jurors deliberated for five days before handing down the verdict.

Pugh would be out in less than four years since he had already served 894 days awaiting his trial.

"Bonin would still be on the streets if not for Billy," said Pugh's attorney, Edmond Barrett.

Public defender tries to get death penalty off table

As part of Bonin's appeals, public defender Monica Knox attempted to show that it was wrong to expect that the members of Bonin's Orange County jury were without prejudice in his second trial, given the publicity surrounding his first.

"The notion that a juror can say, 'Yes, I've read about the search for this guy and that he may have killed up to 44 people altogether but I can set all that aside' is unrealistic," she said, adding that the evidence compiled was "not overwhelming" against Bonin.

Her request was denied.

Do they play cards in hell?

In 1990, Vanity Fair went to San Quentin Prison, and Mark MacNamara wrote about a Death Row game of bridge, played by four inmates using homemade cards.

Bridge requires four players on two teams, and in this game were “Freeway Killer” William Bonin, “Scorecard Killer” Randy Kraft, who was convicted of killing 16 men (and was sometimes called the “Freeway Killer”), Doug Clark, one of the two-man “Sunset Strip Killers” team, convicted of killing six, and Lawrence “Pliers” Bittaker, who tortured five with pliers, he favorite method of torture.

The foursome met daily, and played for about four hours.

According to MacNamara, “They didn’t much like one another, but they did like the game.”

Chapter 7: The execution of William Bonin

California governor Pete Wilson called Bonin “the poster boy for capital punishment.”

His crimes were considered so heinous that police officers who processed Bonin’s crime scenes as well as victims’ families were eager for the man who dumped his victims like so much trash to draw his last breath.

They had waited almost two decades for karma to exact its revenge.

Lethal injection replaces gas chamber

In 1992, the state of California determined that the gas chamber was considered “cruel and unusual” punishment following the execution of Robert Alton Harris.

They decided then on lethal injection, and that would be how Bonin died.

It would not come as a surprise, though, if the families of his victims wished that Bonin’s execution was twice as painful as Harris’, described in detail by the Los Angeles Times:

“At 6:07 a.m. by the warden's watch, the pellets dropped and the colorless gas began to invade Robert Harris. He just sat there, looking forward, hangdog. The first sign of death’s beginning was a twitch of his hands, as if the rising gas had stung his skin. He inhaled and exhaled, four or five times. His head snapped back. His eyes rolled into his head. After 30 seconds, his head dropped, but he strained against the straps. Then his head rose as if by convulsion, then fell forward, slowly.

“After a minute, his hands appeared relaxed. A vein that runs the length of his forehead bulged, then looked as if it would burst. His mouth was wide open. His face flushed, then turned almost purple.

“He seemed oblivious at this point, perhaps two minutes into the execution. But then, as his body seemed to have relaxed, his head rose slowly and eerily. At 6:11, there was a cough, a convulsion, a line of drool. His balding pate was visible, as was his tightly banded and short ponytail.

“By 6:14 a.m., the body no longer moved. We the living shifted from foot to foot. Light filtered in through the blinds on three windows that look out to the east. At 6:21 a.m., the three hanging lights brightened.”

At 6:22 a.m., Harris was declared dead. His execution had taken 15 minutes.

Bonin's death day comes

On the day of his execution, February 22, 1996, Bonin was placed in a special holding cell on Death Row, where he was given access to his spiritual advisor, a Catholic chaplain.

One wonders if he expressed any feelings of remorse at this time, although given how he taunted the distraught parents of his victims, and claimed none of it was his fault, it's unlikely.

One of his lawyers, who continued to talk to Bonin after his dual death sentences, agreed.

"I have not detected any remorse," said former Bonin defense attorney Todd Landgren, who spoke to Bonin regularly. "It hasn't come up."

In truth, the only remorse Bonin did express was his failure to become a pro bowler, since he'd excelled at the sport as a teen.

He told a local radio station that he had "made peace" with dying, although he has no idea how he would feel when it finally came time to die, something he had feared the most after his capture.

"As far as how I'm going to feel at that very moment, I can't answer that question," he said. "I don't know. I don't think any of us would know until we're there."

He offered nothing for the families of his victims, no remorse, no apology, no hint of regret.

"I don't think anybody in a situation such as I'm in - whether guilty or innocent - no matter what they said would help in any way. I really don't," he said. "They feel my death will bring closure, but that's not the case. They're going to find out."

Last-minute fight for a stay

A little more than an hour before Bonin was set to be executed, the U.S. Supreme Court refused to hear his last-ditch plea, bringing to an end the appeals process that had lasted more than a decade.

Earlier in the day, a panel of the U.S. 9th Circuit Court of Appeals in San Francisco also rejected Bonin's request for a stay, and chose not to hear his claims.

"We've done our very best, and we think appropriately and adequately. We will not give Mr. Bonin short shrift," said Chief Justice J. Clifford Wallace.

The panel agreed unanimously that Bonin's attorneys should not have waited until the last minute to present their arguments for overturning his death sentence.

"There is no serious question of Bonin's guilt," Wallace wrote in a 19-page order, and "no fundamental miscarriage of justice" would come as a result of his execution.

The lawyers from the public defender's office claimed that Bonin's trial lawyer was incompetent, that prosecutors had withheld evidence and that witnesses had lied while judges in both trials overlooked what they saw as grave miscarriages of justice.

The panel found no evidence to back those claims, and passed the case on to the nation's High Court, which refused to hear it.

His last meal

At 6 p.m. on the day he was executed, Bonin was moved from his cell to a death watch cell, where he watched “Jeopardy” and ordered his last meal, which consisted of two large sausage and pepperoni pizzas, three pints of coffee ice cream and three six-packs of Coke. He ate alone.

According to witnesses, he appeared resigned to his fate.

“He’s communicating well and seems relaxed,” said San Quentin spokeswoman Joy Macfarlane.

Later, he was allowed a handful of visitors who spent his last hours with him, including one of his public defenders, James Ramos, his biographer, Alexis Skriloff, and former San Quentin guard Ben Aronoff, who hugged Bonin goodbye.

“I told Bill I loved him more than anyone I had ever loved in my life,” Aronoff told the Los Angeles Times. “It was a beautiful moment.”

Bonin apparently showed two sides that were a complete dichotomy. On one hand, he failed to tell the families of his victims that he regretted what he’d done, and instead almost taunted some of them with his memories of their loved ones, while on the other, he was seen as a caring, loving human being.

“He has a very basic sense of caring,” said Skriloff, a Louisiana woman who is writing the book “Beyond Control,” which explores Bonin’s damaging childhood. “I know that’s completely the opposite of what everyone sees.”

According to Skriloff, those close to Bonin saw a side of him that was never portrayed by the media, never mentioned in court transcripts, not shown in

the actions of one of the most prolific and sadistic serial killers in United States history.

“We saw the inner child in Bill,” added Skriloff. “The child in him never got to live. He was a very caring, very giving person.”

(A former neighbor, Dolly Sanders – a bartender at the neighborhood hangout the Ric Rac Pub – told the Los Angeles Times about the night Bonin sat with her in the hospital when she believed her son was going to die. “He didn’t want to leave me alone,” she said.)

Ramos later told reporters that Bonin stayed calm as his execution neared. Afterwards, the three reflected on Bonin’s troubled past.

“He was faced with so many significant hurdles when he was young that made it virtually impossible for him to be a successful human being,” said Ramos.

The way some people saw Bonin begs the question – how can a monster who casually killed so many young men, robbing their families of a lifetime of memories, so easily wear two faces?

In his final statement, given to the warden one hour prior to his scheduled execution at midnight, Bonin again expressed no remorse for his crimes and left a note that stated: “I feel the death penalty is not an answer to the problems at hand. I feel it sends the wrong message to the people of this country. Young people act as they see other people acting instead of as people tell them to act. I would advise that when a person has a thought of doing anything serious against the law, that before they did, they should go to a quiet place and think about it seriously.”

It meant nothing to the families of the boys he had killed, and did nothing to humanize William Bonin for those who did not consider him a friend.

Editorial protests empathy for Bonin

For Rob Morse of the San Francisco Chronicle, there was no excuse for William Bonin.

“Bonin was abused as a child. The abuse seems to have been bad, but not nearly as gruesome as the abuse he dealt out,” Morse wrote in an editorial that went live at 4 a.m. Feb. 20, 1996.

“The world is filled with articulate people who can write and paint and were abused as children. Very few of them become serial killers. Very few become evil.

“To call Bonin’s evil a ‘psychiatric disorder,’ as the defense has, or an ‘illness,’ is to slander the mentally ill. The crime rate among the diagnosed mentally ill is lower than among so-called normal people. Serial murderers like Bonin seem normal except when they’re killing people.

“It’s best to call it evil. It’s most effectively treated by lifetime incarceration or death. An execution, whether by gas chamber or lethal injection, is a killing done in our name, and we should give it a lot more thought than eating red meat.

“Personally, I’ve come and gone on the issue, and I have to admit a lot of it has to do with who’s up for execution. Many believe that the state has no right to take a life. This is a comfortable belief for those who don’t live in Oklahoma City, don’t remember Nuremberg and never had a child murdered.

“The death penalty is mainly about vengeance, or setting the soul at ease - not illegitimate motives. Relatives of victims I’ve talked to live in a special hell knowing loved ones are gone, while the murderers are painting pictures in prison.

“Relatives of Bonin’s victims, who have been mentally tortured by his actions, are coming to San Quentin on Friday to bear witness to the death of their children’s physical torturer.

“Carl Wood, the brother of victim Steven Wood, won't be coming. He committed suicide.

“That makes 15 young men who died because of William Bonin. Killing Bonin won’t bring them back, and it may not ease the pain of relatives. But justice is about making hard choices.

“If Bonin’s victims had lived, they’d range in age from 28 to 35. Lord knows what accomplishments he stole from them. Instead we have to read about their killer’s sensitivity, his painting and his writing. The word ‘rehabilitation’ has been heard. Sorry, the man resigned from the human race. I don’t want to pay his room and board until he goes to hell.

“It would be nice if we could shoot Bonin into space and never have to execute him. Unfortunately, we can't get off that easy.”

Witnesses anticipate justice

“I just can’t wait to see him take his last breath,” said Sandra Miller, whose 15-year-old son, Russell Duane Rugh, was waiting at a bus stop to go to work at a fast-food restaurant when Bonin’s van rambled by.

She expressed regret that Bonin’s death, unlike her son’s, would be painless, along with a hint of rage that Bonin’s time spent in prison awaiting execution lasted longer than her son’s short life.

“He actually lived longer there than my son got to live his life,” she added. “Is that fair?”

Miller’s son, who went by the nickname Rusty, was opposed to the death penalty, and had written a paper on the death penalty in school. The piece was among a stack of things she received from school after her son was killed.

“He believed that anybody who killed anybody ought to be helped,” said Miller, who all the same wished Bonin dead for taking her son from her and upending her family.

“I think his feelings would be different if he’d known he was going to die like that,” she added. “I had the perfect happy family. After this, it was like the whole world fell apart.”

Another mother, Sean King’s mother, Lavada Gifford, had written to Bonin for years in hopes of reading his words of remorse, but they never came. Before his execution, she wrote again to ask him if he had any last words. To her, he did not.

Rape victim relishes his chance at retribution

“I’m looking more forward to this than anything in my life,” David McVicker told the Los Angeles Times. The disc jockey from Santa Ana traveled with friends in a Winnebago travel trailer to witness the execution of the man who continues to haunt his dreams.

“Sometimes I wake myself up yelling,” McVicker said. “Imagine going to sleep and getting raped 10 to 12 times a night.”

It is those images, the ones that come to him when he is asleep and again at his most vulnerable, that drew him to watch Bonin’s execution.

“I have to see it,” he added. “It will change the mental videotape in my head. I can see him dead. I can see his body carried out. He can’t rape me anymore. He’s dead.”

McVicker brought along a magnum of champagne and a carefully selected musical playlist, AC/DC’s “Highway to Hell” and Oingo Boingo’s “Dead Man’s Party” among them, to mark the occasion.

“It has nothing to do with partying or getting drunk,” McVicker said. “It’s symbolic of our closure. It’s not a ceremony, but a ritual. It signifies a new time. This is going to end it. End it. Throw me forward. I’m so ready for this. This is the beginning of my life.”

Execution

At 11:01 p.m. prison guards called the telephone company to get the official time and to double-check that the phones in the death chamber were working in case the governor called with a stay of execution. The syringes and other medical supplies were already prepared and in the chamber.

With his execution scheduled for 12:01 a.m., Bonin was walked from his holding cell into the execution chamber at 11:45 p.m.

He did not struggle – according to some reports he had been given a heavy dose of Valium - and walked himself to the table where he would die, said prison spokesman Vernell Crittendon.

It would take eight minutes for technicians to find a vein for the IV, and although officials said no tranquilizers were given to Bonin, when the curtain opened at 12:09 a.m. and witnesses were allowed to see inside the execution chamber, it appeared as though Bonin was almost asleep.

“If he had any knowledge of what was about to happen, he didn’t show it,” wrote Mark Gribbon of Trutv.com. “With the strong dose of tranquilizer in his system, he certainly didn’t care. Stoned on state-sanctioned Valium, Bonin was strapped to a hospital gurney in the refurbished California gas chamber and pumped full of three different chemicals.

“The first, sodium pentathol, a.k.a. ‘truth serum,’ rendered him unconscious in about a second. The next dose, pancuronium bromide, paralyzed his muscles and made it impossible for him to breathe, much like curare in a South American Indian blow-gun. The final dose – potassium chloride -- came a few seconds later and instantly stopped his heart.”

By 12:13 a.m. William Bonin was dead. It took five minutes for him to die.

A reporter said his face turned purple and his chest heaved once or twice and it was over.

Bonin, number 322 – the 322nd murderer executed in the United States since 1976, the first in California to die by lethal injection - was 49 at the time of his execution. He was the first person to be executed by lethal injection in the history of California.

He had been on Death Row at San Quentin Prison for 14 years, behind bars for 17 years.

None of his family members attended the execution, and no one was on hand at San Quentin to claim Bonin's body, which was later cremated.

Not enough satisfaction

According to Los Angeles Times reporter Ken Ellingwood, many of the witnesses to Bonin's execution were disappointed that they were not allowed to see the entirety of his death.

"The scene was so sterile it was hard to remember a man was meeting his death," wrote Ellingwood afterwards. "Behind a white curtain in the converted gas chamber, William G. Bonin lay face-up, strapped to a table, his arms implanted with the tubes that would carry the poison to his veins. The 50 witnesses who took their places around the windowed enclosure did not see Bonin's final walk. They did not see the expression on his face as he entered, or the prison technicians who struggled several minutes to find a usable vein.

"When prison guards pulled open the curtain, Bonin, in fresh denim clothes and gray socks, blinked at the ceiling, his belly rising and falling as the trickle began. His mustachioed face betrayed nothing. If he was making a sound, none escaped the sea-green steel bubble. After about 50 seconds, Bonin's chest heaved twice, quick as hiccups, and he puffed hard, exhaling his final breath. A minute later, his skin was blue."

"I'm not sure what we witnessed," said Sam Stanton from the Sacramento Bee.

And San Francisco Chronicle reporter Kevin Fagan described the event as "less involving than watching a vet put down a dog."

In response, the California Department of Corrections said that they weren't hiding the execution process from the public, but instead were protecting those who led the killer into the chamber.

What people wanted, of course, was the fear – no, the sheer terror – that Bonin’s victims suffered, and that “eye for an eye” was not what they got.

“I think it was really a humane execution,” said Bernie Esposito, a detective who was part of the task force that finally nabbed Bonin in June of 1980.

Still, family members of victims had expected more than watching Bonin’s peaceful trip into that good night.

“I feel like, man, they still cheated us. We didn’t get to see him even get strapped down. I didn’t get eye-to-eye contact. I didn’t get to see him walk in,” Miller said. “We didn’t get anything out of it, other than his death.”

Victims’ families change face of execution

According to Annulla Linders, a University of Cincinnati associate professor of sociology, allowing the families of victims to observe executions has made people see executions in a different light.

“I argue that the opening up of the witness box to the murder victim’s family has turned the execution into a somewhat different kind of event than it was – it has come to re-personalize executions and re-infuse them with interestedness and passion,” she said at the 2014 American Sociological Association’s annual meeting. “No longer is it enough that the death is swift and the arrangements are efficient, the execution must now also satisfy the psychological demands of long-suffering relatives and other intimates of murder victims.”

Capital punishment is now thought of more as a way to exact retribution on behalf of victims and their families, she said, rather than as a deterrent to crime.

“The family members of murder victims are in the witness box to view and judge something other than the execution of the law,” she said. “They are

there as survivors, not so much to observe the execution – there are official witnesses to do that – as to bear witness to the pain and suffering experienced by murder victims and those they leave behind.”

The aftermath

While Bonin waited for his date with death, he kept himself busy, at one point divulging some details of his crimes to Vonda Peltó in hand-written letters to the psychologist.

His words revealed the depth of his depravity, and likely made Peltó breathe a sigh of relief when Bonin was officially dead.

“At one time the guy asked, ‘Why are you doing this?’ I have no answer. Just before he went unconscious, I let up and asked him, ‘Do you want to know why you have to die?’ He said yes, and I said, ‘Your folks paid us to find you and kill you.’ Then I pressed down on him again and he was finally dead.

“I took the rope off of him and took the ice pick and stuck it up both nostrils and into his ear. This was to make sure he was dead. We then drove out to the freeway ... and finally found a place and dumped him, fully clothed, down into an irrigation ditch. Then we got back onto I-5 and drove back to Los Angeles.”

An error in judgement

In 2004, Munro was back in the news when he attempted to pin the 1979 murder of 13-year-old James Trotter on Bonin during the pretrial hearing for convicted child molester James Lee Crummel, who was charged with the crime after telling authorities he’d found bones while hiking in Cleveland National Forest. Munro later recanted his testimony.

Initially, in an interview taped at the prison where he was housed, Munro said he would “remember it the rest of my life,” and told officials that Bonin had described Trotter as “the easiest one he killed.”

In court, however, Munro said it was “a lie. It was payback to Bonin for ruining my life ... for the hatred I have for that man. I didn’t realize how much trouble I’d get in by saying that.”

Munro later said he learned details of Trotter’s murder in a 1996 news story that ran after Trotter’s bones were identified, and decided then that if he was ever asked about Trotter’s case, he would say that Bonin was the assailant.

Give me death

Munro also captured attention by writing to then-California Governor George Deukmejian, asking to be executed on his birthday.

“I came into this world on June 17, I might as well leave it that date,” Munro told the Los Angeles Times.

The first time, the governor’s office wrote back, pointing out the futility of such a request.

He wrote again. This time, Governor Pete Wilson did not respond.

“I feel for the Wellses, I really do,” Munro said of the parents that attend every one of his parole hearings to prevent him from being released from prison. “I wish I could tell them face to face how sorry I am for what happened to their son. That’s why I want to be executed, to show them I’m willing to give up my life to make all this easier on them.”

In truth, he wants to make it easier on himself.

“I would rather die than to serve more time for a crime I didn’t commit,” Munro said.

Planning a second killing spree?

Munro comes up for parole from time to time, but it is unlikely that he will ever be released.

There's Steven Wells' parents, for one thing. Then there's Munro himself, who hasn't gotten any smarter during his time behind bars.

According to Vonda Peltó, Munro is getting reckless, and has said in interviews with her that he wants to kill again, "to finish Bonin's work."

Peltó has been around enough prisoners to know whether or not she should take his words seriously, and despite Munro's previous attention-grabbing acts behind bars, this time she was concerned.

"I think he's a real threat," she said. "He really wants to do this so he'll be in the newspapers. I asked him: 'What are you going to do when you get out?' And he said: 'I'm going to continue Bonin's work.' In other words, continue killing. And that's when I asked: 'Well, do you have anybody in particular?' And he says he has a list. And that's when he said David McVicker was high on the list."

She immediately alerted McVicker – the rape victim whose tip helped police zero in on Bonin (although an offered reward was withheld from him) - and he made plans to attend a 2014 parole hearing for Munro, who serves as a vivid reminder of a nightmare he just can't seem to shake.

"I'm a victim. I shouldn't have to be doing this," McVicker said. "But it's not over until these guys are gone. I've kind of taken it on myself to make sure that justice is served and they all stay in jail ... just not on the streets to go and do it again."

When Peltó learned during that telephone call with Munro that there might be someone on the outside working with Munro and Miley – he told her that this person had already purchased a van similar to Bonin's and was ready to start a new spree as soon as the two were out of prison – she reported him to the California Department of Corrections and Rehabilitation, too.

Investigators found that on the outside, an accomplice had established a fake Facebook account that was being used to harass the families of Bonin's victims in an attempt to prevent them from testifying at the parole hearings for Munro and Miley.

They also made close contact with McVicker.

"He's threatened to kill me," McVicker said of Munro. "I've had three phone calls that I know of coming out of prison in the past week, that he was threatening to have me killed by tomorrow. The thing that's really scary about that is they actually went to my house."

In attempting to track the owner of the account, investigators focused on William Harder, a self-proclaimed serial killer junkie who operates a website selling murder memorabilia and had spoken with both Munro and Miley several times.

No criminal charges were ultimately filed against Harder, but police also never determined who was behind the intimidation, or whether or not that person had a van.

The information, however, led them to reject Munro's bid for parole in 2014 after a four-hour hearing. That means he won't be eligible for parole again until 2029.

McVicker told the Orange County Register he was "very, very happy."

Chapter 8: Bonin's terror lives on

For the families of the victims of William Bonin and his accomplices, Bonin's execution did little to erase the trauma of losing their sons or brothers.

Those families now realize to what extent evil lives in the world, and they are reluctant to venture into its territory.

"Now I stay home all the time," said the mother of one of Bonin's victims. "I'm paranoid, I don't go out after dusk. The only thing that gets me out of bed is my hobbies, like crochet and painting. People say time makes things easier. Well, I'm still waiting. I wish I could be happy. I just can't find my way out of this maze."

Secrets went to the grave

The mother of one victim who disappeared during Bonin's reign of terror and whose bones were found near Ortega Highway pled for Bonin's execution to be stayed just one more day so he could be asked about her son, but the governor of California couldn't be reached.

"He was out of town. We tried up until two or three minutes before the execution," said Barbara Brogli, who lost her 14-year-old son and felt certain that Bonin was responsible. "I would like to know, definitely. It would be a complete closure. If he did do it, the man's been punished and he'll be dealt with at a higher level. For quite a while, I've been really praying to find out, to know whether he's dead or alive, and I've been praying for strength to get through it. I really believe my prayer was answered and God will take care of the rest."

DA searches for DNA to complete Bonin's sordid portfolio

Carol Burke of the Los Angeles County district attorney's office is fairly certain that William Bonin is responsible for more murders than the 14 he was convicted of – or the 21 to which he had confessed.

She's hoping to get the DNA to prove it.

Burke heads a project called Dead Man Talking which uses DNA evidence to link cold cases with known felons, even those who are no longer living.

"There is a lot of value to it, even though we can't prosecute the offenders because they are dead," Burke told the Daily Beast. "Families can at least have some closure. They finally know what happened to their loved ones."

Amazingly, Bonin's DNA is not part of California's databank, and no swabs were taken before he was executed and cremated, his ashes then tossed into the Pacific Ocean.

"He's my number one target," Burke said. "He was a really bad guy. He was so prolific."

Tracking down DNA will be difficult, because his court files and trial evidence have been destroyed, and none of the police departments involved in tracking Bonin took or saved blood, semen or saliva samples.

But Burke is not giving up.

"Bonin is the most notorious and the one who most likely left unsolved murders in his wake," Burke says. "It sure would be great to get his sample so we could solve some of the unsolveds out there."

Mother reaps financial bounty during Bonin incarceration

Several weeks after Bonin's death, California officials learned that Bonin's mother, Alice Benton, had used her son's Social Security payments – issued for a mental disability – to pay \$75,000 on the mortgage of her Downey home. Those payments should have ceased in 1982 when he went to prison, but a glitch kept them coming.

It wasn't until a funeral director alerted the Social Security Administration that Bonin was dead that the agency realized its mistake.

The family agreed to pay back the \$75,000.

The other Freeway Killers

The first serial killer to carry the nickname the Freeway Killer, Patrick Kearney, turned himself in to Riverside, California, police on July 1, 1977.

He had been on the run for two months after evidence linked him to the murder of 17-year-old John LaMay.

Kearney confessed to killing 28 boys and young men, dismembering most of them and discarding the remains in trash bags. (Because of this particular M.O., he was also known as the Trash Bag Murderer.)

Three years after the arrest of William Bonin, Long Beach, California, police arrested 38-year-old Randy Steven Kraft, who was linked to murders dating back to 1972.

His method of disposal was similar to Bonin's – he tossed them out like so much trash on the side of the road – but Kraft drugged many of his victims, and his methods of torture included burning the young men he captured with the cigarette lighter in his car.

The three Freeway Killers - Bonin, Kraft and Kearney – may be linked to as many as 131 victims.

A movie merges truth, fiction

In February of 2010, “Freeway Killer,” a film directly based upon the murders committed by Bonin and his accomplices, was released by Image Entertainment, creators of the movie “Dahmer.” Scott Anthony Leet starred as William Bonin, while Dusty Sorg played Vernon Butts.

Leet, a method actor, spent months researching the character and his back story – especially so the ongoing childhood abuse that led to his murder spree – and gained 35 pounds and dyed his hair black to play the role. When he walked on set, he was totally immersed in his Bonin character – and totally frightening, allowing him to revel in putting his co-stars and others on the set completely on edge.

He talked about his experience with the hosts of “Without Your Head” Horror Radio.

“The thing that was outstanding about William Bonin, the first thing you notice, was what a hair trigger temper he had,” Leet said. “It was an interesting character to play because of that hair trigger factor.” “At the drop of a hat, this guy had no conscience. Rape and murder for William Bonin was a total addiction.”

Leet was also interested in how easily Bonin was able to appear normal during the times when the desire to rape and kill wasn’t consuming his thoughts.

“He fit into society better than most serial killers. He was like a regular guy,” Leet said.

Still, playing the role of someone so inherently evil was exhausting, despite the relatively short five-week shoot.

“Honestly, it does take a toll,” Leet said. “Playing William was extremely difficult. It was bloody and brutal, to relive what this guy did. He’s heinous. Once you’re in that character and playing it, to a certain degree it’s spiritually debilitating. It was a difficult shoot, to say the least.”

Leet wished that the directors had left some of the meat of the story intact, such as the molestation as a child that eventually influenced Bonin’s sexuality.

“They cut a lot of his backstory out of the movie, and that really disturbed me,” Leet said. “William was a hell of a character, and I think that backstory he had, going through that life, made him who he was. I will definitely carry it with me for the rest of my life,” he said.

The movie is available on DVD and Netflix.

Conclusion

While hitchhiking has slowed considerably, the highways and byways that crisscross the United States are still peppered with people looking for a new life or their next adventure.

But there are still a lot of William Bonin's out there, abused as children and ready to take it out on the next person to get inside his or her car.

I'd take Aaron Stovitz' words to heart, and find another way to reach your destination.



If you haven't joined Audible yet, you can get any of my audiobooks for **FREE!**

Click on the image or [HERE](#) and click "Buy With Audible Credit" and you will get the audiobook for **FREE!**

More books by Jack Rosewood



The world can be a very strange place in general and when you open the pages of this true crime anthology you will quickly learn that the criminal world specifically can be as bizarre as it is dangerous. In the following book, you will be captivated by mysterious missing person cases that defy all logic and a couple cases of murderous mistaken identity. Follow along as detectives conduct criminal investigations in order to solve cases that were once believed to be unsolvable. Every one of the crime cases chronicled in the pages of this book are as strange and disturbing as the next.

The twelve true crime stories in this book will keep you riveted as you turn the pages, but they will probably also leave you with more questions than answers. For instance, you will be left pondering how two brothers from the same family could disappear with no trace in similar circumstances over ten years apart. You will also wonder how two women with the same first and

last names, but with no personal connections, could be murdered within the same week in the same city. The examination of a number of true crime murder cases that went cold, but were later solved through scientific advances, will also keep you intrigued and reading.

Open the pages of this book, if you dare, to read some of the most bizarre cases of disappearances, mistaken identity, and true murder. Some of the cases will disturb and anger you, but make no mistake, you will want to keep reading!

[GET IT HERE](#)



Of all the many psychopaths and sociopaths that have hunted for human victims throughout history, few have been more disturbing or mysterious than Christopher Bernard Wilder – the beauty queen killer. From the middle of the 1960s until 1984, Wilder sexually assaulted countless women and murdered at least nine in Australia and the United States. The beauty queen killer was not only a true psychopath, but also a hunter as he carefully chose attractive girls and young women to victimize. But Wilder was no creepy looking killer; he was an attractive, articulate man who used a camera and offers of a modelling career to get his unsuspecting, naïve victims to remote locations where he would then rape, torture, and ultimately kill them.

Among serial killer biographies, Wilder's is a cautionary tale. First as a juvenile and later as a young man, Wilder was arrested on numerous occasions for sexual assaults in both Australia and United States; but he never served any time behind bars due to technicalities, witnesses refusing

to testify, or the judges showing sympathy towards the beauty queen killer. When one considers some of the better known American crime stories from history, many red-flags are apparent that point towards the future criminal potential of an individual: for Wilder, the flags were bright, crimson, quite large, and difficult to avoid, yet were ignored by his friends, family, and the authorities. Christopher Wilder's saga is therefore not just a true crime murder story, but also an unfortunate example of how the system can fail to protect the public from a known sexual sadist.

Open the pages of this intriguing book and read the story of an American serial killer who had it all: looks, money, and beautiful women. But as this captivating true crime story will reveal, nothing was ever enough for the beauty queen killer as he killed his way across the United States in order to satisfy his sadistic lust. Aspects of the Christopher Bernard Wilder story will disturb you, but at the same time you will find it difficult to put this serial killer biography down because you will be drawn in by the FBI's hunt to capture the elusive criminal.

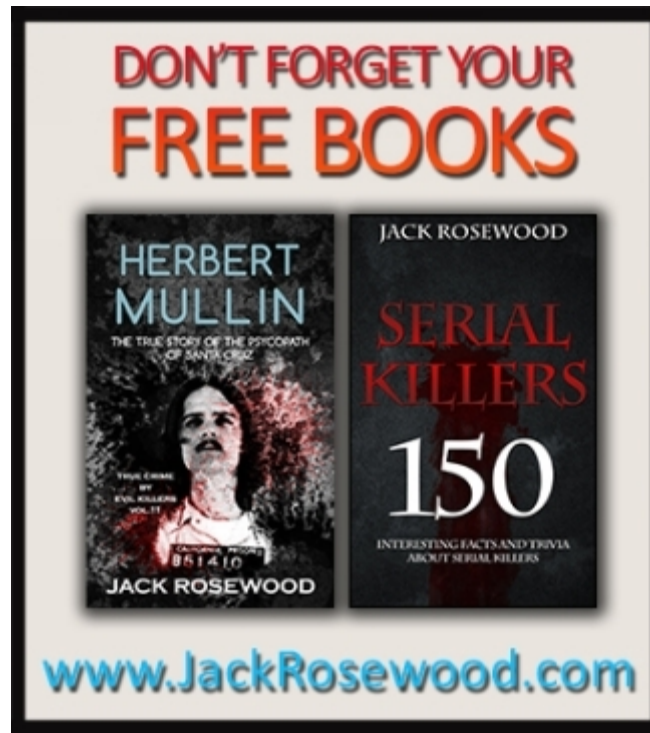
[GET IT HERE](#)



[□ CLICK HERE □](#)

[TO SEE ALL BOOKS BY JACK ROSEWOOD](#)

GET THESE BOOKS FOR FREE



Go to www.jackrosewood.com and get this E-Book for free!

Serial Killers: The Colombian Monsters

by Jack Rosewood

**Serial Killers of The World
Volume 1**

Copyright © 2016 by Wiq Media

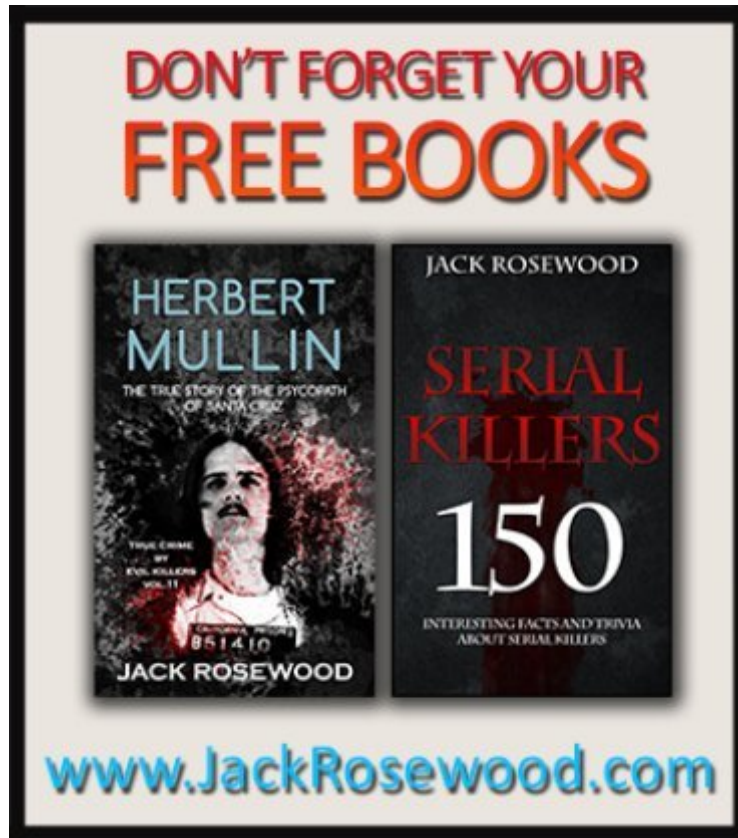
ALL RIGHTS RESERVED

No part of this book may be reproduced, stored in a retrieval system, or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic, mechanical, photocopying, recording, scanning, or otherwise, without the prior written permission of the publisher.

DISCLAIMER:

The following true accounts of South American serial killers Pedro Lopez, Luis Garavito and Daniel Camargo – the three most prolific serial killers in the world - includes quotes from those closely involved in the cases as well as quotes from the killers themselves. It is not the author's intention to defame or intentionally hurt anyone involved. The interpretation of the events surrounding these cases – including the mandatory sentencing laws in Colombia and neighboring nations - are the author's as a result of researching the true crime stories. Any comments made about the sex criminals and their sadistic murder sprees are the sole opinion and responsibility of the person or persons quoted.

Free Bonus!



Get two free books when you sign up to my VIP newsletter on

www.jackrosewood.com

150 more serial killers trivia and the story of serial killer Herbert Mullin.

Table of Contents

[Serial Killers: The Colombian Monsters](#)

[Free Bonus!](#)

[Introduction](#)

Luis Garavito

Introduction

Chapter 1: A childhood of betrayal

Brutality beyond belief

Without education, his future was grim

Suicide attempt leads to help

Chapter 2: Sexual sadist on the loose

Garavito was a savage beast

Enticing his victims

Chapter 3: The first kill

Garavito on the move

Escalating madness

Chapter 4: The first crime scene

A close call, then a grisly find

A few small clues

Discovery of a serial killer's spree

A big mistake

Chapter 5: Clues tell a big story.

Tracking a madman

Chapter 6: Investigators – and a victim – get lucky.

A lucky break

Escape proves infinitely lucky.

Evidence doesn't lie

Why did Garavito kill?

Victims' families desperate for revenge

Is rehabilitation likely?

Chapter 7: Families look back in sorrow

One mother remembers

Grandmother's memories haunt

A loss leads to further tragedy

Chapter 8: Garavito behind bars

Interview calls attention to case

Mental illness evident in later interviews

A nation in fear

The aftermath

Daniel Camargo Barbosa

Chapter 1 – A relationship made in hell

An agreement straight from hell

Chapter 2: A new modus operandi

Camargo freedom was short-lived

Escape artist

Chapter 3: Four years of terror

Tricks of a deadly trade

Another lesson in never taking candy from strangers

Chapter 4: Camargo's final arrest

Camargo confesses

Chapter 5: A madman on trial

A victim remembers

Another narrowly escapes death

Another victim was not so lucky

Camargo behind bars

In the end, revenge

Pedro López

Introduction

Chapter 1: A childhood of tragedy

A son sent away ... or not

Another hope dashed

Chapter 2: His first stint in prison

Prison violence was Lopez's last straw

Revenge would be brutal

Chapter 3: Murder in Peru

A bad day for Pedro Lopez

Killing is power

Chapter 4: Lopez hosted post-mortem parties

Kidnapping draws attention

Chapter 5: A mistake leads to an arrest

With confession comes horror

Victims never cried for help

Playing the blame game

Chapter 6: Laws leave families enraged

A quick return to confinement

Mom gets a surprise visit

Nations' residents in terror

Conclusion

The making of a serial killer

[It leaves us always asking why.](#)

[Organized killers](#)

[Disorganized killers](#)

[Serial killers think they're unique – but they're not](#)

[Nature vs. nurture?](#)

[Going inside the mind: Psychopathy and other mental illnesses](#)

['I felt like it'](#)

[A new take on psychopathy.](#)

[Schizophrenia](#)

[Borderline personality disorder](#)

[Top signs of a serial killer](#)

[Trademarks of a serial killer](#)

[The signature](#)

[The cooling off period](#)

[Hunting in pairs](#)

[Other red flags](#)

[Brain damage? Maybe](#)

[More books by Jack Rosewood](#)

[GET THESE BOOKS FOR FREE](#)

[Here's Your Free Gift](#)

[A Note From The Author](#)

Introduction

Considering that one of the most diabolical of all executioner calling cards is the Colombian necktie – a post-mortem mutilation in which the victim's throat is sliced open so his or her tongue can be pulled through as if it were a tie – it should come as no surprise that the world's top three most prolific serial killers come from the nation best known for this demented mutilation.

The three men who have set records for their kills each targeted children, using various tricks to lure them away from safety, including candy, money, and various disguises.

And while it is unfathomable that together these three men are believed to be responsible for the deaths of more than 500 children, what is even more impossible to believe is that the punishments in no way fit their crimes.

None received life sentences – in Colombia, prison terms at the time were limited to 40 years - and together, the meager punishments doled out to them equaled less than 100 years.

Each took advantage of the region's poverty and political unrest to prey upon the most vulnerable members of the South American population, collecting children like some people collect Star Wars memorabilia.

“Colombia is a country with a long history of violence,” said Marc Chernick, a professor of Latin American Studies at Georgetown University.

It's also a country that boasts the dubious honor of being the home of three of the world's most notorious serial killers – Luis Garavito, Daniel Camargo Barbosa and Pedro Lopez.

Each is the stuff of nightmares, and while Garavito is still behind bars and Barbosa is dead at the hands of a fellow prisoner, Lopez is free, his whereabouts unknown, making him a likely subject of many a horror story told 'round a campfire.

The girls of Colombia and its neighboring nations Ecuador and Peru should be terrified.

Luis Garavito

Introduction

In the 1990s, some of the poorest boys living in the streets of Colombia went missing, but like the countless prostitutes and runaways who disappear in the United States every year, many of their disappearances went unnoticed for quite some time.

Because of political upheaval, military action that caused displacement from their homes and widespread poverty, Colombia has a large population of homeless children, who survive on the streets mostly by begging and stealing.

These children are easy targets for predators, and because many of them are rarely in contact with their families, when boys disappear it usually takes some time for loved ones to realize that their children have gone missing. For some, they are never missed because they are virtually alone in the world.

“Kids disappear all the time in Colombia, especially those from the poorer strata,” said Timothy W. Ross a journalist-turned-social worker, in a story that appeared in the New York Times. “They tend to come from unstable homes anyway, but the deep social instability produced by military, political and economic displacement has fragmented families even further.”

Of the 41 million Colombians, about 1.5 million, many of them children, were displaced by political strife, and children selling small items, begging or shining shoes are common throughout the nation’s larger cities and towns.

More than a quarter of the country's population lives below the poverty line, and families are split because parents are unable to care for their children.

This disenfranchisement among families left so many boys on their own that the city streets were as easy to hunt as a game preserve for serial killer Luis Garavito.

Garavito suffered from a serious form of overkill, as his victim list is believed to have topped 300, in part because his targets of choice were not only prolific, but also easy prey. His tricks of the trade, which included posing as a priest to create a sense of trust between himself and his victims, allowed him to blend into the dust and the trash and the suffering, so he was able to get away with an unimaginable number of murders.

Other disguises, including entering schools on the pretext of serving as a guest speaker, also allowed him easier access to young boys.

Garavito was able to go unnoticed because he switched up his look, donning various disguises that were vastly different, save for his red plastic glasses, which were always part of his look.

He chose victims between the ages of 6 and 16, and at first offered them small gifts or money, which suggests that the poorest of children in Colombia are not told the dangers of accepting gifts from strangers.

He would then take them for a walk, leading them to places where the foliage was so thick that it not only muffled noises as he raped and killed his victims, usually by cutting their throats, but also prevented the smell of decay from wafting too far, even though throngs of people living their lives, often including regularly patrolling police, were usually not too far from the crime scenes.

Diabolical to the core, Garavito has a classic back story, one that he shares with many serial killers who choose young boys as their victims.

Chapter 1: A childhood of betrayal

The oldest of seven kids, Luis Garavito was born on January 25, 1957, in Genova, Colombia, the country's coffee-growing region.

"Birth order does affect us," according to Dr. Nicola Davies in an interview with Pick Me Up! Magazine. "Being the oldest child within a large family is not easy. Garavito would have been, according to psychologists, 'dethroned' each time a younger sibling arrived. This can lead to jealousy, anger, and a huge amount of pressure to regain parent's attention. Being the eldest within the family brings responsibility and parents will often look to the eldest child for support with looking after the younger children. Being the eldest in such a large family is particularly stressful and can lead to a child having to take on adult responsibilities, losing out on their childhood."

Garavito's childhood was diminished, but it was by much more than the pressures of being the oldest.

His father, Manuel Antonio Garavito, a man who should have been willing to lay down his life for his son rather than destroy him, was a rage-filled, aggressive house ruler who crushed his son's spirit with regular, violent abuse that included rape.

"My dad did not sleep with my mom, he slept with me," Garavito said. "He bathed me, he stroked me, he touched my private parts. He looked like an executioner."

And not only did his father rape his son often, he also enlisted his friends to do the same.

Because of the regular assaults, he was seen as vulnerable outside the home as well, and two neighborhood men took advantage of the boy's weaknesses

and repeatedly raped him between the ages of six and 16, a time frame that would later become a key factor in Garavito's murderous modus operandi.

Brutality beyond belief

Because he suffered regular abuse, Garavito's childhood was not only fraught with responsibilities that included caring for and attempting to protect his younger siblings, but also with overwhelming physical and emotional pain.

At age 12, one rape was so brutal that Garavito later didn't want to tell anyone what had happened to him at the hands of the neighborhood pharmacist, who bit his buttocks and penis, burned him with candle wax and tied him to the bed to reenact his favorite scenes from pornographic movies.

Like many rape victims who find this the most horrifying part of the act of violence, Garavito could not help but be aroused by the sexual activity at times, and it had an impact on his burgeoning sexuality.

"I began to feel an attraction towards people of the same sex," Garavito later said, confessing to casual petting with his younger brothers in the months following his rapes.

And while he did not rape his brothers, later, the boys he encountered would pay for the crimes perpetrated against him in his youth.

"Rape was the key motivator within Garavito's killing spree, and it is likely that his own experience of sexual abuse played a role in this," Davies said.

"Garavito wanted to put himself on the other side of the experience – he no longer wanted to be the victim or the vulnerable child; he wanted to be the one in control, the one with the power. Of course, not all people who have experienced sexual abuse go on to commit the atrocious acts that Garavito did, but along with his experiences and his biology, the rape he endured manifested into the rape and murder of what he once was – a young boy. In

many ways, murdering these boys could have been Garavito's attempt to 'murder' his own trauma."

Without education, his future was grim

Garavito's turbulent home life meant he rarely attended school, and he only had five years of education under his belt by the age of 16, when he left home to finally be free from the seemingly endless episodes of sexual assault.

His limited education made it difficult for Garavito as he set out on his own, but he managed to land a job as a store clerk.

Unfortunately, his past followed him, and in order to shut down the horrific memories of abuse that followed him by day and haunted him at night, he, like many others who suffer from post-traumatic stress disorder, began drinking more heavily to quiet his tumultuous thoughts.

Also unfortunate, Garavito became aggressive and belligerent when he drank, which meant he was never able to keep a job for long.

He developed a reputation as a troublemaker, which spread throughout the cities in which he lived, so he moved on regularly, never really settling down or putting down roots.

He became known as El Loco, meaning the crazy one, and he wandered aimlessly, working as a street vendor, selling prayer cards and other religious items to tourists and devout worshippers.

And this gypsy lifestyle, which kept him on the move and more difficult to track, is what made him so dangerous.

Suicide attempt leads to help

According to police records, a haunted Garavito attempted suicide at least once, which led to five years under the care of psychiatrists who attempted to help him put his childhood demons to rest.

On the surface, the treatment seemed to work.

From the outside looking in, Garavito was living a normal life. He established several long-term relationships with women, although they were likely platonic ones because of Garavito's predilection for boys, and some of those women had children.

Much to the later surprise of authorities, not only did Garavito's women friends never report any suspicions of abuse against their children, they said Garavito was gregarious and fun, especially when playing with the kids.

His secrets were so well-kept that none of these women ever knew that Garavito was harboring such dark secrets, or that his mind was filled with fantasies that would soon come terribly to life.

Chapter 2: Sexual sadist on the loose

Garavito's fantasies began to manifest themselves as soon as he was out on his own, and the images in his head tortured him.

"Many times I saw minors coming to the supermarket to buy something, which gave me a desire, an urge to be with that minor, to stroke, to rape him," he said.

It was then that he sought psychiatric help, and in 1984 even spent some time in a psychiatric hospital in hopes of squashing his urges, but once released, he learned that nothing at all had changed.

He turned to his father, the man who was ultimately responsible for Garavito's troubled mind, but he became filled with rage over the things his son shared with him. Despite the origins of his son's troubles, he tossed him out, again betraying his oldest child.

Garavito found himself in Trujillo, a Colombian city best known for a series of murders perpetrated between 1988 and 1994 by the Cali drug cartel, including the decapitation and castration of Father Tiberio Fernandez, a Jesuit priest. In all, hundreds of people were murdered as a warning to the guerrilla factions attempting to restore harmony in the region and tossed into the Cauca River.

Here, amid the turmoil and strife, Garavito met a woman in church and reportedly fell in love, although their relationship, like all his others with women, remained strictly platonic.

Still Garavito struggled to crush his feelings and suppress the pain he felt over the injustices of his childhood, turning to the worst possible form of self-medication.

“Garavito seemed to use alcohol to escape feelings of depression and yet it was when drunk that he committed most of his crimes. Alcohol has a tendency to exaggerate the emotion already being experienced – in this case, feelings of depression. This would have made Garavito much more likely to look for other means to escape these dark feelings. When intoxicated, people generally have fewer inhibitions, which is extremely dangerous in situations where the drinker is psychologically damaged,” Davies said.

Unfortunately for the young boys populating the streets of Colombia, alcohol allowed Garavito to turn his fantasies into gruesome reality, and here, in a place already ravaged by death, fear and despair, he began finding demented pleasure in sexually assaulting the boys of his choice.

Garavito was a savage beast

Once he finally began bringing his fantasies to life, Garavito was sadistically cruel.

His favorite movie was “The Silence of the Lambs,” which he watched again and again, and took cues from both the film and his horrific past.

Once he had captured a victim, he reveled in the torturous aspects of his act. He bit the nipples – removing a false tooth to create a bite that couldn’t easily be matched to his own - and burned the buttocks of his victims before brutally raping them, perhaps replaying what had happened to him as a child, perhaps escalating the violence he himself had experienced.

His tool kit included razors, candles and lighters that he used to torture his victims, along with old, dull knives that made shallow, painful but not fatal cuts.

“I felt good,” he said of his torturous routine.

The pain was more satisfying than the sex, it seems, because it was Garavito who was in control of his victim’s suffering, giving him an overwhelming sense of power, at least while his victim was still alive.

“They enjoy seeing the pain and suffering of another person, but the pain is just a tool that elicits the suffering that makes them feel godlike, and gives them an ego boost,” according to forensic psychologist Christie Kokonos.

“But it’s a temporary fix, something they need to do again and again.”

Enticing his victims

According to authorities, Garavito often persuaded his child victims to walk with him to remote rural areas where he tied them up before torturing and killing them. He often dressed as a priest to generate a sense of trust, so his victims would willingly go with him without fear.

He would tie his victims so that they could move around enough to have hope that they might be able to get away, but escape was not to be.

Instead, he would rape his victims, then torture them until they died. After his victims were dead, he would dismember them and dispose of them, either by burying them or by filling trash bags with parts and weighing them down with stones so they would sink in various bodies of water.

Garavito was a messy, careless killer. At many of his crime scenes, he left behind a calling card or two, including empty bottles of the cheapest brand of local schnapps he could buy. Drunk on alcohol and power, Garavito left the empty bottles just like the corpses, openly at the scene of crime.

Garavito kept a journal chronicling his crimes, writing every detail so he could remember and revisit his torturous rape sessions after he'd finished. His journals also included bible verses, penned during those times when he felt a degree of guilt over his actions.

“They often keep journals about what they do so they can relive the crime and to delight in it again,” Kokonos said. “They may also take notes about what didn’t work and what did work, the exact events that took place, what their victim might have said to them, so they can relive the crime.”

But in the same way a porn addict may begin watching traditional pornography, then find themselves requiring darker, more sadistic sex

scenes to experience the same levels of pleasure, the torture Garavito inflicted on his victims soon turned out to be not enough.

It didn't help that he later confessed that there was a voice inside his head saying, "If you kill, many things will come to you."

Chapter 3: The first kill

Garavito first began killing in 1992, almost by happenstance, when a young boy named Juan Carlos – who fit the profile that Garavito preferred perfectly - walked past the bar where Garavito was drinking in Santiago de Cali, home to a drug cartel that was considered the most powerful in the world.

It was October 6, 1992, and Carlos's body was found three days later, tied with rope and brutally raped, his penis removed.

Six days later, the body of 12-year-old John Alexander Penaranda was found in similar fashion, only this time, Garavito cut off his fingers and toes in an attempt to shift suspicions to either a satanic cult or to make Penaranda appear to be the victim of social cleansing, a class-based killing performed to eliminate members of society that others might see as undesirable, including the homeless, criminals, street children, the elderly, and sex workers.

It was easy for Garavito to track down his victims, since the streets of Colombia were filled with boys who were struggling to survive.

“You don't see many homeless adults in Colombia,” said Mark Chernick, director of Latin American studies at Washington, D.C.'s Georgetown University, in a Discovery Channel documentary. “You see homeless children. There's a large population of street children. They disappear and no one notices.”

That sad part of Colombian culture meant it would take much longer for Garavito's crimes to be noticed.

“These were poor kids that nobody cares about, and that is why this went on for so long before they did anything about it,” said street vendor Norma

Garzon Duque, who was among those who did begin to notice that there were fewer young boys begging on the street corners. “If it had been rich kids disappearing like that, the cops would have been on top of the case from the beginning.”

Garavito on the move

As soon as he began killing in 1992, Garavito moved frequently in an attempt to go unnoticed, and spent time in both Colombia and Ecuador.

It was while he was living as a vagabond that he found the women he established relationships with, living with them and caring for their children as a father figure, often sending money that he earned while traveling to at least one of those girlfriends.

So how was he able to turn off his urge to kill?

In general, serial killers have a bit of a Jekyll and Hyde personality, and there is a cooling off period between murders when they live completely normal lives with no urges to kill.

That allows them to live at times in relative peace and harmony, and suggests why Garavito, who was able to kill when traveling for work, was able to return home to women who were completely unsuspecting of his double life.

Escalating madness

Garavito had been cruel to his victims from the start, but as his fantasies grew more detailed, his crime scenes became more gruesome as well.

By 1993, he was developing a sordid signature that involved rape and the sadistic practice of disemboweling his victims before they died. He then decapitated them before disposing of the bodies.

According to experts, Garavito was such a prolific serial killer because he never quite got it right, and he continued to kill in search of creating what would be for him the perfect crime.

“His victim choice of young boys clearly points to the fact that he had a fantasy of becoming involved with young boys, and that he needed to become intimately involved with these young boys,” said Kokonos, who said that the method of binding and the disembowelments were ritualistic, and ultimately would serve as a way for authorities to not only link the crimes, but also help profile the killer. “This is someone who needs to feel godlike.”

But for Garavito, the actions of his victims, the way the sex or the torture was carried out, the dismembering of the bodies, usually didn’t work out exactly as he’d planned.

“The problem is, the fantasy is always perfect,” said forensic psychologist Kokonos. “You can fantasize it, and you will have it go down exactly the way you want, but in reality, it doesn’t work that way. In reality, the crime doesn’t quite meet the fantasy, so they have to commit the crime again.”

Chapter 4: The first crime scene

But despite his escalating depravity, Garavito was able to hide fairly well because he had established a detailed collection of disguises including the priest that allowed him to trick the young boys who most appealed to his deviant side.

In addition to pretending to be a man of the cloth, he would also lure his victims by offering them money or alcohol or a tasty treat from one of the local shops.

Garavito preferred light-skinned children, and he would often ask boys who fit his type to help him with various projects or odd jobs, including carrying crates of fruit, rounding up livestock or harvesting sugar cane, as a ruse.

He would tell them, “I have a small calves and I need help. I offered to pay them a thousand or five hundred pesos. Children believed me and went with me.”

This particular method gave him a chance to size his victims up, to see if they fulfilled the fantasy he had carefully crafted in his head.

Once he had gained their trust, he would seek out “remote places, inaccessible, wooded, that were away from home. Always away from home,” he said.

This way, there was a less likely chance that anyone would hear a child scream or cry or their frantic attempts to escape from what would inevitably end in rape and murder.

Garavito was sexually motivated, a trait that is common among serial killers, according to FBI profiler Robert Ressler, founder of the FBI’s

behavioral science unit, which has since transformed the way authorities handle crime scenes and track killers.

“Sexual elements are always involved,” added psychologist Dr. David Abrahamson. “All of what we call senseless or aimless violence, there is always a strong sexual element.”

A close call, then a grisly find

A few days after the boys from the sweet shop had disappeared, the body of another boy, a youngster named Ronald Delgado Quintero, was found, and a witness described a suspect who looked a lot like Garavito.

Police questioned him, but using his psychopathic charm, Garavito was amazingly able to convince police that he was being singled out because he was a handicapped street vendor, and officers eventually let him go.

By the end of 1996, Garavito's list of victims – kept in a small black notebook as markings, a small slash for each one – had grown to 100, and he had no inclination to slow things down.

But in November of 1997, in Pereira, a city also known for its coffee trade as well as being Garavito's hometown, children were caught playing with a skull, leading police to uncover a mass grave containing the bones of 36 victims, a grisly find that made headlines across Colombia.

A week later, another site was discovered, this one in a ravine alongside a river.

Police were hoping clues at the sites would help lead them to what they believed had to be several killers, and the ravine where police had found the second mass grave site did hold a few of them, including wax that initially had them thinking that the murders were the workings of a satanic cult.

The victims were hidden amid dense, thick terrain, so it was no surprise that Garavito was able to carry out his crimes unseen.

As the news of similar cases began pouring in, authorities realized the magnitude of the problem.

If parents weren't aware of their missing children, police now finally were, and by the early part of 1998 had formed a task force to help track the killer.

A few small clues

As police began realizing that boys were going missing, investigators noted that the victims usually disappeared at around 10 a.m. every day, usually about the time the longtime drunk finally roused himself from the depravities of the night before.

And in 1995, Garavito broke his leg, leaving him with a permanent limp, which would provide for police another important clue to track the killer in their midst.

On June 8, 1996, Garavito enticed a boy on a bike to follow him into the woods after first buying sweets for him and a few other boys at a local shop.

The boy's body was later found, his head decapitated with his severed penis stuffed into his mouth.

Police were led to Garavito after the boy's mother learned her son had last been seen at the shop with a few of his friends as well as a stranger with a limp who had purchased the treats.

Garavito confessed to buying the sweets, but insisted he had then left the boys and gone home.

Police let Garavito go, but he was now on their radar. They just didn't know exactly what they had.

Discovery of a serial killer's spree

In February of 1998, police found the corpses of three naked children, their ages estimated at between 11 and 13, outside the town of Genua, Columbia. Each had his hands tied and each had suffered knife wounds on his necks and genitals. There were also signs of bite marks and anal penetration. A bottle of lubricant was left at the scene.

“The fact that Garavito was drunk during these attacks can in part explain his ability to be so violent – lack of inhibition in the hands of a depressed, angry, and abused man can, alarmingly lead to such violent acts. For most of us, beheading someone is seen as violent, but Garavito had his own definition of violence, which clearly had no limits when intoxicated,” said Davies.

Authorities were hoping that identifying the victims – despite only finding bones – would help them solve the crimes, but what little evidence they had allowed only DNA testing and forensic reconstructions, since there were no dental records for the boys.

The idea that the victims were street children was solidified by the lack of dental records, but authorities were stifled by the available directions they could take to determine just who was buried in the mass graves they were finding. While Garavito had doubtless left behind forensic evidence including hair and semen, no DNA samples were taken, because the costs of such testing are prohibitive.

Experts chose to attempt forensic reconstruction, despite the challenges presented by the victims being children, making it much more difficult to complete the process.

“The bones of children are still going through the growth process, so proportionally, the measurements are very different (than those of adults),” said forensic reconstruction expert Mario Leon Artunduaga, who took on the challenging project.

Later, police learned that the boys were friends who helped supplement their families’ incomes by selling fruit, gum and other odds and ends as street vendors.

The three boys did not disappear on the same day, however.

Two of the boys went with Garavito the first day after he made them a job offer, while the third boy went home to tell his mother that he had gotten a chance to earn some money helping a man transport cattle, and it was not until the next day that his desire to help support his family led to his death.

A big mistake

In most cases, even the smartest of criminals do something stupid to get themselves caught, and Garavito was not all that smart. He was usually drunk, and that made him careless, and even more likely to make mistakes.

In 1998, Garavito made one of his biggest.

He had just finished raping and murdering one of his young victims, and he was celebrating with a drink of cheap brandy. Drunk, he fell asleep with a lit cigarette in his hand, setting himself and the field on fire.

When he woke up, his arm and side in flames, he made a quick getaway, but because he was in such a hurry, he left behind a wealth of invaluable clues.

Chapter 5: Clues tell a big story

Those clues would be the first steps toward tracking down an elusive criminal.

Meanwhile, authorities at other crime scenes were continued to investigate using the clues they had, including the ritualistic poses, matching rope fibers and empty booze bottles that were a calling call of sorts for what they were realizing was just one man.

One man developed a hunger to catch him, and using the words of Robert Ressler, “The best way to catch a killer is to think like one,” Alderan Duran immersed himself in the details of one of the worst cases in Colombian history.

“We were going to solicit information from the FBI, so we could get up to speed,” Duran said. “Here in Colombia, no one had managed a case such as this.”

At the scene of the fire, coroner Carlos Hernan Herrera had a bounty of clues, including the killer’s underwear, eyeglasses and money.

Herrera also had a pair of men’s shoes and realized that the killer had a limp, likely due to an injury, based on wear patterns he noticed on the soles of the shoes.

They were also able to determine the killer’s height, as well as his age, based on the eyeglasses, which revealed through the prescription that he had an eye condition that was common only in people 40-45 or 55-60 years old.

They were able to narrow down their findings to 25 people, much easier than looking at the entire population of Colombia.

Tracking a madman

As they put clues together, they realized that amazingly, they were looking for one man, and based on some clues, they believed it was someone they had once had in their custody.

After learning more about criminal profiling from the FBI, Duran decided to send some officers to go undercover as homeless people in Colombia, a dangerous mission considering the violence that plagued the streets where children were forced to join gangs in order to stay safe at night.

They staked out the downtown market area where the most recent disappearances had occurred, and agents ate garbage in order to not raise any suspicions while keeping a close eye on the boys in the neighborhood.

Chapter 6: Investigators – and a victim – get lucky

One day in the midst of their investigation, a boy named Ivan Savogal had gone out to sell lottery tickets in hopes of raising money for school, but when night came he still hadn't returned.

Maria Bertilda Lara, Ivan's mother, called police in hopes of securing help in tracking down her missing son.

When he took on the case of a boy who went missing while selling lottery tickets to raise money for schooling, public prosecutor Fernando Aya found himself in the middle of one of the most horrific crime sprees in Colombian history.

He soon realized that details of his case matched those of the boys whose bodies had been found in other regions of the country.

Aya had to hope that he was able to move fast enough to track down the killer and save the boy, and had to hope against hope and awful odds that the predator would slip up again.

A lucky break

As Aya worked his missing boy case, officials using FBI techniques had no idea where to begin looking, until a secretary who had once worked in Tunja, a city about 25 miles north of Bogotá where Garavito had been temporarily arrested in 1996, heard detectives talking.

She immediately recognized the similarities of the case of the missing boy in Armenia, and she told detectives about Garavito's arrest three years earlier.

As it happened, Luis Alfredo Garavito Cubillos was one of the 25 people on their current list of suspects.

Armed with that information, they were able to track down Garavito's family and some of his friends, who helped them find one of the man's female friends.

His sister gave them a black cotton bag filled with items her brother had left behind. It contained not only documents of Garavito's travels, which placed him at many of the crime scenes, but also photographs and journals detailing his gruesome acts.

At a friend's house, police collected a suitcase Garavito had left in her care, filled with newspaper clippings that contained news of the murders. There were also bus ticket stubs that placed Garavito at the scenes of several murders.

Another bag was found after police traced a receipt for a money order, which revealed that their suspect's left side was severely burned, on his arm and his side.

Still, they did not know where Garavito was.

Escape proves infinitely lucky

John Ivan Savogal was selling lottery tickets to raise money for school when he had the misfortune to run into Luis Garavito, who dragged the boy into the woods and tied him up in preparation for a night of torture.

Luckily for Savogal, the boy's screams drew the attention of a teen who had slipped into the woods to smoke a joint.

He followed the sound of Savogal's screaming, and found him with Garavito. The teen began hurling rocks at Garavito, who cut Savogal's ties and ordered him to run deeper into the woods. The boy instead ran toward his rescuer, and the two ran off on foot while Garavito gave chase.

His limp, however, slowed the serial killer down. When he arrived at the farm where the two boys were hiding, he didn't know that the girl who lived there was pointing him in the wrong direction, and the victim and his rescuer were able to escape and report the incident to the police.

Soon, officers and townspeople were swarming the woods in search of the man who attempted to abduct one of their own, but Garavito had seemingly eluded capture.

As the last police car drove away, Garavito slipped out of the woods and attempted to blend into the crowd.

But police hadn't gone far. They, along with Savogal and his pot-smoking benefactor, were waiting for the man to come out so that Savogal could identify him.

Garavito was used to this sort of thing. He gave police a fake name, Bonifacio Morera, and assumed he would be back on the streets soon enough.

The task force got busy, though, and during the three months “Morera” awaited trial, they were comparing evidence and fingerprints, and they soon determined that the man they had in custody was in fact Luis Garavito, one of the worst serial killers in all of Colombian history.

“We are not facing some sort of criminal genius,” said prosecutor Pablo Elias Gonzalez. “We are confronting an individual who had no inhibiting restraints to killing.”

Evidence doesn't lie

Aya was certain they had the right guy, and officers lined up the wealth of evidence they had against him, including items found from the mass graves and telephone numbers discovered in the prisoner's clothing that revealed his true identity.

The also had the items from Garavito's luggage and various bags, including photographs of victims cut from ID cards, newspaper clippings he had squirrelled away as trophies and a calendar that kept notes of each of his kills.

"All sex offenders are usually collectors. Luis Alfredo (Garavito) is," said forensic psychiatrist Oscar Diaz.

The evidence was solid.

On October 29, 1999, Garavito was charged with 114 murders, each chronicled in the madman's collection of notebooks.

When he finally confessed, it was with real tears, convulsions and blame that he did not place on himself, but rather on the evil spirit with which he was possessed each and every time he took a young boy's life.

He blamed two things, an obsession with Hitler – "I admired Hitler, wanted to become like him, get power to make myself respected," he said. "I always longed to be important, to be on television, in the press and everybody talking about me." – and peer pressure from Satan for his years of sadistic criminal behavior.

In the taped confession that occurred during an hours-long interrogation, Garavito gestured wildly with his hands and smiled at investigators, even as he said, "Yes, I killed them, and I ask forgiveness for all that I have done."

Garavito confessed to his crime with “appalling coldness,” said Pablo Gonzalez, who headed the team of forensic investigators who had tracked the madman.

Why did Garavito kill?

Garavito's overwhelming crime spree raised questions across the nation about how one man could do so much damage, commit so many heinous crimes.

The answer is one that has raised questions ever since the first serial killer's crimes hit the front pages of newspapers worldwide.

Antisocial personality disorder, the result of being raped from the age of six or so, transformed him into his aggressor in as much as Norman Bates eventually became his harsh, judgmental mother in the Alfred Hitchcock classic "Psycho."

Like many serial killers, Garavito saw himself as a benefactor, as though he was doing a favor of sorts for his victims.

"Luis Alfredo killed the children to leave no witnesses who incriminated, but also as a way to spare the suffering endured as a child. So he thought. He was abused by his father, who told him he was useless. In addition, the best friend of his father raped him when he was 12 years old. So he chose victims who had that age range," said Diaz.

Garavito said in one interview with police that he felt sorry for one of his victims, who described a level of abuse at home that matched what Garavito himself had suffered.

The sympathy ended there, however, because it did not stop Garavito from torturing and raping the boy before taking his life.

By the end of the year, he was found guilty of 138 murders, and sentenced to 1,853 years and nine days in prison. Because he had confessed, there was no trial.

Either way, the sentence itself was meaningless.

In an effort to protect against corruption, Colombia has no death penalty and the maximum sentence for any crime is 30 years.

Officials had never dealt with a crime as sobering as this, and the nation's laws reflect that.

"This has no precedence in Colombia," said the country's chief prosecutor, Alfonso Gomez.

Garavito could be released sooner – his sentence was later cut to 24 years because he cooperated with police, drawing maps in prison that led police to the skeletal remains of other victims – due to good behavior behind bars.

"We have so far found 114 skeletons and we're still investigating the disappearance of other children," said Colombia's chief prosecutor, Alfonso Gomez Mendez. "Luis Alfredo Garavito has admitted the murder of about 140 children."

Estimates of his total number of victims have reached as high as 300.

When his crime spree was discovered, he was called "the world's worst serial killer" by local media, although he also earned the moniker of the Beast, along with Tribilin, which translates in English to Disney's character of "Goofy," which likely would have Walt Disney himself spinning in his grave.

Victims' families desperate for revenge

The family members of his victims called for his death.

Relatives of the children believed to have been tortured and murdered by Colombia's worst-ever serial killer have called for Luis Alfredo Garavito to be put to death.

Maria Aleida Velez, an aunt of two young paper delivery boys told the Associated Press “they disappeared a year ago, but for us, it seems like yesterday. If this man really is the assassin of my two nephews, I want him to get the death penalty.”

“They should take him out and execute him in public,” said Blanca Perez, whose son sold newspapers on the streets of Pereira before disappearing in 1996. “They should slice him up just as he sliced up so many of these children.”

Is rehabilitation likely?

Garavito seemed somewhat contrite when he made his official confession.

“I ask the Colombian people to forgive me, to give me the opportunity which maybe I deprived many people of,” he said.

But despite his pleas for forgiveness, rehabilitation is unlikely, experts say.

“This is most definitely not someone who can be rehabilitated,” said forensic psychologist Dr. Christie Kokonos. “When you see pedophilia and sadism, particularly together, and there is evidence that the person was a psychopath, there is no known treatment. We know that these offenders continue to fantasize when they are incarcerated. They will tell you, the fantasies never stop.”

Nor does the killing.

“I can say that a person will only stop if he is stopped, is very old, or dead,” Diaz said.

And Garavito has no interest in rehabilitation, Diaz added.

“I’ve seen him laugh in the face to the authorities because he knows they can’t do anything more, while in America there are teenagers sentenced to life imprisonment.”

Still, Garavito could be tried in other regions or other countries, if there are links to him in those places.

“When authorities do not exchange information to catch criminals, when we do not work as a team, we are nothing,” Diaz added.

And then there are the victims who have gone unidentified.

“It is a case that has already been tried, but the least we can do is identify these remains, in memory of those children and those families,” said Colombian Senator Gilma Jimenez. “The case of Garavito tells us that there is a law and a criminal policy that has operated in Colombia that are definitely not correct. An individual who commits 168 murders can get out of jail. To those who defend these policies, what would you will say to society and to the families of the victims?”

Chapter 7: Families look back in sorrow

For those who lost their children, time stands still. Their loved ones are still boys, and will be forever, never to grow up, get married, have children, find a dream job.

For them, days are torture, full of memories that are still raw, and may always be that way.

One mother remembers

Maria Ema Suarez, 65, only has photographs to reminder of her son, Louis, whose body was discovered on February, 6, 1994.

“How great it would be if he were still alive, to eat cakes on his birthday, to talk,” the dressmaker said.

When she looks outside, she grows tearful when she sees children working in the street, knowing that her son might not have been a victim had he not been forced to sell items on the streets to help support his family.

And while she still suffers the loss of her son, she worries about her grandchildren and those children outside her window, “because if that guy comes back, I know what can happen to them.”

Grandmother's memories haunt

Maria Elvia Guapacha remembers dancing around the room with her grandsons during the holidays, a tradition that has long since degraded into sad memories tinged with rage at the man who killed the boys in April of 1995.

“They were very happy,” she said.

“This evil he did to my grandchildren,” said Guapacha’s husband Luis Carlos Largo, should lead him to the electric chair. “But as they say, ‘the law is only for the poor.’ And now it’s what the law does.”

One of the boy’s sisters struggles with her faith in the wake of Garavito’s heinous acts.

“I do not know whether to forgive him. He would have to stand in front of me and tell me, ‘I killed your brothers,’ for me to realize what I feel in my heart.”

A loss leads to further tragedy

One day in 1994, Gustavo Andres, born December 31, 1983, went to the Buga, Colombia, town square to sell raffle tickets, a job he did to help support his mother Nohemi and his sister Karina, who at the time was just two years old.

The 11-year-old boy never came home.

Desperate, his mother spend that night, the next day and several more days after looking in schools, in the park, throughout the city's downtown, in search of her son.

It was as though her son had disappeared off the face of the earth.

In the wake of her son's disappearance, his mother could not sleep, did not eat and she could not even return to work. She turned to alcohol and cigarettes as an escape for her despair.

Her world continued to fall apart.

One of Gustavo's older brothers took his toddler sister to his home in El Bordo, Cauca, where she would not be neglected.

Within three months, Nohemi was homeless, walking the streets of Buga, smoking, drinking and doing as many drugs as possible to erase the memories of her son.

"It was to avoid thinking, 'Where was Gustavo? What happened to him? If he had wanted to leave home he would have taken his things, his clothes. But no.'"

She wondered if he had been abducted into the sex trade, a horrible thought that also brought with it a ray of hope.

“If he was taken to another country, then he should remember me, he might come looking for me,” she said.

But she tries not to think of him, even now, when she has remarried and struggles with the terrible symptoms of tuberculosis. But that is impossible.

“How would I be now? What would have become of him?” she wonders. It is something she will never know.

And all she is left with is a single photo, the only one of her son she could afford during his life cut short.

Gustavo had plans to be a dentist or maybe a lawyer, and had plans to buy a house for his mother and sister.

He liked boxing, after seeing a match on TV at a neighbor’s house, and soon was the neighborhood knockout.

It’s not enough for his mother to hold onto, but sadly, it will have to be.

Chapter 8: Garavito behind bars

Garavito apparently only ever leaves his cell to study and never receives visitors. In a psychological report obtained by El Tiempo, “The Beast” was asked about his actions, to which he replied,

“So I was born, I do not know why. I felt pleasure, even though when I had killed the guilt came over me.”

Garavito is afraid that he will be killed behind bars.

His biggest fear is getting poisoned, so he only accepts food or beverages from certain guards that he has grown to trust.

He is separate from other prisoners, so he is unlikely to find himself in a position where a fellow inmate takes retribution and kills him.

Interview calls attention to case

In 2006, South American celebrity interviewer Pirry secured a hugely controversial interview with Garavito. Before the interview, Pirry took classes with criminal profilers in Miami to learn more about the mind of a serial killer. His research ended up earning him an Emmy award nomination.

The interview ran in June, and included commentary from Pirry, who talked about Garavito's plans after prison to enter politics in order to help abused children.

Garavito's plans drew outrage, and later that year, a judicial review determined that his sentence could be suspended due to crimes committed outside Colombia.

Mental illness evident in later interviews

During a visit to Garavito in prison, author Lara Johnson found Garavito to suffer from some form of attention deficit disorder, and said he was unable to stay focused during their interview.

“Garavito cannot restrict his train of thoughts,” said Johnson in her book “Serial Killers.”

“He will jump from one topic to the other, and even if he starts a conversation on a topic that he feels is interesting (plane crash, etc.), he will switch to a different topic only seconds, or minutes later. Because of the complete absence of any psychological treatment, he is not used to talking about personal matters, even if it would aid his cause. For example, one of the first things he talked to us about was an article from a popular science magazine that he found very interesting; he had written down notes next to the article. The article was dealing with children abused by their parents. When we asked why this caught his attention, he would absolutely not comment on this issue and switched the topic as if he had not heard the question. This is remarkable because it is the opinion of the police that Garavito was maltreated as a child.”

He later complained to Johnson in a letter that the gifts they brought him, T-shirts and other odds and ends, were too cheap to be equal to the time he spent talking to them.

A nation in fear

Now, Columbian residents are left to fear the release of one of their nation's most terrifying killers.

"I live in Colombia, I've been knowing this guy all my life," said Andrea Montoya on a Facebook page dedicated to keeping The Beast behind bars.

"I must say this guy is one of the worst beasts I know about! He doesn't feel any remorseless about all these children he raped, tortured and killed. He even thinks he will use the pain of those boys' families to get out of jail. He can be free in seven years and he says he will collaborate finding the rest of these kids if he gets out earlier. I just think he is one of the psychopaths that frighten me the most."

She should rest easy, however. The director of Colombia's prison authority INPEC has said that it's not likely that one of the world's worst serial killers, dubbed "The Beast," will be released from prison any time soon, even with time off for work or study.

INPEC Director Gustavo Adolfo Ricaurte said that even with study hours, inmates at best could only earn four months of time off for each year spent either studying or working.

"The average inmate that studies or works, for each year, can redeem four months," said Ricaurte.

The aftermath

In 2011, a Colombian judge denied Garavito early release from prison after the man considered one of the world's most prolific serial killers served 12 of his reduced 24-year sentence.

Garavito's defense team did not apply for an early release, and according to the Colombia newspaper E Espectador, the issue of the madman's release is not expected to come up "for a long time."

If he is released, it is likely that he will be extradited to neighboring Ecuador, where he has been sentenced to 22 years in prison for murders he committed in the border nation.

"Garavito is serving a sentence for more than 168 crimes committed against children in Colombia. Garavito has to pay in Colombia what he did to those kids. I hope he pays in Ecuador for the atrocities he committed against Ecuadorian children," said Bogotá Senator Gilma Jimenez.

Daniel Camargo Barbosa

It's not really a surprise that Daniel Camargo Barbosa, who earned the nickname "The Sadist of El Charquito," turned into a serial killer.

His mother died when he was just a year old, and his father's younger new wife was unable to have children.

Unfortunately for Camargo, the woman had apparently always dreamed of having a daughter, so she dressed the boy in girl's clothing, sending him out into the world to face endless ridicule from the other children in their neighborhood.

"My stepmother did not like children, but she loved girls," he later said.

"When she dressed me as a girl, I think she was trying to make me a girl. She could not love me as a child."

As he grew older, he overcame the childhood trauma and was one of the smartest students at his Bogotá high school. His father and stepmother were looking to him to help boost the family income, though, so he was pressured to leave school and land a job, a move that erased his chances of using education as a tool to escape from poverty.

Instead, he would become one of Colombia's most renowned serial killers, suspected of raping and killing at least 150 virgins and convicted of 72 during the 1970s and '80s.

Chapter 1 – A relationship made in hell

When he was 30 years old, Camargo established a relationship with Alcira Catillo, and the two lived together in what would eventually be considered a common-law marriage.

The relationship resulted in two children, but Camargo never felt the urge to get married until he met 28-year-old Hope Esperanza.

Camargo was all set to propose to Esperanza when he learned that she was no longer a virgin.

That was a deal breaker for Camargo, who had a thing for virginal, untouched partners, and found himself consumed with rage over what he saw as an unforgivable betrayal.

But despite this, he felt overwhelming love for his nonvirginal girlfriend.

“I was unable to leave because I was madly in love,” he said.

While he oftentimes felt a compulsion to leave to satisfy his desire for a virgin – “I had no experience with virgins, but I dreaded venereal disease and its ravages. I wanted pure, pristine women,” he said – he could not bring himself to leave her.

An agreement straight from hell

Instead, he worked out a sick deal with his new lady love. He would stay with Esperanza if she would help procure for him his desired virgins, the younger the better.

“I accepted it as the right thing that she brought for me girls who were virgins,” he said.

Esperanza agreed, and over the next few years she lured five girls to their apartment, where she drugged them with the barbiturate Seconal, a drug that became a household word after the release of Jacqueline Susann’s pop classic “Valley of the Dolls” in 1966, and then left them alone with Camargo so he could do with them as he wished.

The arrangement likely would have gone on longer if the fifth girl hadn’t reported them to police after she was released.

The couple was arrested, and on April 10, 1964, Camargo was sentenced to three years in prison for sexual assault.

When a new judge was assigned the case, five years were added to Camargo’s sentence, and he ultimately served eight years for robbing five girls of their innocence.

Serving those last five years, however, consumed him with rage, and by the time he was released, he had turned all of his anger on women.

As far as Camargo was concerned, someone would pay for his time behind bars.

Chapter 2: A new modus operandi

Camargo, thin and tall with dark hair and a receding hairline, was released in 1972, and he headed to Brazil to start a new life as an illegal immigrant.

He was arrested a year later, and Brazilian authorities held him while waiting for his criminal records. Those records failed to show in a timely manner, so Camargo was deported back to Colombia, where he got a job as a street vendor selling television monitors.

This particular job gave him easy access to young victims who wandered the streets in desperate search for money or food, and he was able to kidnap a nine-year-old girl while working near a neighborhood school.

He later told authorities he “fell in love” with the girl, but to show his affection, he raped her, oblivious to her tears, then murdered the girl so she would be unable to report the crime to police.

He had learned his lesson with his previous victims, and his time in prison had only served to escalate his anger.

Camargo freedom was short-lived

But his anger had made Camargo careless, and it didn't take long for police to arrest him again.

He had abandoned the television monitors that he sold next to his victim's body and went back to get them, thereby breaking one of the most critical rules of thumb to escape capture after illegal activity – don't return to the scene of the crime.

Camargo was arrested on May 3, 1974, and on December 24, 1977, was sentenced to 30 years in prison at La Isla De La Gorgona Prison, an incarceration facility nicknamed Colombian Alcatraz for its remote location on the island of Gorgona, Colombia.

His sentence was later reduced to 25 years.

While inside, he made sure that the other prisoners stayed away from him by saying that he, like the famed Robert Johnson who stood at the crossroads, desperate to play guitar, made a deal with the devil.

Escape artist

Because Colombian officials saw the island as inhospitable due to its remoteness, there was little surveillance on the prisoners.

Camargo learned to play ping pong and how to dive, as prisoners were allowed to swim in the waters surrounded the prison island. They were also allowed to walk about freely, and one day during his walks around the island, he saw a small, apparently abandoned boat.

He immediately rowed for freedom. It was about 10 years into his 25-year sentence.

When officials realized he was gone, they began searching for Camargo, but after several days of searching, there was no sign of Camargo, so prison officials reported that he died at sea. Media accounts reported that the prison warden said, “He had been eaten by sharks while swimming.”

The truth was much more terrible.

After three days without food or water, Camargo and his makeshift boat landed on the shores of Brazil.

“His appearance and his state of mind implied that his days were numbered,” said Spanish journalist Juan Antonio Cebrian. “But Daniel Camargo was smart, and he had the ability to generate resources.”

From Brazil – which he found to be much too hot - he was able to make his way to Ecuador, and shortly thereafter, young girls begin to disappear.

Chapter 3: Four years of terror

From 1984 to 1986, Camargo raped and killed at least 54 young girls in Guayaquil, Ecuador, and the surrounding area, but the sheer volume of deaths led police to believe that it was the atrocious work of a local gang, and they never imagined that one man was responsible.

While he was on his spree of rape and murder, Camargo earned money selling ballpoint pens and more grotesquely, items that he took from his victims.

Instead of working with an accomplice, Camargo lured his victims by pretending to be lost and in need of directions, promising a reward or a job if the young girls he preyed upon would help him find his way.

Tricks of a deadly trade

He sought young girls who were lower class, and desperate for any kind of work to provide them and their families with food. He also used cruel ruses, saying he needed help finding a pastor located on the other side of town, and would pay the girls money if they would take him there, and maybe help them find a job.

The overwhelming desire to have work, combined with the comfort that came with the idea of going somewhere as safe as to a priest, made the girls easy prey.

Once in his snare of lies, he would tell his victims that they should cut through the woods as a shortcut. If his chosen target left, he allowed it without giving chase in order to draw less attention to himself. If they stayed, he would rape and strangle them in the woods, then use his machete to cut them open to make their corpses more enticing to wild animals so they would catch their scent and take care of the disposal for him.

It was a terrible time for the residents of the region, who were terrified that they might end up an unknown assailant's next victim.

"There was a commotion throughout the city and country, and of ten night school classes, nine had closed," recalls Edgar Salazar Vera, the judge who prosecuted Camargo for the crimes of kidnapping, rape and murder.

Another lesson in never taking candy from strangers

He also offered candy, police learned, when they discovered the body of 12-year-old Gloria Andino, whose hand was still clutching a candy wrapper when she died.

“I opted for persuasion rather than by threat,” he said. “I killed without a trace. I always wore a shirt over, and when my hands were stained with blood, I cleaned them by urinating on them.”

Unfortunately for Camargo, who also began disemboweling his victims in hopes of leaving as little evidence behind as possible, a single fingerprint not belonging to Gloria was found on the wrapper, and after searching through thousands of fingerprint files, the authorities got their match.

It was the print of Daniel Camargo Barbosa, and police were closing in.

Chapter 4: Camargo's final arrest

Camargo was arrested on February 26, 1986, after his nervous behavior caught the attention of two policemen, who stopped him and searched his possessions.

They found a photo of one of his victims in his pocket, and in a duffel bag he was carrying, they found bloody clothing and the excised clitoris of his last victim, a 9-year-old girl named Elizabeth Telpes.

He was also carrying a copy of "Crime and Punishment" by Dostoyevsky.

He initially gave police a fake name, but was identified by one of his rape victims, who had been lucky enough to escape.

Camargo confesses

Camargo eventually confessed to killing 71 young girls, although that number is estimated at a much higher 150, and told police he sought out virgins because he liked to hear the sounds of them crying as he raped and tortured them.

Calmly, with no remorse, he was able to lead authorities to the bodies of victims that had not yet been discovered. Camargo told police that after raping his victims, he used a machete to cut and dismember them so the bodies of the young girls would be more difficult to find.

When officials asked him about the internal organs of his victims, he said, "At most I got the hearts, because that is the organ of love."

He claimed that the humiliation he suffered as a child was the reason for killing young girls, the girls his stepmother had hoped he would be.

"My sickness is in my head," said Camargo, whose attorney attempted to get his sentence reduced on the grounds that his client was insane. "I am aware of my mistakes."

Chapter 5: A madman on trial

Camargo went to trial in 1989, and during proceedings he took the stand and confessed to murders he'd committed in five cities across the country.

In 1989, Camargo was sentenced to 16 years in prison, the maximum sentence allowable in Ecuador. He would have been released in 2005, and extradited back to Colombia to finish the remainder of his sentence.

It would never be enough for the friends and families who lost their girls.

“He killed one of my friends around my neighborhood,” wrote one friend in a website conversation. “We were only 5 or 6 years old. I still remember when I got the sad news of her death. They found her in a wooded area across the street from my house. He was an animal, she was only a little girl! I still get goosebumps just to think that it could have been me. Is horrible to remember the story even now.”

He would serve his years at Garcia Moreno de Quito prison, the same facility that Pedro Alonso López (“The Monster of the Andes”) called home.

A victim remembers

Espinoza Vera Beice was 24 when Camargo enticed her to accompany him by bus to help deliver money to an evangelical pastor working at a plastics factory.

It was an odd ruse, but Beice boarded the bus in January 1986 nonetheless, leaving behind the safety of the market.

She went with Camargo out of pity, she said.

“He was a little old gentleman, dirty, double jacket, carrying heavy boots, and he asked me where the Tennis Club was. I told him but he said, ‘No, I have been told that people around there steal.’”

Beice decided to help.

“He led me down the street Aguirre and Tungurahua, told me to wait, to accompany him to Guayaquil Park, where we would catch a car,” she said.

When they got off the bus, there was a golf course in the distance, and Camargo asked he to go with him.

“I said ‘No, I don’t want to walk out there, because I’m afraid of snakes.’ Then he grabbed my arm hard, I said, ‘Let me, let me go. I’m leaving.’”

A few weeks later, she recognized him on television, and she and her mother went to the police to file a complaint.

The police used a lineup, and Camargo was there.

“He still wanted to shake my hand hello,” she said, incredulously. “God was there, always with me, did not abandon me.”

Another narrowly escapes death

Maria Alexandra Velez was one of the first to appear in court after Daniel Camargo was arrested.

She told the court about her own experiences in 1986, when Camargo used his ruse to deliver money to a priest on her as she was returning to work after her lunch hour.

“When I returned from my lunch, I do not know where or how, I already had in front of me this gentleman. “He said, ‘girl, I need you to help me. I have to give money to a church being built on the railway. I need you to come with me,’” she said.

Instead, she told Camargo to take a taxi, but he was insistent.

“He wanted at all costs that I go with him. I told him no, I had just started working and I could not miss any time, but told me not to worry.”

She suggested that a nearby concierge accompany him, but Camargo rejected the help.

“Fifteen days later I saw on the news that they had arrested Camargo. I was shocked,” she said. “It was not in God's plan to go that day with Camargo. I am grateful to God.”

Now a mom of three, she warned her girls.

“I tell the girls to be careful with people who talk, many are painted like sheep and are not, so they are a little more careful,” she said.

Another victim was not so lucky

When Carmen Priscila, 19, was found, her family could not identify her because by then she was only bones.

Instead, they were forced to listen as Camargo told Carmen's brother, Abraham Molina Calvache, what he had done to Priscila.

"I met her through the streets around the Victoria Park," he said. "She was dressed in jeans, but the color of the blouse I do not remember. I approached her and persuaded her to accompany me to deliver the money."

She agreed, and they took the bus to Guayaquil Park, where Camargo had told her the church would be.

As they walked, he turned to her and said, "Miss, I did not come to hand over any money, I brought you because I saw you and liked you, and I want to make love with you. Do not try to run or scream because I'm armed," he said.

Camargo then led officers and Abraham to the site where Priscila's remains had been left.

"On a hillside, in an area of 30 meters, we found only bones, no skin," recalls Abraham, and breaks.

"I always end up crying reliving the experience. I am bitter. I wake up crying. I have still not recovered."

Camargo behind bars

Police blocked access to Camargo, and the madman was demanding large sums of money for a chance to interview him, so his story wasn't told until one journalist used trickery to hear Camargo's words.

In June of 1986, Francisco Febres Cordero, a reporter for the United States-based Spanish newspaper Hoy (Today), pretended he was part of a group of psychologists that were allowed access to Camargo, so he was able to ask questions without raising the suspicion of either police or Camargo himself.

Later, Cordero said the prisoner was not only well-read – he'd devoured books by Sigmund Freud, called the father of psychoanalysis, philosopher Friedrich Nietzsche, and many others during his stay on the Isle of Gargona – but also intelligent.

“He had an answer for everything and was able to speak of God and the Devil equally,” Cordero said.

In the end, revenge

One thing that Camargo didn't have, however, was the ability to look into the future.

If he had, he might have made another escape attempt, but luckily for the young girls of Ecuador and Colombia, he could not, and as fate would have it, at least one of his victims had her revenge.

In 1994, just a few years before he was to have been released from prison, Camargo was killed by Luis Masache Narvaez, whose young cousin was one of the madman's victims.

Masache, who whispered "It's time for revenge" in Camargo's ear, reportedly cut off the ear as a trophy.

Pedro López

Introduction

While it seems absolutely unbelievable that a man who admitted to authorities that he killed at least 300 young preteen girls, Pedro Lopez is currently not behind bars.

The madman – nicknamed the Monster of the Andes for his murderous tour of three countries – was arrested in 1980 for the deaths of 110 girls between the ages of 8 and 12, mostly poor children who were working in city markets with their parents to help eke out a living.

He is believed, however, to have killed more than 300 girls.

“It’s like eating chicken,” he said in explanation for his predilection for young girls. “Why eat old chicken when you can have young chicken?”

And while cannibalism was not part of Lopez’s MO, that statement reflects the complete disregard he had for his victims, whom he saw more as animals than someone’s daughter.

He once said that his urge to kill struck every three days, and after his 1980 arrest, he calmly took police on a morbid trek to the graves of 53 of the victims he’d buried in Ecuador.

He remembered quite clearly where each one of those 53 victims was buried.

Chapter 1: A childhood of tragedy

Born October 8, 1948, in Santa Isabel, Colombia, Pedro Lopez was the seventh of 13 children born to a Colombian prostitute.

His father, Micardo Reyes, was a member of the Colombia Conservative Party, and was killed in a riot when Lopez's mother, a prostitute named Benilda López De Casteneda who was not Reyes' wife, was three months pregnant with his son.

"I thought I was going to lose him from the shock, but I could feel him inside of me," she said of the loss of Pedro's father from her life. "He was of strong blood."

In Colombia, prostitution is legal in certain zones, and is common due to the widespread poverty that sweeps across a nation that is perhaps best known for exporting cocaine.

Lopez had dreams of being a teacher when he was young, his mother said.

"He liked to help the other children, and with his notebook, he helped the other children learn their vowels," she said.

His upbringing, however, would make those dreams impossible to achieve.

"I was the seventh son of 13 children of a prostitute in Tolima, Colombia," he said. "All the children slept on a big bed behind a drawn curtain while our mother did her business with men."

She was a violent woman, Lopez said, and vengeful as well.

"That woman was violent," Lopez said. "She would punish me with such violence."

A son sent away ... or not

What happens next varies between Lopez and his mother.

According to his mother, eight-year-old Lopez ran away from home one day, and she searched desperately until nightfall.

“That night I cried and cried, and I couldn’t find him,” she said, adding that she turned to a fortune teller for help finding her boy.

According to López, his mother caught him fondling his younger sister’s breasts in 1957, when he was eight years old, and evicted him from the family home.

“My mother threw me out when I was eight after she caught me touching my sister's breasts. She took me to the edge of town but I found my way home again,” he said. “The next day she took me on a bus and left me off more than 200 miles from home. I was abandoned.”

Lopez made his way to Bogotá, Colombia's capital city, where he lived among the other children who made up the lowest rung of the social ladder.

“Most of the kids left their house because they were abused,” said criminal psychologist Alexandra de la Torre Daramillo. “The only place they could end up was on the streets, because they had no other options.”

Like other street kids, Lopez stole clothing and food from dumpsters, and joined a gang of other gamines, a name given to the throwaway kids who lived on the streets of Bogotá, to have protection during the night as they slept.

His gang affiliation, however, would not be enough to save him from his second violation of trust.

Left to fend for himself, he at first resorted to begging, until an older man seemingly took pity on the boy and offered him warm meals and a warm place to stay, but instead held him in an abandoned building where he sodomized and tortured the boy until he grew tired of him, then tossed him back out onto the streets.

“There I was found by a man who took me into an abandoned building and raped me over and over again. I decided then to do the same to as many young girls as possible,” he said. “Being a child, I lost my innocence. I have always wanted to punish those responsible.”

Another hope dashed

When Lopez turned 12, four years after living on the streets of Colombia, an older American couple took him in, giving him a room, food and a chance to attend a local school targeted toward orphans. Here, Lopez was again sexually assaulted, this time by a teacher who had a thing for young boys.

Unwilling to endure any more sexual torture at the hands of his elders, Lopez stole enough money from the school office to fund his escape.

Lopez returned to the place he considered his only real home, the streets of Bogota, Colombia.

After a civil war and a long-term depression, the government in Colombia was restructuring and factories were finally reopening.

Still, Lopez had been on the streets since he was eight, and his short time in school did not teach him any skills that would help him secure a legal job or a place to live.

Since Colombia's welfare system didn't provide resources that were readily accessible to young people – they have programs, but there is no real safety net for the poor – he returned to begging for food, and soon established a reputation as one of the most talented car thieves in the city.

Chapter 2: His first stint in prison

Lopez was paid well by the local chop shops, and he was finally able to live out his dreams as a teacher, guiding the younger kids as they, too, learned the most effective ways to steal cars.

But even the talented have an off day or two, and Lopez was finally caught, and at age 18 was arrested and sentenced to two years in prison.

Two days into his sentence, Lopez was gang-raped by older inmates, which forced him to remember his early abuses and sent him into a murderous rage. He took revenge on three of those who were the most brutal, killing them in the weeks that followed with a makeshift knife in acts that were deemed self-defense.

“I don’t deny that I killed two in there, but the warden said don’t worry about it,” Lopez said.

Instead, he swore he would never again be seen as a victim.

His dark path had been determined, and he was almost destined to become a madman.

Prison violence was Lopez's last straw

By the time he was released from prison in 1971, his abusive mother, the men who had robbed him of his innocence and trust, and the peers who had taken advantage of him, had transformed him into a twisted deviant who blamed all women for the sins of his mother.

“It’s part of the profile,” according to former FBI profiler Robert Ressler. “Serial killers very often have obsessions of some kind with their mothers. A love-hate relationship, in popular language. These moms usually aren't candidates for mother of the year, although they aren't necessarily abusive either. The common thread seems to be the sexual element, mothers who were very seductive, who had many sex partners of which the son was aware. Of course, the children of prostitutes are more likely to be exposed to this type of behavior.”

Revenge would be brutal

Bent on revenge, Lopez set out for Peru, where he would leave a devilish mark in his quest for retribution against those who had terrorized and brutalized him.

He chose to punish the poorest of children, the street children who worked the open air markets with their parents.

“I went after my victims by walking among the markets searching for a girl with a certain look on her face, a look of innocence and beauty. She would be a good girl, working with her mother. I followed them sometimes for two or three days, waiting for when she was left alone. I would give her a trinket like a hand mirror, then take her to the edge of town where I would promise a trinket for her mother,” Lopez said.

The trick was effective, especially since poor children were easily lured by the gifts and the promise of more.

“He would show himself by helping, so the children would trust him,” criminal psychologist Daramillo said. “Then he would take them somewhere where if they would scream, they wouldn’t be heard.”

He would repeat the pattern, over and over, to satisfy his insatiable urges.

Chapter 3: Murder in Peru

Lopez saw Peru, home to Machu Picchu and a section of the Amazon rainforest, a nation that has an ocean border on one side, the Andes mountain range on the other, as the perfect place to begin what appeared to be a plan to obliterate all women from earth.

For the parents of girls – usually between the ages of 8 and 12 – who had gone missing, the questions were almost too horrible to answer.

“I told her to go sell some things to buy a bus ticket to come home,” said Marra Masbande Inde, the mother of one missing girl who never made it back to the place where she’s grown up.

Other parents believed their beloved girls had been kidnapped into the sex trade.

And that, although incomprehensible, might have been better than what actually happened.

Desperate parents ran advertisements in local newspapers offering rewards for information on their missing girls. They heard nothing.

A bad day for Pedro Lopez

It wasn't until after countless women and young girls had been murdered that Lopez was caught in 1978 by a tribe of Ayacucho Indians as he attempted to kidnap a 9-year-old girl.

The tribe members stripped him and tortured him for hours, burying him up to his neck and pouring syrup on his head so the ants could eat him alive, a punishment they deemed suitable for his crime.

Lopez would have perished – and many other young South American girls would not have died – if a female missionary had not convinced the tribe to turn Lopez into the police rather than go ahead with their planned lynching.

Unfortunately, the police choose not to believe the Ayacucho witnesses to Lopez's crime, and they let the madman go.

Lopez escaped to Ecuador to the north, where he set about killing as many as three girls a week, sometimes slipping over the border to his nearby home country of Colombia to find his victims.

For Lopez, watching his victims die after he violated them was sexually more pleasurable than the sexual release of raping them.

“There is a wonderful moment, a divine moment, when I have my hands around a young girl's throat,” he said in an interview. “I look into her eyes and see a certain light, a spark, suddenly go out. Only those who kill know what I mean. The moment of death is enthralling and exciting.”

Killing is power

Lopez – who had never felt a sense of power as a child due to repeated violations from authority figures – killed his victims in order to garner that strength that he had long been missing, even as he was violently erasing another woman from the world.

“One of the reasons he said he killed them was because they were poor. Maybe he tried to stamp out the weakness. This allowed him to feel stronger, bigger. This was a moment for him to be big,” said psychiatrist Dr. Maria Helena Trujillo.

Lopez waited until daylight to rape and kill his victims, even if he had kidnapped them in the evening the night before, forcing them to endure a night of terror before they died.

He wanted to see their fear, and see them die.

“At the first sign of light, I would get excited,” he said. “I forced the girl into sex and put my hands against her throat. When the sun rose I would strangle her. It was only good if I could see her eyes. I never killed anyone at night. It would have been wasted in the dark.”

While death was usually quick, some girls didn’t immediately die, and he was forced to continue strangling them after they regained consciousness.

“It took them between five and 15 minutes to die,” he added. “Sometimes I had to kill them all over again. They never screamed because they didn’t expect anything would happen. They were innocent.”

Innocent, just as he said he was when he was first violated by the man who promised him food and shelter, and instead offered a house of horrors filled with forced sodomy.

Chapter 4: Lopez hosted post-mortem parties

After his victims were dead, Lopez played, and like a schoolgirl creating imaginary tea parties, he set up the young girls in a single mass grave for pretend conversations and what could be called nothing short of sick soirees.

“My little friends liked to have company,” he said. “I often put three or four girls in a single hole and talked to them. It was like having a party, but after a while, because they couldn’t move, I got bored and went looking for new girls.”

Police noticed the missing persons’ reports, but, like many brokenhearted parents, they believed that the young girls had become victims of sex trafficking and failed to investigate beyond that theory.

One victim, the sister of Amparo Garces Lozada, was selling newspapers when she encountered Lopez.

He lured her away from the market, raped her, strangled her and covered her with the newspapers to hide her from passersby.

Once he realized his girl was missing there was precious little her father could do, because in Colombia the poor had little access to the services of the police.

Kidnapping draws attention

A few days later, Lopez snatched the daughter of a prominent baker, which drew attention not only to the abduction of his daughter, but to the other missing girls as well.

Eventually, the baker's beautiful daughter was found, severely decomposed, in an abandoned farmhouse on the outskirts of town.

But it wasn't until April of 1980, when a flash flood in Ambato, Ecuador, unearthed the remains of four missing girls that police began to consider that something sinister was going on closer to home.

While the bodies were decomposed enough it was impossible to determine their causes of death, it was clear that the young girls' bodies had been buried in order to hide any evidence of foul play.

Chapter 5: A mistake leads to an arrest

A few days after the flood, Carvina Poveda saw a strange man attempt to kidnap her 12-year-old daughter Marie while the mother and daughter were at a local market. She screamed, causing shoppers to surround Lopez and pin him to the ground before he could flee with the girl.

Lopez attempted to throw police off with a trick, and he was incoherent when officials arrived to make an arrest.

He then went silent, refusing to speak during the entire interrogation.

In frustration, officers used an undercover detective dressed in prison garb as a pawn to coerce a confession from Lopez. Once the two men were in the same cell, Lopez soon enough felt comfortable spilling the beans.

“For 27 days I hardly slept, afraid I'd be strangled in my sleep,” Pastor Gonzales said, remembering that he slept with a towel wrapped around his throat as protection.

“But I tricked Lopez into confessing by pretending I was a rapist, too. He boasted to me of murder after murder in Ecuador, Colombia and Peru. It was beyond my wildest nightmares. He told me everything,” Gonzales said in an interview with freelance reporter Ron Laytner.

Eventually, Gonzales said that Lopez and his stories were so horrific that he asked to be removed from the cell so as not to be forced to hear more of his sordid confessions.

With confession comes horror

With his cover blown, Lopez then confessed to police to killing at least 100 girls in Ecuador, 100 in Colombia and more than 100 in Peru, so great was his appetite for murder.

He then took police on a sordid treasure hunt, revealing the places he had discarded the bodies of the girls he'd killed.

"Nobody realized it was the criminal who was leading police to the graves. They dressed him up as a policeman and nobody recognized him," said one witness.

He led police to one victim, covered with newspapers and branches. Her family identified her bones by the clothes her corpse was wearing.

"Something that struck me about Pedro Lopez is how cold he was when he was identifying the gravesites," said one official. "It was as if what he had done was normal."

To keep Lopez talking, they plied him with cigarettes and coffee, chicken and beer.

For his part, Lopez was matter-of-fact about his murders, and even at times saw himself as a benefactor as he took a girl's life.

"I would take her to a secret hideaway where prepared graves waited. Sometimes there were bodies of earlier victims there. I cuddled them and then raped them at sunrise," he said.

As the sun rose higher into the sky, he would go in for the kill.

"I put my hands around her throat and I would strangle her. I was very considerate. I would spend a long time with them making sure they were dead. I would mirror to check whether they were still breathing," he said.

As for his victims alerting anyone of their plights with screams, it was not to be.

Victims never cried for help

“They never screamed because they didn't expect anything would happen,” Lopez said. “I like the girls in Ecuador. They are more gentle and trusting, more innocent.”

Innocent, just as he was when he was thrown out by his mother, raped by the men who promised him compassion, and essentially forced to survive on the streets.

But theirs would never get a chance to transform to pure evil.

The police and Lopez spent six weeks on tour across Ecuador, traveling from gravesite to gravesite.

He remembered them all, with no remorse.

Instead, at one site he grabbed up the skull of a victim in hopes of being photographed with his “trophy.”

Officers quickly took the skull away.

Lopez took horrified police officers to the graves of 53 of his victims, and then refused to show them more.

When they returned to the police station, Lopez was charged with 110 counts of murder, based on not only the graves, but also his confessions.

“If someone confesses to 53 you find, and hundreds more, you tend to believe what he says,” said the director of prison affairs, Victor Lascano, in a press conference after the morbid mission. “I think his estimate of 300 is very low.”

As police gathered evidence, the bones, skulls, shoes and other items, it began to resemble a miniature holocaust, items left behind from a mass

killing that was almost as unbelievable as the German extermination of millions of Jews.

He blamed it on his past life as a gamine.

“Perhaps I took it too far because of my past as the low of the low, almost an animal,” he said. “This is what I declare. I am 31 years old, and I have led a backward life, disoriented, that I have been without support and help. But what I mostly needed was support.”

Playing the blame game

Eventually, though, he blamed a split personality for the many murders he had committed, the lives he had extinguished much too soon, although it didn't matter much how or why or how many.

In Ecuador, the sentence for killing one person or a thousand is the same, no matter how horrific the crimes.

Lopez was only given a 16-year sentence, and he was released from prison in 1994 on good behavior. He was 45.

Lopez was driven to the Colombian border. There, officials gave him a bottle of water, newer shoes and a shirt and pants, a small amount of Colombian pesos and a package of food. Then he was set loose.

Chapter 6: Laws leave families enraged

At the time of Lopez's release from prison in Ecuador after serving such a short sentence, Prisons Minister Pablo Faguero explained the law, put in place to prevent the execution of presidents of Ecuador from being killed in the event of a revolution or military coup.

"Yes it does sound strange, but that is our law. The law of no executions or sentences longer than 20 years was passed over 100 years ago to protect presidents of Ecuador from being killed following revolutions and military coups. In the past they had been executed in horrific ways like being pulled apart by four horses. The law seemed humane," he said.

For the families of at least 100, but likely more than 300 girls, drawing and quartering would have been considered a kindness for the crazed killer whose lust for murder robbed so many mothers of seeing their daughters married, so many father from becoming a proud grandparent.

The families thought vigilante justice was appropriate, given the short sentence.

"I wanted revenge. I wanted to break him into pieces because he killed my baby," said one grieving mother.

A friend of a father who had lost his child gathered wood in hopes of burning him alive like the witches of Salem.

Eventually, rage over the Lopez case did lead Ecuador to make changes to their laws, and officials there raised the sentence for murder from 16 to 25 years.

A quick return to confinement

Outraged families seeking justice would see some, because about an hour after his arrival back in Colombia, Lopez was arrested and charged with a 20-year-old murder.

Unfortunately, Lopez was declared insane and sent to the psychiatric wing of a Bogotá hospital.

One would think that this would have been the end of it, that South Americans would never have to think about Lopez again, as he would spend his life locked away much like Wisconsin's legendary Ed Gein.

Instead, López was released in February of 1998 from a psychiatric hospital after a prison psychiatrist declared him sane.

“It could either be that the psychiatrist just really thought that he was recovered, or that he faked it,” said Jaramillo. “He was smart. He could have faked being better. He could have faked being changed.”

Mom gets a surprise visit

The first thing Lopez did upon his release was to make an impromptu visit to his mother.

“When he arrived, he said, ‘Mother, kneel down so I can bless you,’ and I said, ‘the one who should kneel down is you. A son should kneel before his mother.’ He got down on only one knee,” she remembered.

He then did something horrible, and asked his mother what she would give him of his inheritance. She pointed out that she had nothing, just a chair and a bed, and he put them on the porch, telling the woman who brought him into the world that if no one bought them, he would light her two sole possessions on fire rather than allow her to keep them.

A woman came by and purchased the only things Benilda López De Casteneda had in the world. Lopez pocketed the money, and disappeared.

It was the last time anyone saw him.

“Someday, when I am released, I will feel that moment again,” he once said. “I will be happy to kill again. It is my mission.”

“I lost my innocence at age eight,” he added, “so I decided to do the same to as many young girls as I could.”

Nations' residents in terror

Meanwhile, in Columbia, Ecuador and Peru, families who have heard that the Monster has been freed are watching carefully over their young girls.

Now and then, citizens report sightings in all three of Lopez's hunting grounds.

Police carry his photograph in case they spot him.

Lopez was to see a judge once a month after his release, a feeble attempt to keep him on the straight and narrow, but he immediately melted into the countryside. After that cruel visit to his mother, wiping out her valuables, he simply disappeared.

"God save the children. He is unreformed and totally remorseless. This whole nightmare may start again," said Victor Lascano, the warden at the Ecuadorian prison where Lopez was first held.

While a handful of girls have gone missing, many believe that Lopez is dead, the victim of well-deserved vigilante justice at the hands of some of his victim's survivors.

Still, in 2002 police issued an arrest warrant for Lopez when bodies of girls who had been murdered in a manner similar to that favored by Lopez turned up.

There were no leads, but it again reminded area residents that a madman could still be living in their midst.

"It will be a kindness to the world for someone to murder this fiend," said the mother of Maria Poveda, the Ecuadorian girl who was lucky enough to escape capture and helped lead to the arrest of Lopez. "The Monster of the Andes won't last long on the outside. Maybe that is why we haven't heard

of more missing girls. Perhaps someone, even the police in Columbia or Ecuador, have already killed him. If they have, I hope they made him suffer.”

“I am the man of the century,” Lopez once said in a prison interview with photojournalist Ron Laytner. “No one will ever forget me.”

NOTABLE: Lopez briefly held the Guinness World Records title of the “most prolific serial killer.”

Conclusion

In the United States, Stephanie George was sentenced to life in prison because police found a locked box in her attic filled with cocaine that belonged to her boyfriend. Because of the amount of the drug, and because as the man's girlfriend she was considered an accomplice, federal law superseded the judge's opinion that a life sentence was too harsh. As far as we know, Stephanie George never even used cocaine, nor was aware that her boyfriend was a dealer. None of that mattered in the face of mandatory sentencing laws, and at 27, life as she knew it ended.

Compare that to the lax sentencing in Ecuador or Colombia for the three serial killers who together have likely killed just under 1,000 children during their short-lived sprees.

Together, their sentences were not equal to a single life sentence, and they erased the chances of hundreds of young people living productive lives, including potentially bringing their families out of poverty.

Because of such lax sentencing laws when it comes to murder, it seems some South American countries need to take a hard look at how they view murder, and make changes to address multiple murders so that men like Pedro Lopez, Daniel Camargo, and Luis Garavito do not get a chance to find themselves released from prison and able to kill again.

True Crime Stories

12 Shocking True Crime Murder Cases

True Crime Anthology Vol.2

By

Jack Rosewood

&

Rebecca Lo

Copyright © 2016 by LAK Publishing

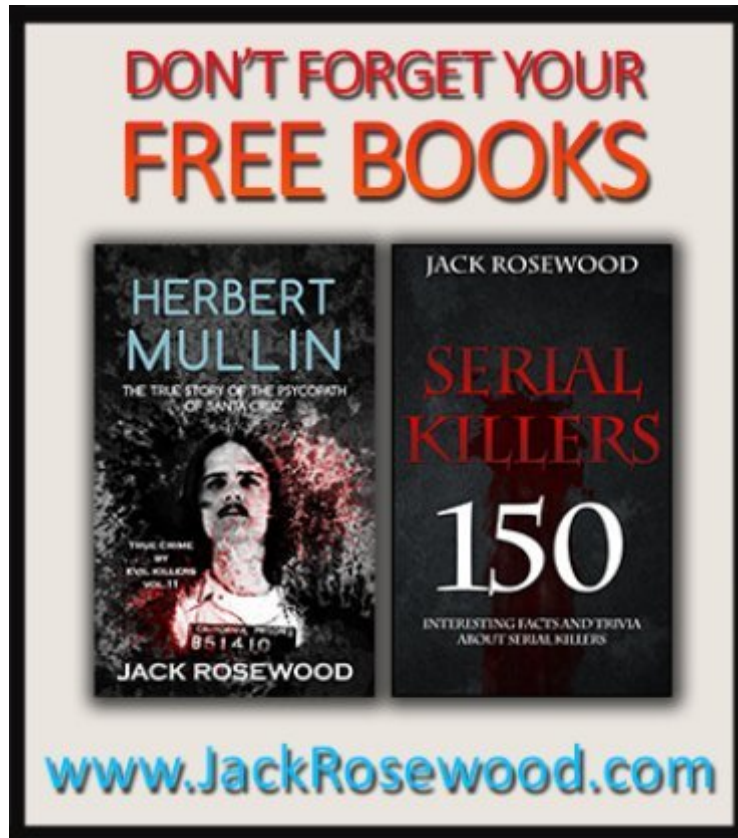
ALL RIGHTS RESERVED

No part of this book may be reproduced, stored in a retrieval system, or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic, mechanical, photocopying, recording, scanning, or otherwise, without the prior written permission of the publisher.

DISCLAIMER:

This crime anthology biography includes quotes from those closely involved in the twelve cases examined, and it is not the author's intention to defame or intentionally hurt anyone involved. The interpretation of the events leading up to these crimes are the author's as a result of researching the true crime murders. Any comments made about the psychopathic or sociopathic behavior of criminals involved in any of these cases are the sole opinion and responsibility of the person quoted.

Free Bonus!



Get two free books when you sign up to my VIP newsletter at

www.jackrosewood.com/free

150 interesting trivia about serial killers and the story of serial killer
Herbert Mullin.

Contents

[Free Bonus!](#)

[A Message from Jack Rosewood](#)

[Introduction](#)

[Chapter 1: Murder in the French Alps – Iqbal Al-Hilli and her Family.](#)

[From Scenic Views to Crime Scene](#)

[A Puzzle with Too Many Angles](#)

[Saad Al-Hilli](#)

[Sylvain Mollier](#)

[The Work of a Serial Killer?](#)

[Mystery Motorcyclist](#)

[The Legionnaire](#)

[Iqbal Al-Hilli](#)

[A Secret Husband?](#)

[Death by Coincidence](#)

[Murder Unsolved](#)

[Chapter 2: The Villisca Axe Murders](#)

[The Moore's](#)

[A Gruesome Scene](#)

[Who Were the Suspects?](#)

[Fourteen Witnesses Called to Coroner's Inquest](#)

[Deathbed and Jailhouse Confessions](#)

[Chapter 3: The Disappearance of Stacy Peterson and Christie Marie Cales](#)

[The Troubled Life of Stacy.](#)

[Gone Without a Trace](#)

[Morphey's Story](#)

[Kathleen Savio](#)

[Another Wife Murdered? The Trial of Drew Peterson](#)

[Disappearance of Her Mother—Christie Marie Cales](#)

[Chapter 4: Lucia de Berk – Angel of Death?](#)

[Accused of Seven Cases of Murder and Three Cases of Attempted Murder](#)

[The Trial and Sentencing](#)

[Doubts Emerge](#)

[Reopening of the Case](#)

[Justice Miscarried](#)

[Chapter 5: The Richardson Murders in Canada](#)

[The Discovery of the Crime Scene](#)

[A Shocking Suspect](#)

[Steinke Goes on Trial](#)

[A Lethal Romance](#)

[The Aftermath](#)

[Chapter 6: The Good Hart Murders](#)

[Family on Vacation](#)

[A Horrific Crime Scene](#)

[Evidence and Theories](#)

[The Suspects](#)

[Joseph R. Sclarro – Embezzler?](#)

[Nothing Resolved....Yet](#)

Chapter 7: Beslanowitch – The Murder of a Teen Prostitute

The Life of Krystal Beslanowitch

Cold on the River Bank

Reopening of the Case

DNA Points the Finger

Simpson's History – It Wasn't His First Murder

Chapter 8: Murder or Accident?

Sherri Miller and Pam Jackson Disappear

A False Accusation

Skeletons in the Studebaker

Chapter 9: When Suicide is Murder

The Death of Pamela Shelly

Television Steps In

Ronnie Hendrick

Chapter 10: Snatched From the Snow

The Disappearance of Maria Ridulph

A Tragic Discovery

Prime Suspect Right From the Start – Was Tessier Johnny?

A Mother's Deathbed Confession

A Long-Awaited Trial

Chapter 11: Captive for 24 Years – the Joseph Fritzl Case

An Incestuous Situation

A Visit to the Hospital Invokes Suspicion

The Trial of Josef Fritzl

The Psychological Scars and Fighting Back to Normality

[Chapter 12: A Controversial Case of Police Misconduct – Or Was it Murder By Cop?](#)

[Nizah Morris Left Lying in the Street](#)

[Police Request a Second Opinion](#)

[The Investigation into the Officers](#)

[Police Advisory Commission Called In](#)

[Something Good from Something Bad](#)

[More books by Jack Rosewood](#)

[GET THESE BOOKS FOR FREE](#)

[A Note From The Author](#)

[Excerpt from True Crime Stories Vol.3](#)

[The Melanie Road Murder Case](#)

[A Good Girl](#)

[A Vicious Attack](#)

A Message from Jack Rosewood

Thank you for getting your hands on this book. This is just one of many books in the True Crime Stories series. This book contains 12 short, but informative reads about different cases that shocked the world. After chapter twelve ends you can find excerpt from the next book in the series.

[CLICK HERE TO FIND THE FULL SERIES](#)

Introduction

Murder happens anywhere, at any time, and the rates of murder are increasing as is the size of the population around the world. Even an economic crisis can trigger an outbreak of sorts of murders. But there are always certain cases that stay in the recesses of your mind, even after years have passed. Why you remember them may depend on the individual case and whether or not you feel some kind of affinity with the victim. Others may stay in your memory because they are so horrific that you just can't forget about them. One thing's for sure—while the victim is being remembered, they are being honored in some small way. Remembering those who have been lost, helps to keep them alive, even if it is just in our memories.

There are twelve cases contained in this book. They range from multiple murders to mistaken identity crimes, as being accused and charged of a murder you didn't commit can also affect you for the rest of your life. There is a chapter on Josef Fritzl, the father who kept his daughter captive for twenty-four years, and the suicide that was found to be a homicide, thanks in part to a popular television program. An alleged angel of death, family murders, police misconduct, and the taking of a child— they are all stories that need to be remembered.

Some of these cases go back a long way, with one being the oldest cold case ever solved. Can you guess what it might be? Fifty years is a long time to wait to see justice done. Or was it? Twists, turns, puzzles, and psychopathy are all the makings of most of these murder cases. From the youngest victim to the youngest perpetrator, each chapter will draw you further into the history of these horrific crimes.

Chapter 1: Murder in the French Alps – Iqbal Al-Hilli and her Family

The murders of three family members and what appeared to be a random cyclist, as well as the wounding of two children, created shockwaves around the world. The nationalities of the victims, the remoteness of the attack, and the fact that two little girls were left to hide amongst the dead, brought law agencies around the world into the investigation. There were so many questions that needed to be answered—why them? How did they know they would be there? Was the cyclist involved? Was it an international hit? And was there a lot more to the story than anyone had realized?

From Scenic Views to Crime Scene

The French Alps is perhaps one of the most beautiful locations in the world and is a popular destination for vacationers. It is no wonder that Iqbal Al-Hilli, her husband Saad, their two daughters, and her elderly mother Suhaila Al-Allaf too decided to choose the Alps for their family vacation. What would ensue, however, would dramatically alter the pristine landscape that was to become one of absolute horror on September 5, 2012.

On a remote scenic vista near historic Lake Annecy sat the BMW the family was using for their trip. Inside the car were the bodies of Iqbal, Saad, and Suhaila, all of whom had been shot. One of their daughters was found outside the car. The seven year old who had been shot in the shoulder and also had a wound to the head. At the time of the discovery, nobody was aware that there was another young daughter. She was hiding beneath her mother's legs in the back of the car and remained hidden for some eight hours, even while the local police were on the scene, until she was finally discovered unhurt.

Further along the road a short distance lay the body of a cyclist, Frenchman Sylvain Mollier. He had reportedly been shot seven times, though nobody had a clue why or how he was tied in with the murdered family. Each of the victims inside the car had been shot twice in the head, and evidence at the scene showed that twenty-five shots in total were fired. The engine of the car was still running when discovered, and the car had been shifted into reverse, with the back wheels spinning in the loose sandy gravel.

A Puzzle with Too Many Angles

Initially, the case was handled by the local police, called the Gendarme, and then the National Gendarme joined in. There were so many angles to the tragedy that it was never going to be an easy one to solve. From the nationalities of the victims to their families, their lines of work, and links to a Middle East dictator, there were so many possible motives that eventually France and Britain created a joint investigation team to investigate.

Saad Al-Hilli

One of the first leads investigated was the background of Saad Al-Hilli. Originally from Iraq, Saad had once worked as an engineer on what were considered to be sensitive topics in Iraq, and he subsequently was employed in the nuclear and satellite technology industry in England. Satellites, nuclear technology, and ties with Iraq alone were enough to consider the murders an act of assassination with Saad being the main target.

There were also suspicious circumstances surrounding the family of Saad, namely his father and his brother Zaid. There had been a claim that £840,000 had been placed in a Swiss bank account in Saad's father's name by the regime of Saddam Hussein. There were even reports leaked that showed Saad may have had access to Saddam Hussein's bank accounts. Could the murders have been a contract hit related to the dictator?

To further add fuel to the theory of a family-related hit, his brother Zaid came under investigation due to a feud regarding a family inheritance. Zaid was eventually arrested in June 2013, but was subsequently released due to a lack of evidence, despite the suggestion that he tried to commit fraud by altering his father's will. However, suspicion always remained that he may have had a part to play in the murders.

Sylvain Mollier

Was Sylvain the innocent cyclist who was in the wrong place at the wrong time? Or was he the intended target and the family were the ones caught in the crossfire? Similar to Saad, Sylvain had also worked in the nuclear industry, and this was considered a possible lead. However, it was later substantiated that he was simply a welder and had no access to any delicate nuclear information, so this was later deemed unlikely to be the reason behind the murders. It seemed he really was just in the wrong place at the wrong time.

The Work of a Serial Killer?

This was perhaps one of the more far-fetched theories, with very little data to back it up. The detectives surmised that the murders were committed by a psychopath acting alone who perhaps had a dislike of tourists. This theory came about because of the similarities with a previous murder of a tourist in July 2012. There was never any real movement on this lead, and it was considered by most to be inconclusive.

Mystery Motorcyclist

A man riding a motorcycle was seen in the vicinity of the crime, but his identity was unknown. It wasn't until 2015 that the man in question was located by the police, and he was completely ruled out. He had simply been an innocent man out riding a motorcycle.

The Legionnaire

Patrice Menegaldo was an ex-soldier of the French Foreign Legion who found himself on the suspect list. He subsequently committed suicide, though the reason behind this is not clear. It is also not clear as to why he was ever considered a suspect, and despite the State Prosecutor at the time stating he was, the police denied he was ever considered a primary suspect.

Iqbal Al-Hilli

Initially the investigation focused on the background of her husband Saad and his potential links to both the nuclear industry and Saddam Hussein. Her background had seemed fairly straightforward, or so the investigators thought. However, it would later come out that she had a secret that very few people knew about, and this would lead to a further coincidental death and conspiracy.

A Secret Husband?

Before her marriage to Saad, Iqbal had once been married to an American gentleman named Jim Thompson. What had appeared to be simply a marriage of convenience to enable Iqbal to get her U.S. Green Card was perhaps more than anyone realized.

During her time in the U.S., Iqbal went by the name of Kelly, and upon meeting ex-cop Jim in 1999, he agreed to help her out by marrying her so that she could live and work there. The marriage was said to be platonic yet very caring. However, Iqbal discovered that her dentistry qualifications weren't accepted by the U.S. and ended the marriage just months later. Jim reluctantly drove her to the airport and said goodbye.

Her next contact with Jim was in 2003, when she declared she had fallen in love with another man, Saad, and she needed a divorce. Jim happily granted her the divorce, and she went on to marry the man she would later die with. But the story between Iqbal and Jim didn't end there.

Jim's sister Judy Weatherly would later state that Jim and Iqbal had stayed in touch throughout the nine years she was married to Saad. Regular emails went back and forth, and Iqbal's family knew nothing about it at all. They didn't even know she had once been married to Jim. There has even been suggestion that the divorce was never legalized, which would mean Iqbal had entered her marriage to Saad as a bigamist. So what was the importance of this secret relationship in relation to the murders? Here's where it gets even more bizarre and interesting.

Death by Coincidence

On exactly the same day that Iqbal and her family were slaughtered in the French Alps, her former husband Jim died at the wheel of his car, presumably from a heart attack. This extraordinary coincidence would lead the French investigators to question whether or not the deaths were related in some way. Jim may have been sixty years and had a history of high blood pressure, but the timing of his death seemed too much of a freak occurrence, considering what had happened to his ex-wife at that same point in time.

To further add to the speculation, he had allegedly called his sister Judith two weeks before his death and instructed her that if anything happened to him she was to go through his room, as there was something there that would be surprising. Judith followed through with his wishes, but the only thing she found was a box full of photos and information about his marriage to Iqbal. It seemed he clearly wanted people to know they had been married, but for what reason? Was he trying to say he had been forewarned or knew he was at risk of being killed?

The death of Jim became increasingly important to the French authorities, who started to question whether he had also been murdered due to something between him and Iqbal. The most likely scenario, according to the authorities, was that he had been poisoned, which would mimic a heart attack. They set about requesting an exhumation to test for the presence of poisons, but Judith would not allow it. The FBI also supported the request for an exhumation, but the American authorities refused, believing there were not sufficient grounds to commit such an act. As recent as 2015, the FBI has considered making a further request for the exhumation to take place, and questions are still not answered.

Murder Unsolved

To date, there has been no further progress in identifying the motive or the perpetrator of the tragic murders of the Al-Hilli family and the cyclist, Sylvain Mollier. Though there have been a number of theories and leads, they veer off in so many directions that it has proven impossible so far to narrow them down to one plausible suspect. Did Saddam Hussein's regime put a contract on Saad's head because he had accessed bank accounts he shouldn't have? Or did he have too much information regarding satellites and nuclear technologies in the Middle East?

Did Saad's brother Zaid have his own relatives executed over an inheritance? Or had he been stealing money from the family account and felt the need to remove any potential possibility of being discovered? After all, family feuds can often lead to violence. But to kill your own brother, his wife, her mother, and leave the two little girls orphans is a pretty big stretch. Not to mention the poor cyclist who just happened to come along at the wrong time.

Another thing to consider is that the girls were not killed. If it was a contract hit, why would they have left living witnesses? Sure, the girls were only young, but who knows what they may have seen, heard or experienced? The killer or killers had time to shoot each victim in the head twice, yet only one of the girls had injuries—a bullet to the shoulder and a head injury from being pistol-whipped. It's true that the youngest of the girls was hiding underneath the legs of her dead mother, but an assassin that knows who the family is and where they are going to be at that present moment in time would surely know there were two children also traveling in the car. Why were they spared? A heartless, psychopathic killer isn't going to worry about sparing the children—they simply wouldn't care.

Finally, strong consideration should be given to the possibility of Jim, Iqbal's first husband, having been murdered on the very same day. Sure, coincidences do occur, but this one is just so bizarre that it is too good to be true. What did he know? Had Iqbal been confiding even more secrets to Jim? Why did he mention the possibility of something happening to him just weeks before he died? Unfortunately, there have been many questions and few answers in this case, and at this point in time they are no closer to solving it. The authorities involved in this case still hope for that major breakthrough that will put an end to this terrible mystery.

Chapter 2: The Villisca Axe Murders

In 1912, Villisca was a small Midwestern town in Iowa with a population of just 2,500. Despite its size, it was a busy little town with trains coming and going every day, businesses up and down the streets, and it was home to the first publicly funded armory in the whole state. For many, the name ‘Villisca’ meant ‘pleasant view’ or ‘pretty place’. But regardless of the business successes and the beauty of the town, its history would be forever marred by one single event—the brutal and horrifying murder of eight people in one house, on one night, with an axe.

The Moore's

The Moore family was well liked in the community, and their affluence was well known. The members of the family were Josiah, who was 43 at the time, his wife Sarah, aged 39, and their children, Herman Montgomery, aged 11, Mary Katherine, 10, Arthur Boyd, 7, and Paul Vernon, 5. They were regular church attendees, and on the evening of June 9, 1912, the children had been participating in the Presbyterian Church's Children's Day Program. This program lasted until 9:30 p.m., and the Moore family invited two young girls, Ina Mae Stillinger, aged 8, and her sister Lena Gertrude, who was 12 years old, to stay the night in their home. All walked back to the home of the Moores, arriving somewhere between 9:45 to 10 p.m. No one is sure what time the family and their guests retired to bed that evening, or what if anything was amiss in the house when they got home. What is known, however, is that what did occur during the night in that house would become legendary, for all the wrong reasons.

A Gruesome Scene

On the morning of June 10, the next door neighbor, Mary Peckham, found it strange that the family next door was not up and about at 7 a.m. as they usually were. She was used to hearing and seeing the family members as they started their morning chores, but they hadn't appeared, and the curtains were all closed. Mary decided to check on the family and went and knocked on the door, but nobody responded. She tried to open the door, but it was still locked. Fearing something was very wrong, she called Josiah's brother Ross to investigate. Oddly, she first let the Moore's chickens out of their coop—goodness knows why.

Ross arrived at the house, and like Mary he knocked on the door, shouting out in the hopes that someone inside would hear him. On receiving no response, he proceeded to unlock the door with his copy of the key to the house. Mary waited anxiously on the porch as Ross entered the house and made his way into the guest bedroom. The scene that greeted him was horrific—the bodies of the Stillinger sisters dead in the bed. Moore instructed Mary to call the local officer, Hank Horton, who arrived within a short period of time. It was Horton who further investigated the rest of the house, finding body after body of the Moore family, all with horrific head wounds. In the guest room where the bodies of the Stillinger sisters lay was a bloodied axe, and that was immediately identified as the murder weapon.

Though the injuries to each of the victims were gruesome, it was Josiah who seemed to have been dealt the most vicious blows. Unlike the others who had been bludgeoned to death with the blunt end of the axe, it was the sharp end that had been used on Josiah. In fact, his wounds were so horrific that his eyes were missing in his cut-up face. Gouge marks in the ceilings of the bedrooms had been created by the swinging of the axe; in some cases,

these gouges were in the center of the room, not near the beds, and it was surmised that the killer must have been in some sort of wild frenzy, swinging the axe triumphantly after each kill.

The pillows on the beds were soaked in blood and spattered with brain matter. By the time the first doctor entered the house, the blood had congealed into a jelly, and clots were noticeable, and this indicated they had been killed somewhere shortly after midnight. Each of the victims had their faces covered with their bedclothes, and all lay in their beds as though they had been killed while sleeping, except for Lena Stillinger. Her body showed defensive wounds, suggesting she had tried to fight off the attacker. Her nightgown had been pushed up and her underwear removed, and her body had been posed in a sexual manner. Naturally consideration was given to the possibility she had been sexually assaulted or raped, but this was never determined without a doubt.

There were other strange things about the crime scene that made no sense at all. Although it is normal to pull the curtains closed on the windows, those which did not have curtains were covered with clothing that had belonged to the victims. Every mirror in the house had also been covered, which was truly bizarre. At the foot of Josiah and Sarah's bed sat a kerosene lamp with the chimney missing and the wick turned to black. The chimney was eventually found beneath a dresser. Another lamp was found at the end of the guest bed, where the bodies of the Stillinger girls lay. It too had the chimney missing. The axe itself, although covered in blood, showed signs that the killer had tried to wipe away the blood to no avail. The axe was found to belong to Josiah. In the bedroom downstairs, a small piece of keychain was found that didn't seem to belong to anyone in the house. On the table in the kitchen was a pan containing bloody water and a plate of food that hadn't been touched. Up in the attic, two cigarette butts were

located, and it was assumed that the killer (perhaps killers) had waited up there for the family to return home. This was perhaps the most terrifying piece of evidence—to think that this innocent family returned home following a pleasant evening only to be ambushed by someone waiting inside.

Who Were the Suspects?

There were numerous suspects on the list, and one was even arrested and tried for the crime, though eventually he was acquitted. They ranged from transients to a reverend, and even a serial killer, but nobody was ever held accountable and brought to justice for this horrific massacre of the Moore family and the Stillinger girls.

Andrew Sawyer

Naturally, any transients or strangers were considered suspicious during the investigation into the murders. This is generally because people as a rule don't trust strangers, and nobody wants to consider that maybe it was someone they knew. In small towns in particular, people are more wary of those they don't know. One such man that fit this bill was Andrew Sawyer.

There was never any concrete evidence to suggest Sawyer had played a part in the killings. Instead, he was brought to light by a gentleman who worked for the railroad and had interacted with Sawyer on the morning of the murders in nearby Creston. Thomas Dyer alleged that Sawyer had appeared around 6 a.m. that morning looking for work. He was dressed in a brown suit, was shaven, his pants were wet almost up to his knees, and his shoes were covered in mud. Workers were highly sought after, so he was hired there and then. Later that evening, Sawyer apparently bought a newspaper with the murders broadcast across the front page, and he went off alone to read it.

Apparently, Sawyer was very interested in the murders, and he talked about them often with his fellow workers. Even more strange, he had a habit of sleeping with his axe next to him. He would later tell Dyer that he had been in Villisca the night of the murders but had left for fear of being considered

a suspect. When considering all of the strange behaviors he had exhibited, Dyer handed Sawyer over to the sheriff on June 18, 1912.

Despite the statements Sawyer had made to his work colleagues and the intense interest he seemed to show in the murders, even placing himself in town on the night in question, it would later be proven that he was innocent. On investigation, it turned out that Sawyer had been arrested on that very night in a town called Osceola, also in Iowa, for vagrancy. Therefore, he had an alibi.

The Reverend George Kelly

Kelly was a man with a disturbing background who happened to be at the very same Children's Day services the Moore family and the Stillinger sisters attended that day, June 9, 1912. Born in England, Kelly was a traveling minister who many regarded as being rather odd. It was claimed that he had suffered some type of mental breakdown when he was younger, and his adult behavior included lewd acts such as peeping and trying to get young girls to pose for him in the nude. Strangely, he left Villisca somewhere between 5 a.m. and 5:30 a.m., just hours after the murders had occurred and before the bodies were found.

Over the following weeks, he showed a strong fascination with the case. He began to write letters to the investigators, the police, and even the mourning family members. As expected, this behavior seemed suspicious to the investigators, and they in turn wrote back asking if Kelly happened to know anything about the killings. Kelly replied that he may have witnessed the crimes being committed and had heard sounds that evening. However, due to his history of mental illness, the police were unsure whether he was recalling facts because he was involved or whether he was just making it all up.

Kelly was arrested on a different matter in 1914, after having sent obscene material to a woman who had applied to work for him. As a result he was sent to a mental health hospital in Washington, which left the police unsure if he was the killer or not. However, in 1917 they decided to interrogate Kelly again, and following several hours of questioning, Kelly confessed to the crimes. Later he would recant this confession, claiming to be innocent after all. Two trials followed, and the jury obviously agreed with him, as the first trial resulted in a hung jury and the second led to an acquittal.

State Senator Frank F. Jones

As a suspect, Senator Jones was perhaps the least likely to have been behind the murders. However, there was a rumor that he had hired William 'Blackie' Mansfield to commit the crimes following an issue that had arisen between the Senator and Josiah Moore. Josiah at one time had worked for the Senator at his implement shop for several years and then left his employment so he could open up his own store. This resulted in the Senator losing a lot of his customers to Josiah, including a very lucrative dealership with John Deere. There were also rumors around town that Josiah and the Senator's daughter-in-law had an affair, though this was never substantiated. Would a man such as the State Senator have ordered the assassination of an entire family over something such as lost business and possible adultery? The investigators clearly didn't think so, as this matter was not taken any further, at least where the Senator was concerned. Mansfield, on the other hand, was an entirely different matter.

William 'Blackie' Mansfield

Mansfield came to light as a potential suspect not only because of the rumor of his being hired by the Senator, but also because of murders he subsequently committed following the massacre in the Moore household.

Two years after the murders in Villisca, Mansfield was suspected of murdering his wife, child, father-in-law and mother-in-law in very similar circumstances, which made the authorities take a much closer look at Mansfield. He was linked by circumstance to the axe murders in Colorado Springs just nine months before Villisca and another axe murder in Ellsworth, Kansas. He was also suspected of being the perpetrator of axe murders in Paola, Kansas, just four days before the tragedy at Villisca. Furthermore, he was a prime suspect in the axe murders in Illinois of Jennie Miller and Jennie Peterson. More axe murders occurring around the same time period were also considered to be the work of one man. The similarities between all of these murders were spine-tingling.

Each of these murders was committed in the same manner, which would indicate they were done by the same person. All victims were attacked with an axe, and the mirrors in each home had been covered. A kerosene lamp was left burning with the chimney removed at the foot of each bed. A basin containing bloody water was found at each scene, where the murdered had obviously tried to clean himself. Gloves were worn at each crime scene, leaving no trace of fingerprints. The coincidences were just too good to be true, and although we have more access to media information these days, back then the chances of there being a copycat killer or killers roaming the streets were less likely.

In 1916, the Grand Jury agreed to embark on an investigation and Mansfield was arrested. He was transported from Kansas City to Montgomery County to face questioning. Despite all of the evidence that seemed to indicate he was the murderer, Mansfield was found to have a legitimate alibi for the night of the murders in Villisca and so was set free without being charged. He would then bring a lawsuit against the detective who had pursued him as a suspect, Detective James Wilkerson. Mansfield

won his case and was awarded the staggering amount of \$2,225. This was a huge amount in those days. Some speculated that the Senator played a part in getting Mansfield released, but this was never proven.

Henry Lee Moore

Henry, who was no relation to Josiah Moore and his family, had been convicted of a double axe murder months after the murders in Villisca. Henry had killed his mother and his grandmother, and there was much suspicion that Henry was actually a serial killer. The crimes were very similar, especially as the same type of weapon was used, but there was never any evidence to link him to the Moore family murders. He was always considered a suspect, however, and he was never completely ruled out.

Fourteen Witnesses Called to Coroner's Inquest

Remarkably, the coroner called the jury together and began the inquest on June 11, 1912, just two days after the murders had taken place. Nowadays it can take months or years for an inquest to take place, let alone in the same week! Anyway, the county coroner at the time was Dr. Linquist, and he and the members of the jury all visited the Moore house to view the scene and the bodies before they were removed. A temporary morgue was set up at the local fire station, and the bodies were finally moved there around 2 a.m. on the June 10.

A total of fourteen witnesses were called to testify at the inquest, and they were as follows:

- Mary Peckham—the neighbor who raised the alarm that something was wrong at the house
- Ed Selley—an employee of Josiah, Ed had arrived to take care of the animals
- Dr. J. Clark Cooper—the first doctor to enter the house following the discovery
- Jessie Moore—Ross Moore's wife, who took the call from Mary
- Dr. F.S. Williams—the doctor who examined the bodies
- Edward Landers—was staying just up the road at his mother's house and claimed he heard a noise around 11 p.m.
- Ross Moore—Josiah's brother, the first person to gain entry to the house
- Fenwick Moore—also Josiah's brother
- Marshall Hank Horton—the first officer to enter the house
- John Lee Van Gilder—Josiah's nephew
- Harry Moore—Josiah's brother

- Joseph Stillinger—the father of the murdered Stillinger girls
- Blanche Stillinger—sister of the murdered Stillinger girls
- Charles Moore—another of Josiah's brothers

Most of the witnesses were called to testify regarding what they had seen when entering the house that day. The descriptions given by some were gruesome to say the least, but their testimony was all consistent. Josiah's brothers were called largely to speak of any troubles Josiah may have had or been in, such as business problems. None could say that they were aware of any issues or of anyone who wished to cause the family such terrible harm. One brother, Charles, was asked to testify regarding whether the axe belonged to Josiah or not. Although he couldn't say it was for sure, he did state that Josiah owned one similar. It must have been a terrible burden on both the Moore and Stillinger families to have to endure the inquest so quickly after the tragedy. They barely had time to digest what had happened before being thrust into a courtroom to discuss it, and the details must have been truly shocking. Particularly for the father of the two little Stillinger girls who had simply gone to a friend's house for the night.

Deathbed and Jailhouse Confessions

On March 19, 1917, a reverend by the name of J.J. Burris, who was the pastor of the Church of Christ in Oklahoma, traveled to Red Oak because of a deathbed confession he had received. Burris was subpoenaed by the grand jury of Montgomery County to give evidence regarding this confession of the murders of the Moore family. Burris had claimed that a man whose name he could not remember had summoned him to his hotel room so that he could confess his sins before dying. This took place in July 1913, just over a year after the murders had been committed.

Burris stated that when he arrived at the man's room, he could tell straight away that he was near death, and despite his physical state, the man began to talk the minute he entered the room. The man claimed that he had committed many sins, but the worst was the murders in Villisca. He had been living in the town at the time, working in the blacksmith industry, and his sister had been married to a physician in Villisca before moving to Radersburg. He was unable to speak for long due to his deteriorating condition, and as such was incapable of giving any details. Burris estimated the man to be around twenty-five years old, and it was believed he had part ownership in a blacksmith business in Radersburg.

Because the story was unclear, Detective Wilkerson decided that it would not stand up in court, as too little information was available. The man who had made the confession was dead and unable to stand trial anyway. The story was pushed aside as irrelevant.

George Meyers Confesses in Jail

In March 1931, a prisoner in a county jail in Detroit who was awaiting sentencing for burglary made a startling confession, stating he was the one

who had committed the axe murders in Villisca. Meyers had been under interrogation for around five hours by detectives at the time of his confession, following an anonymous tip that he was the man they were looking for. It was believed that Meyers' fingerprints had been found at the murder scene; however, this was unlikely as no fingerprints were found in the Moore house.

Meyers' confession stated that he had been hired to kill the family by a businessman, though he could not recall his name. The price on offer was \$5,000—a huge amount. He claimed his name had been given to these people through acquaintances in the Kansas City underworld. This acquaintance escorted him to Villisca to meet with the man who wished to hire him. He was shown the house where the family lived and told to kill them all. A deposit payment of \$2,000 was given, and Meyers was told he would receive the rest after the job was done. Meyers then entered the house shortly after midnight and slaughtered the two adults and four children with an axe. When meeting with the businessman afterwards he was told he would have to wait for the rest of the money. Meyers decided it was best to flee town before the sun came up for fear of being caught.

Now, if you read that carefully, you would see what the problem was with Meyers' confession. George Meyers only confessed to killing six people that night—two adults and four children. But there were eight killed in that house, not six. He flatly denied killing the Stillinger girls, only the Moore family. Although there had been a witness story that claimed three men had been overhead talking in the forest near the house the night of the murders about committing the crime, and this seems to fit with Meyers, his acquaintance, and the businessman, there is no way Meyers would have gotten the number of victims wrong. Therefore, it was decided that this confession was nonsense, and no further action was taken against him for

the crime. To date, nobody has ever been charged with these murders, so the case remains unsolved.

Chapter 3: The Disappearance of Stacy Peterson and Christie Marie Cales

One day she was there, the next she had vanished without a trace. The story of Stacy Peterson and her disappearance was one that would baffle investigators. How could someone simply vanish off the face of the earth? However, Stacy had the misfortune of being married to a man who was not at all what he seemed—Drew Peterson, police officer, husband, and murderer. Was he behind her disappearance?

The Troubled Life of Stacy

Stacy had lived a terrible childhood, fraught with fighting parents, alcohol abuse, violence, and neglect. Her mother seemed incapable of doing anything except drinking a case of beer each day and lying on the couch while the children were left to fend for themselves. They had already lost one child in a house fire and then lost a baby to SIDs later on. These tragedies most likely contributed to the volatile household and Stacy's mother's regular stays in both jail and mental hospitals. Despite all of this, Stacy was able to stay on the right path, and she graduated from high school early at just sixteen years of age.

With a dream of becoming a nurse but unable to afford the education, Stacy took on a variety of odd jobs. When she was seventeen in 2001, she was working at a hotel as a desk clerk when she met the man she would later marry, police officer Drew Peterson. Drew was 47 years old and on his third marriage when they met, but that didn't stop either of them. Stacy saw in Drew the father figure she had never really had and a chance at a secure life. Drew divorced his wife in October 2003, and eight days later he married Stacy.

The first child they had together was a boy called Anthony, who was named after Stacy's father. She was right in her element in her role as wife and mother, and she was an excellent housewife. She believed she had a good marriage, probably because she was young and naïve. Drew would call her constantly when she went out, even if she was just going to the grocery store. He would not let her get a job, he did nothing to take care of the baby, and he more or less tried to control every aspect of her life.

In 2004, Drew's ex-wife Kathleen Savio was found dead, apparently having had an accident in the bathtub. Stacy was quick to defend her husband

against any allegations that he had been behind the death, and she even provided an alibi for him. By then she had another child, Lacy, who was named after her sister who passed away, so young Stacy had two children to worry about and was desperate to keep the family together. She would do or say anything to protect her husband.

When Stacy was twenty-three, following the loss of her sister Tina to cancer, she started to make changes in her life. She started to take the children to Bible studies, had taken on a job as an Avon sales rep, and was generally taking better care of herself and her appearance. This all went against Drew's instructions, and he certainly wasn't pleased. But by now Stacy had started to question whether her husband had been involved in the death of his wife Kathleen. By October 2007, she had decided she wanted a divorce.

Just one week later, on October 28, Stacy had vanished.

Gone Without a Trace

On the day of October 28, 2007, Stacy was meant to go and help her sister with some painting, but she never arrived. She sent a text message that Sunday morning at 10:15 saying she wasn't ready to get up out of bed yet. There was no further contact. From then onward, nobody would ever hear from Stacy or see her again. She literally just vanished without a trace.

Drew claimed Stacy had called him that same night from an airport, saying she had met another man and was leaving. Despite this story, her family reported her missing, as they knew she wouldn't have gone without her kids. Family and friends also knew that Stacy had been making plans to leave Drew, so there was no chance she would just up and go without carrying those plans through.

While the authorities and numerous volunteers scoured the area for any trace of Stacy, Drew seemed to be treating it with very little concern. He made flippant remarks and treated the whole situation as if it was a bit of a joke. When questioned about Stacy wanting a divorce, he claimed she asked him all the time for one, depending on her menstrual cycle. Drew Peterson was showing a side of himself that people hadn't seen before, and it was very unpleasant.

The night before her disappearance, Stacy had been hanging out with her sister, Cassandra Cales, and had said to her sister that if anything ever happened to her it was Drew that did it. Cassandra desperately pleaded with her sister to leave with her right then and there, but Stacy said she couldn't leave the children.

Morphey's Story

Thomas Morphey was the stepbrother of Drew, and he had quite the story to tell. The only difficulty was getting people to listen. Morphey stated he was involved in conversations with Drew over a period of two days, starting on October 27, wherein he was convinced Drew was planning to murder someone. It all started with Drew arriving at Morphey's residence and asking him to go for a ride to a nearby park. Allegedly, Drew asked him if he loved him enough to kill for him, to which Morphey replied no, he would be unable to live with himself. Drew then asked if he could live with himself knowing about it. To this question Morphey replied yes, further adding that they had already assumed Drew had killed Kathleen.

Drew then proceeded to tell Morphey that Stacy had been unfaithful and that he had seen her out with other men, and something had to be done about it. He then drove them to a storage facility and asked Morphey to rent a locker for him, and told him if he put it in his own name, he would be paid \$2,000. Assuming Drew was planning to store a body there, Morphey was concerned that it would smell. Drew replied that it would be in a sealed container, so it wouldn't be a problem. It was at that very point Morphey knew Drew was going to murder someone, but he didn't realize it would be Stacy. He thought it would be the man she was allegedly having an affair with.

Despite Drew's persuasion, Morphey couldn't rent the locker, as he didn't have any identification with him. He returned home, and after a few hours he called Drew and told him he didn't want to be involved in anything, and Drew stated he respected his wishes. However, the following day Drew arrived at Morphey's residence completely unannounced and again asked to go for a ride to the park. When they reached the park, Morphey was given a

cell phone and told not to answer it. Drew then left, leaving Morphey to wonder what was going on.

The phone rang twice, forty-five minutes after Drew had left Morphey in the park. The caller ID showed the calls were coming from Stacy's cell phone, and he suddenly realized that Drew was setting it up to murder Stacy. He assumed Drew was driving around to various locations so the cell phone would ping off different towers when police investigated. An hour later, Drew came back, picked up Morphey, and took back the cell phone. Morphey again told Drew that he didn't want to be involved and that he wanted to go home. Drew said he just needed to pop over to the house for a minute. Despite his disagreement, Morphey went along with him.

Morphey waited outside the house, and out came Drew with a large blue barrel. Drew was unable to get it down the stairs on his own, so Morphey had to help him. They then loaded it into the back of the truck. Morphey was driven home and instructed that 'none of this ever happened'. Despite not actually assisting with the murder of Stacy, the fact that he had been involved with the suspicious phone calls and had helped to carry the barrel which most likely contained her body, created so much guilt that the following day Morphey attempted suicide. His wife rushed him to the hospital, and once he had recovered, he was taken to the police by his brother. Even though he had been somewhat involved, he was granted immunity from prosecution and placed under police protection for six months while he waited to be called by the grand jury.

The lawyer acting for Drew, Joel Brodsky described Morphey's story as a tale dreamt up by an alcohol and drug addict. He did not believe Morphey was a credible witness because of his problems with addiction and therefore would be unlikely to ever be called to testify.

Kathleen Savio

While married to Vicki Connolly, Drew embarked on an affair with Kathleen Savio. His marriage to Vicki was falling apart due to his infidelities and controlling behavior, and they divorced in 1992. Soon after the divorce was finalized, Kathleen and Drew were married. They would go on to have two sons, Kristopher and Thomas. The marriage was not a happy one for very long, and in 2002 Kathleen got a protection order against her husband due to physical abuse. By 2003, Drew was involved with Stacy, and he and Kathleen divorced. However, the financial issues of the marriage were never finalized, and they were still trying to come to an agreement in April 2004. A hearing was set, but Kathleen would never attend, as by March 1, 2004, she was dead.

Kathleen's body was found in her bathtub at home. There was no water in the bathtub, and there were some injuries to her body, yet the physician who performed the initial autopsy claimed it was an accidental death. He surmised that she had slipped in the bathtub and hit her head, drowning, and that was the cause of death. Drew had seemed to get away with it, until his fourth wife Stacy disappeared and the police decided to take another look at the death. Stacy had admitted to at least three people in the days leading up to her disappearance that she believed Drew had murdered Kathleen, so this accusation was taken very seriously.

A second autopsy was conducted on Kathleen, with surprising results. The front of her body was covered in bruises, and Dr. Larry Blum believed these were fresh. There were scrape marks down her back, and he brushed away the initial autopsy report stating these were from rubbing against the back of the bathtub as ridiculous. The surface of the tub was incredibly smooth, and there was nothing there that could have made those marks. The back of

Kathleen's head had a wound that had split the skin but not the skull beneath. Blum determined this was most likely from a direct blow. His final determination was that Kathleen had been subjected to a brutal attack shortly before her death and that her death was not an accident at all.

Another Wife Murdered? The Trial of Drew Peterson

Drew was indicted on two counts of first degree murder in 2009, in relation to Kathleen Savio's death. He was held in custody from May and stayed there until his trial. A lot of the evidence against Drew would normally be considered hearsay, but due to a special law passed in Illinois in 2008, exceptions could be made in some cases.

The trial began in July 2012, after much negotiation regarding the secondhand witness statements and as to what would be allowed and what would not. Of the fourteen statements handed to the judge, only eight were approved for use during the trial. The prosecution team had requested a mistrial, but Peterson himself withdrew this request, as he wanted the current jury to hear his case. The trial would last months, until the final verdict was given on September 6, 2012. Drew Peterson was found guilty and convicted of the first degree murder of Kathleen and was sentenced to sixty years in prison. But that wasn't to be the end of courtrooms for Drew.

Drew was charged of trying to organize a hit on the Will County State's Attorney James Glasgow in February 2015. This had come about following a year of Drew's activities between September 2013 and December 2014, when he had been trying to arrange for the attorney's murder. He was charged with one count of solicitation of murder and one count of solicitation of murder for hire.

Now that Drew had been found guilty of the murder of his ex-wife Kathleen, the family and friends of Stacy Peterson began to push for further investigation into her disappearance. It seemed more than likely that if he could murder one wife to be rid of a perceived problem, then surely it would be easy for him to do the same to another wife. To this day, he still claims she ran away with another man.

Disappearance of Her Mother—Christie Marie Cales

Christie's life had been one of pain, suffering and addiction. Having tragically lost two children, Christie embarked on a downward spiral that would see her consumed by an addiction and having to go into mental institutions for treatment. She seemed completely incapable of dealing with daily life, and her children to husband Anthony Cales were left to take care of themselves. The marriage continued to deteriorate, and Christie had a habit of disappearing sometimes for weeks. In 1990, Christie was arrested for stealing cigarettes from a store and was then caught driving while under the influence in alcohol. The family was in serious trouble, and financial matters had reached the point where there were two foreclosures on the family home.

That same year, Anthony filed for divorce, unable to cope with Christie's behavior and the effects on the family any longer. Initially Christie contested the divorce, but she repeatedly missed the court hearings, and Anthony was granted full and sole custody of the children. Christie moved in with other family members, and eventually Anthony and the children moved to Florida. Despite the distance, Christie was still able to see the children from time to time.

Christie met another man and moved in with him. In 1998, Christie left the house carrying her bible and purse and was never seen or heard from again. There were different witness statements, with some saying Christie had said she was going to church, which would make sense given the bible she was carrying, and others saying she was going shopping. Because Christie had a history of disappearing now and then, it wasn't taken too seriously at first. However, her daughters Stacy, Cassandra, and Tina, all believed she was murdered, and they suspected Christie's boyfriend of being the killer. They

tried to make a case with the local police, but they failed to agree, and no investigation was undertaken.

It is so ironic and tragic that both mother and daughter would disappear, leaving friends and family to wonder what ever happened to them. One thing is for sure—both are most likely to have been murdered.

Chapter 4: Lucia de Berk – Angel of Death?

Unlike the previous chapters where the focus was on a murder victim, in this case the victim is still very much alive. Lucia de Berk was a pediatric nurse in her home country of the Netherlands, and due to an investigation into unexplained deaths of patients in her care, she was subsequently arrested, charged, and found guilty of murder and attempted murder. However, Lucia was not the angel of death so many suspected at all. Instead, she was a victim of a terrible miscarriage of justice which almost saw her put behind bars for the rest of her natural life.

Accused of Seven Cases of Murder and Three Cases of Attempted Murder

Lucia was working as a pediatric nurse at the Juliana Children's Hospital in The Hague, Netherlands, when an investigation into suspicious deaths during hospital admissions was undertaken. On September 4, 2001, a baby died suddenly while in the hospital, and this triggered an investigation into any unexpected deaths or resuscitation attempts. It was found that there had been nine incidents between September 2000 and September 2001, which originally were thought to be natural deaths but on further inspection of the records appeared to be highly suspicious.

One nurse had been on duty on the occasion of each of these deaths—Lucia. At the time, she was responsible for giving medication and managing the care of each patient. To the hospital, it seemed too much of a coincidence that she had been taking care of each of these nine patients before they suddenly died, and they proceeded to press charges against Lucia.

The Trial and Sentencing

The allegations against Lucia involved cases from three hospitals in the immediate area, all of which had suspicious deaths occur while she was on duty and present. She was brought to trial in March 2003, and was only charged with the deaths and attempted deaths that the medical experts concluded had no natural causes. It was suggested that Lucia had poisoned each patient, resulting in cardiac arrest and death. In some cases the patients had been saved by cardiopulmonary resuscitation, but Lucia was still charged with attempted murder in these cases.

During the trial, Lucia's character was naturally brought into question. It was alleged that she had once worked as a prostitute while living in Canada and also in the Netherlands, before she became a nurse. It was also alleged that she suffered from depression, and her own brother claimed she was an avid liar and he believed she was capable of committing murder.

But what really sealed the fate of Lucia was the judiciary relying on statistical reports that showed that the probability of a nurse being on duty during each incident was 1 in 342 million. With such staggering odds, the trial only lasted five days, and at the end Lucia was found guilty of the murders and attempted murders on March 24, 2003. The sentence she received was life imprisonment, and in the Netherlands, life meant life.

The first appeal was put forward on June 18, 2004. This was rejected, and the conviction was upheld. Lucia was also sentenced to detention with psychiatric treatment, even though the criminal psychologist assigned by the state could find no evidence that she was suffering from a mental illness. The case was then presented to the Netherlands Supreme Court in March 2006, at which time it was deemed incorrect to impose a psychiatric detention at the same time as life imprisonment. Despite this, the Supreme

Court returned the case back to the court in Amsterdam to reevaluate any facts that had arisen to support an appeal. Just days after the Supreme Court had made its ruling, Lucia suffered a stroke and was admitted to the prison hospital. On July 13, 2006, the Court of Appeal upheld the initial verdict and conviction, and the life sentence was given once again. This time however, the psychiatric detention was dismissed.

Doubts Emerge

Many people had begun to support Lucia, and a committee was created that continuously expressed doubts about her conviction and sentence. One of these doubts pertained to the usage of chain-link proof, wherein a person found guilty without reasonable doubt in one case is therefore guilty in subsequent cases. For Lucia, that meant that because she was found guilty of two of the murders, the court system therefore concluded she must be guilty of the others. This also means that evidence does not need to be terribly strong in all of the cases.

The two murders that were supposedly proven were based on the fact that the medical experts were unable to find the deaths were caused by natural causes. Digoxin was the drug suspected of poisoning in both of the patients, and it was supposedly detected in samples from one child by two separate laboratories. However, the methods used were not refined enough to exclude that it could have actually been a similar substance the body naturally produces. The samples were sent to another laboratory, the Strasbourg Laboratory, which used a newer method that tests for sensitivity and high specificity, meaning the analysis was more delicate. They found that there was no evidence to support the presence of digoxin, and so the allegation of death by poisoning with this drug was not conclusive.

For the other child, it was surmised that the overdose could have been due to a faulty prescription. In both cases, there were no clear signs as to how Lucia was even able to administer the digoxin. There was even evidence thrown out by the prosecution that proved Lucia wasn't in the room with one of the patients when they died. If this had been put forward during the trial, the whole synopsis of Lucia being the only one present on each occasion would have been brought into speculation and doubt.

Initially Lucia had been charged with thirteen counts of murder and medical emergencies, but the defense was able to prove that Lucia had not been present in many of these cases. At one point, she had even been away on leave, and it was simply an administrative error that put her there at the wrong time. Up until the last death that triggered the investigation, every other death later considered to be murder had been classified as being due to natural causes. Even the last case was initially put down as a natural death until it was suggested that one nurse, Lucia, had been with each patient that had died.

During the trial, the court favored the use of statistical calculations to determine the likelihood that one particular nurse may be present during so many deaths. The calculation that the chances were as low as 1 in 342 million more or less sealed Lucia's fate, as that was the statistic the court used to determine her guilt. It was later determined that the figure was closer to 1 in 25 that a nurse would be present during a spate of hospital deaths. When you consider a nurse's shifts, how often they are at the hospital, the type of wards they work in, and the size of the hospital itself, it is more than possible for one nurse to be with a number of patients as they die.

Reopening of the Case

Cases are generally not reopened in the Dutch legal system unless a new fact is presented. They don't consider different interpretations of old facts by experts. However, Tom Derksen and Metta de Noo submitted their research to the Posthumous II Commission, which looks at certain closed cases and checks for errors by the police and any misunderstanding of scientific and medical evidence. Derksen declared the medical experts had not been given all of the relevant information when questioned about the possibility of natural causes leading to the deaths. He also showed that the Strasbourg Laboratory had found there was no indication of digoxin poisoning, and that initial results were due to poor methods and techniques. The Commission agreed to look at the case and assigned three men from their group to investigate whether there had been other unexplained deaths when Lucia wasn't present, if all relevant information was given to the expert witnesses, and if scientific knowledge now altered the question regarding digoxin.

The Commission released their report in October 2007, recommending that the case be reopened due to the apparent tunnel vision of the investigators in the beginning. Also, with the last alleged victim, natural causes could no longer be ruled out, and in April 2008 Lucia was released from prison for three months. She would remain free from prison throughout the investigation and appeal process.

After months of investigation and hearings, the appeal hearing finally came to an end on March 17, 2010. It had been determined that none of the deaths were caused by deliberate action and that they were either due to natural causes, wrong treatments, poor diagnosing, or inadequate hospital management. The public prosecution made a formal request to the court to

change the verdict to not guilty. The court agreed and delivered the verdict on April 14, 2010.

Justice Miscarried

Though there have been many cases of innocent people found guilty and imprisoned or even put to death in some countries, the case of Lucia de Berk was perhaps one of the worst, because there was never any evidence that a crime had even been committed. It was all based on supposition, coincidence, and failure to understand science. Lucia spent more than six years in jail, suffered a stroke, and had everything about her personal and professional life brought into question, not only in court but also in the media.

It is true that Lucia received financial compensation for the wrongful conviction and imprisonment, but the figure has never been made public. However, for someone who effectively lost six years of their life, money is probably little reward. The whole judicial process took a tremendous toll physically and mentally on a woman who was doing the job she loved, taking care of others. To be accused and convicted of such a terrible thing, and to be labelled an 'angel of death' must have been absolutely soul destroying. Yet, she continued to fight for her innocence, along with a barrage of supporters. Aside from the effect on Lucia, the families of the alleged victims must also have felt this miscarriage of justice, for they were led to believe their loved ones had been murdered for nine years. They too, like Lucia, were victims of the judicial system.

Chapter 5: The Richardson Murders in Canada

The story behind the tragic murders of a family in Medicine Hat, Alberta, Canada, contains all the makings of a blockbuster movie—young love, a troubled teen, disapproving parents, alcohol and drugs, vampires and werewolves. Yes, vampires and werewolves. It will make you look twice at a person who is Goth, for all the wrong reasons. And it was a crime that would make history in Canada, as the instigator and perpetrator was none other than a 12-year-old girl and her much older boyfriend.

The Discovery of the Crime Scene

The discovery of the triple homicide of the Richardson family was made initially by a young six-year-old boy who had come over to play with the youngest member of the family, Jacob, aged 8. The little boy peered through a window to see if anyone was home, but what he saw would undoubtedly leave him with nightmares for many years to come. Lying on the floor of the basement, in clear view, were the bloodied bodies of two adults who weren't moving. The alarm was raised, and authorities rushed to the scene.

On entering the house, they found Marc Richardson, 42, and his wife Debra, 48, dead on the floor. It was obvious they had suffered numerous stab wounds, and authorities continued their search through the house to see if there were any further victims. Upstairs, the small body of Jacob was found with his throat cut. Those who knew the family immediately became concerned about the whereabouts and safety of the fourth member of the Richardson family, their daughter Jasmine.

The body of Marc contained more than twenty-four stab wounds, including nine in his back. His wife Debra had been stabbed at least twelve times, and their young son had a gaping wound in his throat. Bloody handprints and smears were found throughout the basement on the walls, and there was still no sign of Jasmine. The search was now on for Jasmine, for fear she had been abducted or murdered elsewhere.

A Shocking Suspect

The day after the discovery of the murdered Richardson family members, Jasmine was finally located in Leader, Saskatchewan, around 81 miles away from Medicine Hat. With her was her boyfriend, Jeremy Allan Steinke, 23, and his friend Kacy Lancaster, 19. Immediately, all three were arrested by the police and returned to Medicine Hat. During the search for evidence at the crime scene, the police had discovered several online accounts with which Jasmine and Jeremy had been talking to each other about murdering her parents, so they knew immediately who the suspects were. Kacy Lancaster was arrested and charged with being an accessory because she had driven them in her truck away from the location and had helped with disposing of evidence.

Both Jasmine and Jeremy were charged with three counts of murder, and at the tender age of twelve, Jasmine became the youngest person to ever be charged with multiple murders in Canada. Because of her age, the Youth Criminal Justice Act prevented her name from being published once she was deemed a suspect. Also under Canadian law, any suspect who is under fourteen years of age cannot be tried as an adult, and the maximum sentence that can be given is ten years. The same luck didn't apply to Jeremy, as at the age of twenty-three he was most certainly an adult and would be tried as such.

Jasmine's trial began in June 2007, and by then she had turned fourteen. The charges were three counts of first degree murder, to which she plead not guilty to all. Her trial lasted about a month, and in July she was found guilty of all counts by the jury, who had needed just three hours of deliberation. Sentencing for Jasmine took place in November of the same year, and, as expected, she was sentenced to ten years in prison. Part of her

sentence required her to spend four years in a psychiatric hospital, and after the term of her full sentence, she would be placed under conditional supervision within the community for a further four and a half years. Her sentence was due to be completed in 2015, by which time she would have turned twenty-three years old.

Steinke Goes on Trial

By all accounts, Jeremy Steinke was a disturbed young man. Some men will do anything for love, and Jeremy really took this to the extreme by helping his very young girlfriend murder her family. Of course, it's not the first time this has happened, and no doubt it will happen again. At the age of twenty-three, Jeremy had not matured very much at all and had made claims that he was a vampire, a werewolf, and a Gothic. With piercings, tattoos, a love of blood, kink fetishes, and razorblades, it's no wonder alarm bells were ringing with Jasmine's parents. Unfortunately, those same alarm bells were not being heard by the authorities.

The night of the murders, Jeremy stated he had been drinking red wine and beer and had consumed a considerable amount of cocaine. He then climbed through an open window into the basement of the Richardson home and waited. Debra heard a noise downstairs and went down to check it out, and she must have been shocked to see Jeremy standing there armed with a knife. He grabbed her and started stabbing her over and over again.

Marc Richardson was the next to die. He too heard a noise and went down to the basement. While being attacked by Jeremy, Marc fought back as hard as he could, armed with nothing more than a screwdriver, but it was no use. Allegedly, as he was dying Marc asked Jeremy why he was doing this, and Jeremy explained it was what Jasmine wanted. Imagine that being the last thing a father hears. There was no doubt that Jeremy had killed the parents, but the murder of their eight-year-old son Jacob was not as clear.

While in custody, Jeremy had mistakenly had a conversation with someone he thought was another inmate but in fact was an undercover cop. Jeremy was open about the crime, claiming responsibility to the undercover cop, and it was this conversation that turned the opinion around regarding the

death of young Jacob. According to Jeremy, it was Jasmine that had slit her little brother's throat and watched him die. To make it even more chilling, she allegedly showed no emotion, guilt, or remorse while doing so.

Jeremy had a pretty big mouth and made numerous statements to a variety of people about his role in the crime. He had told friends that he had "gutted her parents like fish." Right after the murders, they even went to a friend's house and had sex. And it was another friend that helped them get away from the town that night. Whether these people were afraid of Jeremy for some reason, or maybe just didn't care about what he and Jasmine had done, is disturbing.

On November 17, 2008, Jeremy's trial began in Calgary. The trial was originally going to take place in Medicine Hat, but Jeremy's legal team asked for the move so that the jury wouldn't be swayed by public knowledge at the time. It really wouldn't have made much difference, as the story of the murders had become a national news event, and the outcome would most likely have been the same regardless of where the trial took place.

Testimony included numerous statements from friends and associates, some of whom had been asked to help with the murders and declined. There were also internet and computer conversations where the two of them had openly discussed their plan to kill Jasmine's parents, including different methods of killing. Kacy Lancaster, who drove them to Saskatchewan the night of the murders, claimed she knew nothing about what they had just done. She stated she only found out after reading the newspaper, and she noted that both Jeremy and Jasmine showed no emotion about it at all. She had also noticed there was blood in Jeremy's truck, along with weapons including baseball bats and knives.

Not surprisingly, Jeremy was found guilty of first degree murder for each of the victims. On December 15, 2008, he was handed down three life sentences. They are concurrent sentences, and Jeremy will be eligible for parole after twenty-five years, in 2031.

A Lethal Romance

There were so many things wrong with this romance, it's hard to know where to begin. Jasmine and Jeremy had apparently met in the early part of 2006, with some saying the meeting happened at a punk rock concert, while others say it started as an online romance. In any case, Jeremy was twenty-three years old at the time, and Jasmine was just twelve. You have to wonder what a man of that age would see in such a young girl, but they quickly became a couple.

Naturally, Jasmine's parents were totally against the relationship and had every right to be. Not only was the age difference a huge problem, but it was Jeremy's background and character that worried them the most. At one point Jeremy claimed to be a 300-year-old werewolf. An adult would see through this as nonsense, but a 12-year-old child may not have the maturity to see through it. If you put yourself in Jasmine's shoes, she had a much older man interested in her, a man that seemed (to her) to be worldly and be interested in the same dark interests as herself. He told her he loved her, and he most probably did, and for a young girl, that's all she would need to hear. Don't be mistaken in thinking she was the victim, however—this girl, despite her age, knew how to manipulate her boyfriend extremely well.

Girls often go for the 'bad boy', and in the case of Jasmine and Jeremy, they thought of themselves as soulmates, lovers that would be together for ever. The only thing standing in their way (despite the obvious statutory rape law) was her parents. They were completely opposed to the relationship, and had instructed Jasmine not to see Jeremy anymore. A young teenage girl, Jasmine was adamant that she wanted to spend the rest of her life with Jeremy, and so it was her that came up with the idea of killing her parents. In her mind, that was the only way they could be together. Jeremy, being the

love-sick dutiful boyfriend, agreed, and so the stage was set for what would be one of the most disturbing multiple murders ever committed in Medicine Hat.

Once both had been arrested and held in custody, they continued to communicate with each other for a long time. Their letters contained dreams and plans that one day they would run away together and get married. However, the relationship broke down and crumbled when Jeremy stated during his trial that he did not kill young Jacob and that it had been Jasmine who dealt the fatal wound. Jasmine had categorically stated that she had no part in the actual killings. She would have seen Jeremy's statement as a betrayal, and so she stopped communicating with him.

The Aftermath

Jeremy would attempt to launch an appeal, but not in 2012. He claimed it took him so long because he didn't know the system and the processes, and his defense attorney no longer wished to represent him. Normally following a murder conviction, if an appeal is to be lodged it is done so almost immediately. However, Jeremy subsequently withdrew his appeal and continues to sit in prison.

Things were very different for Jasmine. Her sentence as a minor was nothing at all like the hard time Jeremy is doing, and yet she seemed to be the main instigator of the crime. With only a ten-year sentence applicable due to her age, she completed her mandatory four years in a psychiatric facility and a further four and a half years in the community under supervision. Now twenty-two years of age, Jasmine is attending college and living with only minimum conditions as imposed by the courts. It is almost as though she got away with everything, even though it was her idea. If she had been a little bit older when the crimes were committed, things would have been very different for her.

Chapter 6: The Good Hart Murders

The upper-middle-class Robison family from Detroit was vacationing at their cabin in Lake Michigan, north of Good Hart, when they met a horrific fate. It was 1968, and the family had decided to spend their whole summer at the cabin, a secluded spot surrounded by dense woods and tall trees. It was almost impossible to see the cabin from the road, which would lead investigators to believe the crime was committed by someone who knew the family and knew they would be there.

Family on Vacation

The Robison family consisted of Richard, 42, his wife Shirley, and their four children, Richie, 19, Gary, 17, Randy, 12, and Susan, aged 7. Richard owned and operated a small advertising agency called R.C. Robison & Associates and also published a magazine called Impresario. His wife of twenty years, Shirley, took good care of the home and the family, and they all attended church regularly. The children were all thought of as good students and well-mannered young people, with the eldest son Richie attending university at the time of the murders.

The family decided to go on vacation from their home in Lathrup Village, Michigan, to their cabin they had named Summerset, which was nestled on the banks of Lake Michigan near Good Hart. The family was considered to be well off, with Richard owning his company, as well as owning and piloting his own plane, and the adults attending theater regularly. They were good, honest folk who didn't gamble, drink, smoke, or get involved in any other activities deemed risky or of poor social status.

On July 22, 1968, a nearby neighbor had called the caretaker of the area, Monnie Bliss, claiming she was trying to hold a bridge game in her home, and there was an awful smell coming from the Robison's cabin. Many people were aware that the Robison's were meant to be going away at some time, so the caretaker wondered if an animal had crawled into the home and died, so he went to investigate. He knocked on the door but received no answer. Bliss opened the door, and the sight that greeted him made him alert the authorities immediately.

A Horrific Crime Scene

The local deputies converged on the scene and braced themselves for what they had been told was inside the cabin. On entering, they encountered masses of dead flies on the floor and pools of blood that had congealed. The bodies were noticed immediately, and all seemed to be dressed as though they were going out somewhere on their last day alive. There was even a suitcase partially packed sitting on one of the beds. It was estimated that the family had been dead for about four weeks, given the extent of the decomposition, and the local hospital refused to take them due to their state. Ludicrously, a chicken coop at a nearby fairground was used as a temporary morgue where the autopsies could be completed.

There was a difference with how Shirley Robison was left after she had been murdered. Her skirt had been pushed up and her underwear was down around her ankles. It was not certain if she had been raped, as the medical examiner failed to find any evidence as such, but the way her body was posed does indicate some sort of sexual assault had occurred. At the time of the murder, Shirley had been wearing a sanitary napkin, and it had seven perforations in it, almost like stab wounds. This could also indicate a sexual attack had occurred.

All of the victims had been shot, and both Richard and young Susan had also been bludgeoned with a hammer. Why that was necessary is not known. Shooting a child is one thing, but to strike her with a hammer is macabre. The date of death was eventually put down as Tuesday afternoon or evening on June 25, 1968. During the crime scene investigation, gas masks had to be worn to deal with the horrific odor from the decaying bodies. The Emmet County prosecutor at the time, Wayne Richard Smith,

commented that the suit he wore that day was never worn again. He ended up burning it.

Evidence and Theories

From what the crime scene showed, the killer had approached the house around twilight and initially fired shots into the living room using a .22 caliber rifle. Richard had been sitting in an easy chair and was struck in the chest. The other family members would have been stunned, so it was easy for the killer to shoot them as he burst in through the front door. Randy, Shirley, and Susan were shot as he entered, and as Richie and Gary raced from the room to the back bedroom to retrieve a gun from the closet, they too were shot and killed. For some unknown reason, the killer then went back to Susan and struck her in the head with a hammer. To ensure they were all finished off, each member of the Robison family was then shot one more time in the head.

With the amount of gunfire that took place inside the cabin, it's a wonder nobody raised the alarm. But those that lived the closest were out at the time, and those who did hear gunshots and shouting assumed that because it was still quite light outside perhaps the Robison's were out by the beach shooting gulls.

As the murderer was leaving the house, he dragged Richard, Randy, and Susan into the hallway and put a blanket over Shirley. The killer then closed all of the curtains and turned up the heat before locking the door on his way out. The last thing he did at the scene was to cover a broken window with cardboard and tape a note to it that said 'will be back—Robison'.

Presumably, this was to make anyone think the family was simply away for a day or two, giving the killer enough time to make his escape without being noticed in the vicinity.

There were many theories tossed about during the investigation into these murders. Some of the local residents were concerned there was a random

madman on the loose, and they feared for their own safety. At the time there was a serial killer by the name of John Norman Collins, aka the 'co-ed killer,' operating in the area, but his modus operandi was far different, so it was not likely to be him. Nevertheless, he came under suspicion simply because he was a murderer acting locally.

The Suspects

Richard Robison

The first direction the police looked was towards Richard and his business and personal life. Often when a family is assassinated in such a way, it is the act of someone close to one of the victims. On looking into Richard's life, investigators found that he wasn't really the man everyone thought he was. They uncovered the secret that he had several affairs during his marriage to Shirley. Could this then be the work of a jealous lover or an irate husband? He also liked to bring his secretary into his office and ask her to lift her skirt so he could look at her legs. Although there was no intercourse with the secretaries, he would touch and fondle them for up to an hour at a time.

The wonderful businessman, deemed a pillar of society, had also done some very suspicious business dealings, resulting in some clients being swindled by up to \$50,000. Over a three year period, he would bill the client for advertisements he either didn't pay for or didn't even run. Richard would also create and publish full-page ads for airlines without asking for their permission so that his magazine would look as though it was more successful than it actually was.

Richard had come up with a scheme to create giant computerized warehouses at airports internationally. He was looking to raise \$100 million from a group of investors referred to as the 'Superior Table'. He claimed this group was a global organization dedicated to bringing peace and unity among all countries. The chairman of the group was allegedly a man named Roebert. Robison even wore a St. Christopher medal with an inscription from Roebert which read: 'Richard—to my chosen son and heir —God bless you—Roebert.' Before the Robison family left for their ill-fated

vacation, Richard had been dropping hints around that he was expecting a visit from a 'Mr. Roberts' while they would be at the cabin to talk about a multi-million dollar deal. However, nobody by that name ever flew in through the nearest airport, and detectives wondered if Mr. Roberts and Roebert were the same man, or if they even ever existed.

Organized Crime

There was a large possibility that there was an organized crime link to the murders for a variety of reasons. First, one of Richard's former secretaries went on to marry a powerful and very rich manufacturing tycoon who was rumored to have ties with organized crime in Cleveland. Around the same time as the murders, the secretary had suffered a miscarriage, and there were that the baby was Robison's and not her husband's after all.

As mentioned before, Richard had swindled a number of families out of substantial amounts of money. One of those families was allegedly associated with organized crime, so the detectives had to consider the murders were a hit as payback. Also, one of the weapons used in the murders, the AR-7, was very popular among the Mafia hit men at that time. Another rumor was that Robison was behind in his payments to the mob, and if he had paid when he was supposed to, they would still be alive.

Bloxom, Brock, and Matthews

Early in 1970, an inmate at Leavenworth prison in Kansas told a story to the detectives that implicated himself and two other men in the murders of the Robison's. The inmate was Alexander Bloxom, referred to as a career criminal, who had been living in a halfway house with a man named Mark Warren Brock back in 1968. He had driven Brock to a restaurant in Flint for a meeting with a man he thought was called 'Scollata'. Afterwards, Brock traveled to Toledo and collected some weapons. He then headed north with

another man named Robert Matthews. Bloxom had stayed behind because he was told there weren't any colored people in Good Hart. Two days after the murders, Brock returned.

Bloxom had the ability to recall a lot of detail. He perfectly described Richard Robison's briefcase, which he claimed Brock returned home with and destroyed later. He also had in his possession a black suitcase with guns inside, among other items, including a photograph of the Robison's and cancelled checks. These items were to be kept for future blackmail purposes, and Bloxom was instructed to get rid of the suitcase at a salvage yard in Alabama. The envelope was hidden at a relative's home.

According to Bloxom, Brock had told him they went to the cabin and knocked on the door, and he then faked having a heart attack. He lay down on the floor, and as Richard tried to help him, Matthews came in to the cabin and opened fire. He also said the wife was shot first, then one of the children who had tried to run, and then they just killed them all.

Brock was in prison when Bloxom's story came out, and he actually verified almost every detail of the story. He even admitted he wouldn't be opposed to carrying out a murder for the right price, but he was adamant he did not murder the Robison family. The three men—Bloxom, Brock and Matthews—were given polygraph tests to confirm or rule out their story. Surprisingly, Matthews passed his test. Bloxom was eager to do his test, but he ended up failing it. Brock flat out refused to take a polygraph test. Without definite corroboration or evidence, the theory that Brock and Matthews had killed the Robison's was inconclusive, so none of the men were charged.

Monnie Bliss the Caretaker

Many of the locals in the area pointed the finger at Monnie Bliss as being the culprit. His father and he had actually built the homes in the area, including the Robison cabin, and it was afterwards that Bliss took up residency as the main caretaker. Who better to do repairs on the cabins than the very man himself who built them? Despite his handyman skills, Bliss was known to have a short temper and would often be found talking to himself. Some of the locals were even afraid of Bliss, thinking he was a bit odd.

So why would Bliss murder the Robison's? It turns out, when his 18-year-old son was killed in a motorcycle accident while riding drunk, Bliss held the Robison family accountable. Apparently, his son had been with the older Robison boys that same day. To make matters worse, the day before the funeral, Richard had visited the family to offer his condolences and explain they would be unable to attend the funeral. That might not have been so bad, except that Richard then gave his wife just \$20 towards flowers, which Bliss found insulting. It was the very next night the family was murdered.

Some investigators felt that the female victims were subject to overkill and were therefore the target of revenge. The use of a hammer on Susan also brought suspicion on Bliss, as he was a builder by trade, so naturally would own a hammer. There was even a rumor that his hammer had gone missing from his toolbox. However, the police considered this information to be the result of locals having a chat over a beer and speculating, rather than fact, and Bliss was cleared as a suspect. His behavior continued to be more and more bizarre, and at times he was heard to say he thought the Robison's had it coming. In some cases, he claimed he had killed the family during his semi-crazy ramblings.

The Co-Ed Killer

The co-ed killer was otherwise known as John Norman Collins, a man who was charged with one murder but suspected of up to fifteen more. He operated in California and Michigan between 1967 and 1969, and his victims were young women. His murderous spree came to an end when his uncle, a state police corporal, became suspicious. Collins had actually used his uncle's house to murder an 18-year-old woman named Karen Sue Beineman, a student at the same university Collins attended. Ironically, another fellow student at the East Michigan University was none other than Richie Robison.

Stories came about that Richie and Collins were in the same fraternity there and would therefore have known each other. Others claimed that the two had met during orientation at the university, and Collins could have visited Richie at the family cottage in Good Hart where the murders eventually took place. This would show that Collins knew where the secluded cabin was, an important factor in investigating the crime. Police never considered Collins a strong suspect, but they kept him in the back of their minds as a potential lead.

Collins adamantly denies taking any part in the murders of the Robison family. He is serving a life sentence for the murder of Karen Beineman and has stated that being convicted of one murder is one thing, but to be labelled for things he hadn't done was unfair. It's important to remember, the other murders he was suspected of committing have never been proven to be the work of Collins.

Joseph R. Sclaro – Embezzler?

Within two weeks of the investigation following the discovery of the Robison bodies, the police had a very firm suspect in mind. Joseph Sclaro was an employee of Richard's, and he had disappeared for more than twelve hours on the day of the murders. He had provided alibis for that time period, though none of them were valid. He had also recently purchased guns, the same as the ones used to commit the murders, as determined by forensic ballistic experts. These included a .25-caliber Jet-Fire automatic Beretta pistol and a .22-caliber AR-7 ArmaLite semi-automatic rifle. Forensics compared the four .22-caliber shells found at the cabin with those that had been fired by Sclaro at his family firing range, and they were found to be a match. In his defense, Sclaro claimed he had given the rifle away to someone, but a neighbor stated to police he had seen the gun at Sclaro's house not long before the murders.

Sclaro also claimed to have given away the .25-caliber pistol, and when questioned he provided a second pistol of the same caliber to the police that he had purchased at the same time as the other ones. At the crime scene were found some SAKO .25-caliber cartridges, which are a rare brand of ammunition produced in Finland. This particular ammunition is only sold during a short and specific time period each year, and one of the purchasers listed in Michigan was Sclaro. Police were able to determine that Sclaro's claims of giving away the guns were untrue, and Sclaro was unable to prove otherwise.

During their investigation, a forensic accountant was brought in to analyze the financial affairs of the Robison's and the advertising company and the magazine Richard owned. It was found that over \$60,000 seemed to be missing from the company accounts. Sclaro had been left in charge of both

companies for the summer while the Robison's were on vacation, and this implicated Scolaro as the killer due to embezzlement and his trying to hide his financial crime.

Despite all of this, the prosecutor was unwilling to bring charges against Scolaro without more evidence. The fact that there were no fingerprints at the crime scene and that the guns had gone missing made it difficult to prove Scolaro was ever there. Further doubts arose about the amount of time it would take Scolaro to travel from Detroit to Good Hart, kill the Robison's, and return back to Detroit. The trip one way takes between five and six hours to complete as it is, and with witnesses claim they heard gunshots around 9pm, it would be hard to comprehend how Scolaro got there and back within the twelve hours he was apparently missing.

Scolaro's wife stated he was home with her by 11 p.m. that night, so if they were killed at 9 p.m., there was no possible way he could be home with his wife by then.

Furthermore, although Scolaro may have been embezzling money from his employer, it is a big jump to then turn around and murder an entire family, especially considering the brutality shown to the female victims. White-collar criminals tend to stay just that—financial fraud is quite different than physical and violent crime. Besides, although \$60,000 might seem a lot to many people, it's not really the kind of figure you go on a murderous rampage for, even if you are terrified of getting caught. Unless of course the embezzlement amount was much larger. On the morning of the murders, Richard called the bank to check if a deposit he was expecting had been made, to the value of \$200,000. It hadn't, so Richard immediately tried to contact Scolaro, who also had access to the account. Richard made multiple attempts to get hold of Scolaro throughout the day without any success. Back in the office, Scolaro had been told Richard was trying to get hold of

him, and instead of calling him back, he just left and disappeared for the rest of the day.

Another theory was that Scolaro paid someone else to do the hit for him, which would fit in with Bloxom's story (remember the name he recalled—Scollata—is very similar). Perhaps Scolaro provided the guns, the ammunition, directions to the cabin, and could have even paid for the hit using some of the money he stole. The investigators thought there was enough evidence and information to press charges. In 1973, the prosecutor's office was on the right path to being able to file murder conspiracy charges, and Scolaro got wind of it. Shortly after, Scolaro was found dead in his office chair from a self-inflicted gunshot wound. He left a note for his mother in which he stated that although he was a liar, a phony and a cheat, he did not have anything to do with the murders. To others, despite what the note said, his suicide was an indication of guilt, but we'll really never know.

Nothing Resolved....Yet

To date, there has been no resolution in this multiple murder case. In 2013, detectives were still keeping an eye on the open case, and they have continued to investigate as the years have passed on. Although there have been many theories and multiple suspects, they have never been able to just narrow it down to one. With so many people now passed on, a lot of information will have died with them, so it becomes even more complicated as time passes. However, they are not giving up. They are praying for some kind of miracle, that someone will confess or at least come forward with specific information, so they can finally serve justice on the killer or killers of the Robison family.

Chapter 7: Beslanowitch – The Murder of a Teen Prostitute

The killing of prostitutes is nothing new. They have been a particularly popular victim among serial killers due to their transient and high-risk lifestyle. Many of the women working the streets have few friends and very little family contact, and they can be missing for days or even weeks and months before anyone realizes they are missing. This delay is a real asset for a killer, as the more time passes, the less likely the chance is that he will be identified. It's saddening to think that these women are preyed upon simply because their lives have taken a turn for the worse. Drug addiction, abuse, alcoholism, and homelessness are all factors associated with many women who end up as prostitutes. Just because they are desperate, and even though their families may not be in touch as much, they are still human beings—someone's daughter, sister, mother, girlfriend or grandchild. They are still loved.

The Life of Krystal Beslanowitch

The body found on the banks of the Provo River near Midway, Utah, on December 15, 1995, was identified as Krystal Beslanowitch. She had grown up in Spokane, and had fallen by the wayside at the young age of fifteen years. By then, she was already involved in drugs and prostitution. Her mother has said that every time Krystal came back home, she always accepted her back. It seemed that Krystal just wasn't interested in living a normal life, despite the love and support she got at home.

Her stepfather claimed that Krystal had started selling her body much younger, at the age of twelve years old, and he also claimed she had given birth to a baby that was subsequently taken from her. He felt sorry for Krystal and believed she never really stood a chance in life. In July 1995, Krystal and her boyfriend decided to move away, and they moved to Utah. Krystal had been in trouble with the law on numerous occasions while in Spokane. The charges included prostitution, assault, drug violations, and auto theft. Perhaps they thought it was time to try their luck in a different city.

One night Krystal headed out to go to a convenience store and she never came back. Her boyfriend waited two days before he reported her missing. It's not known why he waited so long. Perhaps she had done it before and always returned. What made him more concerned was that another prostitute who had worked the same area as Krystal, west North Temple, had been murdered that November, just a month earlier.

Cold on the River Bank

Krystal went missing on a Friday, and her body was found the next day by two ranchers. They had been traveling down a country road that was quite isolated and noticed the body on the banks of the river. They notified the authorities immediately, and local law enforcement headed to the crime scene.

Krystal's body was completely nude, and it was obvious to those who saw her that she had suffered numerous traumatic blows to the head and face. The medical examiner would later confirm she had been struck at least eight or nine times with a large rock. She was just seventeen years old at the time of her death, which made it even more intolerable for the hard-nosed detectives. In fact, a sheriff's deputy named Todd Bonner was haunted by the case throughout his entire career. Once they had identified Krystal, they next had to try to find a suspect.

It wasn't going to be an easy task, and there seemed to be no leads whatsoever. It was difficult to say whether she had been murdered by a client while she was working as a prostitute or whether she was the victim of circumstance and just happened to cross paths with the wrong person at the wrong time. One thing is for sure; her boyfriend was ruled out very early on in the investigation.

During the autopsy, forensic evidence was obtained from underneath her fingernails, and forensic experts also collected evidence from the alleged murder weapon, the large rocks that had been used to bash in her head. However, forensic science wasn't as advanced back then, and it lead nowhere.

Reopening of the Case

In 2008, two detectives were assigned to reopen the case with the hopes of a breakthrough using new forensic technology. The detectives worked full time on the case, and forensic scientists were able to extract more DNA from the rocks found with her body. The DNA was run through the CODIS database and the detectives waited for a match.

The main focus of reopening the case was to further explore the forensic evidence found at the scene of the crime. Rather than re-interviewing people or revisiting the scene, attention was turned to science, and the numerous advances that had occurred. Now it was possible to get a DNA profile from a much smaller sample, and it was this that lead the police straight to the murderer.

DNA Points the Finger

All their wishes came through in January 2009, when CODIS returned a DNA match. The suspect's name was Joseph Michael Simpson, a 46-year-old man who had already served time in prison for murder back in the 1980s. He had lived in Clearfield for a time, and in 2009 was residing in Sarasota County, Florida.

The match encouraged the team to further analyze other forensic evidence from the crime scene, and this came back even stronger as belonging to Simpson. By now Todd Bonner was the Wasatch Country Sheriff, and although he wasn't heavily involved in the case, he kept his hand in it, so he was aware of what was going on at all times. Despite having the DNA match, it was decided that they needed more biological evidence from Simpson. Bonner and another detective set off to find Simpson.

They needed a fresh sample of Simpson's DNA, so they tracked him down and followed him. On August 25, 2013, they managed to follow him into a store, a smoke shop, and when he finished smoking his cigarette, Bonner grabbed it. Now they had the DNA they needed. As expected, it was a match. Simpson was subsequently arrested at his home for the murder of Krystal, and it was Bonner who had the joy of placing him in handcuffs.

He was taken to the local jail in Sarasota to await extradition back to Utah, where he would be formally charged with the murder of Krystal.

Surprisingly, Simpson didn't try to fight the extradition order and was eventually returned to Utah.

Simpson's History – It Wasn't His First Murder

At the time he was arrested by Bonner, Simpson had been living in Sarasota County for nearly fourteen years. He was unemployed and living with his parents at the age of forty-six. Before then, he had lived in Clearfield, Utah. Once in custody, more information came about regarding the background of Simpson, and it was found that he had a strong history of violence.

Back in 1987, Simpson had been arrested for stabbing a man in Clearfield. It wasn't a simple stabbing —there were thirteen knife wounds in the victim, causing his death. His trial was relatively swift, and he was found guilty of second degree murder. He would go on to serve roughly eight years for the crime and was paroled in April 1995. He had only been out of prison for a few months when he murdered his next victim, Krystal.

He seemed to favor killing methods that involved being up close and personal. First was the stabbing of his first victim, as you need to be very close to a person to stab them, especially that number of times. Then, when crushing Krystal's skull with a large rock, he needed to be positioned close to or standing over Krystal to repeatedly smash the rock against her head. This method is also perhaps the most gruesome, and shows what Simpson was really capable of.

Even while in jail awaiting trial, he gained another charge of assault against a fellow inmate. As of now, he has not been sent to trial, so it is all just a matter of waiting. Despite the gravity of the crime, the prosecution has stated that they do not intend to seek the death penalty but will go for life imprisonment. Some say this is not enough. He has killed two people now, both in an extremely violent manner, and convicted criminals have been

sent to death for less horrific murders. Time will tell what the outcome will be when the trial goes ahead.

Chapter 8: Murder or Accident?

The case of two teenage girls disappearing into the night in 1971 had plagued the families, friends and the community for decades. They were good girls who headed out for some fun and never came back. Were they murdered? Had they been abducted? Some even wondered if they had simply run away. Or was there another reason they vanished...it would be a mystery for forty-three years.

Sherri Miller and Pam Jackson Disappear

Sherri and Pam were both from Vermilion, and both were just seventeen years old and were still attending high school. Sherri was a smart girl and was living with her grandparents after her mother had remarried then moved away. She was very independent and knew what she wanted in life and what she didn't want, a good head on her shoulders. Her grandmother had been diagnosed with terminal cancer, and Sherri willingly looked after her through the spring in 1971, as well as taking care of her grandfather. It was her job to get her grandfather out of bed in the morning, fix his breakfast, and take care of the daily chores. Because of her caring nature, she ended up working after school hours at the local Dakota Hospital, which is where her friend Pam Jackson worked as well.

Sherri wanted to go into the fashion design industry and was an avid sewer. Her plan was to move to California once she had graduated from high school, along with her cousin Pam Stewart. Pam Jackson also had an interest in dress design, and the two of them had many other things in common. On the night of May 29, 1971, Sherri had invited Pam Jackson to go out with her that night, and although Pam's mother said no at first, she ended up giving in. Pam Stewart was also going to go along with the girls, but she was called out to babysit at the last minute.

The girls made a stop at the hospital to visit with Sherri's grandmother and left there around 9:30 that night. They were driving around in Sherri's grandfather's 1960 Studebaker, a solid car that ran well. They met up with some boys from school after leaving the hospital and were invited along to a party taking place at a nearby gravel pit. The girls agreed to follow the boys there.

At one point, the boys in the car ahead had made a wrong turn, and when they doubled back there was no sign of the girls and the Studebaker. At 4 a.m. the next morning, Pam Jackson's mother noticed Pam hadn't turned off the kitchen light like she normally would when she got home. She had a look in her room and discovered she wasn't home. She assumed the girls had experienced car trouble and probably stayed in town for the night with a friend.

Later that morning, Pam's parents started to call everyone they could think of to see if the girls had spent the night, but nobody had seen them. Sherri's grandmother was critical, and in fact, she died just six days after Sherri went missing. The police naturally assumed the girls had run away, but they hadn't taken any clothing, makeup (they were teenage girls after all), or even the paychecks they had received that day. There was also no way Sherri would have abandoned her grandmother when she was so gravely ill.

The suggestion was made to drag the river to see if the girls had crashed, but it was decided that the current was too swift and it wouldn't be safe. The visibility in the water was very poor, so sending down divers wouldn't have achieved anything either. Pam's father would spend days walking up and down the gravel roads and across the nearby fields looking for any signs of the girls. Sherri's father would sit at the local police department looking at photo after photo of unidentified deceased girls, and he checked her social security to see if it was being used by anyone, but it wasn't. The girls had vanished into thin air.

A False Accusation

How a man named David Lykken came to be accused of murdering both Sherri and Pam is quite extraordinary. When questioned, he was already serving 225 years in prison for rape and kidnapping. With no bodies, no forensic evidence, and no witness statements it's hard to believe he was considered for the alleged crime in the first place.

However, Lykken had a very dark history and was in the area of Vermillion at the time the two girls disappeared. The case was handed on to the newly-formed cold case unit in 2004, and was one of the first cases investigated. The fact that Lykken had lived close to the gravel pit where the party was meant to take place that night, and because he had a history of violence towards women, it was deemed he needed to be investigated further.

While going back over the previous records and documents, there was one piece of information gathered back in 1971 that further convinced the investigators to look at Lykken. A neighbor of Pam Jackson's family had reported that she had overheard a party line phone conversation a month before the girls disappeared. It was reportedly a conversation between Pam Jackson and a man named David. The neighbor believed David was a student at the University of South Dakota, but wasn't sure.

They began to question Lykken's victims to try and find out as much information as they could about the crimes he had committed. They also spoke to his younger sister, who claimed he was often violent and threatening. She even recalled an incident in which David told her to drive, and he climbed into the back of the car and raped a female passenger. According to his sister, David had taken the same school bus with Sherri, and he knew both Sherri and Pam through the church.

His sister recalled a time shortly after the disappearances when her family was digging large pits on their farm and creating a large fire. Her parents had often tried to cover for David when he got into trouble, but he still had a lot of anger towards them. The sister didn't know why this was, but she had been told once it was something to do with a girl buried on the farm. At this point in time, she was unaware the cold case team were interviewing her about Sherri and Pam.

Some of the information given by his sister was clearly not true. When asked if she had seen a car on the farm and was shown pictures of different models of Studebaker, she identified the same model Sherri had been driving that night. When asked if she saw any bodies, she claimed she saw Sherri slumped over the steering wheel and Pam with her head on the passenger window. It seemed she was feeding off the suggestions that were given to her instead of recalling actual facts.

With all of the information at hand, the investigators obtained a search warrant for David's possessions that were stored at his parent's farm and for the farmland itself. They dug up many areas as indicated by David's sister on a map, but nothing was found. Numerous other interviews with his sister took place, including under hypnosis, and it seemed as though she was recalling real memories.

In 2006, the investigation team received further information from an inmate named Aloysius Black Crow, who was incarcerated with Lykken. He claimed Lykken had confessed to him that he had murdered Sherri and Pam. They fitted him with a wire and asked him to go back and interview Lykken. He did so, and the audio recording captured Lykken stating he had asked the girls for a ride, and he had raped Pam and tied Sherri up for hours.

It was discovered in 2008 that the tape recordings were all fake, and that it was another man's voice on the tape, not Lykken's. The investigators had been sent down the wrong path—first by Lykken's own sister, then by a fraudulent inmate who was only out to gain for himself. Therefore, the charges against Lykken were dropped.

Skeletons in the Studebaker

In September 2013, the forty-three-year mystery surrounding the disappearance of Sherri Miller and Pam Jackson was finally solved. A fisherman at Brule Creek noticed wheels underneath the bridge while the water levels were low and notified the authorities. On investigation, they discovered that it was the 1960 Studebaker Lark that Sherri had been driving that night.

Inside the car were the skeletal remains of two females who would later be identified as Sherri and Pam. Their identities were confirmed through the use of DNA, and there were a number of personal items found inside the car that belonged to the girls. On examination of the bodies, it was determined that there were no signs of injuries that would indicate foul play or homicide. Instead, the girls had simply run off the road and vanished into the murky depths of the creek.

Despite the area being searched multiple times following the disappearance, the car could not be seen due to higher water levels. Tragically, Pam's father had passed away just five days before the car wreck was discovered.

Although it is still a terrible tragedy that the girls were found deceased, it at last puts to rest all of the suspicions, accusations, theories, and what ifs that have plagued the families and the community for nearly fifty years.

Chapter 9: When Suicide is Murder

It's not always easy to tell the difference between a suicide and a murder, and sometimes information comes to light much later on that further clarifies the difference between the two. The case of Pamela Shelly is one such case. At first, it was considered a suicide by the authorities, but thanks to a true crime television program many years later, a man was subsequently caught and put behind bars for her murder.

The Death of Pamela Shelly

Pamela Shelly had been living with her boyfriend Ronnie Hendrick in De Witt County, Texas, not far from where Ronnie's parents lived. Her children Kayla, 12, and Dustin, 9, were also living with Pamela and Ronnie. The rest of her family was back in Arkansas, where she had also been living before Ronnie moved her to Texas. Pamela and her kids had only been at Ronnie's for about five months, and she was planning to leave him. Ronnie was abusive, and Pamela was taking the kids and moving back to Arkansas.

January 6, 2001, Pamela had packed her belongings and sorted the children's things out and was about to leave. They were leaving in twenty minutes time when something happened that would forever change the lives of many. A gunshot was heard, and Pamela was lying on the floor of the bathroom with a bullet wound to the head. Ronnie's stepfather placed the call to 911 asking for assistance because Pamela had attempted to kill herself.

When the ambulance got there, Pamela was still breathing. They quickly loaded her onboard and headed to nearby Cuero, where the hospital was, twenty minutes away. Ronnie was in the front cab of the ambulance giving directions, as the ambulance staff had come from out of town and didn't know their way around. By the time the police arrived at the scene, the ambulance along with Pamela and Ronnie had already left.

Many years later, the emergency services people who attended the incident all stated they must have believed it was a suicide, as there was no fear about entering the house. Usually if there is a firearm incident, the ambulance staff waits at a safe distance until the police clear the scene. This wasn't considered necessary this time and is most likely because the adults that were present all stated Pamela had tried to kill herself.

Ronnie's family made sure the authorities believed Pamela was suicidal. Ronnie claimed that Pamela was happy there, but her daughter Kayla wasn't, and so she had to return to Arkansas even though she didn't want to. Ronnie believed this was the final straw for Pamela, and she took her own life. There was apparently a family history of suicide in Pamela's family, including her sister who had successfully killed herself. Therefore, it's no wonder it seemed so plausible to the investigating officers.

The autopsy performed on Pamela showed a typical suicide gunshot, and adding to that the information given that she was suicidal and depressed, the medical examiner happily labelled the death as a suicide. The police, however, were still uneasy and requested Ronnie take a polygraph, which he agreed to do. They arranged for the test to be done on two separate occasions, but Ronnie failed to appear each time. Weeks after Pamela's death, Ronnie disappeared.

Several years later, in 2008, a new investigator, Carl Bowen, joined the county sheriff's department. The current sheriff was Jody Zavesky, and because Carl had been on the force when Pamela died, he was aware of the case and convinced Jody to take another look at it. Carl had always been bothered by the fact that Ronnie had never taken the polygraph test and had disappeared almost immediately after Pamela died. Fueled by their own determination and personal interest, Jody and Carl reopened the case.

Carl was pleasantly surprised when that summer Ronnie Hendrick was arrested and arrived at the De Witt County Jail. He had been charged with domestic abuse, having beaten up the woman he had been sharing a home with. It turned out that following Pamela's death, Ronnie had traveled to South Dakota and spent time in prison there for felony DWI, as well. All of

a sudden, things started to fall into place for Carl as he realized Ronnie was a chronic alcohol abuser and woman beater.

Finally Carl was able to get Ronnie to take the polygraph test. Not surprisingly, he failed it, and when questioned by the polygraph examiner after the test, he requested legal counsel. He told four different people that he had lied about not being in the bathroom when she was shot, but that he did not pull the trigger. Originally he had claimed to be outside the house when Pamela was shot. Things were getting more and more suspicious.

Television Steps In

Carl discovered there was a television program looking for cold cases they could work on and help solve for a new television show called Cold Justice. Although hesitant at first, it was agreed by the higher authorities that the case of Pamela Shelly could be put forward as a possible case for the program. The producers of the show jumped at the chance right away. The main investigators in the program were former Harris County ADA Kelly Siegler and a former crime scene investigator, Yolanda McClary, from Las Vegas.

The team tends to focus on police departments that are understaffed, where their expertise can be used more effectively. They arrived in June and set to work. With them came the opportunity to have access to high-tech scientific evidence results with a remarkably quick turnaround. Immediately the gun was sent for DNA analysis. Unfortunately, this did not produce the results they wanted or needed.

Next, they took a look at Pamela's medical history and noted there had never been any issue with depression or any other form of mental illness, which completely undermined Ronnie's story. They were able to cross off any information that was no longer relevant or had been disproved, while at the same time gathering new information through witness interviews, crime scene reenactments, and reanalyzing all the previous data that had been gathered. When they presented the case and new evidence, the DA took his time deciding whether or not to proceed.

The final piece of the puzzle that persuaded the DA was an interview conducted by Carl with Pamela's ex-husband Jessie, who was incarcerated in a prison in Texas. According to Jessie, he had a phone conversation the same day Pamela was shot, reconfirming that she and the children were

moving back to Arkansas. He also claimed that he and Pam were going to reunite and get back together. During the conversation, Ronnie had grabbed the phone and told Jessie the only way she was going back to Arkansas was in a box. To see if he was being deceptive with his story, Jessie was given a polygraph and passed.

Ronnie Hendrick

In November 2012, Ronnie was indicted for murder. He was set to go to trial in September 2013. Unfortunately, Cold Justice had scheduled the screening of the episode about Pam just six days before the trial was due to begin. Carl contacted the producers and asked if the date could be changed, but they refused. The concern was that if the local people watched the show, they would be useless as a jury. Sure enough, when jury selection came around, so many had seen it and already formed an opinion regarding his guilt that they could not be used as jury members, so a mistrial was called.

Another date was set for the trial, which was to be in June 2014. Although what people had seen on the program may have worn off by then, there was still the chance that a jury could be difficult to select. The DA decided to use that to his advantage and had a meeting with Ronnie's attorney. When it was pointed out that every person who had watched the Cold Justice episode was likely to believe Ronnie was guilty, then the jury was going to be the same. Therefore, it was likely he would be found guilty even if a jury could be selected. The next day, Ronnie pled guilty to murder and was sentenced to twenty-two years in prison.

Chapter 10: Snatched From the Snow

The story of Maria Ridulph is a tragic tale and one of innocence lost that would affect not only her family, but her community. It would also greatly affect a friend, who had been with her that night and witnessed the abduction, for the rest of her life. Two little girls innocently playing in the snow outside the house were ripped apart by a real life boogeyman who swept in and swept out, carrying little Maria away with him.

The Disappearance of Maria Ridulph

Maria was one of four children born to parents Michael and Frances, and they lived in Sycamore, Illinois. Most of the adults in the area worked on local farms, but Michael worked at a factory, one of the few that existed there at that time. Frances was a homemaker, taking care of the family and the home, and they seemed to have a good life.

It had started snowing on the evening of December 3, 1957, and Maria begged her parents to let her go out and play in the snow with her friend Kathy Sigman. Although it was dark out, her parents said yes, and after dinner they went outside near Maria's home and were playing a game they called 'duck the cars', where they ran back and forth avoiding the headlights of cars coming down the street. In that era it wasn't considered dangerous to let the kids out at night, as it was a fairly innocent time, a time when murders and violent crimes were not common at all.

While they were out playing, Kathy stated a man had approached them who said his name was Johnny. He told them he was twenty-four years old and had no wife, and he offered Maria a piggyback ride. She went back to her house and retrieved her favorite doll to show the stranger, as it was her prized possession. When she returned, Kathy went back to her own house to get her mittens because it was so cold. When Kathy came back, both Maria and the stranger were gone.

Unable to find Maria, Kathy went to her parent's house to tell them she couldn't find her. Maria's parents assumed she was hiding somewhere and sent their 11-year-old son out to find her. When he had no luck, the parents then called the police. Within an hour, the police had arrived along with armed civilians to search the town. They could find no trace of the little girl or the man who she had last been seen with.

Within two days of her disappearance, the FBI was called in due to the possibility Maria had been kidnapped and taken across state lines.

Numerous people had seen the two girls playing together that night, but nobody had seen the stranger with them up until 6:30 p.m. They therefore believed this stranger, 'Johnny', had approached Maria and Kathy after that time, and that Maria had been taken somewhere between 6:45 and 7:00 p.m.

Because Kathy had been the only one to see Johnny, she was placed in protective custody in case he returned to take her or harm her. She was shown photos of possible suspects or those who had been convicted before to see if she could identify the man who called himself Johnny, but she could not. She was also asked to look at a lineup of suspects, and she pointed out a man named Thomas Joseph Rivard. However, Rivard had a tight alibi and couldn't have been the man they were looking for. He had only been placed in the lineup to fill up the numbers.

A Tragic Discovery

Near Woodbine, Illinois, some 100 miles away from Sycamore, two tourists were searching a wooded area looking for mushrooms on April 26, 1958.

What they found was the skeletal remains of a young child. The only clothing present was a shirt, socks, and undershirt, and the tiny body was beneath a tree that had partially fallen over. The state of decomposition indicated the body had been there for months, and it was later identified as Maria through dental records. The rest of the clothing she had been wearing the night she disappeared was nowhere to be seen.

Photographs of the crime scene were not taken, as the coroner didn't want the media to get hold of them, particularly because the body was that of a child. As the body was found within the state, the FBI stepped back and left the case with the local and state police to investigate. The autopsy done at the time showed no indication of the manner of death. This was apparently due to the level of decomposition, which many years later would be handled in a different manner.

Prime Suspect Right From the Start – Was Tessier Johnny?

A young man who was considered a suspect right from the beginning was John Tessier. Originally from Ireland, he had moved to Sycamore after World War II ended with his British mother and American stepfather. Before his mother's remarriage, John's surname had been Cherry, and he would still use it from time to time.

The family home was just around the corner from the Ridulph's, and at the time John was eighteen years old and planning on joining the Air Force. During the initial search and investigation into Maria's disappearance, investigators had visited John's home and spoken to his mother. She claimed John had been home all night, whereas his sisters would later testify this wasn't true. The investigators had received a tip regarding John, and it was speculated that it may have come from a resident or John's parents themselves, trying to clear their boy's name since he had the same name as Johnny and his physical description was a match.

The next statement John made was that he had been in Rockford the night in question enlisting in the Air Force, which completely contradicted what his mother had said previously. He claimed he had called his parents from Rockford to get a ride home, as he had left his car back at the house. There was a telephone record of a collect call being made that night at 6:57 p.m. by a John Tessier. He then met with recruiting officers to drop off some paperwork, and they confirmed to the authorities that this occurred at around 7:15 p.m. that night.

Despite this, an officer wasn't convinced and asked Tessier to take a polygraph test, which he complied with and passed. Because his alibi seemed to be truthful and he had passed the polygraph, he was released and taken off the list of suspects. Of note, Kathy Sigman was never asked to

identify John or look at his photograph. The following day, John left for training at the Air Force Base.

John was to complete thirteen years in the Air Force, and he obtained the rank of captain before then undertaking study to become a police officer. He worked as an officer in Lacey, Olympia, then moved to Milton, Washington. Trouble would find him in Washington in 1982 in the form of a 15-year-old runaway named Michelle Weinman and her friend. John had taken the girls in, and not long after, Michelle filed a complaint that John had fondled her and performed oral sex. He was charged with felony statutory rape and discharged from the police force. He negotiated a plea deal and pled guilty to communication with a minor for immoral purposes, which is a misdemeanor instead of a felony. John would later change his name to Jack Daniel McCullough, supposedly to honor his deceased mother.

A Mother's Deathbed Confession

In 2008, John Tessier's half-sister Janet provided new information that led to the case being reopened. She made a startling revelation that on her mother's deathbed she had stated the following: "Those two little girls, and the one that disappeared, John did it. John did it and you have to tell someone." Janet immediately assumed her mother was talking about the murder of Maria Ridulph and had been told by her elder sisters that their mother had lied to the police that night about John's whereabouts. Another of the half-sisters, Mary, was also there when their mother made the statement about John being guilty, but she only heard the words 'he did it'. Nevertheless, she also assumed it was to do with the Maria Ridulph case. At the time of their mother's death, John was not involved in the family, having previously molested a younger half-sister and threatened Janet with a gun. He wasn't even allowed to come to his mother's funeral.

Janet had made numerous attempts since her mother's death to get the Sycamore police and the FBI to consider her mother's statement. She eventually sent an email to the Illinois State Police tip line, and it was handed to the cold case unit to investigate. All of John's sisters had suspected him of being the murderer. The investigators were able to create a different timeline showing that John did have time to drive to Rockford after snatching Maria and making the phone call to his parents and meeting with the recruitment officers. This shed a whole new light on his so-called alibi.

Finally, Kathy Sigman, Maria's friend who had been there that dreadful night, was shown a photograph of John as he was back then. She immediately identified him as the stranger, 'Johnny', who had disappeared with Maria. More and more evidence was stacking up against John, as

witnesses recalled new information and other witnesses came forward. In 2011, John was asked to come in to the police station to answer some questions. Whenever he was asked about that night or Maria Ridulph he would become aggressive and evasive with his answers. He refused to answer any further questions and was subsequently arrested for the abduction and murder of Maria.

The same month, Maria's tiny body was exhumed and tested for DNA evidence with no luck. A forensic anthropologist examined the skeleton and was able to determine she had been stabbed in the throat with a long blade at least three times. Although this was most likely the cause of death, other causes couldn't be ruled out due to the lack of soft tissue, with which other injuries such as strangulation may have been identified. Nevertheless, the case was pursued and a trial set.

A Long-Awaited Trial

John went to trial in September 2012 for the murder of Maria. Evidence and testimonies were heard from those who had been involved in the case, as well as from some inmates who claimed John had confessed to the murder while awaiting trial. One claimed John said he strangled her with a wire, while another claimed John said he smothered her accidentally while trying to stop her from screaming. On September 14, he was found guilty of the abduction and murder of Maria and was given a life sentence. A parole period of twenty years was given, however, John was seventy-three years of age at the time of the sentencing.

John filed a petition for post-conviction relief in 2015, and after extensive investigation by the state's Attorney, it was determined that he was innocent. A court hearing took place in March 2016 and the conviction was overturned. The dismissal of the charge of murder was without prejudice, which means that another charge of murder of Maria Ridulph could be brought against him in the future.

Chapter 11: Captive for 24 Years – the Joseph Fritzl Case

This case takes place in a town called Amstetten in Austria, when it was discovered a man had kept his daughter captive for twenty-four years in the basement of the family home. She had been abused, raped, and assaulted, and would not be free until she was forty-two years of age and had birthed seven children by her father. For a daughter to be treated so heinously by a man who is supposed to love and protect her is abominable and that the children they created suffered such psychological damage is horrendous. This man and his wife were the epitome of evil.

An Incestuous Situation

Joseph Fritzl and his wife Rosemarie had a large family, comprised of seven children. There were five daughters and two sons. Elisabeth was born in 1966, and her father began to abuse her from the time she was eleven years old. She went on to complete the required education, and at fifteen she undertook study on waitressing. Elisabeth ran away from home in January 1983 and fled to Vienna with a work friend. The police were notified, and she was found and returned to her parents. Reluctantly, she had to go back, but she did finish her course and was offered a job.

When Elisabeth was eighteen, her father told her he needed help carrying a door down into the basement of the home. She agreed to help and even held the door in place while he attached it to the frame. Little did she know that it was this door that would keep her locked inside. Josef then held a towel soaked in ether over her face, and once she was unconscious, he locked her in the basement.

Following her disappearance, her mother filed a missing person report with the authorities. Josef then began forcing Elisabeth to write letters saying she no longer wanted to live with her family and she had moved away with her friend. One letter stated that if they came looking for her she would flee the country. Josef had also told the authorities that he believed she had joined a religious cult. All of this was nonsense, of course, as she was in the basement of the family home the whole time.

Elisabeth was repeatedly raped by Josef during the twenty-four years he held her captive. She gave birth to seven children without any medical treatment whatsoever. One baby died just after he was born, and three of them were sent upstairs to live with Josef and Rosemarie. They told social services that the children had just appeared on the doorstep, and they were

left in their care by the authorities with regular checkups. At no time was there any suspicion by social services as to what was really going on.

After the birth of the fourth child, Josef enlarged the captivity area so that Elisabeth had more space for herself and her children. Instead of bringing her food every few days, she now had a refrigerator to store food in, as well as hotplates to heat the meals up. They now had a radio, a television, and a video player to entertain them. Elisabeth spent her time teaching her children basic schooling, such as how to read and write. If Josef felt they needed punishing, he would switch off their light supply or refuse to bring them food for days at a time. Elisabeth was told by Josef that if they tried to escape, they would all be gassed.

A Visit to the Hospital Invokes Suspicion

The eldest daughter of Elisabeth and Josef, Kerstin, was unwell and fell unconscious on April 19, 2008. Josef agreed to seek medical care for Kerstin, and Elisabeth helped him carry her upstairs. It was the first time Elisabeth had been out of the basement for twenty-four years. She was ushered back to the basement, and Kerstin was sent by ambulance to the hospital. Josef arrived later and said he had found a note by Elisabeth. The staff at the hospital found this very strange and alerted law enforcement on April 21. They made a media appeal for Elisabeth to come forward, and at the same time reopened her missing person's case. Again, Josef reiterated his beliefs that she had joined a cult and produced another letter from January 2008 as the most recent one he had received. It was found that the postmark on the letter was not an area known for cults, and the way the letters were written seemed as though they had been dictated.

Elisabeth was desperate to see Kerstin, and Josef finally agreed on April 26. Once at the hospital, the doctor taking care of Kerstin alerted the police that they were there, and they were subsequently detained and taken to the station for questioning. Elisabeth wouldn't say anything until the police promised her that she would never have to see Josef ever again. She then proceeded to tell them in great detail of her ordeal in the basement and all the horrific things Josef had made her do. Following her statement, Josef was immediately arrested under suspicion of serious crimes committed against family members.

The Trial of Josef Fritzl

Josef's trial was perhaps one of the shortest in history, lasting just four days. He had pled guilty to all charges, included rape, incest, coercion, enslavement, false imprisonment, and the negligent homicide of the baby, Michael, who died shortly after birth due to lack of medical care. He was ultimately sentenced to life imprisonment, while Elisabeth, her children, and her mother were all taken into care. Throughout the trial, more was learnt about the background of Josef. He had a long history of violent crime, including rape and attempted rape. He was also known for indecently exposing himself. Although he had once been incarcerated, the conviction was expunged after a period of fifteen years, so when social services became involved, his background check did not reveal his previous crimes.

The Psychological Scars and Fighting Back to Normality

Following their arrival into care, Elisabeth, the children, and her mother were placed in a clinic where they could receive all the medical and psychological treatment they might need. They were shielded from the prying outside world as they grasped the enormity of what they were going through. The three children who had been kept in the basement and even Elisabeth needed therapy to adjust to natural light after being kept in a semi-dark space for so long. It was also difficult to adjust to having space to move around in.

All were plagued with panic attacks and anxiety. One child was unable to walk properly due to having to stoop for so long in the basement. Another tore her hair out and stuffed her clothing into the toilet. The children that had been kept upstairs had issues with resentment and anger. The treatment and therapy for Elisabeth and her children will be an ongoing need for many years to come.

Chapter 12: A Controversial Case of Police Misconduct – Or Was it Murder By Cop?

Nizah Morris was an entertainer who also happened to be transgender. She had been living as a female since her early 20s, and her day job was working for her mother at her daycare center. At night she would perform in a drag show at a bar called Bob and Barbara's in Philadelphia's Center City. She was also a practicing Buddhist, calm by nature and making a good life for herself. Tragically, all that came to an end on December 22, 2002. The controversy that followed would rock the legal system and create support from all walks of life for the rights of transgender people.

Nizah Morris Left Lying in the Street

Nizah had been to a party at a bar located at the intersection of Chancellor and Juniper streets in Philadelphia. The bar was called the Key West Bar, and she reportedly left at around 2 a.m. On exiting the bar, Nizah collapsed on the ground outside, intoxicated. Those who were outside the bar formed a group around her and alerted the paramedics. Nizah was unable to even stand unsupported at this point.

An officer from the 6th District police precinct arrived, and because Nizah refused to go to hospital the ambulance was cancelled. Instead, the police officer offered her a ride to the hospital, but she declined this also. All Nizah wanted to do was go home. Those who were nearby helped Nizah into the police car, and the officers proceeded to take her home. Her address was in the 5000 block of Walnut Street, but the officers claimed she wanted to be let out of the car at 15th and Walnut streets. They noticed her walking towards 16th Street.

Just minutes later, a motorist driving by saw Nizah lying on the sidewalk. She had an injury on the side of her forehead that was bleeding, and a call was made to 911 asking for medical assistant. This time an officer for the 9th District precinct arrived. A call was not made to a supervisor, and the situation was not considered nor treated as a crime.

By the time Nizah arrived at hospital, her condition was critical. Life support was removed on December 23 and she was pronounced dead on December 24 at 8:30 p.m. The medical examiner ruled the death as a homicide on December 25, but the police department's homicide unit would not accept it. They instead classified it as an accidental death. A second opinion was then requested.

Police Request a Second Opinion

The controversy surrounding this case was whether or not the police officers acted appropriately in their interactions with Nizah that night. For starters, even though she was refusing medical treatment in the first instance, the ambulance should not have been cancelled. Also, even though the police officers were not required to drive her home, once they had agreed to do so, they were responsible for getting her home safe and sound. They certainly shouldn't have dropped her off elsewhere and let her walk off when earlier she couldn't even stand unaided due to her level of intoxication. If it was only minutes later that she was found injured on the sidewalk; the officers couldn't have been watching her walk away safely.

The family, friends, and the community in general had many questions regarding what happened to Nizah that night. It would be easy to assume it was an accident—she was drunk and quite easily could have fallen and whacked her head. But, the medical examiner called it a homicide. So who was the perpetrator? Was there an assailant or was it homicide by negligence and failure to provide due care?

According to Nizah's family members, the photographs they were shown at the medical examiner's office showed marks on her wrists like indentations, as well as what appeared to be defensive wounds on her hands. The local newspaper ran a story on the tragedy on December 31, but they abhorrently referred to Nizah as a prostitute and a male. This further fueled the fires that were already burning among her family and friends. She was cremated on January 1, 2003, with more than 300 people attending the service.

A second opinion was sought from a brain injury specialist. The tests undertaken showed that she had died due to a cerebral injury, otherwise

known as a brain injury. On January 30, the homicide division declared the case a homicide.

There were numerous inconsistencies in the police reports from that night in relation to witness statements. Protests were being held due to the handling of the case by the police department. There were issues surrounding Nizah not being identified for nearly 64 hours while she was in the hospital, despite her fingerprints being on record. One of the officers present actually knew Nizah, but he did not identify her either. Those who had been at the scene also told the police officers who Nizah was, but this information was never passed on either.

There were too many questions and not enough answers, and the community was rallying for further investigation. In April 2003, the District Attorney launched an investigation into the case, but it would be short-lived and provided no answers at all, just more questions.

The Investigation into the Officers

The investigation started by the District Attorney quickly ended in December, failing to find who was responsible for Nizah's death. The DA appealed to the public for help, and declared at the same time that the three police officers involved in the incident had all acted appropriately.

Complaints were lodged by Nizah's mother against the police department for not providing all of the information to the family. A civil suit was brought against the bar that allowed Nizah to become intoxicated, as well as the officers involved, the EMTs, and the city of Philadelphia, by the Center for Lesbian and Gay Civil Rights. Interestingly this suit was settled in May 2004 for \$250,000.

Police Advisory Commission Called In

An initial investigation undertaken by the Police Advisory Commission asserting that the only officer who hadn't acted properly that night was an Officer Skala. The Philadelphia Police Department advised the Commission within days that they had not received all of the documentation, as some of it was missing, including the homicide report, which had been missing since 2003. As a side note, this report miraculously reappeared in 2011 in the archives.

The Commission voted to reopen the investigation in March 2008. This investigation proved to be fruitless and pointless, so the initial findings remained standing. Once again they voted to reinvestigate in 2011, and at the end of the investigation they called for the U.S. Attorney General's Office to fully investigate the case. They in turn, declined. By 2015, the only result from all of the investigations was that Officer Skala received a verbal reprimand, even though it was found that she had lied and deliberately deceived the department about her interactions with Nizah that night. She eventually ended up working in the commissioner's office—what a punishment! No wonder so many people lost their faith in the Philadelphia legal system.

Something Good from Something Bad

In honor of Nizah, Philadelphia opened a center for drug addiction treatment for transgender persons. The official name is ‘The Morris Home for Trans and Gender-Variant People’. To date it is the only inpatient center of its kind that is run by transgender people for transgender people. Nizah may have lost her life, but in her name she is helping others to save theirs.



If you haven't joined Audible yet, you can get any of my audiobooks for **FREE!**

Click on the image or [HERE](#) and click "Buy With Audible Credit" and you will get the audiobook for **FREE!**

More books by Jack Rosewood



The world can be a very strange place in general and when you open the pages of this true crime anthology you will quickly learn that the criminal world specifically can be as bizarre as it is dangerous. In the following book, you will be captivated by mysterious missing person cases that defy all logic and a couple cases of murderous mistaken identity. Follow along as detectives conduct criminal investigations in order to solve cases that were once believed to be unsolvable. Every one of the crime cases chronicled in the pages of this book are as strange and disturbing as the next.

The twelve true crime stories in this book will keep you riveted as you turn the pages, but they will probably also leave you with more questions than answers. For instance, you will be left pondering how two brothers from the same family could disappear with no trace in similar circumstances over ten years apart. You will also wonder how two women with the same first and

last names, but with no personal connections, could be murdered within the same week in the same city. The examination of a number of true crime murder cases that went cold, but were later solved through scientific advances, will also keep you intrigued and reading.

Open the pages of this book, if you dare, to read some of the most bizarre cases of disappearances, mistaken identity, and true murder. Some of the cases will disturb and anger you, but make no mistake, you will want to keep reading!

[GET IT NOW](#)



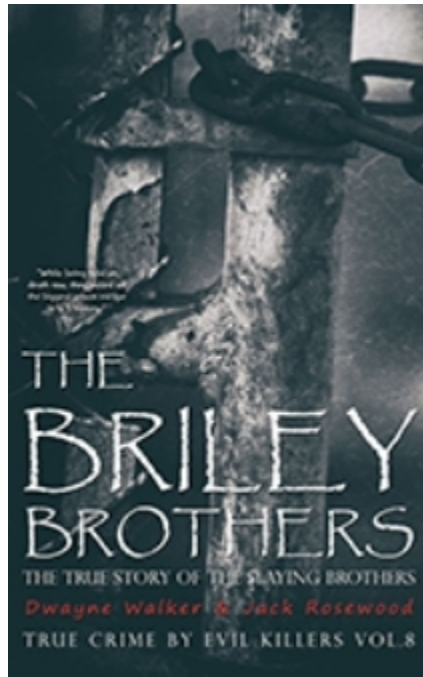
Of all the many psychopaths and sociopaths that have hunted for human victims throughout history, few have been more disturbing or mysterious than Christopher Bernard Wilder – the beauty queen killer. From the middle of the 1960s until 1984, Wilder sexually assaulted countless women and murdered at least nine in Australia and the United States. The beauty queen killer was not only a true psychopath, but also a hunter as he carefully chose attractive girls and young women to victimize. But Wilder was no creepy looking killer; he was an attractive, articulate man who used a camera and offers of a modelling career to get his unsuspecting, naïve victims to remote locations where he would then rape, torture, and ultimately kill them.

Among serial killer biographies, Wilder's is a cautionary tale. First as a juvenile and later as a young man, Wilder was arrested on numerous occasions for sexual assaults in both Australia and United States; but he never served any time behind bars due to technicalities, witnesses refusing

to testify, or the judges showing sympathy towards the beauty queen killer. When one considers some of the better known American crime stories from history, many red-flags are apparent that point towards the future criminal potential of an individual: for Wilder, the flags were bright, crimson, quite large, and difficult to avoid, yet were ignored by his friends, family, and the authorities. Christopher Wilder's saga is therefore not just a true crime murder story, but also an unfortunate example of how the system can fail to protect the public from a known sexual sadist.

Open the pages of this intriguing book and read the story of an American serial killer who had it all: looks, money, and beautiful women. But as this captivating true crime story will reveal, nothing was ever enough for the beauty queen killer as he killed his way across the United States in order to satisfy his sadistic lust. Aspects of the Christopher Bernard Wilder story will disturb you, but at the same time you will find it difficult to put this serial killer biography down because you will be drawn in by the FBI's hunt to capture the elusive criminal.

[GET IT HERE](#)



Richmond, Virginia: On the morning of October 19, 1979, parolee James Briley stood before a judge and vowed to quit the criminal life. That same day, James met with brothers Linwood, Anthony, and 16-year-old neighbor Duncan Meekins. What they planned—and carried out—would make them American serial-killer legends, and reveal to police investigators a 7-month rampage of rape, robbery, and murder exceeding in brutality already documented cases of psychopaths, sociopaths, and sex criminals.

As reported in this book, the Briley gang were responsible for the killing of 11 people (among these, a 5-year-old boy and his pregnant mother), but possibly as many as 20. Unlike most criminals, however, the Briley gang's break-ins and robberies were purely incidental—mere excuses for rape and vicious thrill-kills. When authorities (aided by plea-bargaining Duncan Meekins) discovered the whole truth, even their tough skins crawled.

Nothing in Virginian history approached the depravities, many of which were committed within miles of the Briley home, where single father James Sr. padlocked himself into his bedroom every night.

But this true crime story did not end with the arrests and murder convictions of the Briley gang. Linwood, younger brother James, and 6 other Mecklenburg death-row inmates, hatched an incredible plan of trickery and manipulation—and escaped from the “state-of-the-art” facility on May 31, 1984. The biggest death-row break-out in American history.

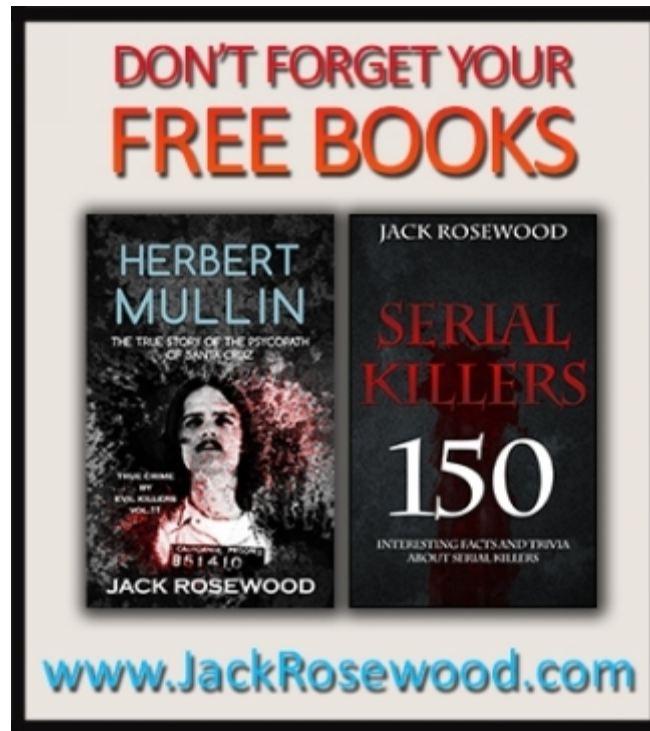
[GET IT NOW](#)



[□ CLICK HERE □](#)

[TO SEE ALL BOOKS BY JACK ROSEWOOD](#)

GET THESE BOOKS FOR FREE



Go to www.jackrosewood.com/free and get this E-Book for free!

[CLICK HERE](http://www.jackrosewood.com/free)

A Note From The Author

Hello, this is Jack Rosewood. Thank you for reading this book. I hope you enjoyed the read. If you did, I'd appreciate if you would take a few moments to post a review on Amazon.

Here's the link to the book: [Amazon](#)

I would also love if you'd sign up to my newsletter to receive updates on new releases, promotions and a FREE copy of my Herbert Mullin E-Book, [CLICK HERE](#)

Thanks again for reading this book, make sure to follow me on [Facebook](#).

Best Regards

Jack Rosewood

Excerpt from True Crime Stories

Vol.3

I've added a preview the next book in the series, [True Crime Stories Vol.3](#)



The Melaniee Road Murder Case

Most people look back on their seventeenth year of life with fondness. Independence is right around the corner, but the protection of family and the law still allows one a level of comfort not known in adulthood. Many of us pushed and even broke the limits of family rules and the law at seventeen by experimenting with drugs, alcohol, and sex. But the majority of us come through that rebellious period a bit wiser and eventually move on to become productive members of society.

Of course there are those who never leave their adolescent rebellion behind and instead immerse themselves in various criminal activities.

Then there are those who never move past the rebellious attitude of age seventeen because they are murdered by people who continue to indulge their adolescent fantasies, no matter how old they are or how twisted the nature of their fantasies.

Melaniee Road was a seventeen-year-old whose flirtation with rebellion was randomly ended in murder one June night in 1984 by a sadistic killer. Melaniee's murder shocked and outraged her fellow British citizens who asked questions that could not be answered because there were few leads for the police to follow.

Eventually, due to advances in technology, Melaniee's murderer was eventually arrested and sent to prison, but the killer's capture only seemed to raise more questions in a case that was as bizarre as it was heart wrenching.

A Good Girl

In 1984, seventeen-year-old Melaniee Road was not the typical murder victim in the United Kingdom. She was a good student who was set to go to college, enjoyed spending time with her family, friends, and boyfriend, and was not involved in any criminal activity or drug use.

The attractive blonde also had no known enemies.

Because of her background, police were baffled as to who killed the young woman on the quiet streets of Bath on the morning of June 9, 1984.

A Vicious Attack

The night of June 8, 1984, began like many others for Melaniee Road. She met up with her boyfriend early in the evening and then the two walked to one of their favorite hangouts, the “Beau Nash” nightclub, where they met some friends.

After an evening of dancing and drinking, the group decided to call it a night at about 1:30 am, so they all said their goodbyes and went their separate ways. Melaniee had made the walk from her parent’s home to the club and back numerous times without incident. In 1984, Bath had a low crime rate and there were no high crime areas she had to pass between the club and her house.

Unfortunately, she met a monster on her walk home.

Although there were no witnesses to the attack, police were able to piece together the sequence of events through physical evidence.

Melaniee’s attacker mercilessly pounced on her on the sidewalk, stabbing her multiple times before she ran into a cul-de-sac. The cul-de-sac proved not only to be a dead end for the street, but also for Melaniee as the attacker then stabbed her several more times, twenty-six total. As the young woman lay bleeding to death on the lonely street, the killer could not contain his sadistic urges, so he raped her lifeless body.

Melaniee’s body was discovered a few hours later in a pool of blood by a milkman who was making his daily deliveries with his ten-year-old son.

The local police immediately sealed the location and took biological evidence from the body, but DNA profiling was still unavailable to police departments in 1984.

With no biological evidence that they could immediately use, detectives turned to more traditional methods in order to capture Melaniee's killer. Attention was first focused on Melaniee's boyfriend, but it was quickly determined that he was not the killer as he had an air-tight alibi.

The police then received a tip that a young woman and a man were heard arguing loudly in the vicinity around the time of the murder. Investigators followed up the lead, but it proved to be another dead end.

Finally, with most of their resources exhausted and at their wit's end, the local police initiated "Operation Rhodium." The operation was essentially a dragnet in which ninety- four men who fit the profile of the killer were rounded up and arrested on various charges ranging from outstanding warrants to minor offences such as loitering. The operation proved to be a failure and worse yet the killer was one of the men arrested.

The killer had slipped right through their hands!

**Don't hesitate, continue reading True Crime
Stories Vol.3 right now!**

[CLICK IT HERE GET THE FULL BOOK](#)